



CULTIVATION CHAT GROUP

BOOK 06

Legend Of The Sacred Knight

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

Cultivation Chat Group

(修真聊天群)

by

Legend Of The Sacred Knight

(圣骑士的传说)

Synopsis

On a certain day, Song Shuhang accidentally joined a deeply afflicted Xianxia chuunibyou(Year 2 middle school disease) chat group, the group members inside all address each other as ‘fellow daoist’. Their contact cards are all either Sect Master, Cave Master, Spiritual Master or Heavenly Expert. Even the group master’s missing pet dog named Great Devil Dog abandoned his home. They chat all day about things like concocting pills, intruding mysterious territories, martial arts experiences and more.

One day, he abruptly realizes after lurking for a long time that..... In this group, every single group member is actually a real cultivator, with the ability to move mountains and drain seas, the kind that can live for thousands of years!

Ah ah ah ah, My worldview has utterly collapsed in a single night!

Acknowledgement

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Premonition, LemonPEEL @ [volaretranslations](#)

Translation Edit by Khuja, Asvare @ [volaretranslations](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Chapter 501: Shuhang, have you decided when you're ascending to heaven?

Is she waiting for me to get home and then 'pew~' me to space so that I can play with the stars?

Fairy Firefly, don't be so cruel!

We are all human beings, and we shouldn't hurt each other~

They were all cultivators, after all. She could just let him rest a few days after returning home, allowing him to enjoy some family love together with Guoguo, Li Yinzhu, and his parents. Afterward, he would get ready for the journey, and it wouldn't be too late to find an excuse and ascend to heaven!

After seeing that Song Shuhang didn't reply even after a while, Mama Song's heart suddenly moved, and she said, "Shuhang, you aren't trying to conquer both, aren't you?"

"Pfff~" Song Shuhang almost spurted out his saliva and said, "Ma, don't speak irresponsibly. Yu Rouzi and Liu Ying are... just friends. It's a pure and simple friendship, it's not like what you think. Anyway, we will be home soon. Right. Ma, can you prepare a vegetarian dish? I'm bringing a little kid home with me."

"Is the kid a vegetarian?" Mama Song nodded and said, "However, how can a little kid only eat vegetables? He needs a balanced diet to grow up strong and healthy."

"Ma~ the little kid is a Buddhist," Song Shuhang said with a smile.

"So that's how it was. I'll prepare a vegetarian dish, then. Anyway, less chit-chat and quickly return home. Miss Liu Ying is still waiting for you. I'll hang up now, bye." Mama Song hung up the call after saying this much.

Song Shuhang deeply sighed and pressed the accelerator. The

vehicle quickly headed toward his house.

Come what may; there is no escaping fate.

If Fairy Firefly really wanted to send him to space immediately, he could... no, he ***had*** to beg her to delay it by two days.

Just as Song Shuhang returned home and opened the door, he saw Papa Song and Fairy Firefly happily playing a video game in the living room.

The game they were playing was a shooter released in 2017.

The gameplay was somewhat similar to the old Counter-Strike. As for the game setting, the developers opted for a vast, sci-fi world, turning the game into a 'sci-fi shooter'.

Given the low budget they had to work with, the developers didn't think that the game would attract many players.

But against all expectations, the unremarkable game managed to get a huge player base.

Even Papa Song would play it for a while when he had nothing to do.

During winter vacation, Papa Song created a second account and had Song Shuhang play with him to sweep clean a zone to obtain some gun parts.

At this time, Fairy Firefly was using Song Shuhang's second account and massacring other players in PvP mode.

It was such a massacre that rivers of blood flowed!

Since it was just a second account, it didn't have powerful weapons. But with Fairy Firefly's fearsome gaming skills, the enemies were still butchered and forced to retreat in defeat again and again. Fairy Firefly could easily see people brushing past the cracks between walls and objects, quickly shooting them.

It was like playing with cheats.

As he entered the room, Song Shuhang heard Papa Song roaring with laughter. "Wahaha! Miss Liu Ying, I didn't expect you to be so good!"

"It's not much," Fairy Firefly said modestly.

After seeing the scene, Song Shuhang thought of something that happened around three years ago. At the time, he was in high school, playing a game with his roommates.

Inside the game, they chanced upon an incredibly powerful enemy.

The rank of the enemy was low, and even their equipment wasn't that strong. But when it came to killing players, it was almost as if the opposite party was cheating. They would pop out of nowhere and disappear without leaving any traces behind. Whenever they were shooting, even from afar, it felt as though the bullets could trail the target—they didn't miss a single shot.

Song Shuhang's team of four was mercilessly crushed by a single person even though they could communicate and share information while inside the dorm.

Afterward, one of the roommates believed that the opposite party was cheating and reported them to the game admin.

However, the game admin said that the state of the other player's game was perfectly normal and that they hadn't used any cheats.

For the next few days, Song Shuhang's roommates were quite angry... after all, no matter how one looked at it, it seemed that the other party was indeed cheating!

Now that Song Shuhang thought about it... did he and his three roommates play against a bored cultivator that day?

If the other player was really a cultivator, they were indeed cheating. However, they weren't cheating in game but in real life,

using an undetectable and uncountable cheat!



"Ah? Little friend Shuhang, you are finally back." Fairy Firefly raised her head and shot a glance at Song Shuhang, saying, "I've waited for a long time, and I even had lunch here."

"I'm sorry for making Fair— Miss Liu Ying wait for so long~ As soon as the cruise ship reached the shore, I went to a friend's place to retrieve something," Song Shuhang replied.

Just as he was speaking, Song Shuhang entered the house and placed the two water tanks with the seahorse dragons on the ground.

In the rear, Li Yinzhu was already rubbing her eyes with one hand while holding Song Shuhang's clothes with the other. It felt as though she was going to fall asleep at any time. Her conditions were influenced by her disease, and it was very easy for her to get sleepy.

Also in the rear, Guoguo entered the house and saw Fairy Firefly and Papa Song in the living room.

"Senior Liu Ying, Uncle Song, hello." Guoguo greeted the two of them with a serious expression on his face.

"Hello, little master." Papa Song nodded, and a gentle smile appeared on his face.

Soon after, his fingers started to frantically beat on the keyboard. At this time, he was facing a life and death crisis in game.

"Hello, little Guoguo. Eh? To which family does that girl behind you belong?" Fairy Firefly couldn't help but be surprised when she looked at Li Yinzhu.

The body of the little girl was surging with true qi. Moreover, it looked like innate true qi. In that case, was this girl a cultivator of the Fourth Stage Realm? She didn't even seem to be fifty years old,

and her strength had already reached such a realm?

Of course, Fairy Firefly didn't make her judgement by looking at Li Yinzhu's outward appearance. Cultivators had their own ways to determine the real age of a person.

Song Shuhang sighed with emotion and said, "She is the daughter of a deceased senior. I'm in charge of taking care of her for a little while."

Fairy Firefly nodded and didn't question further.

She madly clicked on the mouse and asked, "Right, Shuhang. I came here to tell you that the thousand packets of spirit rice you ordered have arrived. At this time, they are stored inside my empty multi-storied building. Whenever you have the time, you should go over and bring some back. Oh, I'll give you the key as well. You still remember the address, right?"

Fairy Firefly gently moved and threw the key toward Song Shuhang.

So it was about the spirit rice, and I'm not immediately going to space!

Song Shuhang's heart finally calmed down. He had completely forgotten that the spirit rice would be delivered to Fairy Firefly's empty multi-storied building here in Wenzhou City.

As for the address of the building, he obviously remembered it. After all, it was the same address they gave to the merchant when they bought the goods back then.

After taking the key, Song Shuhang saw that it was almost time to dine. Such being the case, he could just go over and bring two packets of spirit rice back for dinner.

"Wait a moment!" Papa Song raised his head and asked, "How many packets did you say?"

Fairy Firefly replied without raising her head, "A thousand

packets."

Cold sweat suddenly appeared on Song Shuhang's forehead.

"A thousand packets of rice?" Papa Song looked at Song Shuhang.

What kind of joke was this! His family only needed one packet of rice per month. Did Song Shuhang buy enough rice to feed them for a thousand months?

It was so much that they could eat it for a lifetime!

But the most important thing was... from where did Song Shuhang get the money? Even if every packet of rice was worth 100 RMB, it was still a total of 10,000 RMB!

Was Shuhang scammed?

"Is it possible to return it?" Papa Song asked, somewhat worried.

Fairy Firefly replied in Song Shuhang's stead, "It's impossible to return it. The goods have been delivered, and the bill was likewise paid. It's not possible to return it now."

Papa Song clenched his teeth and ultimately sighed. Forget it, one could only grow up after experiencing all kinds of matters. Although Song Shuhang was scammed, it could be considered as a lesson for the future.

"How much money did this scam cost you? Honestly tell your father," Papa Song said. "Moreover, since you bought so many packets of rice, did you borrow money from someone? How much do you lack? I'll make up the remaining part. You absolutely can't borrow money from loan sharks and the likes. You don't even have to think about that, understood?"

After hearing these words, Song Shuhang's heart warmed.

"Pa, don't worry. I wasn't scammed," Song Shuhang said.

He was able to get 'only' a thousand packets of spirit rice because the merchant was lenient and gave him a preferential treatment due to Venerable White.

Song Shuhang also added, "Moreover, I didn't borrow money from anyone. After all, I didn't use money to buy it. I used a... how can I explain it... ah yes. A precious stone!"

"A precious stone?" Papa Song quietly rubbed his fingers.

A murderous look flashed through his eyes.

Exchanging a precious stone for a thousand packets of rice, huh... there were indeed stones precious enough to have such a value. But was he supposed to believe that Song Shuhang just casually happened to find one such a stone?

Fairy Firefly also said at this time, "It's not incorrect to consider it a precious stone. He used a precious stone of the Fourth Stage to buy those thousand packets of rice. There was no money involved."

"Really?" Papa Song turned around and looked at Fairy Firefly.

Sometimes, people would behave in rather amusing ways. If a story was repeated enough times, it would become the truth, and if there was a witness to back you up, your credibility would increase by several times.

"Yes, it's the truth," Song Shuhang replied. "Moreover, that rice is very good. Miss Liu Ying, how about going over and bringing some packets back to prepare dinner?"

"Sure. But let me once again kill this guy first," Fairy Firefly said.

"Pew, pew, pew~" The sound of gunfire was transmitted from the screen of the computer.

"Done. I've killed him ten times in total." Fairy Firefly stood up and exited the game. "Let's go pick up the spirit rice together!"

As for that enemy player that suffered one defeat after another, he was probably silently grieving.



Song Shuhang turned toward the kitchen and said, "Ma, there are two pet seahorses inside the water tanks. Don't slice them up to

prepare one of your dishes! Anyway, Miss Liu Ying and I are going out to pick up a packet of rice. We'll be back soon."

"Come back soon and pay attention to your safety." Mama Song's voice came from the kitchen.

Song Shuhang decided to leave Guoguo and Li Yinzhu behind.

Li Yinzhu was already exhausted and lay prone on the sofa, sleeping. On the other hand, Guoguo was curiously looking around Song Shuhang's house.



As they started the vehicle and headed toward Fairy Firefly's multi-storied building, the latter suddenly said, "Right, little friend Shuhang. I've prepared an advanced spacesuit for you as well as a few things that can come in handy in space. Have you already decided when are you planning to go up there? I've taken a look at your schedule, and there should be more than one month left before university starts, right?"

As expected, the topic of conversation shifted to this subject at last!

"In these days, I guess? Let me stay at home and rest for two days, I can set out for the journey after that," Song Shuhang replied.

"Sure. Give me a call when you want to set out. I'll reply as soon as called," Fairy Firefly said.

But after saying this much, Fairy Firefly remembered that she had an important matter to take care of three days later!

Chapter 502: Meeting again the professor that took an arrow in the knee

Fairy Firefly had an important personal matter to take care of three days later!

In other words, although she said to Song Shuhang 'Sure. Give me a call when you want to set out. I'll reply as soon as called', she would pew~ him to space three days later.

Fairy Firefly was quite embarrassed about what was happening.

Hopefully, Song Shuhang will be able to enjoy the warmth of his family and prepare within these two days so that I can smoothly send him to heaven, Fairy Firefly thought to herself.



The next day, July 26th, 2019. Friday, cloudy weather that was clearing up.

Scholar Mountain of Books.

Today's dao name was a dao name that Song Shuhang liked, Scholar Mountain of Books.

The flavor of yesterday's spirit rice was truly great. Papa Song and Mama Song immediately took a liking to it. Thereupon, Papa Song didn't bring up that matter about Song Shuhang buying a whole thousand packets in one go anymore.

The only problem was that the amount he bought was indeed too high. After all, a thousand packets were enough to feed Song Shuhang's family for more than eighty years. Therefore, Song Shuhang brought thirty packets of spirit rice back to his house early in the morning. Afterward, Mama Song and Papa Song went to visit some friends and relatives they were on good terms with and gifted them the spirit rice.



Wenzhou City, near Baijing Street, Mountain Niuding.

There was a mountain highway very good for racing on Mountain Niuding. Moreover, the mountain forest was scarcely inhabited, and the spiritual energy was much higher than in the urban area. It was a rather good place to practice.

After washing his face and having breakfast, Song Shuhang brought Li Yinzhu, Guoguo, and Yu Jiaojiao along and rushed to the mountain forest.

At this time, Song Shuhang had a clean crew cut. Yesterday, before returning home, he got rid of his hair that had reached his shoulders. Otherwise, Papa Song and Mama Song would get a scare after seeing that his hair had grown until his shoulders from the three or four centimeter long hair he had two weeks ago. They'd wonder if he took hormones or something!

Yu Jiaojiao didn't train in martial arts skills lately and passed most of her time consolidating her realm. Therefore, she was currently doing breathing exercises, breathing in and out the spiritual energy of the world.

Guoguo practiced the ⟨Basic Buddhist Fist Technique⟩, the ⟨True Self Meditation Scripture⟩, and the ⟨Immovable Body of the Buddha⟩.

Song Shuhang had borrowed Young Master Phoenix Slayer's CPU and pushed these three techniques to the master level. Therefore, he could guide Guoguo while he was practicing.

If we take into consideration that Guoguo didn't lack medicinal pills and that the enlightenment stone was right there, the small monk had been advancing very quickly lately. Within a short period of time, he had already broken through the third aperture, the Nose Aperture. After breaking through the last two apertures, the Ear and Mouth Apertures, he would finally be able to jump through the dragon gate.

Li Yinzhu was practicing a set of sword techniques. Song Shuhang was familiar with it... it was the same set of sword techniques that Daoist Priest Scarlet Heaven passed onto Li Tiansu in the dreamland, allowing him to reach the Fifth Stage Spiritual Emperor Realm.

As long as one had the sword in hand and had the skills, they would not need to worry about not reaching the Fifth Stage.

The scene of Daoist Priest Scarlet Heaven passing down the technique within Li Tiansu's dreamland was rather vague, and Song Shuhang felt as though he had been seeing everything through a layer of mist, unable to distinguish things clearly.

Now, just as he looked at Li Yinzhu's moves and actions, Song Shuhang felt as though his vision was blurred. He could follow as long as the moves and actions were executed separately, but he couldn't understand anything when they were united.

His comprehension was really trash-tier when it came to sword techniques.

And yet, whenever I see a saber technique, I can understand most of it after seeing it only once... Song Shuhang faintly sighed.

Song Shuhang was clear that he wouldn't have the opportunity to become a cool and dashing white-robed swordsman for the rest of his life unless he had some kind of fortuitous encounter.

But he wouldn't give up. If there was an opportunity to learn a sword technique, even one that relied on brute force, it would be enough for him!



After the practice.

Song Shuhang led Guoguo with one hand and Li Yinzhu with the other, traversing the winding mountain road and slowly reaching the foot of the mountain.

The green mountain, blue rivers, and the chirping of bugs and birds really improved one's mood.

On their way back, they passed by a snack store.

Song Shuhang bought ice cream for Guoguo, a hot drink for Li Yinzhu, and a small cake for Yu Jiaojiao, as well as a few other snacks that they ate while heading back.

Song Shuhang finally had a moment of leisure in his busy life~

A lot of things happened after he left the mysterious island, and something new would pop out every day. Unknowingly, both Song Shuhang's mind and body had become exhausted.

Now, he finally had some free time and was able to relax both in body and mind.

On the path of cultivation, one had to find a proper equilibrium between work and rest.

For example, many senior cultivators had a small herbal garden even though their planting skills were awful. Whenever they had free time, they would plant raw medicinal ingredients, producing countless withered spirit plants and spirit medicines.

Managing a small herbal garden, raising spirit beasts and so on—occupations that seemed to be just a waste of time—were the method these cultivators came up with to balance work and rest.



On another side, a man was walking his dog at the foot of Mountain Niuding.

It was Professor Smith, a serious-looking British old man whose hobbies were traveling and raising dogs.

He once raised an adorable pet dog, but the ungrateful bastard went mad and suddenly decided to bite him. Thereupon, Professor Smith decided to deliver it to a hot pot restaurant.

Afterward, he decided to raise a German Shepherd. However,

this powerful dog was unexpectedly defeated by a cute pekingese...

Whatever. Today, the mood was pretty good, and it was better not to mention these past sad events that Professor Smith experienced.

Since summer vacation was rather long, Professor Smith visited several different scenic spots of China.

But yesterday, he had to rush to Wenzhou City. A friend of the professor, who happened to be a director, wanted to find a good spot on Wenzhou City's Mountain Niuding to shoot a movie.

Thereupon, since Professor Smith was free and had nothing to do, he made a long trip and came here to meet his old friend.

Moreover, he might give his old friend a hand with the translation stuff.

The crew of his old friend would arrive in Wenzhou City within two or three days. Therefore, Professor Smith was currently staying inside a hotel, waiting for his friend to arrive.

Today, he got up early and took his dog along for a stroll. While he was at it, he decided to head toward Mountain Niuding and take a look at the scenery before his friend arrived.

At this time, Professor Smith was strolling around with his new favorite darling pet. It was a well-trained mixed blood pit bull.

Pure-blooded pit bulls were too violent, and it was better to train them since they were young. And even then, one might need the help of a specialized coach to train them. It was definitely something that the old professor couldn't deal with.

As for that German Shepherd, Professor Smith decided to return it the very same day it lost against the pekingese.

"Mountain Niuding is a really good place!" Professor Smith pulled along his mixed blood pit bull and headed toward Mountain Niuding for a stroll. Although it was a mixed blood, the pit bull was

still very muscular and powerful-looking.

Professor Smith was very satisfied with this new purchase of his.



Just as he was walking, Professor Smith saw a young man and two kids ahead coming in his direction.

The young man had a crew cut and was leading a serious-looking bald child, who was eating ice cream, with the left hand and a white-haired little girl drinking a steaming hot beverage with the right one. The long silvery hair of the little girl had the color of mercury.

Did that little girl dye her hair? Professor Smith thought to himself.

At the same time, Professor Smith found the short-haired youngster pretty familiar. He had a gentle-looking face, and the professor felt that he had seen him somewhere.

"Good morning, Professor Smith. I didn't expect to meet you in such a place," Song Shuhang saw the British old man from afar and greeted him with a smile.

He felt somewhat guilty about what happened to this serious-looking old man. After all, he was the reason Professor Smith took an arrow in the knee— ugh, that wasn't it. He was the reason the professor had his leg bitten.

"Good morning, I remember you. You are that student with the pekingese, Shuhang Song!" Professor Smith said with a smile. No wonder this youngster looked so familiar!

"Ahaha, Professor Smith still remembers me." Song Shuhang made a hollow laugh and shot a glance at the new darling pet of the professor as he said, "Professor, did you change your pet?"

Professor Smith said earnestly, "That German Shepherd wasn't even able to defeat a small pekingese. I returned it."

"..." Song Shuhang.

Professor, your German Shepherd wasn't at fault! You have to believe me when I say that even the scariest and most violent dog in the world wouldn't be able to defeat that 'small pekingese'!

At this time, Professor Smith asked, "Shuhang Song, do you live here in Wenzhou?"

Song Shuhang nodded and said, "Yes. Professor, are you here to sightsee?"

"Yes, something of the sort. My friend is a director, and he was thinking of coming here to shoot the scene of a movie on Wenzhou City's Mountain Niuding. I'm waiting for his arrival," Professor Smith replied.

A director?

Song Shuhang immediately thought of the 'Unknown' movie that he had requested Venerable White to participate in. The theme of the movie was Unknown, the plot was also Unknown, and everything else was also Unknown.

The only thing they were sure of was that Venerable White, Song Shuhang, and Yu Jiaojiao would be in the cast.

As for the stage props, there were surely going to be many car certificates and perhaps many luxury cars.

At this time, Yu Jiaojiao had reduced her size and was standing on Song Shuhang's shoulder while invisible. Her eyes immediately lit up as soon as she heard the word 'director'.

Yu Jiaojiao had already made some progress in regards to the matter related to the 'author' of the script. Therefore, she was very interested in this director!



Just as Song Shuhang and the professor were chatting, Li Yin Zhu stretched out her small hand and took out a chicken wing from

Song Shuhang's pocket, starting to eat it.

Perhaps because it got excited due to the smell of the roasted chicken wing, the new darling pet of the professor suddenly started barking. It was barking very loudly. Moreover, it was aggressively moving its body around as though it wanted to pounce on Li Yinzhu.

"Big Crystal, sit!" Professor Smith shouted, somewhat embarrassed.

Perhaps because he had been raising it for a small amount of time, not only did the pit bull not listen to the order of its master, it even started to bark more loudly.

"Woof, woof, woof~" The pit bull showed its sharp teeth while barking, making threatening gestures.

Li Yinzhu raised her head and curiously looked at the big dog with her silvery eyes. Afterward, she silently lowered her head, continuing to indifferently eat the chicken wing.

It was Professor Smith's first time seeing such a calm and collected little girl.

But on the other side, because the big dog suddenly barked, Guoguo got a scare and carelessly gobbled down a huge chunk of the ice cream he was eating.

Guoguo's heart was in pain. While eating the ice cream, he was treating it like a treasured object, slowly licking it and enjoying its flavor. But when the dog barked, he choked on it and swallowed more than half.

After swallowing down that pig piece of ice cream, Guoguo enjoyment instantly diminished by 5 percentage points.

At this time, Guoguo's small face had become even more serious.

Chapter 503: Not good, Shuhang is about to explode!

Guoguo took a step forward and directly looked the pit bull in the eyes, saying, "Shut your mouth, stupid dog! If you dare to bark again, this lowly monk will show you what an angry Buddha looks like!"

It was unfortunate that the dog couldn't understand human language. Thereupon, it started to bark even more loudly. "Woof woof woof woof!"

The expression on its dog face also became fiercer.

Professor Smith hurriedly tried to drag the dog away by pulling its chain. He was afraid that the idiotic thing would bite and hurt the children. At the same time, he also prepared to tell Song Shuhang to take the children and get away.

But the professor had yet to speak when he saw the small monk take a deep breath and roar toward the pit bull, "Woof woof woof!"

"Woof woof woof woof!" The pit bull didn't show any weakness.

Guoguo coldly shouted, "Woof! Woof woof! Woof woof woof!"

While shouting, he stuffed the whole ice cream into his mouth. He was about to get serious.

The pit bull also got very serious as it shouted, "Woof woof woof woof!"

If not for the fact that its master, that weak-looking British man, had such an incredible strength, it would have already pounced on this small monk and bit him.

Killing intent flashed through Guoguo's eyes.

Then, he used the innate skill of his Eye Aperture and roared, "Woof!"

The pit bull wanted to retaliate with another roar. But right at that time, it saw a fearsome scene.

The scene was very brutal.

A hundred multi-colored big cats were surrounding it. If those cats were ordinary ones, the pit bull wouldn't be afraid even if they were 200 or more.

However, the bodies of those cats were somewhat... big. They were two meters long and continuously meowing. Their build was not any different from that of a tiger; were those things even cats...?

Moreover, something that resembled a cauldron was placed in the front. The cauldron was filled with fragrant spices, and there was a pit bull inside that was identical to itself. It had been stripped of its skin and thrown inside.

It was a diabolical dog meat hot pot!

At this time, the huge cats pounced upward like tigers... after all, they were literally the same as tigers, even in size!

The scene was extremely scary.

The pit bull felt that it couldn't unsee what it had seen. As soon as it saw that skinned pit bull identical to itself thrown into the hot pot, its body started to shake.

What was this place? Was it hell?



Professor Smith saw that the incredibly aggressive pit bull that was baring its fangs and teeth earlier suddenly stiffened.

"Wuwuwu..." The ferocious dog cried out strangely, just as though someone had kicked it in the nuts. Its body shrunk and it lay on the ground on its stomach, trembling.

What? What's happening? Did I miss something just now?

Professor Smith was unable to understand what was going on. Why did his ferocious dog suddenly turned into a scaredy-cat?

Or perhaps insanely barking at a ferocious dog upon seeing it, just like this little monk did, was the secret to subdue it...?

Should I give it a try the next time I meet a ferocious dog?

Well, maybe it's not such a good idea. If my imposing manner is not strong enough and I fail to overwhelm the dog, getting bitten in the process, it would be quite unfortunate.

"Professor Smith, I'm sorry. This little kid was very rude. Ahaha~ anyway, you can keep strolling around, Professor. I have to bring these two kids home," Song Shuhang said, somewhat embarrassed. Afterward, he thought of something else and added, "Right, Professor. If you have free time, can you bring me along and let me take a look at how a movie crew shoots scenes?"

After all, he was also planning to shoot a movie! Therefore, he wanted to gain some understanding in regards to movie shooting and the likes, getting a general idea about it.

"Sure. I'll give my old friend a call in advance. When he starts shooting on Mountain Niuding, you can directly come here and take a look," Professor Smith said with a smile. "However, be careful not to disturb the crew!"

"No problem. Thank you, Professor!" Song Shuhang said gratefully.

Afterward, the two parted ways.

Song Shuhang left with Li Yinzhu and Guoguo.

However, Professor Smith's plan to take a stroll around came to an end. His ferocious mixed-blood pit bull was still lying on the ground, trembling. Song Shuhang and the others had already gone very far, but the mixed-blood pit bull was still trembling just as before.

Professor Smith held his chin and said, "Even ferocious dogs are unreliable nowadays. As expected, I should have bought a mighty pekingese. Not only are those dogs very cute, their fighting capacity is also excellent."

Hmm, that's it. As soon as I go back, I'll buy a lovely small pekingese~

Afterward, Professor Smith pulled the leash and forcefully dragged away his shivering mixed-blood pit bull. Now then... when he was bitten by his dog the last time, a female student delivered him a strange medicine.

What surprised Professor Smith was that he happily took the medicine this female student gave him and didn't even bother checking if there was something wrong with it.

Anyway, he didn't know if it was just his imagination, but he felt that his body had become especially strong since he had taken that medicine.

When he bought the German Shepherd back then, the professor felt that his strength had already increased by quite a lot. It was also one of the main reasons he decided to buy a dog with such a strong build. At this time, he was also able to easily drag away the pit bull.

However, he also noticed that he didn't see that female student ever again after that.

"Forget it, I'm overthinking. Anyway, I should contact the pet store and have them reserve a powerful pekingese for me," Professor Smith muttered to himself.



July 26th. Song Shuhang passed the whole day with the two kids, bringing them all around the city for a stroll.

In the afternoon, he accompanied Mama Song and went to the houses of several friends and relatives to gift them the spirit rice.

When it was finally evening, Song Shuhang felt that sudden bursts of weariness were rushing to his head.

Although he had been free for most of the day, he still felt quite tired~

He had found strolling around for the whole day quite tiring.

Tomorrow, I should bring Guoguo and Li Yinzhu to a bookstore and squat there for the whole afternoon, freeloading books. I'm sure that won't make me feel tired! Song Shuhang thought to himself.

Late at night, Song Shuhang's whole family was sleeping.

His home was spacious enough, and both Guoguo and Li Yinzhu were sleeping in separate rooms.

Only Yu Jiaojiao was in the same room as Song Shuhang. After all, he couldn't prepare a room for her.

During the night, Song Shuhang had another dream.

However, he didn't enter the dreamland this time.

Although his innate skill to dream about others had frequently activated on its own lately... it wasn't something that happened every day.

Song Shuhang dreamt about food.

Since he was dead tired today, he ate two full bowls of rice at dinner, eating to his fill. But around midnight, Song Shuhang's powerful digestive skills activated and turned everything he ate into energy.

There was nothing he could do about it. The <Whale Swallowing Technique> was just this cool after reaching the master level.

The <Whale Swallowing Technique> was a technique that greatly strengthened one's teeth and digestive capabilities. The person that developed this technique could be surely considered a genius in the world of cultivators. It was a technique that could allow the

user to absorb even something like spirit beast crystals without leaving anything behind, let alone spirit rice or the food ordinary people ate.

Not long after Song Shuhang lay on the bed, the strengthening effects of the <Whale Swallowing Technique> on his stomach were brought into full play.

"I'm hungry..."

This thought was continuously reverberating inside Song Shuhang's mind.

Sometimes, people would dream about things they strongly yearned for in real life, and their wishes would be fulfilled within the dream.

For example, if someone was sleeping and needed to pee, it was very likely that they would dream about themselves using the toilet. The scary thing was that if one was dreaming about themselves peeing in the dream, they couldn't easily stop once they had started. They would feel as though they were going to pee forever. As if that wasn't enough, the more they were peeing, the more the urge got stronger. This dream where people were continuously peeing was also the main reason many kids wet the bed.

Using the same logic, if one dreamt about food and delicacies, it was likely because they were hungry in real life.

All sorts of delicious dishes would appear in the dream: fish meat, pork, stew, etc. In short, all types of food that one could, and could not, think of would appear in there.

And just like one couldn't stop peeing... the person inside the dream couldn't eat to their fill no matter how much they tried.

No matter how many delicacies there were, they just weren't enough.

The more one was eating, the more they were feeling hungry.

Song Shuhang was in a similar situation at this time.

Roasted sheep, tender beefsteak, a whole pot of spirit rice, shelled fresh shrimp the size of a fist, hundreds of different types of Chinese delicacies, all kinds of ingredients; there was even food that had appeared only in legends and myths.

Although he was eating with all his might, he just wasn't sated. On the contrary, he was getting hungrier and hungrier, and felt as though his gastric juice was about to melt his stomach.

It's quite painful... regardless of what it is, I want to eat it, even something like ordinary brown bread is fine!

Just as this thought flashed through Song Shuhang's mind, he discovered that there was indeed something in his mouth. It seemed that he unconsciously picked something edible with his hands and stuffed it into his mouth.

It was something very hard, and his teeth hurt a bit while he was chewing it.

However, it didn't matter. Even if that thing was harder, it wouldn't be a problem as long as he had the <Whale Swallowing Technique>. He could bite it to pieces and easily digest it!

The <Whale Swallowing Technique> activated!

I'll bite it to pieces. No matter what it is, does it think it can escape after entering my mouth?

Stupid thing, get crushed into pieces under the strength of my steel teeth!

"Crack~" The object was crushed to pieces.

It tastes like sheep meat. This taste is pretty good, Song Shuhang thought.

"Gulp~"

Next, that hard thing that tasted like sheep meat was swallowed down and directly went into his belly.

It was quite good. As soon as he swallowed it down, he felt his stomach overflowing with energy and being sated. He wasn't hungry anymore.

That dream about the sumptuous banquet also disappeared without traces.

What a blessing!

Sometimes, even a piece of brown bread was a blessing for a starving man.

At times, it was very easy to make humans happy.

But for some reason, after he swallowed down that object that tasted like sheep meat, Song Shuhang felt as though there was something wrong with his body.

He felt as if his dantian had swelled to the limit... not good, it was still swelling.

Afterward, this feeling was transmitted from his dantian to his whole body.

He felt as though his whole body was about to explode.

There is something wrong!

Song Shuhang suddenly thought of a fearsome possibility...

Chapter 504: As a result, go into space!

July 27th, Saturday. Light rain.

On the windowsill, Yu Jiaojiao was already sleeping. Due to the rainy weather, the air was especially moist, allowing her to sleep very soundly.

Today's dao name was Path-seeking Scholar.

Right at this time, Song Shuhang fiercely woke up from his dream.

He quickly shot a glance at this left hand and saw that he was holding his size-reducing purse.

All of Song Shuhang's magical treasures and talismans were stored inside his size-reducing purse. Therefore, Song Shuhang always kept it close at hand even while he was sleeping.

With that, if something unexpected were to happen, he could immediately take his treasured saber Broken Tyrant out of the purse, as well as talismans and medicinal pills, to promptly enter into battle mode.

At this time, he was tightly holding the size-reducing purse with one hand, while the other was full with several glistening things.

They were spirit beast crystals!

Song Shuhang remembered that he ate something that tasted like sheep meat in the dream earlier... was that 'something' the sheep-type spirit beast crystal?

If that was true, the situation was very bad!

Song Shuhang quickly sat cross-legged and silently operated the <Thirty-Three Divine Beasts' Technique>, making his consciousness sink into his Sea of Qi Dantian.

Just as he expected, there was now the projection of a sheep circling around the embryonic form of his innate true qi together

with the shark.

Moreover, an extra spirit beast vein had appeared above the embryonic form of his innate true qi. Once there were a total of thirty-three spirit beast veins, the pseudo-innate true qi would finally elevate to a new level.

Usually, having an extra projection or spirit beast vein was a good thing.

But here came the problem... four days ago, on July 23rd to be precise, Song Shuhang used the <Whale Swallowing Technique> to eat a shark-type spirit beast crystal. But due to the spirit beast crystal being of the Third Stage rank, Song Shuhang's Sea of Qi Dantian and Dragon Tail Dantian almost exploded.

At the same time, his mental energy also sharply increased due to the <Whale Swallowing Technique>. As a result, his physical body was unable to properly keep up with the rest.

During the last four days, Song Shuhang had diligently practiced, but he was still unable to digest the shark-type spirit beast crystal... and now, there was even the extra energy from the sheep-type spirit beast crystal to cause trouble.

The sheep-type spirit beast crystal was also a spirit beast crystal of the Third Stage rank that he obtained during the cultivators' street market.

In other words, his body was currently in a very dangerous situation.

Whenever he was operating his true qi, he felt as though he was full to the brim, with the meridians and dantian in his body were ready to explode at any moment. The place between his eyebrows was the same. He felt as if his mental energy was about to materialize and tear his head open.

Song Shuhang tried to operate his mental energy to display a small technique like the 'mental detection' skill. However, he felt

as though several needles had pricked his brain; it was very painful.

He had literally eaten until the point of bursting.

This state was life-threatening, and even medicine that could help with digestion was of no use to the current Song Shuhang.

"This is a serious problem!" Song Shuhang muttered to himself. At this time, his weak constitution had become a burden that was slowing down his growth.

If his constitution could keep up with the rest, Song Shuhang could quickly increase his realm just by eating spirit beast crystals.

But if it couldn't, his whole body would explode.

* * *

Song Shuhang immediately swiped on his phone and opened the instant messaging app, getting into the Nine Provinces Number One Group and changing his username to Path-seeking Scholar.

Path-seeking Scholar: "Good morning, Seniors. May I ask if there is a method to quickly increase the strength of one's body?"

The first one to reply was obviously Northern River's Loose Cultivator: "Little friend Shuhang, on the road of cultivation, one has to advance by step by step. After exercising a lot, the strength of your body would naturally increase. You shouldn't think of taking shortcuts all day long, it's harmful towards your practice."

Path-seeking Scholar:
":soft_feather_tears_stream_down_face:"

It was an emote from Soft Feather's own expression package that she had uploaded in the space group. Therefore, aside from \[Senior White's expression package\], there was also a \[Senior Song's expression package\] and a \[Soft Feather's expression package\]. Moreover, there was also that collection of expressions of the fellow daoist of the Nine Provinces Number One Group that

Venerable White had uploaded in the group. However, the pictures of that compilation were still unedited. As soon as Soft Feather had free time, she would prepare an expression package for each person as per agreement.

Path-seeking Scholar: "Senior Northern River, there is something you don't know! (๖) I've been practicing a special cultivation technique recently, the <Whale Swallowing Technique>. After practicing the technique for a few days, the amount of mental energy and true qi inside my body increased too quickly. At this time, my Sea of Qi Dantian and Dragon Tail Dantian are full to the point of bursting. Even my mental energy has far surpassed the limit my body can handle... on the other hand, my constitution seems to be unable to keep up with the rest!"

Due to his body being unable to keep up with the rest, Song Shuhang didn't dare to break through the third dantian, the Dragon Claw Dantian. After all, his mental energy would surely increase again if he were to break through.

And if his constitution couldn't keep up... Song Shuhang would turn into beautiful and bright fireworks.

Northern River's Loose Cultivator: "..."

His mental energy and true qi increased too quickly, and his body is about to explode for that reason? Is this the same plot of those teen novels from several years ago where the main character climbs upon a mountain and digs out several ten thousand years old potatoes and eats them to power up?

Ordinary cultivators didn't have to worry about something of the sort happening. Generally speaking, the constitution of a cultivator far surpassed their mental energy or true qi.

Our little friend Song Shuhang was worrying about a very good thing!

However, Northern River's Loose Cultivator still hastily listed

several methods to strengthen one's constitution. "There are several methods to solve this situation. Each of them has pros and cons. Number one, you can look for a fellow daoist specialized in sealing techniques and have them seal your mental energy and true qi. Then, taking advantage of this period of time where your mental energy and true qi are sealed, you can practice body strengthening cultivation techniques with all your might and strengthen your constitution. Once you have reached your objective, you can untie the seal. However, this method is very dangerous. With your mental energy and true qi sealed, you won't be able to do anything if something unexpected happens."

Song Shuhang silently nodded. This method basically consisted in binding one's hands and feet. He didn't like it too much.

Northern River's Loose Cultivator continued, "Number two, you can look for a secret realm that has the ability to suppress mental energy and true qi and practice there. In some secret realms, it's very difficult to operate one's true qi, and mental energy is likewise suppressed. On the contrary, the strengthening effects on one's body are boosted. The disadvantage of this method is that the suppression is very strong, and the following backlash might be too big. For example, your mental energy, which was suppressed within the secret realm, might suddenly increase once you get out."

Song Shuhang forced a smile. If he were to suffer such a backlash, his body might explode directly! "Senior Northern River, are there other methods?"

"Of course there are. Do you remember when Senior Xian Gong got online a few days ago? Senior Xian Gong has the formula of the 'demodragon medicine' in his hands. With that formula, it's possible to greatly increase the strength of the body of a cultivator. It's effective even on a Sixth Stage True Monarch! Therefore, even if you drink only a small amount of the medicine, the strength of your body will increase by several times!" Northern River's Loose

Cultivator said.

It was surely the best method to solve the situation. He needed but to drink a small amount of medicine and all the problems would go away.

Song Shuhang forced a smile and said, "However, one needs to find a demodragon first, right?"

It had been several years since someone had seen one.

"Yes, that's it," Nothern River's Loose Cultivator replied.

Song Shuhang heaved a sigh.

Amongst these three methods, the first one seemed like the easiest one to execute. Since Fairy Firefly was in still Wenzhou City, he could ask her to put several seals on his body.

However, the best one was of course the one related to the demodragon medicine. Just drinking a mouthful of the medicine would solve everything.

Was it possible that he would have no choice but to bind his hands and feet? He really didn't like this method!

Just as Song Shuhang thought about Fairy Firefly, she immediately appeared in the Nine Provinces Number One Group.

Fairy Firefly: "I just had a good idea, Fellow Daoist Path-seeking Scholar!"

Song Shuhang said, "Fairy Firefly, do tell."

"Aren't you going into space anyway? After I send you to space, you can take off your spacesuit and practice a body strengthening cultivation technique close to the moon. In that area, there are several special energies, rays, and mysterious substances that are very beneficial towards the constitution of cultivators. Your body would be strengthened at an incredibly fast pace," Fairy Firefly replied.

Song Shuhang said, "Taking off my spacesuit and practicing a

body strengthening cultivation technique? Fairy Firefly... I'm only a cultivator of the Second Stage. Without the spacesuit, I would die within seconds."

"And that's the moment your emerald-green kasaya would come in handy. Once you wear it, you can practice in the proximity of the moon without problems. The effects would be truly great, you have to believe me!" Fairy Firefly assured.

At this time, Northern River's Loose Cultivator also added, "What Fairy Firefly said isn't without reason. There are many strange energies in space, and a lot of them have yet to be completely analyzed by us cultivators. For example, monster cultivators like to borrow the moonlight to practice. For instance, there are mysterious forms of energy and substances within the light of the moon that can strengthen the bodies of cultivators and monster cultivators. In the last several hundred years, along with new space explorations, several monster cultivators flew to the moon and practiced there from time to time. The reason for this is that the effects there are better than the ones they would obtain on Earth."

Afterward, he also said, "Therefore, you might as well give this method a try, little friend Shuhang. Of course, you have to constantly pay attention to the state of your body. If you feel that there is something strange, you must immediately stop using this method to practice."

Is it really that effective?

Fairy Firefly struck while the iron was hot. "It's better to make haste. Fellow Daoist Path-seeking Scholar, I'll send you to space today!"

"There is no rush. I was planning to head to Mountain Niuding tomorrow and take a look at how the crew and the director were planning to shoot the movie," Song Shuhang replied. His body wouldn't have any problem within the next few days.

"It doesn't matter. I can leave a clone on Mountain Niuding and

have it capture the whole scene of the crew shooting the movie. Then, I'll directly transmit the data to your phone in space. After you're done with your practice there, you can take a look at the scene of the crew shooting the movie," Fairy Firefly quickly replied.

"..." Song Shuhang.

Why do I feel that Fairy Firefly really wants to send me into space today?

"However, Guoguo is still here at my place. I have to wait for Senior Brother Three Realms to come over and pick him up," Song Shuhang said. He had just returned to Wenzhou City, and there were still many things he had to take care of.

As soon as he finished writing the message, the sound of a notification was transmitted from the instant messaging app.

An account that went with the ID of 'Young Monk Three Realms' sent him a message: "Little friend Shuhang, are you currently in Wenzhou City? I'll arrive in Wenzhou City in one hour. I'm coming to pick little Guoguo up and bring him back."

"..." Song Shuhang.

Song Shuhang replied to Senior Brother Three Realms: "Yes, I'm in Wenzhou City. Senior Brother, you can come over at any time."

"I'll see you in one hour." Senior Brother Three Realms wrote hurriedly.

Song Shuhang held his chin and pondered... was it possible that God had decided to deliver him to space on this very day so that he could play with the stars a little earlier?

Thereupon, he wrote in the Nine Provinces Number One Group: "In that case, let me prepare first. I need to convince my parents first."

Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue: "Eh? Little friend

Shuhang is about to set out? Right in time. Once you're in space, I'll look for you."

Chapter 505: The Jingang token of authority

Song Shuhang said, "Is it to explore the grave of Venerable Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue?"

"Yes. I assure you that it will be a very exciting experience." Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue also added, "Moreover, there is a rather interesting low-level magical treasure that I obtained after drawing lots the last time. Since there is no one that has any use for it, I can give it to you as a gift for our first meeting."

A magical treasure obtained from drawing lots? Is there really such an event in the world of cultivators?

It sounds rather interesting, but where do they hold these raffles?

I should go to one of those raffles after shaking hands with Venerable White~



One hour later, 5 AM.

Senior Brother Three Realms arrived at Song Shuhang's place right on time.

At this time, the small monk Guoguo was still sleeping...

Since everyone in the house was sleeping, Song Shuhang quietly allowed Senior Brother Three Realms to come in. "Senior Brother Three Realms, good morning."

"It's pretty late, it's 5 AM already." Senior Brother Three Realms had an exhausted expression on his face as he said, "This time around, I helped my teacher complete a very difficult task. While I was out, I decided to pick little Guoguo as well and bring him back... right, Guoguo should have given Junior Brother Shuhang quite a bit of trouble, right?"

"Ahaha, it's fine," Song Shuhang said with a smile. Aside from when he teamed up with Doudou and caused him some trouble, Guoguo was well-behaved and quite lovely.

Senior Brother Three Realms gently pushed open the door of Guoguo's room and picked him up, placing him on the flying sword.

His actions were very gentle, and Guoguo didn't realize anything. He was still sleeping soundly.

"In that case, Little Guoguo and I will take our leave. Oh, right. My teacher told me to give you this." In the next moment, Senior Brother Three Realms threw a small wooden token with a bald-headed buddhist warrior carved on it to Song Shuhang.

"What is this?" Song Shuhang asked in puzzlement.

"It's the Jingang token of authority. It will allow you to enter the 'Jingang Immortal Cave'. Junior Brother Shuhang, you should know that the <Basic Buddhist Fist Technique> is a cultivation technique that Senior Medicine Master and my teacher obtained while they were exploring the Jingang Temple together, right? Back then, my teacher got his hands on the cultivation techniques of the Jingang Temple, as well as the Jingang Immortal Cave that the expert of the temple left behind.

That's not all; there is also a heart-tempering ancient well inside the Jingang Immortal Cave, as well as information about the understandings that that expert of the Jingang Temple had in regards to the <Basic Buddhist Fist Technique>. My teacher said that there is an advanced version of the <Basic Buddhist Fist Technique> concealed in the immortal cave as well—the <Demon Subduing Buddhist Fist Technique>. It's a very powerful fist technique with eight styles in total, and it goes from the Second Stage to the Fifth Stage rank." Senior Brother Three Realms also added, "This Jingang token of authority is the key to enter the immortal cave. However, even with the token, you still need to pay

six spirit stones of the Fourth Stage as a fee."

An advanced cultivation technique was concealed within the Jingang Immortal Cave, and like those four pictures inside the Chu Family, one could inherit it if they could comprehend the content.

"In other words, one can enter the Jingang Immortal Cave as long as they have this Jingang token of authority and six spirit stones of the Fourth Stage?" Song Shuhang was now clear.

"Yes, that's it," Senior Brother Three Realms said with a smile.

"However, Senior Brother, I don't have any spirit stones with me at this time... and I even owe Venerable White several stones of the Fourth Stage." Song Shuhang forced a smile.

"Don't worry. Which cultivator doesn't lack spirit stones? Ahaha," Senior Brother Three Realms said with a smile. "Anyway, it's still too early for you to enter the Jingang Immortal Cave. We'll talk about it once you've gathered six spirit stones of the Fourth Stage. After all, there is no restriction time-wise. As long as you have the token of authority and the necessary spirit stones, you can enter at any time."

After saying this much, Senior Brother Three Realms waved his hand and soared into the sky, carrying the still sleeping Guoguo away.



Around 6 AM.

As the members of Song Shuhang's family woke up one after another, another guest came to visit him.

It was Chu Family's Chu Chu.

Chu Chu and the other disciple of the Chu Family arrived in Wenzhou City last night. But since it was already dark by the time they arrived, they decided to rent a room next to Song Shuhang's house. Afterward, they arranged a few formations and whatnot,

getting ready to properly protect Li Yinzhu.

After the sun had risen, Chu Chu headed toward Song Shuhang's house to meet him.

The other disciple of the Chu Family hid in the dark. It was an intelligent female disciple that had a lot of experience when it came to handling such matters. It was someone that the ancestor of the Chu Family selected carefully.

The ancestor ordered her to become Chu Chu's shadow and protect Song Shuhang and Li Yinzhu.

Just as Song Shuhang opened the door for Chu Chu, Mama Song's voice was transmitted from behind. "Shuhang, where did the little monk go? How come I don't see him around?"

Mama Song came out of Guoguo's room while still wearing pajamas. Immediately after, she saw Chu Chu who was standing at the doorstep of her house.

It was another beautiful girl with very long black hair. Even the short skirt she was wearing was black, just like her black silk stockings and black high-heels. Everything she was wearing was black. However, her short-sleeved shirt exposed some of her skin which was as white as snow.

Had her Shuhang become popular with girls after he had finally opened his eyes? Pretty girls were visiting Shuhang one after another, Mama Song was dazzled!

Song Shuhang turned around and said, "Ma, Guoguo's elder brother came here around 5 AM and picked him up. Since you guys were still sleeping, I didn't disturb you."

"Is that so? Anyway, who is that miss?" Then, Mama Song said warmly, "Shuhang, don't stand there on the doorstep like an idiot, you're being impolite! Quickly ask the lady to come in."

Song Shuhang turned around and smiled at Chu Chu, somewhat embarrassed.

"Aunt, hello. My name is Chu Chu, and I'm Shuhang's friend,
"Chu Chu said very politely.



Although he ended up being busy until noon, Song Shuhang finally managed to settle all the various matters at home.

Then, he mustered his courage and got ready to tell Mama Song that he was going on another trip with his friend. He believed that Mama Song would surely object to him leaving home again.

After all, when he went on a trip earlier, the plane crashed. His parents were really worried.

But he didn't expect that Mama Song and Papa Song would agree to his proposal without any complaint.

Moreover, Papa Song even secretly gave him 3000 RMB to spend on the trip.

Song Shuhang looked at Li Yin Zhu, who was closely following him, and Chu Chu who was also closely following him.

Mother and father didn't misunderstand, right?



Song Shuhang stuffed whatever he could think of into his size-reducing purse. Tablet, phone, laptop, portable console, as well as medicinal pills, talismans, the silver dragon puppet, and so on...

Afterward, he headed toward the place where he had agreed to meet Fairy Firefly.

Fairy Firefly had been waiting there for a long time already. When she saw him come over, she said happily, "Little friend Shuhang, I've prepared something for you. It's a reinforced space capsule. You can rest in there during your one-month trip to space. There is also a pretty good spacesuit manufactured with advanced technology inside."

After saying this much, she pointed her finger toward a square-

shaped box on one side.

"Fairy Firefly, why do I find the box pretty similar to the body of a car?" Song Shuhang said. Except for the wheels, which were missing, its shape was the same as that of a compressed car.

"You guess it right. It's a modified car. Inside, there are enough fasting pills to last for a month, as well as a few other interesting small gadgets that I hope will come in handy while you're in space," Fairy Firefly said. "Anyway, it's late already! Quickly enter the capsule."

Song Shuhang said hurriedly, "Fairy Firefly, can I bring some people with me?"

Yu Jiaojiao also happened to want to go to the moon. She was a monster cultivator, and practicing close to the moon was very beneficial to her.

Li Yinzhu didn't want to leave Song Shuhang's side. As long as she opened her eyes and Song Shuhang wasn't within a range of ten meters, she would start panicking.

Li Yinzhu and Song Shuhang had to stay together. On the other hand, Chu Chu was in charge of looking after Li Yinzhu, and they couldn't leave her behind all alone.

"It shouldn't be a problem to send several people together. After all, Venerable White didn't limit the number of people that could go to space. As far as I'm concerned, you can bring as many people as you want with you. However, the amount of fasting pills is enough for one person only," Fairy Firefly said.

"It's not a problem. I have a lot of fasting pills with me," Chu Chu said at this time. She had enough fasting pills for both her and Li Yinzhu.

"In that case, there is no problem. Guys, enter the capsule now. I'll activate the technique," Fairy Firefly said.

Chu Chu and Li Yinzhu entered the 'space capsule'...

Then, it was Song Shuhang's turn.

As soon as Song Shuhang approached the 'space capsule', his face stiffened.

Fairy Firefly had prepared the space capsule for him alone. Therefore, the space inside wasn't too much.

After Chu Chu hugged Li Yinzhu and entered the 'space capsule', they occupied almost 60% of the space inside.

Fitting Song Shuhang wasn't really a problem. But if he were to force his way in, the resulting scene might be subject to censorship.

Therefore, Song Shuhang turned his head around and said to Fairy Firefly, "Fairy Firefly, don't you have a bigger 'space capsule'?"

"Nope~ I only have this," Fairy Firefly replied. It was something she had prepared at the last minute.

"What can be done in this case?"

"If you really don't want to enter the capsule... wear your spacesuit. I'll send both you and the space capsule into space together. Don't worry, I'll make sure that you end up there together and don't separate. Your security won't be a problem, either. I've arranged a defensive formation around the spacesuit and the space capsule. Even if you were to crash into a meteorite, nothing would happen to you," Fairy Firefly assured.

I have yet to set out and you're already raising a death flag!

Three minutes later, Song Shuhang grabbed two chains and chained himself to the 'space capsule'.

Fairy Firefly said, "Are you ready?"

"Senior, how are we supposed to reach space?" Song Shuhang asked.

"Relax, it's a very safe method. Look at this powerful move of mine!" Fairy Firefly activated a seal and a burst of power spread from her body.

"You'll change into rockets and fly upward with the power of repulsion! Feel the joy of flying into space!"

"Pew~"

The space capsule quickly shot toward the sky. To be precise, it was affected by a powerful repulsive strength and mercilessly banished from mother earth.

As a consequence, the space capsule was shot upward and got higher and higher.

The joy of flying into space? Inside the spacesuit, Song Shuhang had tears streaming down his face.

Flying into space is everything but a joyful event!

At this time, he felt as though he was falling into an endless abyss. While endlessly falling, he was subject to a tremendous zero gravity feeling.

The level of his acrophobia had also increased... a level nine acrophobia wasn't a dream anymore.

In the meantime.

Next to Song Shuhang's house, inside Daoist Priest Cloudy Mist's home.

"I've waited for a long time~ But now, the day has finally come~" Daoist Priest Cloudy Mist was looking at his image reflected in the mirror while trying to squeeze out the most brilliant smile he could.

"Yesterday, I determined that that fellow Song Shuhang had indeed returned home. Today, I'll pay him a visit and freeloader for good the enlightenment stone." Daoist Priest Cloudy Mist held two

small gift boxes in his hands and swaggered toward Song Shuhang's house.

Chapter 506: The Soul Devouring Demonic Gourd

Mama Song welcomed Daoist Priest Cloudy Mist and had him go to the living room. When she saw that he was holding two gift boxes in his hands, somewhat upset, she said, "Ah! Mister Yun Wu, how come you brought over some gifts again? Really... I already told you a long time ago that we were now neighbors and that there was no need for such formalities. Moreover, you are Song Shuhang's friend as well."

"Hehe, it's just a small token of kindness, nothing more. Miss Song, you don't have to be so formal, either." Daoist Priest Cloudy Mist slowly drank a mouthful of Spirit Green Tea and let out a sigh.

Soon after, he asked the key question, "Miss Song, is Shuhang at home?"

After entering the house, he didn't sense Song Shuhang's aura or the enlightenment stone. Where had that boy run to?

"Ah, it's really unlucky, but Song Shuhang went on a date with a girl," Mama Song said with a smile.

When the matter about her son dating was brought up, she felt she could keep discussing it forever.

"Blablabla~" Mama Song and Daoist Priest Cloudy Mist chatted for almost an hour.

Daoist Priest Cloudy Mist bitterly swallowed the tea, and an agonized expression appeared in his eyes... F*ck! Shuhang, this bastard, just came back but he already left for a one-month long trip with a girl!

What the hell?

Do you think I won't flip the table?! ㄟ(ˊ▣ˋ)ㄟ

Each time he comes back, he immediately goes away! And each time he leaves home, it's for a one-month trip! Literally worse than menstruations!

Daoist Priest Cloudy Mist didn't even know how he had returned to his room.

At this time, there was only one thought in his mind: ...Beep, beep, beep, beep~



Meanwhile, Song Shuhang was still flying upward.

A formation was engraved on one side of the spacesuit. During the journey, the formation changed into a defensive layer that wrapped and protected him while he was traveling through the atmosphere.

Yu Jiaojiao was currently hiding inside his safety helmet.

But right at this time, Song Shuhang's phone suddenly rang. Therefore, he had to squeeze it into his safety helmet with much difficulty.

After taking a look at the screen, he discovered that it was Fairy Firefly calling. Wasn't Fairy Firefly operating the magical technique that delivered them to space? Why did she suddenly call him?

Is it possible that there were problems with the magical technique?

Song Shuhang was worried and quickly picked up the phone.

Fairy Firefly's voice was transmitted from the other side. "Hello, Shuhang. You are about to pass through the atmosphere, and the phone will lose signal for the time being. Get ready for the impact."

"Sure, Fairy Firefly," Song Shuhang said weakly.

"Are you enjoying flying into space?" Fairy Firefly also asked.

"..." Song Shuhang.

This made him recall that ridiculous TV program called 'Are you happy?'. Anyway, no. I'm not happy at all!

"Ahahaha, have fun. Let us see each other one month later, little friend Shuhang," Fairy Firefly said as she hung the phone.

Soon after, Song Shuhang and the rudimentary 'space capsule' finally barged into space.

* * *

They, too, didn't know how long they had flown.

This time, Song Shuhang and the others were directly heading toward the position of the moon.

Since he was bored, Song Shuhang suddenly asked, "Jiaojiao, are there cultivators on the moon?"

It was a good thing that he'd brought several people with him on this trip. At least there was someone he could talk to!

"In the past, there were the bases of several cultivation schools on the moon, as well as the strongholds of several monster cultivators. However, they moved away one after another during the last hundred years," Yu Jiaojiao replied.

Song Shuhang asked out of curiosity, "Eh? Why did they move away?"

"First, ordinary people have advanced to the point of becoming capable of exploring space. Their satellites and spaceships can already reach the moon and the other planets of the solar system. Second, the natural resources on the moon have almost been completely extracted. Therefore, cultivators moved away one after another. Only a few secret strongholds belonging to monster cultivators are left. With that, monster cultivators that come to the moon to practice have a place where they can reside during their journey," Yu Jiaojiao replied.

"In other words, it's possible that we might meet cultivators and monster cultivators when we reach the moon, right?" Song Shuhang asked.

Yu Jiaojiao replied, "I fear it won't be that easy. After all, the moon is very big. Each year, only a few thousand cultivators and monster cultivators would go to the moon to practice. Moreover, these several thousand people would go there over the span of twelve months. Therefore, the chance of meeting someone on the surface of the moon isn't that high."

"It's a good thing that we won't meet other cultivators," Song Shuhang said. His current strength was too low, and if he were to meet another cultivator and get into a fight with them, it would be quite disadvantageous for him.

After pondering for a moment, Song Shuhang turned his body around and looked at the space capsule.

On the edge of the door of the capsule, Li Yinzhu's small face was glued to the glass, and her big, silvery eyes were gazing at Song Shuhang without blinking. It almost felt as though Song Shuhang was more interesting than the starry sky in her eyes.

On the other hand, Chu Chu's view of the world had crumbled.

'Is it so easy to go into space?' This thought was continuously reverberating inside her mind.

Who could have thought it would be so easy...

But after pondering for a moment, she thought of another problem... how was she supposed to breathe?

She didn't know the Turtle Breathing Technique and hadn't reached the Fourth Stage Innate Realm, either.

And even if she were to learn the Turtle Breathing Technique and practice to a very high level, she would still need to breathe several times within a month...

Chu Chu realized that she hadn't prepared properly while rushing into space.

I won't die, right...?

* * *

Song Shuhang and the space capsule kept flying and flying.

Then, an object suddenly flashed past their eyes at a very high speed.

It looked like a sword light, and its speed was extremely fast. Moreover, it wasn't following a fixed trajectory but was flying about haphazardly. The sword light was carrying something alongside it. It was a barely visible burgundy object.

This sword light gave Song Shuhang a very familiar feeling.

"F*ck, isn't that one of Senior White's disposable flying swords?" Song Shuhang called out.

However, what was that burgundy object that he was having trouble seeing?

Just as Song Shuhang was deep thoughts, several figures also sped past them, following after the sword light at full speed.

Each of the figures was using their own special powers and skills.

Someone was riding a flying sword.

Someone was riding a rosy cloud.

Someone was driving an immortal boat.

Someone was wearing strange shoes and running in the middle of space...

They were using all sorts of different methods, but each and every one of them was incredibly fast.

Amongst these figures were cultivators, monster cultivators, and even some cultivators that had the appearance of half-humans and half-monsters. Their cultivation level was at least of the Fourth

Stage, if not above. If they wanted to survive in space for a long period of time without breathing or worrying about the damage space could cause to their bodies, they needed a cultivation of the Fifth Realm or above.

Unexpectedly, so many cultivators were madly running after a sword light!

What was that thing on the sword light? What could possibly attract the attention of so many cultivators and monster cultivators, pushing them to chase it with all their might?

Song Shuhang pondered for a moment and tried to recall to mind which objects had Senior White sent to space lately.

There was a fridge, a TV, an electric rice-cooker, and all sorts of electronic products commonly found in houses.

But were these things really worth the time of these cultivators?

Or perhaps they looked at the incredible power of the sword light, as well as to the terrifying sword qi it was emitting, and thought that the object it was carrying was also a precious treasure?

Is that the reason they started to madly chase after it?

If they were to get their hands on the sword light with much difficulty just to discover that the 'treasure' they were looking for was a broken fridge... wouldn't the mind of these cultivators collapse?

For some reason, Song Shuhang noticed that he was really looking forward to seeing such a scene.

I should stop! It's bad to have such wicked thoughts!



"It's a gourd!" Just as Song Shuhang was in deep thoughts, Li Yinzhu's voice was transmitted beside his ear. She used the secret sound transmission.

Song Shuhang was already a cultivator of the Second Stage. Therefore, he could also learn the 'secret sound transmission' skill. However, he didn't have the chance up until now, and there was no one to teach him either.

Song Shuhang asked, "A gourd? A burgundy gourd?"

Song Shuhang felt that he had seen such a thing before...

If one were to mention a burgundy gourd, the first thing that would come to their mind would be the seven Calabash Brothers, right?

No, that's not it.

What else there was aside from the seven Calabash Brothers...? That golden-red gourd from Journey to the West? The same one that the monster held while saying to Sun Wukong: ' Monkey, I'll call your name, do you dare to reply 1 ?'...?

* * *

Just as he was thinking, Li Yin Zhu's voice echoed once more in his ears. "There is someone ahead!"

Song Shuhang immediately returned to his senses and looked ahead.

Two figures were quickly approaching the space capsule from far off.

The two figures were wearing black daoist robes and had the word 'Limitless' embroidered on their clothes.

The two men stopped in front of Song Shuhang and coldly looked at him.

A cultivator of the Second Stage?

Does he want to die? He is only at this level and he unexpectedly dared to rush into space? This guy seems tired of living...

The man on the left said coldly, "Are you also here to steal the

Soul Devouring Demonic Gourd?"

The secret sound transmission was very useful in space.

"The Soul Devouring Demonic Gourd?" Song Shuhang furrowed his brows and said, "Are you talking about that thing on the sword light? I didn't come here for that."

Song Shuhang couldn't use the secret sound transmission. Luckily, the opposite party was able to read his lips and understand what he said.

"Hmph, it's better this way. That thing isn't something a cultivator of the Second Stage like yourself should think of. Be a good boy and get out of here," the man on the left said coldly.

After saying this much, he turned his body around and prepared to chase after the sword light.

But right at this time, the eyes of the man standing on the right lit up. He carefully looked at Song Shuhang and said, "I'm not mistaken... it's really him!"

"Hmm?" the man on the left blurted out.

"It's Stressed by a Mountain of Books! That small cultivator that caused Senior Brother Young Master Hai to suffer a loss. Hehe, I didn't expect to meet him in such a place." An excited expression appeared on the face of the man on the right.

The matter about Young Master Hai and Su Clan's Seven clashing had created a great disturbance, and a lot of people in the Limitless Demon Sect knew about it. Young Master Hai also didn't try to hide it. Therefore, the people in the sect had openly discussed it.

If we consider that these two in black robes were close followers of Young Master Hai's faction, they were even more informed about Stressed by a Mountain of Books and his looks.

If we can catch this guy and hand him over to Senior Brother Young Master Hai... The man on the right secretly accumulated his

innate true qi and locked Song Shuhang.

❄ ❄ ❄

When he saw the eyes of the opposite party change, Song Shuhang knew that the situation had taken a wrong turn.

Li Yinzhu's voice was also transmitted at this time. "Disciples of the Limitless Demon Sect, Fourth Stage Realm."

"As expected, it's them," Song Shuhang said... no matter where he went, he would always bump into these guys.

Chapter 507: A group of cultivators demanding their payment

The two men in front of them were cultivators of the Fourth Stage. After sensing their aura, Yu Jiaojiao determined that they were cultivators that had just entered the Fourth Stage Realm.

The strength of Song Shuhang's party wasn't inferior to the other side. Yu Jiaojiao was a monster cultivator of the Fourth Stage, and there was another cultivator of the Fourth Stage inside the space capsule, Li Yinzhu. If we consider that Song Shuhang had various talismans and magical treasures, as well as other objects, with him, his side had a higher chance of coming on top if the two groups were to clash.

But given the ability and rich background of the Limitless Demon Sect, perhaps these two cultivators of the Fourth Stage were only the vanguard, and there were other powerful cultivators of their sect rushing over here...

They couldn't be careless.

Moreover, their party had just entered space and had yet to adapt to the environment. Therefore, they might be at a disadvantage if they started to fight immediately.

Such being the case, should they go for a tactical retreat first? They could quietly follow these guys soon after and see if they had other companions. They could also spy on their attacking methods and obtain detailed information about their fighting capacity and so on.

After all, if you knew yourself and the enemy, you would always be victorious!

If they had the opportunity, it was a pretty good idea to make a surprise attack as well.

Song Shuhang grabbed his size-reducing purse and prepared to

take the silver dragon puppet out. He was planning to use the puppet to get away from here and avoid clashing with these guys head-on.

But right at this time, Yu Jiaojiao excited voice was transmitted beside his ear. "Shuhang, open the safety helmet and let me out. I'll give them a lesson!"

Yu Jiaojiao hadn't had any opportunity to fight after advancing to the Fourth Stage Realm. Therefore, she had been itching to get into action for a while. Moreover, she had the bloodline of a flood dragon and managed to jump through the dragon gate with much difficulty, gaining the ability to assume a half-human and half-fish form. Her fighting capacity was quite a bit higher than ordinary cultivators of the Fourth Stage.

At this time, she felt as though she could fight three ordinary cultivators of the Fourth Stage all alone!

At the same time, Li Yinzhu's voice was also transmitted beside Song Shuhang's ear. "Careful, the enemy attacked!"

A pitch-black flying sword quietly appeared next to Song Shuhang's back, launching its attack in the same instant Li Yinzhu said those words.

The pitch-black flying sword was concealed very well... and only in the instant it launched its attack did the sword qi explode.

"I'll be in charge of the defense!" Yu Jiaojiao said. Just as she said these words, she had already arranged two layers of defense on Song Shuhang's body.

"Riiip!"

The flying sword stabbed Song Shuhang's back.

The corner of the mouth of that disciple of the Limitless Demon Sect standing on the right rose and turned into a smile... it was a success!

His pitch-black flying sword was a special sword specialized in assassinations. There were several types of magical runes engraved on it that added properties such as 'armor piercing', 'anti-evasion', sharpening', and so on.

An ordinary defensive technique was unable to ward off the attacks of his black sword. Therefore, he was confident that the sword would destroy the two layers of defense on Song Shuhang's body.

But in the next moment, the smile on the face of the disciple stiffened.

Just as the pitch-black flying sword stealthily approached Song Shuhang and stabbed him, it was stopped by an invisible barrier before it could even reach the two layers of defense protecting Shuhang. No matter how much it tried, it was unable to break through the invisible barrier.

This invisible barrier wasn't something that Yu Jiaojiao had arranged.

It was a field of powerful repulsive strength, and the pitch-black flying sword was blocked by it. The flying sword emitted a long cry, and the blade of the sword unexpectedly started to bend.

"It's Fairy Firefly's repulsive strength... are these the lingering effects of the mysterious technique she used earlier?" Song Shuhang immediately understood what was happening.

Earlier, Fairy Firefly used a mysterious technique that generated a powerful repulsive strength. The repulsive strength was powerful enough to directly deliver them into space from the surface of the Earth, making them arrive in the proximity of the moon. Therefore, one could well imagine how terrifying the strength generated by her mysterious technique was!

Even if only the residues of the mysterious technique were now left on the body of Song Shuhang and the others, they were more

than enough to ward off the attack of the pitch-black flying sword. It wasn't all; the remaining power even rebounded the sword!

The pitch-black was forcefully turned around and repelled by the repulsive strength. In the end, it flew away and pierced a meteorite a kilometer away. Even its master wouldn't be able to retrieve it within a short period of time.

"It's a good opportunity! Shuhang, quickly open the safety helmet. I'm going out! Look how I beat these guys!" Yu Jiaojiao shouted.



Unfortunately, Yu Jiaojiao didn't have the opportunity to enter into action once again.

It was because someone else decided to meddle...

In the instant the pitch-black flying sword was repelled, fifteen figures rushed over from a distant place.

Each of the figures had bulging muscles and was more than two meters tall. Just by standing there, these tall and strong men were capable of making the onlookers feel a lot of pressure.

They positioned themselves between Song Shuhang and the disciples of the Limitless Demon Sect. Afterward, they swiftly shot a glance at Song Shuhang's group, but their vision finally fell on the bodies of the two disciples of the Limitless Demon Sect.

"There is no mistake. It's them... they are disciples of the Limitless Demon Sect," a man wearing a leather armor said in a grave tone after shooting a glance at the 'Limitless' word embroidered on the black daoist robes of the other party.

Just as the voice of the stout man wearing the leather armor faded, the other fourteen men clenched their fists and surrounded the two disciples of the Limitless Demon Sect.

It felt as though a group of brown bears had surrounded two

pitiful lambs.

The two disciples of the Limitless Demon Sect were dumbfounded. They were unable to understand what was happening!

In the next moment, the fifteen men quickly took out banners and flags from their clothes, putting them together and unfurling them.

Returning money that is owed is the right thing to do!

Life is hard and full of hardships. Return us our hard-earned money, Limitless Demon Sect!

Ren Baodong of the Limitless Demon Sect owes us 50,000 spirit stones of the Fourth Stage. Return us our hard-earned money!

Return us our HARD-EARNED money!

Give us a way to survive. Return us our hard-earned money!

We're equal, fair, lawful, patriotic, professional, honest, friendly, democratic, civilized, and gentle... we only want our hard-earned money!

At the same time, there was also the magnified version of a 'contract'.

It was a contract of the world of cultivators... from the looks of it, a disciple of the Limitless Demon Sect hired these fifteen men for a total of 50,000 spirit stones of the Fourth Stage. He hired them to chase and intercept that sword light madly dashing about in space and the treasure above. The time limit was seven days.

Whether or not the treasure was retrieved, the disciple of the Limitless Demon Sect was supposed to pay them the spirit stones after seven days.

Within these seven days, the fifteen stout man had to intercept

and stop the sword light at least five times, giving that disciple of the Limitless Demon Sect called Ren Baodong an opportunity to seize the treasure on the sword light.

The fifteen stout men were professionals. Therefore, they gave that disciple of the Limitless Demon Sect a total of nine opportunities to seize the treasure within those seven days.

But in the end, that disciple of the Limitless Demon Sect was still unable to subdue the treasure...

The fault lay with him and not with them. Unfortunately, he wasn't too lucky~

As the deadline of the contract approached, the disciple of the Limitless Demon Sect quietly disappeared. It seemed that he had no intention of paying that fee of 50,000 spirit stones of the Fourth Stage.

It was one of those bad cases where their employer ran without paying the money. However, the fifteen men didn't take it to heart. After all, they were also specialized in demanding payment.



After getting a gist of what was happening, the two disciples of the Limitless Demon Sect furrowed their brows and said, "Ren Baodong? Sorry, but we don't know anyone with that name."

The Limitless Demon Sect was a huge sect and had tens of thousands of disciples, as well as numerous branches. Therefore, it was impossible for them to know each disciple of the sect.

The stout man wearing the leather armor sneered, "Hehe, I don't care if you know him or not. Quietly hand over those 50,000 spirit stones of the Fourth Stage. Otherwise, don't blame us fifteen brothers for being rude."

The disciple of the Limitless Demon Sect standing on the right said coldly, "That's impossible. Why should we give you the spirit stones that Ren Baodong owes you? It's the one that owes the

money that should return it! If you want those spirit stones back, go look for Ren Baodong! You can forget about getting any spirit stone from me!"

The face of the man wearing the leather armor darkened as he said, "Hehe, so... you don't intend to pay us?"

"You don't want to return us the spirit stones? If you owe money, it's only natural to return it! If you don't, how can you even be considered a man!" another stout man said as he clenched his fists.

"Since they have soft and fair skin... in the worst case, we can tie them up and sell them to that sect of female cultivators, the 'Moonlight Jade Maiden Alliance'. We should be able to sell them for several tens of thousands of spirit stones of the Fourth Stage! We might even make a small profit."

"Wasn't someone from the 'White Robe Demon Sect' looking for male cultivators with fair and tender skin the last time? Perhaps we can sell these two disciples of the Limitless Demon Sect for a high price there."

The fifteen stout man started to make all sorts of comments.

That disciple of the Limitless Demon Sect on the right was thoroughly enraged. He was a proud disciple of the Limitless Demon Sect, who had ever dared to shame him like this?

"You are courting death!" the disciple of the Limitless Demon Sect roared as he activated a seal. In the next moment, he stretched out his hand and launched a lightning technique.

The ray of lightning changed into a sharp spear that was making crackling noises. Its power was incredible, and it directly shot toward that man wearing the leather standing in the front!

"Bah!" The man wearing the leather armor snorted and clenched his right hand. Afterward, the muscles on his body started to move up and down as though they were alive.

Soon after, he stretched out his hand and grabbed the sharp spear

directly, crushing it to pieces with the strength of his hand.

A bodily cultivator!

Just like Dharma King Creation, this stout man wearing the leather armor had decided to walk the path of a bodily cultivator. As a consequence, his physical body was extremely powerful. Although he was only a cultivator of the Fourth Stage, his body was already stronger than a cultivator's of the Fifth Stage Realm.

After breaking the sharp spear to pieces with his bare hands, the stout man wearing the leather armor disappeared and reappeared in front of that disciple of the Limitless Demon Sect on the right, punching him in the abdomen.

The disciple of the Limitless Demon Sect immediately arranged a defensive barrier. However, the strength of the punch of the stout man penetrated the barrier, hitting the body of the opposite party.

Although the barrier wasn't broken, the disciple of the Limitless Demon Sect squatted down and assumed a fetal position, foam coming out of his mouth. He seemed to be in great pain.

"Not only does this guy that not want to return the money, he even dares to curse and attack others. I really hate death-courting garbage like you!" The stout man wearing the leather armor took his fist back with a cold expression on his face.

After seeing that his companion was instantly KO'ed, the other disciple of the Limitless Demon Sect calmed down.

The corner of his eye twitched as he tried his best to calm himself down. "Wait a moment, gentlemen. The one that owes you those spirit stones is Ren Baodong. Therefore, you should look for him. What is the point of looking for us?"

The stout man wearing the leather armor clenched his pot-sized fist and said, "Why do you think it's useless? You are both disciples of the Limitless Demon Sect. You are from the same faction as that Ren Baodong. If we can't find Ren Baodong, we'll obviously look

for you guys. Anyway, enough with this nonsense, return us the spirit stones!

One of the nearby stout men added, "According to the agreement, there is the interest rate as well... wait, no. It's the penalty for breaching the contract. The payment is 50,000 spirit stones of the Fourth Stage, as well as additional 500 spirit stones for each day the fee is not paid. It's been four days already... so it's 52,000 spirit stones of the Fourth Stage now!"

"You damned loan sharks!" the disciple of the Limitless Demon Sect standing on the left said as he clenched his teeth.

"Bah, if I were a loan shark, I would charge you 10%, if not 50%, as a daily penalty for breaching the contract," the stout man wearing the leather armor said disdainfully. "My brothers and I are famous figures in the world of cultivators. We are professionals, and a group demanding our pay in a legit way. Don't lump us together with those amateurish loan sharks!"

Chapter 508: Go, Mount Tai Seal... F*ck, wrong target!

"Even when it comes to demanding the payment, we are professional!" the man wearing the leather armor said complacently.

Song Shuhang, Yu Jiaojiao, Li Yinzhu, and Chu Chu looked at this magnificent scene of 'demanding one's payment' that was taking place right in front of them.

How could one say it... well, this world was truly unpredictable!

No one knew what might happen in the next moment!

Perhaps one was in heaven a second earlier, and they would end up in a hell a second after... just like the two disciples of the Limitless Demon Sect who were the ones doing the hunting a moment ago but turned into prey a moment later.

However, it was precisely the impossibility to predict the future and the myriad possibilities lying ahead that made life so beautiful and colorful.

"This is life!" Song Shuhang sighed with emotion.

The only thing he lacked now was a good cup of tea to sip on.

Yu Jiaojiao said regretfully, "It was quite unfortunate. They snatched away our prey."

"Actually, I think that it was a pretty good thing. I get the feeling that we would have been involved with this scene too if you had made your move earlier," Song Shuhang said with a smile.

Moreover, they didn't know if the two disciples of the Limitless Demon Sect had helpers or not.

Yu Jiaojiao rolled her eyes and said, "Since there is nothing else to do, let's be on our way. We are pretty close to the moon

already."

"Agreed +1," Li Yinzhu said.

"Agreed +2," Chu Chu also said via secret sound transmission.

"Agreed +3." Song Shuhang stretched out his hand while wearing that cumbersome spacesuit and waved it.

There was a 'driving force formation' engraved on the spacesuit that allowed Song Shuhang to freely move in space. Since Song Shuhang couldn't ride a flying sword, he would only be able to casually float in space without this driving force formation.

Using his silver dragon puppet would consume spirit stones, and the current Song Shuhang was completely broke. Therefore, he could use the puppet only at critical times.

Just as Song Shuhang operated the formation and prepared to leave, that man wearing the leather armor turned his head around and waved his hand at him, saying, "Kid, which sect do you belong to?"

"I'm not from the Limitless Demon Sect," Song Shuhang said hurriedly and waved his hands. He didn't want them to go after his spirit stones as well. He was a poor wretch without any stone at this time.

He had to hope that the opposite party could read his lips... moreover, he had to learn the secret sound transmission skill as soon as possible. It was too troublesome to communicate with others without that.

The man wearing the leather armor brightly smiled and said, "That's a given. It only took me a glance to determine that you weren't a person of the Limitless Demon Sect. Like I said, we are professionals when it comes to demanding payment!"

"..." Song Shuhang said, "I'm a loose cultivator. I don't belong to any sect."

"A loose cultivator? Good luck, little brother!" After hearing that Song Shuhang was a loose cultivator, the tone of the man wearing the leather armor became much kinder, and he even called him 'little brother'. After all, everyone knew that the life of a loose cultivator was very difficult.

After saying this much, he stretched out his hand and gave Song Shuhang a metal card.

Song Shuhang reached out and grabbed the card. After a quick look, he discovered that there was a metallic flower carved on it, as well a golden ox-head below.

Huang Guanhua, leader of the 'Heavy Metal Squad'. Code name: Taurus.

We are a squad specialized in bodyguarding, escorting, treasure-hunting, demanding the payment of debts, and so on. We are the most professional experts on the scene.

Telephone number: **, WeChat ID: *****, Email: *****

Is this a business card?

"Little brother, if you need something, remember to contact us! We are professionals, in every sense of the word!" The man wearing the leather armor gave the thumbs up with a complacent look on his face.

"Ahaha, sure, sure." Song Shuhang forced a smile. Soon after, he operated the 'driving force formation' on the spacesuit and quickly fluttered toward the moon.

As they were leaving, they could still hear the screams of the two disciples of the Limitless Demon Sect. Of course, it was nothing more than an auditory hallucination, because their screams couldn't possibly travel through vacuum.

A squad specialized in demanding payment...?

Song Shuhang put the business card away. Perhaps if the remuneration was good and the pay was on time, he could happily cooperate with this squad of muscular men?

"Those were some scary professionals," Yu Jiaojiao summarized.

Song Shuhang nodded in agreement and asked, "Jiaojiao, did you leave a mark on that pitch-black flying sword in the end?"

"Don't worry, it was a success," Yu Jiaojiao said with a smile. "The mark I left is well hidden, and I can guarantee that the opposite party won't find it."

Song Shuhang was relieved... those fifteen muscular men didn't seem like those demonic cultivators that completely disregarded the lives of humans. From the looks of it, they would release the two disciples of the Limitless Demon Sect as long as they got their spirit stones back.

If that was the case, those two disciples of the Limitless Demon Sect would surely look for something, or someone, to let out their pent-up anger.

Song Shuhang felt that he was a pretty good outlet to release their anger...

If the two disciples of the Limitless Demon Sect were to successfully shake off the fifteen stout men, there was an 80% probability—if not higher—that they would look for Song Shuhang.

Therefore, he had to prepare against them.

Thus, he told Yu Jiaojiao to leave a mark on the flying sword so that it could act as a signal. If the two disciples of the Limitless Demon Sect were to chase after Song Shuhang's group, they would be able to detect them and prepare for the battle.



Twenty minutes later.

Song Shuhang relied on the 'driving force formation' engraved on the spacesuit and slowly headed toward the moon together with the space capsule.

Just as he was fluttering, Song Shuhang thought of something. He was thinking of that burgundy gourd.

"That was Venerable White's disposable flying sword, and there was a burgundy gourd above it... wait a moment, it can't be that thing, right?"

Song Shuhang recalled a certain event. Perhaps the burgundy gourd was related to it.

The matter Song Shuhang thought of happened on July 6th. That day, Tubo invited him over to his grandfather's home.

After destroying the resentful ghosts left behind by Altar Master's small local organization with Senior Brother Three Realms' help, Song Shuhang suffered a surprise attack from Branch Leader Jing Mo and another guy called Daoist Half Gourd.

At the time, Song Shuhang relied on the lethal weapon Venerable White left to him, the flying sword launcher 013 edition, and used it to launch a disposable flying sword 004 edition, killing that guy called Daoist Half Gourd in the process.

After stabbing Daoist Half Gourd's body, the disposable flying sword 004 edition shot toward the sky, rushing into space and disappearing without leaving traces. If he remembered correctly, Daoist Half Gourd's gourd, which had the power to suck people inside it, was also burgundy.

What a coincidence...

Heck, is this possible that that gourd is precisely the Soul Devouring Demonic Gourd?

Can there really be such a coincidence?

From what Song Shuhang remembered, Daoist Half Gourd's

gourd was only a treasure of the Fourth Stage rank. On the other hand, this Soul Devouring Demonic Gourd was even able to attract the attention of Fifth Stage Spiritual Emperors, causing them to madly chase after the sword light.

"Is it just a coincidence, or did Daoist Half Gourd's gourd undergo a mutation while it was in space?" Song Shuhang muttered to himself.

From the looks of it, there was a 50% chance, or higher, that the Soul Devouring Demonic Gourd was precisely Daoist Half Gourd's burgundy gourd.

Is it possible that there is some fate between this gourd and me?

However, I'm not lacking magical treasures right now!

Aside from its cool ability to suck people inside it, that burgundy gourd didn't have what good use!



According to a certain saying, fate had the power to bring people that were thousands of miles apart together.

Just as Song Shuhang was in deep thoughts, Li Yinzhu's lovely voice was transmitted beside his ear. "Careful, there is a sword light in the front coming over here!"

Song Shuhang opened his eyes and glanced forward. Sure enough, a flying sword that had Venerable White's aura on it was quickly rushing toward his position. The faintly visible burgundy gourd was glowing.

Shiet, is it really coming toward me?

However... it was heading toward him at the wrong time! It wasn't that Song Shuhang didn't like magical treasures. Even if the rank of the treasure was lower, who wouldn't want it if it was directly delivered to one's doorstep? Let alone this burgundy gourd that even cultivators of the Fifth Stage were madly chasing...

However, the problem was precisely that group of cultivators that was closely following the burgundy gourd!

There was a huge number of people behind the gourd making threatening gestures and yelling. It felt as though they were going to destroy everything blocking their path.

When some of them saw Song Shuhang standing in front of the burgundy gourd, killing intent flashed through their eyes!

If the burgundy gourd were to fall into Song Shuhang's hands, these cultivators of the Fourth and Fifth Stage would surely skin him alive.

Actually... even if the burgundy gourd were to just fly above his head, it would be still over for Song Shuhang!

That was because he would be trampled to death!

Although several people in the group were using flying swords or other treasures that allowed flight, there were still a lot of strong men using magical shoes and madly dashing about in space with their legs.

Everyone knew how dangerous it was to get trampled. It was something that could definitely kill people.

And if one were to get trampled by this group of cultivators, the mortality rate would increase of at least 300 times!

Therefore, Song Shuhang had to avoid the burgundy gourd at all costs!

Song Shuhang knew his limits quite well. If he wanted to come out of this alive, he absolutely couldn't touch the burgundy gourd unless a Seventh Stage Venerable was here to back him up.

Therefore, Song Shuhang operated the 'driving force formation' on the spacesuit with all his might and got away from the burgundy gourd, moving to one side.



After seeing that Song Shuhang was moving to one side and wasn't planning to fight for the Soul Devouring Demonic Gourd, those cultivators of the Fourth and Fifth Stage that were closely chasing after the gourd heaved a sigh of relief.

At the same time, one of the cultivators in the group, an old man, suddenly jumped up and activated a magical disk.

"Ah! Guys, get ready and quickly seize the gourd! Now, look at my powerful seal, the Mount Tai Seal!" the old man roared.

In the group, seven cultivators immediately accelerated and surpassed the rest. They were the companions of the old man!

The old man brandished the magical disk and a sealing ray shot out of it.

Just as the old man was using the sealing technique to hold the sword light back, his seven companions would seize the opportunity to snatch away the gourd and quickly leave the area.

The sealing ray was extremely fast and chased after the sword light at high speed!

"Old bastard, don't even think about it!"

"That gourd is mine! I'll kill whoever tries to snatch it!"

"A little Spiritual Emperor with only three dragon patterns dares to be this arrogant?"

Then, under the vision of the group of cultivators...

It was unknown what happened to the sealing ray, but it suddenly curved and flew past the Soul Devouring Demonic Gourd, heading toward Song Shuhang who was on one side, trapping him inside the seal.

Mount Tai's pressure weighed down on his head!

Heavy, heavy, heavy...

I'm dying, I'm dying, I'm dying...

Chapter 509: The red-haired Spiritual Emperor

It was literally a mountain of pressure, just as though Mount Tai itself was pressing down on him!

But why did the 'Mount Tai Seal' end up sealing his body?

After all, the old man should still be a powerhouse of the Fourth or Fifth Stage. No matter how blind he was, it should be impossible for him to hit the wrong target with the sealing technique, right?

Was it intentional then? Yeah, that must be it!



Of course, the old man didn't do it on purpose... since the speed of the sword light was too fast, he used a technique to lock its aura, executing the Mount Tai Seal immediately after.

But what he locked onto earlier was obviously the aura of the sword light... he also didn't know why the ray of the seal had suddenly curved and hit Song Shuhang's body.

The old man was likewise dumbfounded and had no idea what was happening.



Song Shuhang was unaware that the old man had used an aura-locking technique. Otherwise, he could have more or less guessed the reason the ray hit him.

The sword light carrying around the gourd was one of Venerable White's disposable flying swords and thus had his aura. On the other hand, Song Shuhang also had with him the 'Ten Thousand Mile Flying Escape Technique' Senior White gave him, which also happened to have his aura.

Therefore, after the old man used the aura-locking technique and

launched the Mount Tai Seal, there was a 50-50 chance that it would hit either Song Shuhang or the sword light.

Both Song Shuhang and sword light were considered as potential targets of the sealing technique.

Perhaps because Song Shuhang's original dao name was also 'Stressed by a Mountain of Books', the Mount Tai Seal's favorable impression of him increased by 1 point and thus decided to head toward him...?

Under the pressure of Mount Tai itself, Song Shuhang's bones started making crackling noises, and he felt as though his whole body was being flattened.

"Dammit, the Mount Tai Seal that I took so much time to prepare...!!!" The old man almost exploded with anger and roared, "If not for that brat appearing out of nowhere, I would have already sealed the gourd on the sword light! Bastard!"

Just as the Mount Tai Seal fell on Song Shuhang's body, the plan of the old man and his companions failed. His companions sprinted forward for nothing, and their relationship was also exposed. The several nearby cultivators started to secretly take precautions against them.

The old man and his companions tried to gain an unfair advantage only to end up worse off.

The sword light was still carrying the Soul Devouring Demonic Gourd forward, its speed as fast as before.

The large group of cultivators kept chasing after it in a frenzy.

The old man and his several companions gritted their teeth and decided to keep chasing after the flying sword as well.

As for that kid that was sealed by the Mount Tai Seal by mistake... the old man had no intention of wasting time to save

him. The fact that he didn't go over to give Song Shuhang a few kicks was merciful enough.

At this time, the most important thing was to keep chasing after the sword light and the Soul Devouring Demonic Gourd. Who had the time to waste on seals and whatnot?



Just in this fashion, the group of powerful cultivators swiftly passed by Song Shuhang.

Song Shuhang's body bore the huge pressure of the Mount Tai Seal and was pushed downward.

Of course, the concept of 'direction' was non-existent in space. It was just Song Shuhang's mind feeling as though he was being pushed downward.

Song Shuhang used all his strength and asked, "Jiaojiao, can you untie this seal?"

"It's a seal of the Fifth Stage rank. It would take me several days to untie it," Yu Jiaojiao replied. "By the time I'm done untying the seal, it would probably lose its power and disappear on its own."

The only purpose of the Mount Tai Seal was to slow down the speed of the flying sword transporting the Soul Devouring Demonic Gourd. It wasn't anything like those seals that could last for hundreds or thousands of years. There was no need to break it since one only had to wait for around three or four days for the spiritual energy inside to deplete and the seal to disappear.

"In other words, there is no difference whether the seal is destroyed or not?" Song Shuhang forced a smile.



Time flew by.

It had been already more than three hours since the Mount Tai Seal had sealed Song Shuhang.

At first, Song Shuhang was planning to practice in the proximity of the moon and temper his body to strengthen his constitution.

But now, he was unable to do anything.

Due to the pressure of the Mount Tai Seal, he couldn't even move a finger. His body was pressed flat, and his bones were on the verge of breaking.

While sealed, Song Shuhang subconsciously thought of operating the <Thirty-Three Divine Beasts' Technique> and use his true qi to resist the pressure generated by the seal.

But just as he tried to operate his true qi, the true qi inside his Sea of Qi Dantian and Dragon Tail Dantian started to surge up, and a stabbing pain was transmitted from his dantian.

When he ate the sheep-type spirit beast crystal during his dream back then, the true qi inside his dantian had increased to the point of bursting.

He had two options now. He could either wait for several months and allow his body to slowly adapt and absorb the true qi that came from the spirit beast crystal or strengthen his constitution, allowing his body to accommodate the extra quantity of true qi.

But his true qi wasn't the only problem... there was also the mental energy located between his eyebrows. In the instant he operated his true qi, he felt a stabbing pain in his head as well.

Therefore, Song Shuhang immediately stopped operating the <Thirty-Three Divine Beasts' Technique>.

* * *

But if he couldn't defend against the terrifying pressure of the Mount Tai Seal, his whole body would crumble under its pressure.

The skin on his body had started cracking. The cracks were the same as the ones that appear on pottery. Very soon, Song Shuhang's whole body was covered with blood.

"Open your mouth and eat this medicine." Yu Jiaojiao's voice was transmitted at this time.

Yu Jiaojiao was also affected by this seal of the Fifth Stage rank, but she was much better off than Song Shuhang. She felt her body a bit heavy, but the seal wasn't strong enough to injure her.

Fairy Firefly had arranged a defensive formation on the space capsule earlier. Therefore, the effects of the Mount Tai Seal were much weaker on it.

Li Yinzhu was also a cultivator of the Fourth Stage Realm. Therefore, she wasn't afraid of such a seal.

On the other hand, Chu Chu was immobilized by the strength of the seal and couldn't move. But due to the protection of the space capsule, aside from feeling her body very heavy and being unable to move, she didn't need to worry about getting injured.

Yu Jiaojiao placed the medicinal pill inside Song Shuhang's mouth.

It was a pretty good wound-treating medicinal pill that could be taken orally. The pill melted in Song Shuhang's mouth, and the strength of the medicine spread to each corner of his body, starting to heal his wounds.

Song Shuhang forced a smile and said, "Will I have to keep taking medicinal pills for the whole duration of the seal?"

Yu Jiaojiao replied, "There seems to be no other way for now."

* * *

Suffering the pressure of the Mount Tai Seal, getting injured, taking a medicinal pill, slowly recovering his wounds...

This cycle kept repeating over and over again.

At this time, Song Shuhang's mouth was full of a bitter taste. After all, a good medicine always tasted bitter. Even if these medicinal pills belonged to the world of cultivators, they still had a

very bitter taste.

"I feel that there is no difference between a salted fish and me at this time..." Song Shuhang said.

He needed to work out a bit.

At this time, he couldn't move a finger and was thus unable to use the ⟨Basic Buddhist Fist Technique⟩.

He couldn't use the ⟨True Self Meditation Scripture⟩ and ⟨Thirty-Three Divine Beasts' Technique⟩ either because he would explode if he were to do so.

Under these circumstances, he could only use one cultivation technique...

The ⟨Immovable Body of the Buddha⟩.

It was a supplementary body tempering technique that could strengthen the defense of one's body. While practicing this technique, he didn't need to move around like he had to with a fist technique. He could use it even while being perfectly still. Through the ⟨Immovable Body of the Buddha⟩, he could absorb the energy inside his body and use it to strengthen his constitution.

It was the only thing that Song Shuhang could do at this time.

Another three hours later.

Song Shuhang felt that his constitution had strengthened quite a bit.

Under the pressure of the Mount Tai Seal, his body was continuously wounded and restored. If we add the tempering effects of the ⟨Immovable Body of the Buddha⟩, the strength of his constitution could only rise.

Perhaps he could strengthen his constitution until it could withstand his current level of true qi and mental energy while he was inside the Mount Tai Seal for these several days, saving him

from this dangerous situation where his body could explode at any moment.

Whenever there was great pressure, there would be great motivation as well!

The larger the pressure, the larger the latent capacity that human beings could bring forth!

This time, I might have profited from this misfortune... Song Shuhang thought to himself.

Just as Song Shuhang was in deep thoughts, Li Yinzhu's voice was transmitted beside his ear. "Careful, there is someone coming in this direction."

Song Shuhang immediately stopped practicing the 〈Immovable Body of the Buddha〉 and moved his eyes, looking toward a distant place.

He saw a fiery red dot of light quickly approaching from a distant place.

The fiery red light was extremely quick, and it arrived in front of Song Shuhang after a few breaths of time.

It was a man with red hair and red beard. The robe he was wearing was also red, just like the hacking blade he was holding in his hands. He was red all over his body.

Spiritual energy was surging on the body of the opposite party. He didn't bother hiding his cultivation. The man standing before their eyes was a respectable Fifth Stage Spiritual Emperor.

"I've finally found you," the red-haired man said with a smile. Then, he stretched out his hand and pressed on the Mount Tai Seal that was covering Song Shuhang's body, shouting, "Break!"

The spiritual energy surged and clashed against the Mount Tai Seal. At this time, the Mount Tai Seal had changed into the shape of a golden bell and had tightly wrapped Song Shuhang's body.

The red-haired man was precisely eliminating this outer layer of the seal.



Yu Jiaojiao asked, "Shuhang, is he a friend of yours?"

"I don't know him," Song Shuhang replied. He was also confused. He had never met this red-haired man before. Such being the case, why had the opposite party come to this place and started removing the Mount Tai Seal on his body?

Moreover, it didn't seem as though the opposite party was casually passing by... it seemed that this man had been specifically looking for him.

Song Shuhang had no idea as to what this red-haired man had in mind.

Since he didn't know if the opposite party was a friend or foe, it was better to take some precautions against him. Song Shuhang slowly moved his hand toward his size-reducing purse.

Yu Jiaojiao also started to secretly prepare a defensive technique, quietly accumulating her strength and waiting to enter into action.

A minute later.

"Crack!"

The Mount Tai Seal was brutally smashed to pieces!

Song Shuhang immediately felt his body become light... it was truly a wonderful feeling. Unfortunately, there was currently no time to enjoy it. Song Shuhang quickly stretched out his hand and put it inside the size-reducing purse, grabbing the silver dragon puppet.

Yu Jiaojiao also carefully looked at the red-haired man.

"Hehe, you're rather attentive..." the red-haired man said with a smile. Then, he stretched his hand toward Song Shuhang and made a grabbing motion, saying, "But what's the point? Do you

really think you can escape from me?"

Just as the red-haired man stretched his hand out and made that grabbing motion, a big red-colored hand appeared in the void, completely covering Song Shuhang's body. It was obviously one of the techniques of the red-haired man.

"Vast sea, protect me and turn the mighty waves into my defense!" Yu Jiaojiao shouted and her small claws danced in the air.

Soon after, a light-blue shield appeared before Song Shuhang's body, blocking the incoming red-colored hand.

Just as the big hand and the shield bumped into each other, the light-blue shield started crumbling.

"It's the right time, let's quickly run away!" Yu Jiaojiao shouted.

The opposite party was a Fifth Stage Spiritual Emperor, and they didn't have any chance of succeeding if they were to fight him head-on.

Song Shuhang quickly took out the silver dragon puppet and activated it. Afterward, he tightly held onto the space capsule and jumped on the back of the dragon.

"Get away from here as quickly as possible!" Song Shuhang operated the silver dragon puppet.

The eyes of the silver dragon lit up. Next, it changed into a silver light, quickly disappearing to a distant place.

"A puppet capable of flight?" the red-haired man said with a smile. Flying puppets had a pretty good speed while compared to cultivators of the Fourth Stage... but they were far from enough to deal with a cultivator of the Fifth Stage!

Chapter 510: Can you give me face and let this little friend go?

The red-haired Spiritual Emperor grabbed the red-colored hacking blade and rode it, chasing after Song Shuhang.

The way he was riding the flying sword was rather unusual. He didn't step on it like other cultivators. Instead, he grabbed the red-colored hacking blade with his hands and allowed it to pull him along.

The hacking blade whizzed forward, and the red-haired Spiritual Emperor holding onto it also shot forward like an arrow.

The peculiar position he used to ride the flying sword was something he had come up with after some research. It was the position that allowed him to bring out his full speed. It was the most aerodynamic pose according to the fluid dynamics branch of physics.

While he was chasing after Song Shuhang, the corner of the red-haired Spiritual Emperor's mouth rose as he muttered, "I wasn't mistaken about it... his body has the same aura as that 'sword light'!"

This red-haired Spiritual Emperor was one of the cultivators chasing after the Soul Devouring Demonic Gourd earlier.

When the old man used the Mount Tai Seal back then, the red-haired Spiritual Emperor realized through his keen senses that the aura on Song Shuhang's body was somewhat similar to the one present on the sword light.

In that case, was there some relationship between the sword light and this boy?

Perhaps it wasn't just a coincidence that the sword light made a circle while flying and headed toward that boy. Maybe that boy has some treasure with him that is related to the sword light...? That

might be the reason the sword light carrying the Soul Devouring Demonic Gourd approached him on its own! the red-haired Spiritual Emperor guessed.

Perhaps the key to the Soul Devouring Demonic Gourd was precisely on the body of that youth!

Thereupon, the red-haired Spiritual Emperor quietly separated from the group of cultivators chasing after the sword light.

After taking a roundabout route, he arrived in front of Song Shuhang and decided to destroy the Mount Tai Seal weighing down on his body.

His objective was that treasure in Song Shuhang's possession related to the sword light.



"That guy is chasing after us, and the speed of the silver dragon puppet isn't fast enough to shake him off. He will quickly catch up to us..." Song Shuhang said after glancing backward.

Yu Jiaojiao said, "Do you still have something up your sleeve?"

Song Shuhang forced a smile and said, "I have a few talismans, but they are all of the Fourth Stage rank."

Talismans of the Fourth Stage weren't of much use against a Fifth Stage Spiritual Emperor.

Yu Jiaojiao said, "In that case, should we surrender?"

"Ahaha." The laughter of the red-haired Spiritual Emperor was transmitted from behind. The distance between the two parties had sharply reduced. Soon after, the red-haired Spiritual Emperor bent his finger and flicked it, shooting out two streams of sword qi.

Yu Jiaojiao quickly executed a magical technique and created a shield. Since the moment she had gotten on the back of the silver dragon puppet, she had been secretly accumulating her strength to execute this defensive magical technique.

The shield she created was able to block one of the two streams of sword qi.

The other stream still headed toward Song Shuhang, ready to chop him up.

Song Shuhang gritted his teeth and grabbed the treasured saber Broken Tyrant.

⟨Inverted Scale Saber Technique⟩—Dragon Scale Style!

When the saber technique was unleashed, the saber qi turned into a true dragon that surrounded Song Shuhang's group, protecting them.

At the same time, Song Shuhang spat blood from his mouth. He needed to use his true qi to operate the ⟨Inverted Scale Saber Technique⟩, and his current situation was so bad that his body could explode at any time. For this reason, he suffered a backlash as soon as he used the saber technique.

"Riiiip!"

The Dragon Scale Style and the sword qi of the red-haired Spiritual Emperor clashed against each other.

The Dragon Scale Style was shattered to pieces with one blow of the sword qi.

The difference in strength between the two parties was too much. It wasn't something that a mere 'saber technique' could make up.

After smashing the Dragon Scale Style, the strength of the sword qi of the red-haired Spiritual Emperor didn't diminish in the least as it headed toward Song Shuhang's body.

But right at this time, the dazzling ray of light of a defensive formation was emitted from Song Shuhang's spacesuit.

In the next moment, a burst of repulsive strength spread from the spacesuit.

After hitting Song Shuhang's spacesuit, the sword qi was unexpectedly rebounded.

These were the effects of the defense Fairy Firefly arranged on the spacesuit earlier. The main purpose of the defense was to protect Song Shuhang in case he bumped into meteorites or something similar while flying toward space.

At the crucial moment, the repulsive strength helped Song Shuhang block the sword qi.

"I didn't need to use an armor talisman," Song Shuhang muttered.

"Ring, ring, ring~" But right at this time, Song Shuhang's phone rang.

Yu Jiaojiao said, "Shuhang, someone is calling you."

"I don't have the time to answer the phone at this moment!" Song Shuhang operated the silver dragon puppet with all his strength and fled for his life. At the same time, he used the corner of the eye to glance back at the red-haired Spiritual Emperor.

The chance they had to shake off the opposite party was less than 10%!

It was uncertain what would happen next...



"That kid has several treasures!" The corner of the red-haired Spiritual Emperor's rose. The strength of the sword qi he used earlier was only of the Fourth Stage. He wasn't planning to kill Song Shuhang. His objective was to capture him alive.

However, he hadn't expected that his two streams of sword qi of the Fourth Stage rank would be both blocked.

Under normal circumstances, he would have played with such an interesting kid a bit more...

"But now, I don't really have the time to play with you." The red-

haired Spiritual Emperor operated the hacking blade once again, increasing the speed of the flying sword by three times.

In the blink of an eye, he had already arrived in front of Song Shuhang's silver puppet dragon!

"You can't escape from me, kid," the red-haired Spiritual Emperor said in a grave tone. Then, he made another grabbing motion with his hand.

To deal with Song Shuhang and the Fourth Stage Innate Yu Jiaojiao, the red-haired Spiritual Emperor didn't even need to use magical techniques—his hand alone was enough.

This time, Song Shuhang had no means to block the big hand of the opposite party. The silver dragon puppet and the space capsule were both seized by it.

Song Shuhang and the others had been captured.

Actually, it was Song Shuhang's first time being captured by an enemy. It was a new and refreshing feeling!



"Hehe, I told that you had no chance of escaping." The red-haired Spiritual Emperor grinned after capturing Song Shuhang. Then, he stretched his hand out and activated a spherical barrier-type magical treasure, confining Song Shuhang within it.

The insides of the spherical barrier-type magical treasure were filled with air.

Therefore, the sound of the phone ringing was transmitted from Song Shuhang's body. "Ring, ring, ring~"

Song Shuhang calmed down and asked, "Senior, why did you capture me?"

Since he had been captured already, he might as well ask why the opposite party had done so...

After all, it was impossible that he had decided to capture him

just because he found him unpleasant or something of the sort, right?

Actually, Song Shuhang wasn't worried about his life or safety. Venerable White's Ten Thousand Mile Flying Escape Technique was a very strong life-saving trump card.

The red-haired Spiritual Emperor strangely smiled and said, "Hehe, I need something that is on your body—"

"Ring, ring, ring~" The ring of the phone interrupted the words of the red-haired Spiritual Emperor.

The red-haired Spiritual Emperor continued after the pause, "I need something that is on your body. That thing is—"

"Ring, ring, ring~"

"..." The red-haired Spiritual Emperor.

"Senior, can I answer the phone first?" Song Shuhang said as he took out his phone.

After looking at the screen, he discovered that it was a call from Senior Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue.

It was actually Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue!

Before Song Shuhang set out, Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue said that he would contact him and bring him to explore the grave of Venerable Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue after he had arrived in space. Therefore, he gave Song Shuhang his number so that they could stay in touch.

Song Shuhang hadn't expected to receive his call so quickly.

"Senior Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue, hello." Song Shuhang answered the phone. Shuhang thought that the red-haired Spiritual Emperor would make him hang up. He didn't expect that the opposite party would actually let him answer the phone.

The calm voice of a man was transmitted from the other end of the phone. "Little friend Shuhang, are you in space already?"

"Senior, yes. Fairy Firefly sent me to space today," Song Shuhang replied.

Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue said, "Where are you now? Have you reached the moon already? If you are there already here, look for me. My coordinates are XX:XX."

"About that... I fear I won't be able to meet you, Senior. I was captured," Song Shuhang replied.

"..." Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue.

"Who captured you?" Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue asked.

"I don't know him, but he's a Fifth Stage Spiritual Emperor. He has red hair, red beard, and a red daoist robe," Song Shuhang said.

"I have never heard of such a Spiritual Emperor," Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue said. "Little friend Shuhang, put the phone on speakerphone mode and let me have a chat with him."

"Sure, Senior." Song Shuhang raised his head and looked at the red-haired Spiritual Emperor, putting the phone on speakerphone.

Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue voice was transmitted from the phone. "Fellow Daoist, my name is Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue. I wanted to ask you something, how has this little friend offended you?"

Song Shuhang was the first one to reply, "I haven't ever seen him before, how can I have offended him?"

The red-haired Spiritual Emperor pondered for a moment and said, "This kid has indeed not offended me."

Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue said, "Such being the case, can you give me face and let this little friend go? If you do that, I'll turn a blind eye to everything that happened."

"Pfff~" The red-haired Spiritual Emperor laughed and said, "Who

do you think you are? Why should I give you face?"

The red-haired Spiritual Emperor pondered for a while but couldn't think of any famous person in the world of cultivators that went by the name of 'Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue'. A guy he had never heard of was unexpectedly putting on airs in front of him?

He even said that he would 'turn a blind eye to everything that happened'. Just hearing these words, was enough to put someone in a bad mood.

Moreover, even if the opposite party was an old senior of the world of cultivators, the red-haired Spiritual Emperor wasn't afraid of him.

After all, he only had to snatch the Soul Devouring Demonic Gourd and flee. The space was so big, what were the chances of not finding a good place to hide? At the time, he would hide in a safe place for a hundred or so years and wait until his cultivation had advanced to the Sixth Stage True Monarch Realm. Afterward, he could finally move unhindered in the world.

Song Shuhang said with a smile, "Senior Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue, the opposite party said that your face isn't worth much and asked why he should give you any."

Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue coughed and said, "You didn't recognize me?"

The red-haired Spiritual Emperor ignored Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue and said to Song Shuhang, "Kid, hang up the phone."

Song Shuhang said, "Senior Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue, I have to hang up, goodbye."

Afterward, he obediently switched the phone off.

Then, he raised his head and looked at the red-haired Spiritual Emperor once more. At this time, there was a hint of compassion

in Song Shuhang's eyes. This guy had offended Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue...

"Kid, I don't care about your background. Obediently hand over that treasure!" the red-haired Spiritual Emperor said in a grave tone.

Although he wasn't afraid of that 'senior' the opposite party talked to on the phone, it was better to avoid unnecessary trouble if possible. That senior said he was currently on the moon. He was pretty close to their position and might come over very quickly.

He didn't have much time.

"What treasure?" Song Shuhang asked in puzzlement. He had several treasures with him. How could he know which treasure the other party wanted?

"Don't play dumb. If you want to leave this place alive, immediately hand over that treasure that can attract the Soul Devouring Demonic Gourd and the sword light," the red-haired Spiritual Emperor said coldly. He wasn't really a bloodthirsty person. If Song Shuhang cooperated, he would at most seriously injure him and let him go.



Just as the red-haired Spiritual Emperor was interrogating Song Shuhang, in the depths of the space, the sword light of a disposable flying sword rushed in Song Shuhang's direction as though it had been attracted by something.

Chapter 511: What a tragedy

The red-haired Spiritual Emperor was waiting for Song Shuhang to hand over the treasure just to seriously injure him afterward.

At the time, the seriously injured Song Shuhang would become a drag for the seemingly respected 'Senior Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue', giving the red-haired Spiritual Emperor the opportunity to flee.

"The treasure on my body capable of attracting the Soul Devouring Demonic Gourd?" Song Shuhang pondered for a moment and said honestly, "Would you believe me if I were to say that I don't have such a treasure with me?"

What Song Shuhang said was the truth, but sometimes, no one would believe it.

"Kid, my patience is limited." The red-haired Spiritual Emperor stroked the hacking blade and said coldly, "I'll give you another opportunity. But if you still refuse to hand over the treasure, don't blame me for being heartless!"

A person had four limbs... therefore, he could give Song Shuhang a total of four opportunities to reply. Actually, perhaps he could give him five opportunities since he was a man.

Song Shuhang furrowed his brows and pondered. If there was something on his body that was related to the disposable flying sword, it was probably Venerable White's Ten Thousand Mile Flying Escape Technique since they were manufactured from the same person.

Should I give the small wooden box with the Ten Thousand Mile Flying Escape Technique inside to the opposite party?

Venerable White's exploration team had temporarily come out of the ancient ruins and was recuperating from the injuries.

If the red-haired Spiritual Emperor activated the Ten Thousand

Mile Flying Escape Technique just to fly to Venerable White's side, it would be quite an interesting turn of events, wouldn't it?

But it wasn't a good thing to do. After all, the Ten Thousand Mile Flying Escape Technique was Song Shuhang's trump card to maintain his life, as well as the only way he had to leave space and return home. If he were to hand it over, he would have a lot of trouble returning home one month later.

Just as Song Shuhang was in deep thoughts, the red-haired Spiritual Emperor suddenly froze!

Soon after, he looked outside the spherical barrier-type magical treasure with an excited expression on his face.

The red-haired Spiritual Emperor had also entered the spherical magical treasure in order to interrogate Song Shuhang.

And it was precisely because he was inside the magical treasure that he was able to hear Song Shuhang's phone ringing, as well as Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue's voice when the speakerphone was on.

As for Yu Jiaojiao, she was able to hear the ring phone because she was inside the safety helmet of the spacesuit.



At this time, the red-haired Spiritual Emperor noticed that there was a sword light flying at high speed outside the magical treasure.

The sword light was the same sword light that was carrying the Soul Devouring Demonic Gourd earlier!

The aura was the same, there was no mistake about it!

He had been searching high and low for something just to find it when least he expected it.

The red-haired Spiritual Emperor laughed wildly and said, "Even the heavens are helping me!"

The brat said that he didn't have any treasure that could attract

the sword light, but now, the sword light had come over on its own!

In the end, the treasure would finally fall into his hands. Since the Soul Devouring Demonic Gourd was delivering itself at his doorstep, he would gladly accept it.

On the other hand... where did that group of cultivators that was chasing after the Soul Devouring Demonic Gourd go? Was the sword light able to cast them off?

'It's not the time to think about this trivial matters. The most important thing to do right now is to intercept the sword light.' The silhouette of the red-haired Spiritual Emperor flashed and appeared outside the magical treasure.

At the same time, the Golden Core inside his body shone.

It was a Golden Core with four dragon patterns, an average one amongst the ones cultivators could have.

The energy of the Golden Core gathered and turned into four mysterious lights of different colors that materialized above the head of the red-haired Spiritual Emperor. The number of these colored mysterious lights was the same as the number of the dragon patterns on his Golden Core.

The mysterious lights above the heads of Golden Core cultivators weren't there only for show. Each colored light could increase the strength of the magical techniques and attacks of the owner by 10%. As a consequence, four mysterious lights could increase the strength of the attacks of the red-haired Spiritual Emperor by 40%.

The red-haired Spiritual Emperor prepared to get into action.

"No wonder all the immortals in legends had mysterious lights above their heads. Is this the reason?" Song Shuhang muttered to himself while inside the magical treasure.

At the same time, he also shot a glance at the approaching sword light.

Was the disposable flying sword really attracted to him, and did it come here for that reason? If that was really the case, the disposable flying sword might be the key to get out of this situation.



Outside the barrier, the red-haired Spiritual Emperor formed a seal with his hands.

His eyes were carefully looking at the approaching sword light. At the same time, he was calculating in his mind the distance between them.

In the instant the sword light entered within a range of one kilometer, the eyes of the red-haired Spiritual Emperor lit up. 'Now is the time!'

He opened his mouth and spat four rings of fire toward the sword light in rapid succession.

The four rings of fire had sealing properties. Just like the old man from before, the red-haired Spiritual Emperor wanted to seal the flying sword to reduce its speed. Afterward, he would quietly retrieve the treasure above.

The rings of fire covered the sword light without fail.

After it was sealed, the speed of the sword light decreased by ten or so times and the light it was emitting also became dimmer, faintly revealing the shape of the treasure it was carrying. However, that treasure wasn't really looking like a gourd...

But the red-haired Spiritual Emperor didn't think too much about it.

"It's a success!" The red-haired Spiritual Emperor was delighted. His body moved and quickly shot toward the position of the sword light.

But right at this moment, a stream of sword qi exploded from the

sword light.

The four rings of fire blocking the flying sword were immediately smashed to pieces!

The red-haired Spiritual Emperor quickly stopped, and his heart trembled. The four rings of fire were the strongest sealing technique at his disposal. Unexpectedly, they weren't able to hold back the flying sword for even a second before getting torn to pieces.

What was the rank of the attack unleashed by the sword light?!

However, the treasure was right before his eyes, and he couldn't give it up.

"I really want to see how many streams of sword qi can this sword light release," the red-haired Spiritual Emperor said with clenched teeth. The four mysterious lights above his head shone once more. Then, he formed another seal with his hands and used the fire ring sealing technique again.

This time, he activated a diamond ring as well, using it in conjunction with the fire ring sealing technique.

The diamond ring and the fire ring sealing technique flew out together!

The disposable flying sword was randomly flying in space, without anyone controlling it. Therefore, the seals of the red-haired Spiritual Emperor were able to easily block it once more.

The four rings of fire blocked the sword light.

The diamond ring also tightly restrained it.

Under the effects of the two seals, the speed of the sword light sharply fell.

The red-haired Spiritual Emperor immediately seized the opportunity and dashed in the direction of the sword light. He only had to wait for the diamond and fire rings to take effect and

retrieve the Soul Devouring Demonic Gourd while the sword light was sealed.

The spiritual energy on the diamond and fire rings surged, starting the sealing process.

The sword light quickly dimmed.

"Ahaha, the Soul Devouring Demonic Gourd is finally mine!" The red-haired Spiritual Emperor stretched his hand out, preparing to seize the treasure on the sword light.

But right at this time, he discovered that there was something wrong. "Eh?"

Earlier, he was unable to see clearly the object above the sword light due to the dazzling light it was emitting. He could only see the indistinct shape of the 'treasure'.

But after the sword light was sealed, he saw the treasure above clearly... it wasn't the Soul Devouring Demonic Gourd but was instead one of those 1.5 ton air conditioners for domestic use!

Was I tricked?

Why is there an air conditioner on the sword light? Where is the Soul Devouring Demonic Gourd?

Just what is happening?

Dammit, is it possible that it's a different sword light?

"No wonder no one was chasing after the sword light... there is actually more than one sword light roaming in space, dammit!" The red-haired Spiritual Emperor understood what had happened.

But why is there an air conditioner on the sword light?

Isn't this the same as making fun of others?

Who was so bored to send an air conditioner for domestic use into space?

Was it a gift for aliens or something?

Wait a moment, the air conditioner seems charred black...

This goddamn conditioner is even broken!

F\ck, f*ck!*

Additionally, the red-haired Spiritual Emperor finally saw the true body of the sword light... it was a very ordinary wooden sword, the type that had been carved without too much thought.

But how could a mere wooden sword be so powerful and break his seals so easily?

Just how strong was the cultivator that manufactured it that the wooden sword ended up producing such results?

Just as the red-haired Spiritual Emperor was lost in thoughts, the body of the wooden sword lit up once again.

In the next moment, the rings of fire binding its body started to crumble.

"Not good!" The red-haired Spiritual Emperor had a bad premonition. He formed a seal with his hands and prepared to take the diamond seal and get away.

But the sword qi was more terrifying than what he thought.

0.0001 seconds after the rings of fire were broken, his diamond ring magical treasure was likewise smashed to pieces by the sword qi.

As you can well imagine, the heart of the red-haired Spiritual Emperor was in extreme pain. He had just lost a very valuable sealing-type magical treasure!

Not only he was unable to get the gourd, but he even lost the diamond ring, suffering a great loss.

However, it wasn't the time to cry over spilled milk... the sword qi exploded, and the sword intent that burst forth was terrifying.

At this time, his body happened to be within the range of the

sword qi.

"Dammit! Aaaah!" the red-haired Spiritual Emperor roared again and again, and the four-colored mysterious lights above his head also shone continuously. He instantaneously created dozens of defensive barriers to protect himself and tried to get away as soon as possible.

But even so, the attack of the wooden sword still left three deep wounds that reached the bones in his body.

Blood flowed out and changed into drops that hovered in the void.



After the wooden sword released the sword qi, its body changed into a sword light once more.

Under the gloomy stare of the red-haired Spiritual Emperor, the wooden sword leisurely headed in Song Shuhang's direction.

"It's really coming toward me," Song Shuhang muttered to himself.

After disassembling and carelessly ruining the air conditioner, Venerable White must have decided to dispose of it by sending it to space with the disposable flying sword 004 edition...

As the flying sword rushed forward, it bumped into the barrier-type magical treasure surrounding Song Shuhang.

"Riiip!"

The precious spherical barrier-type magical treasure of the red-haired Spiritual Emperor was also smashed to pieces!

Afterward, the disposable flying sword stopped and calmly hovered next to Song Shuhang's body.

Song Shuhang stretched out his hand and tried to grab the disposable flying sword. The sword qi on the wooden sword wasn't trying to injure him.

The mysterious flying sword Senior White manufactured could even recognize people.

But Song Shuhang didn't have the time to think about these trivial matters, he grabbed the space capsule and turned over his body, jumping on the disposable flying sword.

What better opportunity to run than this?

"Go!" Song Shuhang pointed toward a distant place and shouted.

"Brat, stop immediately!" The roar of the red-haired Spiritual Emperor was transmitted from the rear.

He had already lost two valuable magical treasures, and now, this brat wanted to ride the strange wooden sword and run away. He had to seize that treasure on Song Shuhang's body capable of attracting these sword lights at all costs.

The red-haired Spiritual Emperor roared and started chasing after Song Shuhang.

"Go, go, go!" Song Shuhang shouted.

But there was a problem...

It seemed that the disposable flying sword 004 edition had no intention of moving now that it had stopped. It felt as though arriving next to Song Shuhang's body was its final objective.

"..." Song Shuhang.

Song Shuhang turned his head around and shot a glance at the red-haired Spiritual Emperor that was quickly coming over.

What a tragedy...

Chapter 512: I'm Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue

What a tragedy!

Song Shuhang didn't expect that the flying sword would suddenly stop moving. He hadn't contemplated this possibility at all.

Song Shuhang was helplessly looking at the approaching red-haired Spiritual Emperor. He was sure that the guy would definitely cut off his four limbs to vent his anger.

Song Shuhang stretched out his hand toward the Ten Thousand Mile Flying Escape Technique... was it already time to use his life-saving trump card?

However, he was a little unwilling to do so. After all, he had just arrived in space with the intent to strengthen his constitution and explore that grave together with Senior Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue...

But right at this time, Song Shuhang had a sudden idea!

Wait a moment, perhaps I can use something else!

Song Shuhang took two boxes out of the size-reducing purse.

One was the box of the Ten Thousand Mile Flying Escape Technique. It would automatically open a month later and bring Song Shuhang back home. But if he was in danger, Song Shuhang could pour his true qi into it and activate it, running to Venerable White's side ahead of time.

The other box had a push button on it and was also one of Venerable White's products. It was the so-called 'flying sword launcher 013 edition'. It was a self-defense treasure that Venerable White gave to Song Shuhang when the latter went to Tubo's grandfather's home as a guest at the start of summer vacation.

Song Shuhang could launch 'disposable flying swords' through this gadget. With the help of this thing, Song Shuhang was able to kill Daoist Half Gourd back then and send both him and the gourd to space.

Song Shuhang's plan was to use the flying sword launcher to launch the disposable flying sword 004 edition beneath his feet!

If he could successfully launch the disposable flying sword, even a Fifth Stage Spiritual Emperor would be injured.

At the same time, Song Shuhang was also tightly holding the box with the Ten Thousand Mile Flying Escape Technique. If he were to fail, he would activate it without second thought.



Song Shuhang kicked the air conditioner off the flying sword. Under the adrenaline rush, he was extremely quick even though he was wearing that cumbersome spacesuit.

He held the box with the Ten Thousand Mile Flying Escape Technique under his armpit and used his hands to hastily load the disposable flying sword 004 edition into the flying sword launcher.

Afterward, he operated the true qi in his dantian and poured it into the flying sword launcher while resisting the stabbing pain.

The flying sword launcher resonated with Song Shuhang... soon after, a scope appeared in his eyes.

Everything was proceeding flawlessly.

Song Shuhang had already used this gadget once. Therefore, he was pretty skilled when it came to operating it.

Song Shuhang aimed with the scope at the red-haired Spiritual Emperor—target locked!

The preparations had been completed!

Far off, the red-haired Spiritual Emperor felt a sense of crisis, and his body immediately stiffened.

"Eat my move!" Song Shuhang didn't hesitate and immediately pressed the button on the flying sword launcher 013 edition.

At the same time, he tightly grabbed the box with the Ten Thousand Mile Flying Escape Technique with his other hand, ready to flee at any time.

"Whizz!" The disposable flying sword 004 edition was successfully launched. After all, the two objects were part of one set.

All of Venerable White's products were high-quality goods.

The sword light shone, its speed extremely fast.

The sword qi on the wooden sword was compressed and turned into a tiny ray of light. After its volume was reduced, its lethality increased by several times.

Back then, Daoist Half Gourd didn't even have the time to dodge the sword light before getting impaled and dying.

However, the red-haired Spiritual Emperor wasn't Daoist Half Gourd.

The eyes of the red-haired Spiritual Emperor carefully looked at the sword light. At the same time, the four mysterious lights on his head suddenly increased in size.

Dammit, this brat was really connected to the sword lights!

However, he can only dream of stopping me with that sword light!

The red-haired Spiritual Emperor grabbed the hacking blade. Then, he stretched his right hand out and muttered an incantation. In the next moment, six magical formations overlapped right in front of him.

"Fire King Saber Formation!" The red-haired Spiritual Emperor shoved the blade inside the six overlapping formations, making the strength of the formations pour into the blade.

Then, he held the hacking blade high and slashed out.

A fiery red blade light shone in the void.

The blade light was like a volcanic eruption, and the blazing aura it was emitting almost set the surroundings on fire.

In the next moment...

The disposable flying sword 004 edition, which had turned into a sword light, and the blade light bumped into each other.

There was no sound... but there was a blinding explosion of light.

The unceasing explosion completely wrapped the body of the red-haired Spiritual Emperor.

In the end, the small sword light of the 'disposable flying sword' destroyed the huge volcano-like blade light of the red-haired Spiritual Emperor.

The strength of the sword light didn't diminish and pierced through the radiance of the explosion, slashing toward the red-haired Spiritual Emperor!

The power of the sword light was absolutely shocking!

The disposable flying sword 004 edition had been roaming in space for a very long time. Moreover, it also consumed a lot of spiritual energy when it released those two streams of sword qi earlier. But even then, it still had the power to defeat a Fifth Stage Spiritual Emperor.



"Did he die?" Song Shuhang asked in a low voice.

"No idea. But we should take advantage of the opportunity and quickly get away from here," Yu Jiaojiao replied.

Song Shuhang grabbed the space capsule and operated the silver dragon puppet, ready to run away.

But right at this time, a figure stepped out of the explosion of

light.

"Brat, I'll kill you!" The roar of the red-haired Spiritual Emperor directly echoed in Song Shuhang's mind.

As expected, it wasn't so easy to kill a Fifth Stage Spiritual Emperor.

At this time, the red-haired Spiritual Emperor was in a rather pitiful state. His whole body was covered with wounds, without a single uninjured place. The daoist robe he was wearing was also torn to pieces and turned into burning rags. Even his life-bound treasured blade was broken into two pieces.

The losses he had suffered were very serious. All his magical treasures and talismans had been either destroyed or consumed in the process. He was left with nothing and had to rebuild everything anew.

Actually, the red-haired Spiritual Emperor was rather lucky that the disposable flying sword 004 edition had been roaming in space for a while and had consumed most of its energy. If Song Shuhang launched a brand-new disposable flying sword, he would have surely died with his cultivation of the Fifth Stage Spiritual Emperor Realm with four dragon patterns.

"Brat, I'll cut you into pieces!" the red-haired Spiritual Emperor roared as he gritted his teeth. He didn't need an answer from Song Shuhang anymore. It was quite obvious that the small box that launched the wooden sword was the treasure that could control the sword lights.

As long as he could kill Song Shuhang and obtain the small box from him, he would get his hands on the Soul Devouring Demonic Gourd. Only by getting his hands on the Soul Devouring Demonic Gourd could he somewhat make up for all the losses he had suffered.

The body of the red-haired Spiritual Emperor moved at high

speed and quickly arrived in front of Song Shuhang, chopping at him with his blade.

"I didn't think that I would have to use the Ten Thousand Mile Flying Escape Technique so soon..." Song Shuhang said as he held the wooden box in his right hand. He finished pouring the true qi inside the box earlier and could now escape at any time with a mere thought.

* * *

"Stop!" But right at this time, another voice echoed. This voice also directly echoed in Song Shuhang's mind.

The voice was like the roar of a lion and made Song Shuhang's mind buzz. The Ten Thousand Mile Flying Escape Technique was interrupted.

Next, a fist-sized object quickly came over from a distant place!

Just as the angry red-haired Spiritual Emperor was about to chop Song Shuhang in two pieces, the fist-sized object jumped and interposed itself between the two.

"Stop immediately!" the fist-sized object said once more.

Its voice directly echoed inside the minds of Song Shuhang and the red-haired Spiritual Emperor. Moreover, it felt as though the voice had strong mind-controlling properties.

The wrathful attack of the red-haired Spiritual Emperor was likewise influenced by the voice, and the blade was unexpectedly forced to stop.

The red-haired Spiritual Emperor clenched his teeth and said, "A magical technique capable of attacking the mind..." The voice could attack the mind. Magical attacks of this type were rather strange, and it was virtually impossible to defend against them.

At this time, Song Shuhang finally saw the creature that had interposed itself between him and the red-haired Spiritual

Emperor.

It was a lifelike jade white lion of the size of a fist.

The jade white lion said in human language, "Little friend Shuhang, you weren't injured, right?"

"I'm fine, thanks," Song Shuhang said and nodded. This jade white lion should be Senior Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue's pet or magical treasure, right?

The jade white lion also nodded and turned its body around, facing the red-haired Spiritual Emperor.

The red-haired Spiritual Emperor gritted his teeth and said, "Who are you?" His voice directly echoed in Song Shuhang's mind.

"I'm the same Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue you talked to on the phone earlier." The jade white lion wagged its head in complacency and continued, "I'll say it again... give me face and leave now. If you do so, I'll turn a blind eye to everything that happened. After all, little friend Shuhang and I will explore a grave in a few days. Therefore, it's better not to kill people and avoid getting dyed in blood if possible."

The expression of the red-haired Spiritual Emperor was gloomy. He grabbed his broken saber tightly and gritted his teeth.

"Still here and not running away with all your might?" the jade white lion said while licking its claws.

The face of the red-haired Spiritual Emperor turned red. From the fluctuations of spiritual energy he could sense from the body of the jade white lion, he determined that it was a creature of the Fourth Stage Realm at most.

But what was the deal with it being so arrogant? Was it a bluff?

"Running your sister!" the red-haired Spiritual Emperor roared, seemingly out of control. He waved his broken blade, and the spiritual energy inside his body surged as he slashed forward.

The blade light exploded and covered both the jade white lion and Song Shuhang.

Just as the red-haired Spiritual Emperor waved his broken blade, the flaming tattoo on his back quietly separated from his body and changed into a small mass of fire that hid behind a nearby meteorite.

Cultivators would die unless they had many skills, and the red-haired Spiritual Emperor just happened to be a man with many skills.

The jade white lion kept licking its claws and said, "Stupid enough to reject a face-saving offer?"

After saying this much, it patted down with its paw and said, "Summoning... the main body of Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue!"

Just as the jade white lion patted down, something similar to a space gate suddenly appeared in the void.

Soon after, a figure stepped out of the space gate.

"Do you really not intend to give me face?" the figure muttered after making its appearance.

Afterward, it raised its hand and used it as a weapon, gently chopping toward the red-haired Spiritual Emperor with it.

As expected, they were playing dirty!

The red-haired Spiritual Emperor snorted and rotated his broken blade, using it to ward off the incoming attack.

"Ding!"

The treasured blade and the palm collided.

In the next moment, the palm of the figure shattered to pieces the treasured blade, just as though it was made of paper.

The red-haired Spiritual Emperor was shocked.

Even though the treasured blade was broken in two, it was still made from a very hard material and was a blade of the Fifth Stage rank! Wasn't it a bit too ridiculous that the opposite party could destroy it with their bare hands?

"Bang!"

After shattering the treasured blade, the palm of the figure didn't lose any of its strength and bumped into the forehead of the red-haired Spiritual Emperor.

The gentle palm of the figure was much scarier than any blade.

The red-haired Spiritual Emperor was sent flying by the impact, and a finger's breadth deep wound was left on his forehead, with blood crazily spurting out.

His consciousness started to fade... It's bad, I've offended a powerful person...

Luckily, what he left behind was a substitute. Otherwise, it would have been really over for him.

The red-haired Spiritual Emperor said while shivering, "Who are you?!"

Chapter 513: The ?Flame Substituting Technique? and the ?Blade Dragging Technique?

Ding~ Your friend Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue is now online!

"I'm the main body of Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue." The figure placed its hands behind the back and stood in the vacuum.

Although it didn't do anything and just stood there, it made the onlookers feel as though all the surrounding space was continuously sinking.

The figure smiled at the red-haired Spiritual Emperor, saying gently, "Fellow Daoist, can we have a proper chat now?"

Chat your sister! The red-haired Spiritual Emperor felt that his consciousness was about to fade, just like someone that was dying! Who would start chatting on the verge of death?!

Song Shuhang finally heaved a sigh of relief and said, "Senior Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue, you arrived so quickly!"

Since he had yet to learn the secret sound transmission skill, Song Shuhang could only hope that the opposite party could read his lips while in space.

Luckily, it wasn't difficult for people such as cultivators, who had very good eyesight, to read lips.

Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue faintly smiled and said, "Speaking of which, it was quite a coincidence. My clone just happened to be close by, looking for someone. After I locked your position through the coordinates, I told the clone to head in your direction at the fastest speed possible. Then, I summoned my main body here with its help."

The jade white lion stretched its claw toward Song Shuhang and

said, "Hello, little friend Shuhang. I'm Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue's clone."

Song Shuhang said gratefully, "Senior, you came just at the right time. Otherwise, I would have been forced to return to Earth."

"Little friend, you're welcome." After saying this much, Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue turned his head toward the red-haired Spiritual Emperor, saying, "Now then, how should we process this fellow daoist?"

"There is no need to process him. He is already dead." The jade white lion poked the body of the red-haired Spiritual Emperor and said, "He is thoroughly dead, both in body and soul."

Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue shook his head and said, "Fourth Cultivator of True Virtue, you're mistaken. This fellow daoist isn't dead. He used a very interesting substitution technique."

Fourth Cultivator of True Virtue? Song Shuhang couldn't help but shoot a glance at the jade white lion. Did Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue just call the small lion Fourth Cultivator of True Virtue? And there is that grave of Venerable Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue as well... what is the relationship between them?

At this time, Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue took a few steps forward and arrived in front of a meteorite in the back. "Fellow Daoist, stop hiding and come out so that we can chat."

Deadly silence~

"Do you still refuse to give me face?" Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue held his chin and casually stretched out his finger. In the next moment, spiritual energy surged on his fingertip, aiming at the meteorite.

"Buzz, buzz, buzz~"

"Aaaah! Spare me! Senior, spare me!" A mass of fire drilled out of

the meteorite.

The flames tumbled on the meteorite and changed into a fist-sized person made of fire. The appearance of this small person was the same as that red-haired Spiritual Emperor from before. The only difference was the size, which had been reduced by several times.

There was no need to mention that the red-haired Spiritual Emperor was scared out of his wits at this time... It's over! I'm really done for this time! Even my life-saving substitution technique was immediately seen through by this man! The difference in strength between the two of us is just too big!

Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue smiled and said, "Hehe, the <Flame Substituting Technique>. I didn't expect that I would be able to see this mysterious substitution technique once more 500 years later. If I hadn't experienced this technique already, perhaps you might have been able to run away from me, Fellow Daoist."

The jade white lion nodded its head and said, "So it was that technique. No wonder I didn't realize anything."

"Fourth Cultivator of True Virtue, your cultivation is temporarily restricted to the Fourth Stage Realm. So it's only normal that you didn't realize it," Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue said in a gentle tone. His expression looked particularly kind as he spoke. "Anyway, Fellow Daoist, do you want to live?"

The red-haired Spiritual Emperor forced a smile and nodded... of course he wanted to live. He had managed to condense a Golden Core with much difficulty, finally reaching his current realm after thousands of years of practice. Who would want to die after reaching this point?

"In that case, let's make a transaction," Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue said with a smile. "I want your <Flame Substituting Technique>. Additionally, what do you excel at aside

from that technique?"

At this time, the red-haired Spiritual Emperor felt like a little lamb brought to the butcher... as expected, the opposite party wanted his <Flame Substituting Technique>.

Therefore, he forced a smile and said, "Senior, aside from that, I'm good at fire-type sealing techniques."

Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue had yet to reply when the jade white lion said, "Sealing techniques? Those aren't really useful. Don't you have something else a bit more special? Don't even try to hoodwink me with low-quality stuff."

The red-haired Spiritual Emperor pondered for a moment and said, "I have a blade technique that can be combined with a supplementary formation. Its power is pretty good. Aside from that, my flying blade riding technique is also quite special."

The flaming red-haired Spiritual Emperor didn't use his mouth to communicate with the opposite party. He directly spread his mental energy, reaching the same effect as a widespread secret sound transmission.

The interest of the jade white lion was piqued as it asked, "You have a special flying blade riding technique? In which way is it special?"

After hearing this much, Song Shuhang immediately thought about the posture of the red-haired Spiritual Emperor while was 'riding' his hacking blade. At that time, he grabbed the blade with both hands and allowed it to pull him along.

It was quite obvious that the posture was rather strange.

Others would step on their flying swords while riding them, looking very cool.

But when it was the red-haired Spiritual Emperor riding his blade... he looked like a pitiful person chained to a car, being dragged alongside it. The only difference was that he was flying.

At this time, Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue casually threw out a low-level magical blade and said to the red-haired Spiritual Emperor, "Fellow Daoist, can you fly a bit and show me?"

The red-haired Spiritual Emperor felt that he was being humiliated. He wasn't part of a variety show or anything of the sort! He also had some dignity to protect!

However, even though dignity was important, life was even more important.

Thereupon, the red-haired Spiritual Emperor grabbed the magical blade and obediently displayed his special flying blade riding technique for a while.

After looking at his posture while riding the flying blade, Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue nodded and said, "It's surely a very interesting riding technique. It's very suitable for beginners since they don't have to worry about standing on the sword and not falling. Its speed is also quite fast. It would be a pretty good riding technique for all those participating in the flying sword competition."

The red-haired Spiritual Emperor forced a smile and said, "Thank you for the praise, Senior."

"It's settled then. I'll take the <Flame Substituting Technique> and this special flying blade riding technique. Right, does this technique have a name?" Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue asked.

"It's called <Blade Dragging Technique>," the red-haired Spiritual Emperor replied honestly.

Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue nodded and said, "The name isn't that cool, but it's very fitting nonetheless. In that case, I'll accept these two cultivation techniques and spare your life. Fellow Daoist, I have to admit that you are a rather

straightforward person."

Straightforward your sister! If not for the fact that your strength is way higher than mine, I would have chopped you into pieces in a fraction of a second! the red-haired Spiritual Emperor thought to himself.

The corner of the jade white lion's mouth rose as it said, "Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue, he just cursed you in his heart."

Fck, I forgot that the jade white lion was specialized in mind techniques!* the red-haired Spiritual Emperor roared inwardly.

"It's alright. It's normal for his heart to be full of hate and anger. Fellow Daoist, if you hate me, you should practice hard. Someday in the future, once you have reached a high realm, you can look for me to take revenge. My dao name is Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue, and I'm ready to welcome you at any time!" Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue said with a smile. His smile was like that of a benevolent god.

The red-haired Spiritual Emperor felt as though he had just eaten dog excrements. Afterward, he quickly handed over his <Flame Substituting Technique> and <Blade Dragging Technique> to the opposite party.

He didn't dare to pull any tricks with these two cultivation techniques. The strength of the man in front of him was much higher than his. If he were to tamper with the two techniques, the opposite party would surely notice.

"The transaction has been completed." Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue received the two cultivation techniques and gently patted the red-haired Spiritual Emperor, saying, "I congratulate Fellow Daoist for surviving. Anyway, it's time to part ways."

The red-haired Spiritual Emperor was speechless.

"Right, I'll stay on the moon for the next several hundred years in

order to break through to the Eighth Stage Realm. Once you're done with your practice and you have free time, you can look for me to take revenge," Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue said with a smile.

The red-haired Spiritual Emperor was speechless.

If he is going to break through the Eighth Stage Realm, isn't he already a frigging Seventh Stage Venerable?!

The red-haired Spiritual Emperor felt that he had been quite lucky in the end. After all, he had managed to survive against a Seventh Stage Venerable. But why had his eyes started to tear up? He was clearly a small clone of fire right now, and he shouldn't be capable of crying before returning to his previous form~

Anyway, he would firmly remember the name 'Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue' for the rest of his life. The next time, he would absolutely make sure to give Senior Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue face!



In the meantime.

Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue took out an immortal boat.

Song Shuhang, Yu Jiaojiao, Li Yinzhu, and Chu Chu entered the immortal boat. On the other hand, the jade white lion didn't go with them. It turned its body around and disappeared in the vast starry sky. It seemed that it wanted to keep looking for the person it had been searching for earlier.

Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue said, "Little friend Shuhang, we'll head toward my immortal cave on the moon and rest a bit."

"I'll leave all the arrangements to you, Senior," Song Shuhang said.

Soon after he said these words, he felt that his body was exhausted. After reaching space, he first met the attack of those disciples of the Limitless Demon Sect. Next, he suffered the effects of the Mount Tai Seal. At last, he met the red-haired Spiritual Emperor...

Song Shuhang's trip to space had been full of twists and turns.

But even today, he somewhat managed to survive.

"Little friend Shuhang, these are your spoils of war." Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue turned his body around and gave a cultivation technique to Song Shuhang.

It was the <Blade Dragging Technique>.

It was that peculiar flying blade riding technique that the red-haired Spiritual Emperor used.

"..." Song Shuhang.

"You don't like it?" Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue said with a smile. "Although the posture isn't too cool, the riding speed is quite fast, and the consumption of energy is also low. According to my calculations, if little friend were to learn and use this technique at full strength after reaching the Fourth Stage Realm, it wouldn't be too difficult to run away from a cultivator of the Fifth Stage."

"Is it so strong?" Song Shuhang said subconsciously.

"That's why you shouldn't judge a book by its cover. Now then, do you still want the <Blade Dragging Technique>?"

"Yes, I want it!" Song Shuhang immediately took in his hands the flying blade riding secret technique. So what if the posture was ugly? The most important thing was to stay alive!

In the worst case, he could learn a cool flying saber riding technique and use it to fly in ordinary times, and use the <Blade Dragging Technique> whenever he was in danger and had to run

for his life!

Song Shuhang had yet to notice that he wasn't talking about learning cool flying 'sword' riding techniques anymore. Perhaps our Fellow Daoist Path-seeking Scholar had subconsciously lost all hope he had in regards to swords?

"As for that <Flame Substituting Technique>, it's a secret technique of the Fifth Stage rank. It's a technique that can allow the user to escape death in critical times; its effects are pretty good. Little friend Shuhang, look for me once you reach the Fifth Stage Realm; I'll teach you the <Flame Substituting Technique> at the time." Then, Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue also added, "But according to the rules of the Nine Provinces Number One Group, one needs to pay a certain fee to gain the reward. Therefore, I'll make you pay a fee for the <Flame Substituting Technique> at the time."

"Thank you, Senior," Song Shuhang said. However, it was still too early to think about the Fifth Stage Realm. "Senior, how much of a fee will I need to pay at the time to learn the technique?"

Chapter 514: Immortal chef

Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue said thoughtlessly, "As for the price... I think that 10,000 spirit stones of the Fifth Stage should suffice. If we convert them into spirit stones of the Seventh Stage, it's only a hundred spirit stones in total. It's a pretty good deal."

A hundred spirit stones of the Seventh Stage didn't seem that much.

But if we were to convert them into spirit stones of the Fourth Stage, they would amount to 100,000! And if we convert them into spirit stones of the Third Stage, they would amount to one million!

Earlier, Song Shuhang saw that the seniors issued several small daily duties in the Nine Provinces Number One Group's group space. The reward for these small duties was seven or eight spirit stones of the Second Stage. Of course, these spirit stones were only a supplement. The real reward consisted of cultivation techniques, medicine pills, and other things of practical use.

But if he were to convert them into spirit stones of the Second Stage, those hundred spirit stones of the Seventh Stage would amount to whole ten million stones! Song Shuhang felt that it would take him a lifetime to gather such a huge amount of spirit stones! Moreover, he already owed several spirit stones of the Fourth Stage to Venerable White.

After seeing that Song Shuhang was in a daze, Yu Jiaojiao said with a smile, "Shuhang, it seems you're earnestly thinking how to save money now."

"Ahaha." Song Shuhang made a hollow laugh. Jiaojiao, life is hard enough as it is!

At the same time, Li Yinzhu snuck behind Song Shuhang and grabbed his clothes with her small hands. She was rubbing her

eyes and had a sleepy expression on her face. Due to the cold disease affecting her body, she was constantly in a hibernation-like state. Sometimes, she would sleep for $\frac{3}{4}$ of the day.

After entering the immortal boat, Chu Chu found a place and sat down, starting to recover her strength. Earlier, the Mount Tai Seal placed a huge burden on her body. While she was sealed, she had to constantly use her strength to resist the pressure of the seal. As a consequence, she was dead tired at this time.

Afterward, they met that red-haired Spiritual Emperor. The pressure of the Fifth Stage emanating from the man made Chu Chu gasp for breath even though the space capsule separated them.

Is this Mister Song Shuhang's daily life? Is each day of his life so stimulating and stressful at the same time?

Traveling to space and facing a Fifth Stage Spiritual Emperor was quite the thrill. The things that Chu Chu experienced when she ventured outside were nothing compared to it.

Actually, since the moment she entered the space capsule and Fairy Firefly sent them to space, Chu Chu felt as though she was still in a dream and had yet to wake up.

According to Chu Chu's estimations, if she could stay by Song Shuhang's side and experience these kinds of stimulating things each day, it wouldn't be long before her realm advanced by leaps and bounds.

Because one could die at any moment if they weren't to give it their all while under pressure!



Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue snapped his finger, and one of the puppet waiters on the immortal boat brought Shuhang and the others some Spirit Green Tea to relieve their fatigue.

Next, Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue said, "Right.

Little friend Shuhang, I saw you mention in the group earlier that you wanted to strengthen your constitution. Is that correct?"

"Yes, Senior. Due to the 〈Whale Swallowing Technique〉 and another unexpected event, the amount of mental energy and true qi in my body has far surpassed the maximum amount my constitution can withstand. Unless I immediately strengthen my constitution, my body might explode at any time," Song Shuhang said, somewhat depressed.

He was forced to use his true qi once again during the battle with the red-haired Spiritual Emperor. Even now, he felt as though his dantian was filled to the point of bursting, and even his head was faintly aching due to the mental energy. Luckily, he managed to strengthen his constitution a bit while he was affected by the Mount Tai Seal. Thanks to that, he was able to hold on reluctantly.

"If you want to strengthen your constitution, I can provide you a good place to practice in my immortal cave on the moon," Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue said. "There are still two days left before the grave of Venerable Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue opens. Therefore, you can make the best use of your time and strengthen your body within these two days. You must strengthen your constitution until it's not a drag anymore before we start exploring the grave."

"A good place where I can strengthen my constitution? What kind of place is it?" Song Shuhang's interest was immediately piqued. His constitution not being strong enough was one of his major worries. No matter what kind of method it was, if it could quickly strengthen it, he was willing to give it a try. Of course, modifying his body and the likes were out of the question.

Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue said, "Not long ago, True Monarch Yellow Mountain developed something called 'gravity regulator' together with other people. It's something similar to a centrifugal machine and can increase the gravity three to ten times. I ordered one, and it's now placed inside my immortal

cave. In a while, I'll move that gadget out and place it in a room on the sixteenth underground floor of the immortal cave. In there, there is a large amount of mysterious matter, as well as special energy emitted from the moon. Both of them can strengthen the constitution of cultivators. You should try to cultivate there at a gravity two or three times higher than normal. The effects should be pretty good."

"Training with gravity? It sounds awesome." Song Shuhang asked thoughtlessly, "Senior, have you tried it to see the effects?"

Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue shrugged his shoulders and said, "It doesn't have any effect on me. Even if the gravity was ten times higher than normal, I wouldn't feel anything if I were to enter the room and stand there. However, I've seen in anime and novels that people can train in places with increased gravity to strengthen their constitution. I feel that there must be some truth behind it. Anyway, give it a try and see how it goes. If it's effective, I can invite here the fellow daoists of the Nine Provinces Number One Group so that they can bring over their disciples to train."

"..." Song Shuhang.



The immortal boat wasn't advancing at a fast speed.

Therefore, it landed beside the immortal cave on the moon the next day in the wee hours of the morning. July 28th, Sunday.

It was Sunday, and Song Shuhang's dao name was Virtuous Cultivator.

This dao name gave Song Shuhang a strange feeling. Whenever the name was read aloud, it gave him the vibe of a good-hearted person that was ready to get friendzoned. Therefore, Song Shuhang made up his mind and decided to remove this dao name from the list in a few days.

Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue's immortal cave had several types of barriers and formations, gravity and oxygen were present as well; it was not different from Earth. After entering the immortal cave, both the spacesuit and the space capsule were placed on one side.

Unknowingly, Li Yinzhu leaned against Song Shuhang and fell soundly sleep.

On the other hand, Yu Jiaojiao sat in meditation as soon as she entered the range of the moon.

It seemed that she wanted to take advantage of the opportunity to close up for a bit. The moonlight and the mysterious energy and matter released by the moon were very beneficial to monster cultivators. By practicing here, Yu Jiaojiao would obtain double the results!

To adjust to the time on the moon, Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue arranged different rooms for Song Shuhang and the others and told them to rest first.



Early morning, 8 AM. Since he was exhausted yesterday, Song Shuhang overslept a bit today.

But in the next moment, a stabbing pain was transmitted from his lower abdomen. Something bumped into him and woke up him. The pain transmitting from his lower abdomen turned his stomach upside-down.

Who is it? Who suddenly attacked my lower abdomen this early in the morning?

Song Shuhang immediately opened his eyes. Soon after, he discovered that a tender green onion with its upper part missing was cheerfully jumping around.

"I can feel it~ I can feel it~ This whole place is full of a special type of energy that makes me feel very comfortable. The energy is

like an overflowing and endless stream. With that, I can quickly recover to my optimal condition and assume human form once again!" the green onion that had now grown hands and feet said excitedly.

Just as she was jumping around, she carelessly jumped on Song Shuhang's belly again... causing him to feel a stabbing pain once more. Only God knew how Lady Onion jumping around could create such a fearsome impact.

"Lady Onion, can't you wake me up in a less painful manner?" Song Shuhang forced a smile and stretched out his hand, grabbing the enlightenment stone.

"Let me go, let me go! Let me absorb the energy in this place. I want to quickly assume human form again!" Lady Onion shouted.

"Stop causing trouble." Song Shuhang squeezed Lady Onion in his pocket and said, "If you keep causing trouble, I'll cut your newly growing green onion shoot."

Lady Onion immediately calmed down.



Just outside the room was Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue's dining room.

At this time, Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue was holding a newspaper in his hands and reading it with gusto.

After seeing Song Shuhang appear, he smiled and said, "Good morning, little friend Shuhang. Did you sleep well last night?"

"Yes, Senior. I slept like a log until broad daylight," Song Shuhang said. "Are the others still sleeping?"

"Yes. Except for little friend Jiaojiao, who is training, the other two girls are still sleeping," Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue said. "What do you want to eat for breakfast?"

"Anything is fine, Senior. At this time, I'm so hungry that I feel I

can eat even a bull." Song Shuhang rubbed his stomach.

Due to the blessing of the ‹Whale Swallowing Technique›, he was starving at this time, to the point that even his stomach was sour.

"In that case, you might as well come over and try the cooking of my personal immortal chef. Perhaps little friend might obtain some extra benefits while enjoying the breakfast." Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue stood up and opened the sealed up dishes on the dining table, revealing the delicious food inside.

"Immortal chef?" Song Shuhang immediately thought of Immortal Fairy Bie Xue's Immortal Feast and said, "Just like Immortal Fairy Bie Xue?"

Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue said, "Yes, something of the sort. Of course, my personal immortal chef isn't nearly as skilled as Immortal Fairy Bie Xue. However, the taste of the dishes is still excellent."

"In that case, I'll be impolite." Song Shuhang had seen the seniors in the group talk about how delicious and incredible the food at Immortal Fairy Bie Xue's Immortal Feast was several times.

Now then, how would the dishes prepared by Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue's personal immortal chef taste?

Song Shuhang raised his chopsticks and stretched them out toward a plate with something that resembled beefsteak inside. He was starving and felt that the big chunk of meat might help alleviate his hunger.

The big chunk of beefsteak was delicious yet not greasy, and felt as though it was melting in his mouth.

Moreover, he didn't know whether it was just his misconception, but when he swallowed down the beefsteak, he felt his constitution strengthen a bit.

Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue said with a smile,

"Did you notice the effects?"

"Did it strengthen my constitution?" Song Shuhang said. He just ate a chunk of meat, but it was unexpectedly able to strengthen his constitution. Anyway, the strengthening effect was quite low. It was only comparable to him practicing the 〈Basic Buddhist Fist Technique〉 once.

"This is the skill of an immortal chef. Although the effects aren't comparable to those of medicine pills, the food they prepare wins in flavor, and it doesn't have side effects, either. Moreover, the ingredients are much easier to find too," Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue said. "However, my personal immortal chef isn't that skilled, and even the strengthening effect on your constitution is rather low."

Song Shuhang sighed with emotion and said, "I'm already very satisfied." Now, he was really looking forward to attending Immortal Fairy Bie Xue's Immortal Feast. How much of a boost would he receive after eating the food there?

After Song Shuhang finished breakfast, Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue placed the newspaper down and got up, saying, "Little friend Shuhang, shall we practice if you are done eating breakfast?"

"We'? Senior Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue, are you going to practice together with me?" Song Shuhang said.

"Yes, let's practice together!"

"Sure, Senior!" Song Shuhang got up with a jump. Is Senior Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue going to instruct me?

It was literally a 'favorable treatment'!

Chapter 515: Hundred giants

Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue carried Song Shuhang along and arrived at the sixteenth underground floor of the immortal cave. In there was a completely white room, very spacious and devoid of objects.

The sixteenth floor of the immortal cave was the place with the highest concentration of mysterious energy and matter.

Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue asked, "Little friend Shuhang, you're currently unable to use true qi, right? In that case, we'll practice without using it. Which type of environment do you prefer for battle? A forest? An ancient city? A plain? The sea?"

I can choose the environment I prefer? Song Shuhang pondered for a moment and replied, "In that case, I'll choose the ancient city."

"Good, the ancient city it is!" Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue opened his arms and operated the spiritual energy inside his body.

In the next moment, the white room started to change.

The surrounding space started to expand without limits.

A nearly ten meters tall wall suddenly rose from the ground. Afterward, archer towers, clock towers, houses, castles, the inner city, and all kinds of ancient buildings rose from the ground.

In the blink of an eye, the room on the sixteenth underground floor had turned into a fortified ancient city.

Song Shuhang blurted out, "An illusory reality?"

Only the illusory reality of a Venerable could create such a scene out of nowhere.

The illusory reality was a special skill that Seventh Stage Venerables possessed. With this skill, they could create an illusory

space within the real world. The things inside the illusory space weren't any different than real things. Even the injuries received there would stay behind after leaving the illusory reality, just like when Song Shuhang entered Venerable White's desert.

Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue faintly smiled and said, "It seems that little friend Shuhang has already experienced Fellow Daoist White's illusory reality... however, we are still in the real world at this time."

"If we are still in the real world... is it a 'real illusion' then?" Song Shuhang said in amazement.

The 'real illusion' was a skill that was the complete opposite of the 'illusory reality'.

Once it was activated, the real illusion could turn certain events that had happened in the real world into illusions.

Venerable White gained a superficial knowledge of this skill and had Song Shuhang experience it for a while... that was truly a tragic memory for our little friend.

That day, the goldfish-version Song Shuhang was gulped down at once by Doudou. He was shredded to pieces by sharp dog teeth and melted by the gastric acid in his stomach.

Just recalling this memory was enough to make Song Shuhang tremble all over.

"Little friend Shuhang knows about the 'real illusion' as well?" Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue looked at Song Shuhang with a curious expression on his face and explained, "However, the skill I used isn't the real illusion. That skill can only be mastered only after reaching the Eighth Stage Profound Sage Realm and showing one's divinity in front of the masses. I'm still one step short from that point.

The skill I used just now relied on the runes, barriers, and formations engraved in the immortal cave and materialized some

of the objects present in my illusory reality in the real world through a special 'shape imitating' magical technique. In other words, it's an 'object imitating' technique. Everything you see here is made of pure energy. If you go ahead and touch it with your hands, you will immediately understand."

Song Shuhang curiously touched the city walls. Sure enough, he immediately felt as though he was touching pure energy. Although he could touch the walls, they felt different from real walls.

What a strange magical technique...



After the ancient city materialized out of nowhere...

Song Shuhang asked, "Senior Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue, how are we going to practice?"

He was a cultivator of the Second Stage that couldn't even use the true qi and mental energy in his body. If Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue wanted to practice together with him, he would have to restrain his strength until it was around the Second Stage.

Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue said, "Before starting the practice, I need to get an understanding of your battle prowess. Come, attack me with all your strength!"

It was truly the attitude of an expert.

After hearing these words, Song Shuhang didn't hesitate and immediately attacked Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue.

Now that he was unable to use his true qi and mental energy, he could only display the <Basic Buddhist Fist Technique> and the pure saber moves of the <Inverted Scale Saber Technique> without the addition of true qi, as well as the <Virtuous Man's Ten Thousand Mile Walk> footwork.

If we added the innate skill of the Mouth Aperture, he could reluctantly use the <Roaring Lion's Technique>. However, that wouldn't have any effect on Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue.

Song Shuhang used the <Virtuous Man's Ten Thousand Mile Walk> footwork and quickly approached Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue. Afterward, he used the <Basic Buddhist Fist Technique> and attacked him from all kinds of tricky angles.

Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue didn't move and stood in his original place, trying to figure out how to counter Song Shuhang's incoming attacks. In the next moment, his hands danced in the air and gently blocked Song Shuhang's attacks. In all this, his feet didn't move in the least.

"Not bad, your fist technique has already reached the master level, and your movements were flexible and variable, not rigid at all. The combination of the footwork with the fist technique was also very precise," Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue said, quite satisfied.

Five breaths later, Song Shuhang had already finished displaying one round of the <Basic Buddhist Fist Technique>.

Then, he stopped his attacks and said, "Senior, I have other techniques too, but I can't display them, since I can't use true qi at this time."

It was truly a regrettable matter. Just as Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue got the sudden idea to train together with him, Song Shuhang could only display the <Basic Buddhist Fist Technique> and nothing else. It was like gathering the dragon balls just to wish for a meal because one was hungry at the time...

Song Shuhang knew that he was lacking when it came to martial skills and magical techniques. But there was nothing he could do about it. After all, he had been cultivating for a very short amount of time.

Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue nodded. From the attacks just now, he had more or less determined the level of Song Shuhang's battle prowess.

In that case, it was time to advance to the second stage of the training.

* * *

Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue asked, "Little friend Shuhang, do you have any experience in fighting large monster beasts and cosmic demons hand-to-hand?"

"I once encountered a blood demon and a strange, colossal cuttlefish monster. However, I didn't fight them hand-to-hand," Song Shuhang replied.

"In that case, I'll specially give you an additional lesson on how to fight against large creatures. Moreover, you are a bit lacking when it comes to attacking methods. When you have the time, you should go in the group space of the Nine Provinces Number One Group and take a look at the small missions issued by other fellow daoists and obtain the related rewards like cultivation techniques and martial skills. You should complete the missions in your free time and learn several different types of attacking methods. It's never a bad thing to have many skills at one's disposal," Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue said.

"I was already planning to do so," Song Shuhang replied.

"Good, good... now then, let's change the training method! I'll prepare several suitable targets for you to practice your skills first!" After saying this much, Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue raised his hands once more and said, "Set the range of height from 5 to 10 meters, the strength to the Second Stage Realm, the available skills to the <Lightning Flash Fist>, the quantity to 100, the fatal weaknesses to a random mark... done! Come forth, giant Seventh Cultivators of True Virtue!"

Just as his voice faded, a hundred colossal figures suddenly rose from the ground outside the ancient city.

The giants had the same face as Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue, and a body covered with muscles. Their height went from five to ten meters, and just like the ancient city, they were made of pure energy.

At this time, they were standing outside the city with similar poses to the Terminator when it first made its appearance.

Song Shuhang stared at the giants that had suddenly risen from the ground and asked, "Senior, you are not planning to make me fight those hundred giants, right?"

Even though the giants were also at the Second Stage Realm, their build was very large! Moreover, there were hundreds of them! How was he supposed to fight them? Song Shuhang felt that he would be beaten to death.

Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue faintly smiled and said, "Little friend Shuhang, you have to believe in yourself. According to my calculations, these are the most suitable practicing targets for you. I prepared them based on your fighting capacity. As long as you give it your all, you don't need to fear them."

"Senior, are you sure?"

"Yes, I'm sure of it. Anyway, little friend Shuhang, you have two choices now. First: hold on against the giant Seventh Cultivators of True Virtue for one hour, protecting the inner city. Second: completely kill the giant Seventh Cultivators of True Virtue.

If you succeed, I'll teach you a special type of 'secret sound transmission' skill. The type that can transmit the message to a whole group."

Song Shuhang was rather direct and asked, "What if I fail?"

"If you fail... well, I haven't decided what will happen if you fail.

"Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue pondered for a while and said, "Even if you fail, it's not really a problem. After all, the main objective is to give you some training. Therefore, the ancient city will return to its original state if you fail, and the giants will keep spawning indefinitely until you manage to succeed."

"..." Song Shuhang.

Is this like a continuous make-up test you would keep taking until you succeed?

"Moreover, since little friend Song Shuhang can't use true qi right now, the giants won't use it, either, and will only rely on their physical strength." Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue snapped his fingers and said, "In that case, let's begin!"

Outside the city walls, the hundred giant Seventh Cultivators of True Virtue roared and charged toward the city walls.

The ten meters tall city walls couldn't possibly stop the giants. If they were allowed to come closer, they would simply leap over it.

Senior Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue, it's not correct to give them a favorable treatment!

"Right, I'll give you another reminder. Little friend Shuhang, do you see the fist-shaped marks on the bodies of the giants? Find the marks and hit them there with all your strength. The mark is the fatal weakness of the giants," Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue said.

The corner of Song Shuhang's mouth twitched. Then, he took a deep breath and operated the <Virtuous Man's Ten Thousand Mile Walk> footwork, heading toward the city walls. He wanted to shift the battlefield to the city walls or directly outside the ancient city if possible.



Just as Song Shuhang jumped onto the city walls, a ten meters tall giant arrived in front of them and grabbed the walls with his

hands, revealing half of his head.

On the top of the head of the giant was a mark.

"That's good." Song Shuhang jumped high up and took the treasured saber Broken Tyrant in his hands, slashing toward the giant in the next instant.

"Right, I forgot to tell you something. Little friend Shuhang, I'm about to increase the gravity by three times!" Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue voice was transmitted once more.

Senior, don't backstab me like this!

Song Shuhang had a very bad premonition.

Just as he was thinking, he felt his body sink. Due to the gravity suddenly increasing while he was midair, Song Shuhang lost his balance.

The ten meters tall giant seized the opportunity and swung his palm toward Song Shuhang, trying to crush him like a mosquito... the bodies of the giants were made of pure energy and were thus unaffected by the gravity change.



Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue stood in the air with both hands behind the back, looking at Song Shuhang battling against the giants.

Next to him was the jade white lion, Fourth Cultivator of True Virtue, who had just returned. The two of them were standing side by side. "Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue, I can't seem to find anything special about little friend Shuhang... he doesn't have a special, cultivation-related constitution, and he has missed the best period for cultivators to build their foundation. His battle experience is also very normal. There doesn't seem to be anything eye-catching about him..."

"And yet, he has advanced to the Second Stage Realm in only two

months..." Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue said with a faint smile.

Chapter 516: Ding~ Congratulations for obtaining a set of broken home appliances!

"Is it luck then?" the jade white lion Fourth Cultivator of True Virtue said subconsciously. Song Shuhang didn't have any special innate talent when it came to cultivation and missed the best period to practice. But even with such a huge disadvantage, he was able to advance so quickly... in that case, he must have had some incredible luck, right?

Moreover, there was someone like Venerable White in the Nine Provinces Number One Group who was known for his heaven-defying luck. Therefore, Fourth Cultivator of True Virtue immediately thought about 'luck' as soon as Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue said those words.

"Perhaps..." Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue said with a smile.

He hadn't been online too much recently, but he was able to see from the chat logs of the Nine Provinces Number One Group that Song Shuhang was able to obtain the acknowledgment of most the fellow daoists in the group. Such an achievement couldn't be attributed to luck alone.

After an investment, one would expect a return. Now that the fellow daoists of the group had acknowledged Song Shuhang, he needed to train hard and return their trust.

"Moreover, even Fellow Daoist White seems to care a lot about this little friend," Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue also added.

Venerable White's luck had already reached abnormal levels. It was rather amusing that he, too, was unconsciously paying so much attention to Song Shuhang.



In the meantime.

After getting tossed around for a while, Song Shuhang was finally able to adapt to the gravity three times higher than normal, slowly getting the gist of how he had to fight against the giants.

The giants Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue materialized had a large build and an incredible strength. However, their intelligence was relatively low.

After adapting to the gravity, Song Shuhang brought into full play the advantage the *⟨Virtuous Man's Ten Thousand Mile Walk⟩* gave him. In the end, he was able to kill a five meters tall giant with the help of the treasured saber Broken Tyrant.

"The first one is down," Song Shuhang muttered to himself.

While battling, the strength of his constitution was continuously rising.

After all, the tempering one would receive with daily practice couldn't be compared to the tempering they would receive while in the midst of battle.

Moreover, the room was full of mysterious energy and matter. It was indeed the best place to temper one's body and strengthen the constitution.

Additionally, Song Shuhang discovered the easter egg Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue left behind... the giants would occasionally display the *⟨Lightning Flash Fist⟩* while attacking.

It's likely a fist technique of the Second Stage. Judging from the name, it seems a cultivation technique of the same rank as the 'Flaming Saber'.

The giants couldn't use true qi, either. Therefore, they would only display the pure fist stance, without the lightning damage, while executing the fist technique. Thanks to that, Song Shuhang had the opportunity to learn the stance of the *⟨Lightning Flash Fist⟩*.

Of course, comprehending the stance alone was of no use. One needed to coordinate with the chant of the fist technique to make it work.

Such being the case, did Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue hide the chant of the <Lightning Flash Fist> somewhere close? Song Shuhang thought to himself.

* * *

Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue smiled and said, "It seems that little friend Shuhang discovered my setup."

Then, he turned around and said to Fourth Cultivator of True Virtue, "Did you find that person?"

For the past few days, the jade white lion Fourth Cultivator of True Virtue had been looking for a certain person in the proximity of the moon. It was an entity that had the ability to make itself invisible, and one absolutely couldn't mention its name before finding it.

Otherwise, if it were to hear someone calling its name within a certain range, it would instantly flee thousands of miles apart, disappearing without a trace.

Fourth Cultivator of True Virtue rolled its eyes and said, "How can it be so easy to find that person? Unless it is willing to be discovered, almost no one can find it. However, I found some clues... you should be aware that several cultivators of the Fourth and Fifth Stage have been chasing after that magical treasure called 'Soul Devouring Demonic Gourd' these days, right?"

Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue nodded and said, "Is it related to the gourd?"

"There was a little bit of that person's aura on the gourd. In other words, it's very likely that there was a close contact between that person and the Soul Devouring Demonic Gourd recently," Fourth Cultivator of True Virtue said as it licked its claws.

"What's the origin of that Soul Devouring Demonic Gourd?" Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue asked.

"Maybe you should ask little friend Shuhang. Yesterday, that red-haired Spiritual Emperor looked for little friend Shuhang precisely due to the Soul Devouring Demonic Gourd." The jade white lion stretched out its claw and pointed toward Song Shuhang.

Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue crossed his hands behind the back and laughed. "Therefore, finding that person is also related to little friend Shuhang?"

Sure enough, little friend Shuhang was a rather interesting fellow.

Just as Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue and the jade white lion Fourth Cultivator of True Virtue were discussing, something changed in the battlefield below.

Little friend Shuhang was... defeated.

He made a small mistake and was surrounded by the giants.

Then, several fists exploded at the same time, burying Song Shuhang in the ground.

At the critical moment, a golden shield appeared in front of Song Shuhang, blocking the remaining attacks.

The golden shield was something Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue left on Song Shuhang's body just in case.

The moment the golden shield made its appearance, it meant that Song Shuhang had 'died' once.

Song Shuhang had a depressed expression on his face.

After ten minutes of rest, he entered the 'make-up test' mode.

The ruined parts of the ancient city were restored to their previous state, and the giants that Song Shuhang had killed also came back to life.

The hundred giants were now positioned outside the ancient city once again.

The make-up test had now begun!

If he were to fail, he would end up in the endless loop of the make-up test mode~



At the same time, in the proximity of the moon.

Just as Song Shuhang was fighting against the giants, many things happened in the space surrounding the moon.

For example, the cultivators that were chasing after the Soul Devouring Demonic Gourd discovered that there wasn't only one sword light in space!

Just as they were chasing after it, the sword light with the Soul Devouring Demonic Gourd suddenly divided in two... the cultivators were dumbfounded and didn't know which one of the two they should chase.

But that wasn't all. There was news of other cultivators seeing powerful sword lights roaming in the surrounding space from time to time.

Early this morning, a group of cultivators joined hands and was lucky enough to intercept one of the sword lights.

But when they jointly sealed the sword qi on the flying sword and prepared to happily divide the loot, they were dumbfounded.

What the fck is this?*

The object on the sword light wasn't a magical treasure or the Soul Devouring Demonic Gourd. It was a flat-screen television with the eye-catching 'Made in China' writing on it.

We worked ourselves to death and even wasted precious sealing talismans just get a flat-screen television?!

"As if that wasn't enough, the television is even broken!" One of the cultivators of the Fourth Stage of the group was on the verge of tears. He had used a number of sealing talismans that was worth sixteen spirit stones of the Fifth Stage to catch the sword light! Now, he wouldn't even be able to get back the capital he initially expended!

In the instant this group of cultivators saw the broken television, they immediately felt as though a mouthful of old blood was now stuck in their throats, making them feel very ill.

At last, their vision expectantly shifted to the sword light... the sword light was incredibly powerful. Perhaps it was a very precious, and they could make up their losses by selling the flying sword?

But in the next moment, the group of cultivators finally spat out with tremendous force the blood stuck in their throats.

The body of the sword light was made of wood... and it seemed to be casually manufactured!

It was such a huge rip-off that they found the pain difficult to bear!



Just like a domino effect, after the first sword light was captured, several other sword lights followed suit and were captured one after another by the cultivators that had now joined hands.

After, these groups of cultivators started to expectantly search for 'treasures' above the sword lights...

Ding! Congratulations, you just obtained a broken microwave oven!

"Spurt~" The second team of cultivators that had joined hands spat out a mouthful of blood.

Ding! Congratulations, you just obtained a blown up fridge and

humidifier!

"Spurt~" The third team of cultivators that had joined hands spat out a mouthful of blood.

Ding! Congratulations, you just obtained a broken television, a blown up air conditioner, some pieces of a fridge, and an induction cooker!

"Spurt~" The fourth team of cultivators that had joined hands spat out a mouthful of blood.

Perhaps the people on Earth would be able to see a very rare 'blood moon' today.



Time flew by.

Noon, 3 PM.

In a place on the moon where cultivators gathered.

A large group of cultivators with lifeless eyes had gathered here. The expressions on their faces looked extremely aggrieved.

"Other people have returned. Judging from their expressions, they also seem like fellow daoists that have successfully intercepted one of those sword lights!"

"What do you think they obtained?"

"I heard that one of the groups of cultivators that returned obtained a television and a fridge. Some of the younger cultivators were unable to resign themselves and started to study the television. They firmly believe that there is a treasure concealed inside the TV."

"It's not only the younger generation. I've heard that many other fellow daoists also brought back air conditioners, fridges, and microwave ovens they found to examine them carefully."

"They suffered a huge loss and weren't able to obtain anything in

return. If it were me, I would also be on the verge of going crazy!"

"I bet they must be continuously cursing in their heart whomever did this."

Just as they were discussing, another group of cultivators came over. Their eyes were likewise lifeless and their expressions aggrieved.

Amidst the group, there was a cultivator with long hair that was gnashing his teeth in anger.

After approaching the gathered cultivators, the cultivator with long hair cupped his hands and asked, "Fellow Daoists, do you know if there is any news of a female monster dog appearing on the moon?"

"Eh? Little, brother, did you obtain something good?" the gathered cultivators asked curiously. Was it possible that he obtained a treasure that only monster dogs could use?

"Hehe." The young cultivator revealed a carefree smile and gave the thumbs up. "It's because I feel like bitching to my heart's content today!"



The next day.

July 29th, Monday. Today's dao name was Virtuous Buddhist Sabersman.

Yesterday, Song Shuhang trained inside the underground room at a gravity three times higher than normal. In there, he was tortured by the hundred giants for a whole day, and they only stopped at the wee hours of the morning. In the meantime, Chu Chu and Li Yinzhu were also brought over by Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue's servant to the scene of Song Shuhang fighting the hundred giants to assist.

Early morning, just as Song Shuhang got up, he felt that he was

tired both in body and mind.

On the road of cultivation, one had to alternate between work and rest. Therefore, Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue advised Song Shuhang to go out for a stroll. It was very difficult to visit the moon normally, and it just so happened that there was a place where cultivators gathered next to Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue's immortal cave. There was even a small street market there.

Therefore, Song Shuhang brought Li Yinzhu, Chu Chu, and Yu Jiaojiao together with him and headed toward that place with the help of Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue's immortal boat, curious as to what he would find there.

Of course, he would only take a look around. A poor wretch like Song Shuhang couldn't afford to buy anything.

After getting out of the immortal boat, Song Shuhang's group arrived at the entrance of the place. In the next moment, he saw a huge pile of home appliances just next to the entrance.

Microwave ovens, fridges, televisions, induction cookers...

Chapter 517: The fight for the demonic gourd

Is it just my misconception...? Can someone tell me why do I find this fridge, television, microwave oven, and so on so familiar...? I'm probably overthinking it. After all, things such as fridges are mass-produced, and it's not that uncommon to see the same model somewhere else, Song Shuhang thought to himself.

After reaching this conclusion, Song Shuhang carried Li Yinzhu and the others along and entered the street market, taking the opportunity to stroll around and relax.

Just as he was strolling through the market, Song Shuhang heard the conversations between the stall vendors.

They were mostly discussing what happened yesterday. According to the contents of the discussion, several cultivators joined hands and tried to intercept the sword lights flying in the proximity of the moon and retrieve the treasures on them.

Afterward, several cultivators indeed managed to intercept the sword lights successfully.

Normally speaking, it should be a joyous event and something worthy of celebration. But all the cultivators that had managed to catch the sword lights successfully suffered losses and gained nothing... because the only things they found on the sword lights were broken house appliances.

According to the rumors, a young cultivator with long hair was unable to withstand the blow and went looking for a female monster dog for some action, and several other cultivators that had suffered losses cried themselves to sleep.

Needless to say, the house appliances piled up next to the entrance were the spoils of war of the cultivators that joined hands yesterday to intercept the sword lights!

After hearing this much, Song Shuhang broke into a cold sweat that didn't show signs of stopping. No wonder he found those house appliances so familiar... because those were the house appliances that Venerable White sent to space!

What a coincidence!

But hadn't these flying swords flown toward the depths of space? Why did they come back?

Are the runes of the Ten Thousand Mile Flying Escape Technique so strong? To the point that they pulled closer the disposable flying swords even though they were so far away?

It was unknown why the flying swords came back, but Song Shuhang felt very sorry for all the people here.



Just as Song Shuhang was in deep thoughts...

A well-informed cultivator shouted aloud in the street market, "Latest news, latest news! The team led by 'Loose Cultivator Qian Yan' and composed of 'Loose Cultivator Xiong Gui', 'Yan Wuhuan', and the monster capable of assuming human form, 'Mo Ran', managed to intercept the sword light with the Soul Devouring Demonic Gourd! At this time, Loose Cultivator Qian Yan's team is carrying the Soul Devouring Demonic Gourd and the sword light back!"

Someone had finally managed to obtain the Soul Devouring Demonic Gourd?

All the members of the team led by Loose Cultivator Qian Yan were quite powerful. They were famous Fifth Stage Spiritual Emperors that were quite well-known in this place where cultivators gathered. Each of them had a Golden Core with five dragon patterns or above.

But judging from the news, even the members of the small team were unable to completely subdue the Soul Devouring Demonic

Gourd. It seemed they had no choice but to carry it back together with the sword light.

"Dammit, we were one step behind!"

"Loose Cultivator Qian Yan has the devil's luck!"

"I refuse to accept it! Why did we only get a fridge when we joined hands yesterday? That's too unfair!"

"Loose Cultivator Qian Yan and the others are bringing the Soul Devouring Demonic Gourd back with the sword light. Does it mean that they aren't planning to subdue it, but to sell it instead?"

"Who knows... but the mad chase after Soul Devouring Demonic Gourd has finally come to an end. Now, no one would have to suffer due to those broken house appliances."

"Has it really come to an end? I don't think things are so simple." Another cultivator laughed and said, "How many people suffered losses while trying to get their hands on the Soul Devouring Demonic Gourd earlier? Moreover, the Fifth Stage Spiritual Emperors of several powerful influences already regard the Soul Devouring Demonic Gourd as something that belongs to them. Do you really think that they will give up so easily?"

As long as Loose Cultivator Qian Yan's team didn't manage to subdue the Soul Devouring Demonic Gourd, this matter wouldn't come to an end.

Only God knew how many people were secretly staring at Qian Yan's team!

Perhaps someone would try to snatch the gourd from them before they made it back!



"Someone finally managed to get their hands on the gourd." Song Shuhang faintly smiled.

He didn't really care if someone else obtained it. After all, it

wasn't something that belonged to him in the first place. Moreover, he wasn't strong enough to participate in the battle for the Soul Devouring Demonic Gourd.

Actually, it was a good thing for Song Shuhang that someone managed to get their hands on the gourd... with that, there won't be any red-haired Spiritual Emperor, black-haired Spiritual Emperor, or xxx-haired Spiritual Emperor trying to capture him after discovering the relationship between the sword lights and the Ten Thousand Mile Flying Escape Technique and forcing him to hand over his treasures and so on. It was such a headache.

In the end, one could be upright only if they didn't have selfish desires!

Song Shuhang brought Li Yinzhu and the others along and strolled through the street market.

It wasn't a 'cultivators' street market' for nothing. It had all kinds of rare treasures and lacked next to nothing.

For example, the pill of youthfulness that even money couldn't buy in the mortal world was sold here in batches. A whole bottle with thirty pills within for a spirit stone of the Second Stage.

Song Shuhang saw some spirit rice sold retail too. Unexpectedly, the price of one packet was two spirit stones of the First Stage, double what he paid the last time! Moreover, the packets of spirit rice were one size smaller; these guys were truly unscrupulous profiteers!

Additionally, there were all kinds of spirit beasts, medicine pills, and spirit plants.

Song Shuhang took a liking to a shop selling magical robes. In there, there were elegant scholarly robes, handsome daoist robes, and even modern windbreakers. They were really cool.

Song Shuhang really wanted to buy them. Unfortunately, he was short of money at this time.

For one moment, he even had the urge to take out the emerald-green kasaya and exchange it for a daoist robe.

But in the end, he managed to resist this urge.

In the end, the emerald-green kasaya was a high-quality product. Its defensive properties were much better than the mass-produced magical clothes in the shop.

Song Shuhang was a reasonable person. He wouldn't disregard his life and safety in favor of something stylish.

Aside from the shops that sold magical robes and flying swords, several other shops that sold cultivation techniques also piqued Song Shuhang's interest.

The Flaming Saber, Earth Spirit Staff, Fire Controlling Art, Basic Foundation Establishment Sword Technique, and other cultivation techniques were sold in the shops. The selling price was different for each of them. They were all ordinary cultivation techniques, and lots of them were incomplete.

After they were sold, the cultivation techniques belonged to the buyer, and they could pass them down to the disciple they liked the most.

After looking around for a while, Song Shuhang faintly sighed.

The cultivation techniques were quite pricey. Even the cheapest foundation establishment cultivation technique was sold for a spirit stone of the Third Stage or higher price.

The cultivation techniques were so expensive because each volume was transcribed using a special method, with a special brush, ink, and paper. Moreover, most of the volumes had a low-level illusory technique engraved on them that allowed them to create an illusory space where the technique was passed down.

However, not all the volumes of cultivation techniques here present were well written like the 〈Basic Buddhist Fist Technique〉, which was using a combination of text and pictures to create the

illusory space where the technique was passed down.

Most of the volumes here present had a rough illusory technique engraved on them, and the number of times one could use them were limited.

"Wait until I have money... I'll come back."

All poor wretches with no money had the same train of thought!



As Song Shuhang and the others strolled in the street market, Li Yinzhu started to get sleepy.

During the last two days, the time she spent sleeping was gradually increasing, and the cold emanating from her body was also getting stronger. Perhaps it wouldn't be long before she was confined by ice once more.

Song Shuhang was really powerless when it came to dealing with Li Yinzhu's disease.

He could only hope to find a cure for her disease in the 'forbidden area' when exploring it with Venerable White.

"Sleepy." Li Yinzhu pulled Song Shuhang's clothes and yawned; her silvery eyes were all misty. She looked extremely cute at this time.

Song Shuhang bent his body and skillfully embraced Li Yinzhu.

Li Yinzhu also conveniently leaned against Song Shuhang's shoulder and closed her eyes after finding a comfortable position, quickly falling asleep.

There was a special tacit understanding between the two.

After embracing Li Yinzhu, Song Shuhang said to Chu Chu, "Miss Chu Chu, let's head back."

Chu Chu nodded. She didn't buy many things, either.

The ancestor of the Chu Family gave her some spirit stones

before she set out, but she was unwilling to spend them carelessly. She wanted to spend them on truly useful things and not to squander them around.



The party of three humans plus Yu Jiaojiao entered Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue's immortal boat, preparing to head back to the immortal cave.

Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue's two servants were driving the immortal boat. Therefore, Song Shuhang and the others didn't have to go through the trouble.

The trio sat tightly.

Song Shuhang carefully held Li Yinzhu in his embrace. While she was sleeping, the cold emanating from her body got even stronger, and Song Shuhang almost felt as though he was hugging a chunk of ice.

"Resist for some more, resist until we explore the forbidden area. Perhaps things will turn for the better at that time," Song Shuhang muttered to himself.

While hugging her, he felt as though he had taken Li Tiansu's place and that Li Yinzhu was his daughter now.

In the Heart Aperture, the ghost spirit slightly shook, reacting to Song Shuhang's feelings.



The immortal boat took off and slowly headed toward Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue's immortal cave.

Song Shuhang said, "I must absolutely complete the challenge of the hundred giants today."

Constantly battling against the giants allowed him to benefit immensely.

Although he was exhausted both in mind and body after fighting

against them for the whole day yesterday, his constitution had been strengthened quite a bit thanks to it.

The true qi in his dantian had slowly calmed down, and he didn't feel like he was going to explode at any time anymore.

It was the same with the mental energy between his eyebrows; it wasn't hurting as it did before.



The immortal boat kept advancing forward.

Just as the boat was advancing, the servant on the right who was currently controlling it suddenly stood up and stretched out his hand, pulling the lever on top of his head.

The lever was probably the brake of the immortal boat. After the servant pulled it, the speed of the immortal boat reduced until it stopped.

"Is something the matter?" Song Shuhang asked.

The other servant turned his head around and said to Song Shuhang with a smile, "Daoist Priest Shuhang, Fairy Chu Chu, don't worry. It's just that some cultivators are fighting ahead of us. Therefore, it's better if we take a roundabout route so as to avoid getting involved in the fight."

The immortal boat was a very precious magical treasure, and it would be very troublesome to repair it if it were to get damaged. Therefore, it was better to change route if cultivators were fighting in the front.

Song Shuhang nodded and shot a glance outside, seeing two groups of cultivators crossing swords.

The fighting scene was extremely dazzling.

Flying swords were spinning and sword lights exploding, dazzling like the rising sun. One was simply unable to look straight at them.

Powerful saber qi was descending like a waterfall, single-handedly destroying all the things that dared to block its path.

Runes were also revolving, covering the whole battlefield. The number of runes was very high; there were probably more than a thousand of them.

The two sides were both composed of expert cultivators.

At this time, a wild shout was transmitted from the battlefield. "Loose Cultivator Qian Yan, know your place and obediently hand over the Soul Devouring Demonic Gourd! Otherwise, I'll kill you and extract your soul, torturing it day and night!"

"Hmph! Come and do it if you have the balls! Do you think I'm afraid of you? Everyone is capable of boasting... do you really think I would be afraid of you disciples of the Limitless Demon Sect?!" Another clear and resounding voice was transmitted from the battlefield.

The Soul Devouring Demonic Gourd had given rise to a battle for its control...

Chapter 518: We just lacked strong guys to put in the mines

Coincidentally, Song Shuhang noticed two familiar faces in the camp of the Limitless Demon Sect.

He saw the same two black-robed disciples of the Limitless Demon Sect that he met as soon as he got into space. However, they weren't wearing their magical black robes anymore. At this time, they were wearing two white-colored short magical robes of much lower quality.

Moreover, they didn't have magical swords with them, either. While battling, they were using magical techniques from the distance and fists in close range battles. They looked quite pitiful.

'Even when it comes to demanding the payment, we are professional!' The proud face of that man wearing a leather armor, who was the leader of those guys demanding the pay, resurfaced in Song Shuhang's mind.

Did that group of muscular cultivators strip them of their magical black clothes too?

At this time, the cultivators of the Limitless Demon Sect and Loose Cultivator Qian Yan's team finished trash-talking and started battling once more.

All kinds of cool, movie-like special effects exploded one after another.

The lights of magical techniques, talismans, and sword lights completely covered the two sides. Moreover, the area their attacks covered was continuously increasing!

If Song Shuhang and the others stayed there, they would surely get involved with them!

Moreover, Song Shuhang was worried about something else too.

According to what the cultivators in the street market said, Loose Cultivator Qian Yan and his team were unable to subdue the Soul Devouring Demonic Gourd and thus brought it back together with the sword light.

Since the sword light and the gourd were brought back together... wouldn't the sword light react to him if they were too close, flying toward him together with the gourd?

Fck, it's going to be really troublesome if it happens...*

Song Shuhang said, "We should quickly get away from this group of battling cultivators."

"Sure, Daoist Priest Shuhang," the two servants of Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue said calmly.

Afterward, they operated the immortal boat and took a roundabout route, keeping clear of the Limitless Demon Sect and Loose Cultivator Qian Yan's team.

Now then, 'Daoist Priest Shuhang' has a nice ring to it... but the best thing is that they aren't calling me 'Great Master Shuhang'!

* * *

Luckily, the matter Song Shuhang was worried about didn't take place.

Loose Cultivator Qian Yan's team wasn't famous for nothing in that gathering of cultivators. The seal they used was very strong and tightly held the sword light in place, not allowing it to break free.

The immortal boat carried Song Shuhang and the others and smoothly arrived at Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue's immortal cave.

"We're finally back home." Song Shuhang felt as though he had got a load off his chest.

He wasn't unlucky today, and nothing bad happened to him,

either. It was truly a wonderful day.

He picked up Li Yin Zhu and headed toward Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue's immortal cave.

"Careful! Daoist Priest Shu Hang, dodge quickly!" The voices of the two servants operating the immortal boat were transmitted from the rear.

Song Shu Hang unconsciously moved to one side, avoiding the incoming crisis... Is today's 'misfortune' planning to ambush me at the doorstep of home?

At the same time, Song Shu Hang turned his head around in puzzlement to take a look at what he should be 'careful' about since he didn't feel any sense of crisis.

As soon as he turned his head around, he saw something shooting through space and coming toward him.

It was a sword light.

Very dazzling and very familiar.

Fck, isn't that the radiance of one of Venerable White's disposable flying swords?*

Speaking of which, Song Shu Hang could now identify the sword lights of cultivators with the naked eye.

Is it possible that one of those sword lights roaming in space with broken home appliances came toward me?

If that's the case, it's not too bad... at most, I'll take care of the space junk.

However, there was another possibility that was giving Song Shu Hang a headache... what if the sword light with the Soul Devouring Demonic Gourd on it that Loose Cultivator Qian Yan had sealed had broken free and was now heading toward him...?

If Loose Cultivator Qian Yan and his team brought the sword light and the Soul Devouring Demonic Gourd back together, it

wasn't only because they were unable to subdue the gourd... but it was also because they were unable to separate the Soul Devouring Demonic Gourd and the sword light in the first place. Therefore, they should be well aware of the strength of the sword light and of the fact that it could break free at any time. However, they still decided to brace themselves and bring back both the gourd and the sword light.

Just as Song Shuhang was in deep thoughts, Yu Jiaojiao, who was sitting on his shoulder, said, "I can faintly see the silhouette of a gourd on the sword light."

Song Shuhang face-palmed... the situation he was most afraid of was about to take place...

"Whizz~"

The speed of the sword light was extremely fast as it arrived in front of Song Shuhang. But before bumping into him, the sword light suddenly braked and stopped in its tracks, starting to gently hover midair.

Song Shuhang held Li Yinzhu with one hand and used the other to grab the hilt of the disposable flying sword.

The sword light that hundreds of cultivators were unable to catch was now obediently allowing Song Shuhang to grab itself.

Chu Chu blinked her eyes. The object that several cultivators of the Fourth and Fifth Stage were fighting for had now automatically flown into Song Shuhang's hands...?

"Ah! There are some people in the back coming over here," Yu Jiaojiao also added.

In the space, two groups of people were using their own special methods and madly chasing after the sword light. These people were precisely Loose Cultivator Qian Yan's group and the guys from Limitless Demon Sect that were happily fighting against each other earlier.

"The Soul Devouring Demonic Gourd is ours!"

"Stupid loose cultivators, if you dare to meddle in this matter again, we people of the Limitless Demon Sect won't let you off!"

"Limitless Demon Sect, you're the ones that should be careful! Su Clan's Seven has already destroyed almost ten of your branches, and yet, you still dare to act arrogantly! If you anger us, making us join hands, our strength won't be much lower than Su Clan's Seven's!"

"Trash like you unexpectedly dares to compare themselves to Su Clan's Seven... if you provoke us, the Limitless Demon Sect will make you die without a burial site!"

"The sword light below stopped!"

"Who is that guy? He got his hands on both the sword light and the Soul Devouring Demonic Gourd! Dammit, hand over the gourd!"

"Eh? It's that guy?" Two disciples of the Limitless Demon Sect wearing black robes opened their eyes wide... Isn't that guy the same Daoist Priest Stressed by a Mountain of Books that made Young Master Hai suffer a loss back then?!

But why did the sword light stop next to Daoist Priest Stressed by a Mountain of Books? Moreover, the sword light seems extremely obedient while in his hands, just as if it was Daoist Priest Stressed by a Mountain of Books' personal pet or something!

Wait a moment! Yeah, that must be it... from the very beginning, it was Stressed by a Mountain of Books' plan!

After all, he's a sly fellow that made even the peerless Senior brother Young Master Hai suffer a loss. What a sinister and scary guy...

The two disciples wearing black robes clenched their teeth and said, "However... if a mere cultivator of the Second Stage tries to make fun of so many powerful Spiritual Emperors... he is simply

seeking death! If you play with fire, you'll get burned!"

The two strongest cultivators of the respective groups, Loose Cultivator Qian Yan and Peak Leader Bao Ping, twinkled a few times and shot toward Song Shuhang at the same time.

"Hand over the Soul Devouring Demonic Gourd!" Peak Leader Bao Ping cupped his hands into the shape of a barrel and shot a ray of mist toward the gourd in Song Shuhang's hands.

"Damned fellow, the gourd is mine! Don't even think about stealing it!" Loose Cultivator Qian Yan bellowed. It was something that his team had sealed and obtained with much difficulty, and now, someone was unexpectedly trying to snatch it away under their nose!

Loose Cultivator Qian Yan spat a multicolored ray out of his mouth, aiming at Song Shuhang!



"Those guys are really bold," one of Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue's servants muttered as he glanced at the two Spiritual Emperors quickly descending from the sky. This place was after all Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue's immortal cave!

Barging uninvited into someone else's immortal cave was a very rude behavior.

If the owner of the immortal cave was hot-tempered and were to kill the intruders in a fit of rage, no one would blame them.

At the same time, the servant stretched out his hand, and a defensive barrier appeared in the airspace of the immortal cave, warding off the attacks of Loose Cultivator Qian Yan and Peak Leader Bao Ping.

Next, the other servant turned toward Chu Chu and Shuhang and said with a smile, "Daoist Priest Shuhang, please enter the immortal cave."

Song Shuhang felt an invisible strength support his body and bring him inside Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue's immortal cave.

The nearby Chu Chu was also picked up and brought inside the immortal cave after Song Shuhang.

"Defensive barrier, activate!" Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue's servant said.

As soon as he said these words, stone columns rose one after another in the proximity of the entrance of the immortal cave. From the looks of it, they were the base of a defensive barrier. The purpose of the stone columns was to maintain the powerful defensive system of the immortal cave.



"Hehe, you think you can stop me by relying on a barrier of this level?!" Loose Cultivator Qian Yan bellowed. He didn't care about forcefully barging into the immortal cave of another cultivator. The Soul Devouring Demonic Gourd belonged to him, and he absolutely had to retrieve it.

But the most important thing was that the defense of the immortal cave was very ordinary. The rank of the defensive barrier was of the Fourth Stage. It was something that Loose Cultivator Qian Yan could destroy with one blow.

In the next moment, countless needle-shaped lights exploded from his body.

Each of the lights headed toward the stone columns at the entrance of the immortal cave without fail! Just by looking at this move, one could imagine how skilled Loose Cultivator Qian Yan was when it came to controlling his spiritual energy.

The small needle-shaped lights unexpectedly bypassed the barrier in front of the immortal cave and directly headed toward the stone columns.

"Bang, bang, bang~"

The stone columns at the entrance of the immortal cave exploded one after another, turning into rubble.

"The defense of Senior Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue's immortal cave turned out to be so weak?" Song Shuhang was confused. After all, it was the immortal cave of a Venerable!

Right at this time, the jade white lion Fourth Cultivator of True Virtue appeared beside Song Shuhang and said complacently, "Actually, it's quite normal. After all, I'm the one that arranged these defenses, and there is a limit to how strong they can be."

"Eh? Fourth Cultivator of True Virtue, it was you who arranged the defenses?" Song Shuhang shot a glance outside the immortal cave and said, "The defensive barrier was destroyed, and the opposite party has already barged in. Is it really not a problem?"

"It's not a problem. We just lacked strong guys to put in the mines recently. If they are of the Fifth Stage or above, even better," the jade white lion Fourth Cultivator of True Virtue said with a smile. "Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue discovered a planet with a high-quality spirit stones mine. However, the planet is full of filthy things, and cultivators of the Fifth Stage and below would turn into mindless monsters if they were to stay there for too long."

"And you're looking for strong miners for this reason?" Chu Chu muttered. Fifth Stage Spiritual Emperors were respected figures in the world of cultivators... but these people wanted to catch them and put them to work in mines...?

But right at this time, an ice-cold voice echoed in Song Shuhang's ears. "Out of the way!"

Soon after, a jade white leg appeared out of nowhere and kicked away Fourth Cultivator of True Virtue.

The little lion was literally kicked flying!

Song Shuhang followed the silhouette of the leg and finally saw the owner. It was a woman wearing a light green skirt that had come out from the depths of the immortal cave. Her light green skirt had butterflies embroidered above and was slit until the thighs; it was both sexy and elegant.

The woman had long golden hair that resembled a mass of golden threads, shining to the point of the being dazzling. Additionally, she was wearing a black eyeshade that covered most of her face.

After kicking away the poor Fourth Cultivator of True Virtue, the golden-haired woman elegantly sashayed toward the entrance of the immortal cave...

Chapter 519: The man that can sell anything

"Who is this person?" Song Shuhang asked.

Is she the wife of Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue? Or perhaps his disciple?

No, it still doesn't add up! Whether she is the wife or the disciple, she shouldn't really kick Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue's clone—Fourth Cultivator of True Virtue—like that, right?

After all, it was quite the rude behavior no matter if she was the wife or the disciple.

"She is a despicable person." Fourth Cultivator of True Virtue crawled up from the floor and licked its claws. Although it had a depressed look on its face, it didn't seem angry. From the looks of it, it was already used to this treatment.

"..." Song Shuhang.

Right at this time, the golden-haired woman arrived at the entrance of the immortal cave.

"A kind reminder to the trash that dared to barge into someone else's immortal cave uninvited, I'll give you one second to get the hell out of here!" the woman said as her tall and slender figure stopped at the entrance of the immortal cave.

Although the eyeshade she was wearing covered her eyes, all the onlookers could 'see' the contempt in her eyes. Even the thick eyeshade was unable to block the extreme feeling of despising her persona was emitting.

The taunting skills of the golden-haired woman were surely maxed out.

As if that wasn't enough, she didn't even bother to take off the eyeshade while facing so many enemies. Was it possible that she practiced some kind of special eye technique, and could transform

enemies into statues after taking off her eyeshade?

A cultivator of the Limitless Demon Sect bellowed, "A little girl that hasn't even grown hair down there unexpectedly dares to be so arrogant... aaaah!"

In the next moment, a golden arrow pierced the abdomen of the cultivator of the Limitless Demon Sect, shooting him down from the sky.

It was no different than the duck hunt game~

After the disciple of the Limitless Demon Sect fell to the ground, Song Shuhang was finally able to see the true appearance of the arrow that pierced his abdomen... it was a golden hair that seemed to be cast of gold, belonging to the golden-haired woman.

Did she shoot out her own hair and use it as a weapon?

If that is indeed the case... isn't she afraid of becoming bald?

Does she have a skill similar to Dharma King Creation and can regrow shiny and beautiful hair at will?

"Gulp..." In the sky, the cultivators of the Limitless Demon Sect and the members of Loose Cultivator Qian Yan's team all secretly swallowed a mouthful of saliva.

That disciple of the Limitless Demon Sect that was shot down was a Fifth Stage Spiritual Emperor!

A Fifth Stage Spiritual Emperor was unexpectedly defeated with such ease. It was no different than shooting at little birds flying the sky!

What realm had the strength of this golden-haired woman reached?

"One, two, three... five... ten... thirteen. There are thirteen Fifth Stage Spiritual Emperors in total. The quantity is a bit low, but they should last for quite some time," the golden-haired woman said.

Afterward, her long hair started to move around as though it had a will of its own.

"Quickly disperse! She is about to attack!" Peak Leader Bao Ping roared.

The woman before their eyes was surely stronger than a Fifth Stage Spiritual Emperor... was she a Sixth Stage True Monarch?

But Peak Leader Bao Ping's voice had yet to fade when thirteen golden lights streaked across the sky.

"Thud, thud, thud!"

Just as though it was raining, thirteen Fifth Stage Spiritual Emperors fell from the sky... the strongest of the batch, Loose Cultivator Qian Yan and Peak Leader Bao Ping, were also included.

In the next moment, several of Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue's servants dashed out of the immortal cave, holding long chains in their hands. Afterward, they used the long chains to tie up the fourteen Fifth Spiritual Emperors and dragged them inside the immortal cave.

The servants seemed very skilled at kidnapping people... from the looks of it, it wasn't their first time performing such actions.

The several remaining cultivators of the Fourth Stage in the sky were scared out of their wits.

"You small fries of the Fourth Stage are, on the other hand, of no use. Your luck is good. Now, get out my sight," the golden-haired woman said indifferently.

"Dammit, we disciples of the Limitless Demon Sect will... will..." A cultivator of the Fourth Stage was about to saying something but started stuttering halfway.

The golden-haired woman waved her hand. In the next moment, a dust-covered sigh above the immortal cave became visible.

Residence of Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue.

The seven words were glistening and dazzling to the eye.

"T-t-the Residence of Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue!"

Song Shuhang could feel from the voice of the cultivator of the Fourth Stage that he was trembling.

From the looks of it, the name 'Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue' was rather famous amongst cultivators?

But it was to be expected. If he wasn't famous, Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue wouldn't have asked that red-haired Spiritual Emperor to give him face.

The golden-haired woman said indifferently, "Get the hell out of here before I change my mind. Otherwise, I'll shoot down all of you and throw you in the spirit beast pen and feed you to the pig beasts."

In the next moment, all the cultivators of the Fourth Stage immediately ran away from the Residence of Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue.

They didn't even dare to say stuff like 'I'll come back to take revenge' and so on.

They were like little birds frightened by the mere twang of the bowstring.

"Hmph." The golden-haired woman snorted and elegantly sashayed back to the immortal cave.

When she crossed paths with Fourth Cultivator of True Virtue on the way back, she raised her jade white leg and kicked the poor thing away once more~

"Stupid Fourth Cultivator of True Virtue! The next time, choose a better time to bring troublesome people over! Don't disturb me while I'm sleeping. I've been suffering from insomnia for more than twenty years now, and I had just managed to fall asleep with much difficulty," the golden-haired woman said coldly.

After saying this much, she adjusted the eyeshade and said, "I'm going back to sleep. Don't disturb me again."

From the very beginning, she was wearing the eyeshade so that she could improve the quality of her sleep!

"Tap, tap, tap~"

The golden-haired woman walked away and returned to the depths of the immortal cave, disappearing without traces.

The jade white lion Fourth Cultivator of True Virtue wanted to cry but had no tears. "But it wasn't me who brought trouble over this time!"

It was obviously Song Shuhang who brought those troublesome guys here!

He was just an innocent bystander caught in the crossfire!

After getting out of the wall with much difficulty, the jade white lion Fourth Cultivator of True Virtue gently jumped and arrived next to Song Shuhang. Its vision concentrated on the disposable flying sword in Song Shuhang's hand and the Soul Devouring Demonic Gourd above.

Just yesterday it was chatting with Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue about the Soul Devouring Demonic Gourd, and today, the gourd fell into Song Shuhang's hands.

Was it just a coincidence? Or perhaps it was the choice of the Soul Devouring Demonic Gourd?

After all, the gourd had come in contact with that person. Maybe he had tampered with it in some way?

According to the rumors, that person was the most mysterious merchant in the world of cultivators. One could buy all of the known treasures in the universe from him. The guy even sold several ancient treasures and raw materials that had long

disappeared from the world.

As long as one could pay the appropriate price, they could buy anything from him.

Many big shots in the world of cultivators were looking for him. However, no one could predict when and where he would appear the next time. Even divinations and miraculous foresight were useless against him.

At this time, the clue that could lead them to the merchant was on the gourd in Song Shuhang's hands.

"Little friend Shuhang, are you free right now?" Fourth Cultivator of True Virtue asked.

"Yes, Senior Fourth Cultivator of True Virtue, do you need something from me?" Song Shuhang said.

"It's not me but Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue that needs your help. He has been looking for a certain person recently, and he might need your help to find him," Fourth Cultivator of True Virtue said with a smile.

"No problem, but I'll carry Li Yinzhu to her room first," Song Shuhang replied.

"Right, little friend Shuhang. If you have the opportunity, you should save a few spirit stones during this period of time," Fourth Cultivator of True Virtue said as it licked its claws.

Chapter 520: The Moon Princess

Save a few spirit stones?

The words of the jade white lion Fourth Cultivator of True Virtue hit Song Shuhang's sore spot.

The silver dragon puppet needed spirit stones to move, and he owed Senior White several spirit stones of the Fourth Stage already. Additionally, he needed spirit stones to use the Jingang token of authority and go to Great Master Profound Principle's place to learn the follow-up cultivation technique of the 《Basic Buddhist Fist Technique》. In the future, he would need a large number of spirit stones to learn that 《Flame Substituting Technique》 from Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue...

As if that wasn't enough, there were some circumstances in which he could use spirit stones now that he had advanced to the Second Stage Realm. Therefore, it was indeed a good thing to save up a few spirit stones.

Song Shuhang asked, "Senior Fourth Cultivator of True Virtue, is there a method to quickly accumulate spirit stones?"

The jade white lion pondered for a while and said, "Perhaps you can look for a nearby mine and work there? If a cultivator of the Second Stage mines raw ores each day, they can obtain a wage of five spirit stones of the Third Stage. Moreover, mining inside a mineral vein is good for practice. After all, the spirit stones inside the mineral vein emit a large quantity of spiritual qi."

Song Shuhang asked thoughtlessly, "Does Senior Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue have a mine somewhere close?"

"No, only low-level spirit stones are left in nearby mines, and it's not worth the effort for Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue to mine them," the jade white lion said while licking its claws. Afterward, it used its paws to clean its face.

Are you sure you are a lion and not a cat...?

Anyway, it's five spirit stones of the Third Stage for one day of work... should I consider this possibility? Song Shuhang was getting eager to get into action.

Although five spirit stones of the Third Stage weren't much, he recalled that the volumes of the 'Earth Spirit Staff', 'Wave Splitting Palm', and other foundation establishment cultivation techniques were worth only around two spirit stones of the Third Stage.

In other words, if a cultivator of the Second Stage entered the mines and worked to death for a day, they would earn enough spirit stones to buy a foundation establishing cultivation technique.

And if they gave the foundation establishing cultivation technique to an ordinary person, they would open the gates of cultivation for them.

Wait a moment, strengthening my constitution is the most important thing right now. When would I have the time to mine!

Afterward, Song Shuhang carried Li Yinzhu to her room and followed the jade white lion, heading toward Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue's position.



In the meantime.

In the place where the cultivators were gathered.

The news about someone from the 'Residence of Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue' taking the Soul Devouring Demonic Gourd spread quickly.

At the same time, the news of Loose Cultivator Qian Yan, Peak Leader Bao Ping, and other twelve Spiritual Emperors barging into the 'Residence of Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue' and getting captured as miners also spread.

Perhaps it wasn't necessarily a bad thing that they were captured and sent to the mines... since the mines belonged to Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue, the prisoners would obtain twice the result with half the effort while practicing in there.

Anyway, now that the Soul Devouring Demonic Gourd was snatched away by someone living in the 'Residence of Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue', the remaining cultivators didn't want to fight for it anymore.

After all, it was the immortal cave of a Venerable! Unless they were eager to follow in the footsteps of Loose Cultivator Qian Yan and the others and end up as miners, they wouldn't dare to barge into his immortal cave uninvited.

As a consequence, all the cultivators that had gathered on the moon for the Soul Devouring Demonic Gourd returned to Earth.

Once the cultivators that had come here for the treasure left, the cultivators that had set up the stalls found themselves out of business and left as well.

In the mere span of half a day, the previously noisy and lively moon had turned into a deserted land with just a bunch of cultivators left.

In the Nine Provinces Number One Group.

Scholar Xian Gong: "Is there any fellow daoist that has news about 'demodragons'? ***@Northern River's Loose Cultivator***."

Northern River's Loose Cultivator: "Senior Xian Gong, there has been news of several cosmic demons appearing recently, but they were either bone demons or white demons. There was no news of demodragons."

"Thank you, Northern River. That friends of yours really worked hard 😞," Scholar Xian Gong wrote as he attached a depressed emoji.

Then, he also wrote, "In that case, does anyone know anything about the 'blood of demodragon'? I can buy it for a high price if necessary. Right, can anyone tell me the address of the cultivators' trade center? I will go there and put up a mission to collect the blood of demodragon."

Northern River's Loose Cultivator: "I'll pay attention and immediately notify Senior Xian Gong if there is news of demodragons appearing. Moreover, I'll send you the website of the cultivators' trading center so that you can register and put the advertisement about the blood of demodragon there."

"Thank you so much," Scholar Xian Gong said.

Soon after Scholar Xian Gong popped up, Spirit Butterfly Island's Soft Feather also got online. Her username had now changed to Soft Feather (Moon Princess).

Had Venerable Spirit Butterfly really started to come up with new daily dao names for his daughter?

Soft Feather (Moon Princess): "Seniors, we are finally ready. Today, we will try to explore the ancient ruins once more! I'll surely try my best!"

Northern River's Loose Cultivator: "Soft Feather, I wish you good luck!"

Soft Feather (Moon Princess): "Senior Northern River, please call me 'Moon Princess'. Anyway, thank you for your kind words. I'm sure we'll be lucky and obtain a lot of good things!"

"..." Northern River's Loose Cultivator.

Venerable White: "Soft Feather, are you ready to set out? Everyone else is already downstairs, we are waiting for you."

"Yes, Venerable White. I'll immediately head downstairs," Soft Feather (Moon Princess) quickly replied.

Venerable White: "☺ Right, ***@Fairy Firefly*** , did you send

little friend Shuhang into space?"

"Here I am, Senior." Fairy Firefly appeared and said, "I sent Path-seeking Scholar into space two days ago. I have successfully completed my mission."

"Fairy Firefly worked hard. I wish you the best, Fairy," Venerable White replied.

Fairy Firefly had been dealing with a very important personal matter in these days.

"Senior White, thank you for your blessings ☺," Fairy Firefly replied with a smile.

But right at this time, 'Virtuous Buddhist Sabersman' suddenly popped up and said, "Which Senior mentioned me?"

Song Shuhang had fiddled with the settings of the group and made it so that he would receive a pop-up notification if certain keywords, such as Shuhang, little friend Shuhang, Stressed by a Mountain of Books and even Seven Dao Names were mentioned.

Therefore, he received a notification as soon as the keyword 'little friend Shuhang' was mentioned in the group.

After looking at the chat logs, Virtuous Buddhist Sabersman said, "Senior White, are you going to explore the ancient ruins again?"

Venerable White: "The wounds the other fellow daoists received were light and are healed already. Therefore, we will reenter the ancient ruins today. Anyway, did you manage to adapt to space?"

"Yes, there were no problems aside from a few twists and turns... moreover, I'm currently inside Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue's residence, strengthening my constitution," Song Shuhang replied.

At the same time, Song Shuhang thought of another matter.

Virtuous Buddhist Sabersman: "Right, Senior White. Are there any suitable methods for me to earn spirit stones aside from working in the mines? I was hoping to gather spirit stones within a

short period of time."

Venerable White: "The quickest method to obtain spirit stones is to look for a senior and ask them. I can lend them to you if you want."

"..." Song Shuhang.

The other seniors in the group also didn't seem to have any good suggestion. All the methods they knew to gather spirit stones were not suitable for Song Shuhang.

For example, the techniques Medicine Master and Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman knew were secret techniques passed down in their sects and schools.

On the other hand, Northern River's Loose Cultivator was still trying to think of a suitable method for Song Shuhang and was putting his thoughts in order.

Therefore, Fellow Daoist Virtuous Buddhist Sabersman changed the topic of conversation. "Right, Senior White. I saw the disposable flying sword you launched into space while I was there. They unexpectedly all came back!"

Chapter 521: It's sunny today, let's sunbathe the magical treasures

Song Shuhang guessed that the disposable flying swords might have been attracted toward his position due to the Ten Thousand Mile Flying Escape Technique in the small wooden box, which was also something Venerable White manufactured.

However... the disposable flying swords had been roaming in space for already a month, right? Given their speed, they should have already flown to another planet of the solar system. Such being the case, why were they all flying in the proximity of the moon...?

"The disposable flying swords came back?" Venerable White was also baffled.

He didn't really pay too much attention to those flying swords after launching them into space. After all, who would pay attention to the garbage they had just thrown out?

Venerable White pondered for a moment and said, "I might know the reason. Do you remember when I brought you guys to the Chu Family ten days ago to watch the battle on the Grievance Settling Platform? At that time, while we were flying, I got bored and decided to close up for two days, right? While closing up, I created a very interesting sword formation that was related to 'karma'. The karmic sword formation should be the reason all those disposable flying swords that were related to me came back."

After a nap... ugh! After closing up for two days, Senior White managed to create a karmic sword formation?

Venerable White, you being this incredible is really making us depressed!

"However, only the recently launched disposable flying swords should have been summoned back, haha... 😊" Venerable White

made a hollow laugh.

The disposable flying swords that Venerable White launched into space hundreds of years ago shouldn't have been affected by the formation.

Virtuous Buddhist Sabersman replied honestly, "The disposable flying swords I saw were indeed recently launched. It's just that the quantity was much higher than what I had expected."

It was a given that Senior White had disassembled several other home appliances of unknown origins after he was done disassembling all those present in Medicine Master's multi-storied building...

"Ahaha, there is no need to pay too much attention to those disposable flying swords. It has already been more than ten days, and the effects of the karmic sword formation should be about to end. The disposable flying swords will leave on their own soon. Anyway, we are about to group up and explore the ancient ruins. We'll talk later. 🙌" Venerable White sent a hand-waving emoji.

"Senior White, see you later," Song Shuhang replied.

Then, just as Song Shuhang was preparing to put the phone away, another senior of the group got online.

Su Clan's Seven: "Little friend Shuhang, are you online? Do you remember the package I gave you the last time after capturing Limitless Demon Sect's Branch Leader Jing Mo?"

At that time, after he used the disposable flying sword launcher to take care of Daoist Half Gourd, Song Shuhang was forced to use the Ten Thousand Mile Flying Escape Technique to escape from Branch Leader Jing Mo. As a result, Branch Leader Jing Mo madly chased after him, hellbent on catching him. But in the end, Jing Mo ended up meeting Venerable White and literally dug his own grave.

Later, Su Clan's Seven stripped Jing Mo of all his treasures and

sealed them away, giving the whole loot to Song Shuhang. All the treasures had Jing Mo's personal mark on them. Unless the mark was removed, Song Shuhang would be unable to use the treasures even if they were in his possession.

At that time, Seven told Song Shuhang to wait for one or two months. Once he was done dealing with Branch Leader Jing Mo, Song Shuhang would be able to open the sealed package and obtain the items inside.

"The package is still in my possession. Can I open it now?" Song Shuhang asked.

Su Clan's Seven: "Yes. Jing Mo has been dealt with by the Su Clan. Moreover, the personal mark on the items should have already disappeared under the effects of my seal. You can use them without worries."

"Alright, Senior," Song Shuhang replied.

Su Clan's Seven: "Moreover, thanks to the 'skeletal dragon's withered vine' little friend Shuhang provided the last time, Sixteen's condition's stabilized by a great margin. She isn't in danger anymore."

"That's great!" Song Shuhang was immediately relieved after reading these words.

All his effort hadn't been in vain.

Now then, would he be able to meet Su Clan's Sixteen again?

Song Shuhang was quickly typing on the phone while following Fourth Cultivator of True Virtue.

Right at this time, Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue's voice was transmitted from ahead. "Little friend Shuhang, are you chatting with the fellow daoists of the Nine Provinces Number One Group?"

Song Shuhang raised his head and saw that Fourth Cultivator of True Virtue had stopped and was now licking its claws.

Ahead of the jade white lion was an empty ground of the size of a football field.

And Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue was currently... bathing his magical treasures?

He wasn't bathing them in the water to clean them up. Instead, he placed them all outside and had them bathe in the sun.

Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue had his sleeves rolled up as he was continuously moving out strange treasures, placing them on the empty ground.

There was a strange wooden stick, various tower-shaped objects of different sizes, multicolored gourds, various mirrors made of different materials, tens of magical clothes hanging and drying in the sun, a box of talisman papers...

Each of the treasures was emanating strong fluctuations of spiritual energy. In other words, they were all magical treasures of the Fifth Stage or above.

The resulting backlash would surely injure a cultivator of the Second Stage like Shuhang if he were to touch magical treasures of this rank.

The number and variety of magical treasures were really too high, Song Shuhang was dazzled by the scene.

Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue placed a stone-carved phoenix on the ground with a thump and clapped his hands.

"Senior, what are you doing?" Song Shuhang asked... He can't really be sunbathing his magical treasures, right? Or do magical treasures need to be frequently sunbathed so as to avoid them becoming moldy?

"As you can see, I'm putting in order my treasure house to see which treasures I can sell. I haven't put my treasure house in order for a very long time, and I discovered that I had several items that aren't of any use anymore. Therefore, I decided to sort things out and sell the useless stuff in exchange for spirit stones," Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue replied.

Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue wasn't someone that lacked spirit stones. He had several spirit stone mines under his control and probably earned millions of high-quality spirit stones per minute.

Normally speaking, he was loaded with spirit stones and surely had enough for his practice and daily expenses.

But now... he was trying to get in contact with that mysterious merchant that could sell anything.

According to legends, one could even buy the 'pill of immortality' from that man if they had enough spirit stones!

Of course, one wouldn't actually reach immortality after taking the pill of immortality.

Aside from the Wielder of the Will and the Tribulation Transcenders that had found their own way to immortality, reaching the 'Immortal Realm', no one was truly immortal.

Powerhouses of the Ninth Stage Tribulation Transcender Realm could live up to ten million years. But if they were unable to carry the 'Will of the Heavens', becoming its embodiment, or find their own way to immortality, they would still die.

The pill of immortality had rejuvenating properties and could restore the lifespan of a person that was about to die, giving them a new lease on life.

If a Ninth Stage Tribulation Transcender whose lifespan was almost up were to take the pill of immortality, they would happily live for another ten million years. Unfortunately, one could eat

this pill only once.

Therefore, they couldn't keep living on forever by relying on illegal drugs!

As long as one had enough spirit stones, they could buy anything.

In front of this merchant that could literally sell anything, the number of spirit stones one possessed was never enough.

The treasure that Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue wanted to buy was a particular type of treasure that had already disappeared from the world. It was something incredibly important if he wanted to advance to the Eighth Stage.

Therefore, his only hope was to buy it from the Almighty Merchant.



Right at this time, rolling on an animal skin magical treasure, Fourth Cultivator of True Virtue said, "Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue, little friend Shuhang obtained the Soul Devouring Demonic Gourd."

"Oh? Is it that gourd?" Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue shot a glance at the gourd in Song Shuhang's hand.

At this time, Song Shuhang was still holding the disposable flying sword 004 edition in his hand.

Above the sword was a burgundy gourd that was emitting a faint red light.

From the outward appearance of the gourd, Song Shuhang determined that it was indeed the same gourd that Daoist Half Gourd was holding back then when he was impaled to death.

However, Daoist Half Gourd's corpse was nowhere to be found, and even the position of the gourd seemed to have changed...

Perhaps Loose Cultivator Qian Yan and his team got rid of Daoist Half Gourd's corpse when they caught the sword light back then?

Or perhaps it was lost while the sword was roaming in space?

"Senior, were you also looking for this gourd?" Song Shuhang handed both the disposable flying sword and the gourd to Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue.

What's the origin of this gourd? Even Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue seems to be interested in it...

Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue stretched out his hand toward the Soul Devouring Demonic Gourd and explained, "I wasn't looking for the gourd, but for a certain person that came in contact with it recently. I want to find this person because I need to buy something from them."

Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue took the gourd and said with a smile, "So it was one of Fellow Daoist White's disposable flying swords! No wonder the flying sword approached little friend Shuhang on its own."

"According to what Senior White, the reason the disposable flying swords he recently launched into space came back might be the karmic sword formation he comprehended ten days ago," Song Shuhang replied.

Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue nodded and said, "Is this gourd something that Fellow Daoist White sent into space?"

"No, I am the one that sent the gourd into space." After saying this much, Song Shuhang explained the whole matter between him and Daoist Half Gourd to Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue.

Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue stroked the wooden sword.

There seems to be some fate between little friend Shuhang and this matter...

Song Shuhang sent Daoist Half Gourd's gourd into space.

While it was in space, the gourd came in contact with the Almighty Merchant.

Then, the gourd underwent a mutation and returned to Song Shuhang once more.

At this point, it already couldn't be considered a coincidence anymore.

From the looks of it, Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue might obtain some extra benefits if he brought little friend Shuhang along and found the Almighty Merchant.

"Little friend Shuhang, can you lend me the gourd for a while so that I can examine it?" Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue said.

"Sure," Song Shuhang replied. After all, it didn't belong to him in the first place.

"Little friend Shuhang is really a straightforward person," Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue said with a smile. Afterward, he pressed with his right hand on the gourd, completely covering its surface with a sealing rune and placing it inside his spatial equipment.

"Little friend Shuhang, do you want to keep challenging the hundred giants today?"

Song Shuhang nodded and said, "Yes. I want to seize the opportunity and quickly strengthen my constitution."

Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue asked, "Speaking of which, I remember that little friend Shuhang practices the ⟨Basic Buddhist Fist Technique⟩ and its supplementary technique, the ⟨Immovable Body of the Buddha⟩, right?"

"Yes."

Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue continued, "If you are already practicing the ⟨Immovable Body of the Buddha⟩, I have

another cultivation technique in mind that is very suitable for you. This technique can likewise strengthen the constitution of a cultivator. The only shortcoming is that it consumes a large amount of true qi while strengthening the constitution, slowing down the advancement of the cultivator. Hmm... actually, it's pretty good for the current you. After all, your true qi has already surpassed the amount your body can withstand."

Chapter 522: The ?Steel Hands Technique?

Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue's description of the technique made Song Shuhang recall Dharma King Creation's <Warring Buddha's True Body>, the signature technique of the 'Warring Buddha Sect'. After making his clothes explode, Dharma King Creation was able to fight against a blood demon of the Sixth Stage rank with his physical body of the Fifth Stage Spiritual Emperor rank.

"Senior, what kind of cultivation technique is this?" Song Shuhang asked.

Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue replied, "The <Steel Hands Technique>!"

"?" Song Shuhang.

"The name of the cultivation technique is <Steel Hands Technique>, and it's something a cultivator of the Second Stage can practice. If practiced successfully, it will allow the user to increase the strength of their constitution by a notch. Moreover, the hands of the cultivator will become impervious to swords and spears, as well as immune to heat and cold. Both arms would develop superhuman strength, and the user would be able to clash against magical treasures of the Second Stage rank with their bare hands!" Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue continued. "Don't look down on the <Steel Hands Technique>. Although its name isn't too awe-inspiring, it's a technique that all the disciples of a powerful ancient weapon-forging sect, the 'Heavy Metal Sect', were required to learn."

So it was originally the unique skill of a weapon-forging sect... a marvelous skill that belonged to blacksmiths.

***PS: After I learned the <Steel Hands Technique>, teacher didn't have to worry about me ending up all 'alone' in the future. Even if I had to snatch it from others, I was going to try my best to

get a woman! — Random disciple of the Heavy Metal Sect.***

"Do you want to learn it?" Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue said with a smile.

Song Shuhang clenched his teeth and said, "Yes!"

If it was called <Steel Hands Technique>, so be it. At least, it was more pleasant-sounding than 'golden-bell cover', 'iron cloth shirt', or other techniques that had similar functions. Moreover, it was something useful to him... why shouldn't he practice it?

"How many spirit stones do I need to pay to learn the <Steel Hands Technique>?"

"It's just a cultivation technique of the Second Stage. You can consider it as remuneration for lending me the gourd," Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue said with a smile. Cultivation techniques of the Second Stage were a very distant memory for him.

After saying this much, Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue stretched out his hand and poked the air. In the next moment, a golden radiance flashed through his eyes and projected into the void, turning into the chant of the cultivation technique.

The nearby Fourth Cultivator of True Virtue opened its mouth and spat out a white paper sheet.

Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue pressed with his finger on the white paper. Immediately afterwards, the chant of the cultivation technique hovering midair fell onto the white paper.

"This is the chant of the <Steel Hands Technique>. It's rather easy to learn, but if you don't understand something, you can ask Fourth Cultivator of True Virtue," Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue said.

"In that case, I'll be impolite and accept it," Song Shuhang said as he took the white paper.

Although it was only a cultivation technique of the Second Stage rank, it wasn't like those ordinary and widespread cultivation techniques such as the Earth Spirit Staff or Wave Splitting Palm. This cultivation technique was worth several spirit stones of the Fifth Stage, if not more.

Song Shuhang felt that he had been saying 'I'll be impolite' quite a bit to the seniors recently... and the favors he owed were increasing alongside it.

* * *

Afterward, Fourth Cultivator of True Virtue brought Song Shuhang to the practicing area of the immortal cave so that he could keep challenging the hundred giants.

Chu Chu and Yu Jiaojiao were already there, practicing.

Along the way, Song Shuhang seized the opportunity to open the package Su Clan's Seven mentioned earlier.

Branch Leader Jing Mo didn't have many treasures with him back then. After all, one could only bring along a limited number of objects with them if they didn't have any spatial equipment or a size-reducing purse.

The first object he found was the jet-black flying sword. It was the signature flying sword of the Limitless Demon Sect and reluctantly reached the Fourth Stage rank. Its flying speed was ordinary, but its ability to make surprise attacks was pretty good. If placed inside a small school such as the Illusory Sword School, it would become the most treasured object of the sect.

Then, there was a cloud-shaped magical treasure capable of flight. Song Shuhang could use it after reaching the Fourth Stage Realm. The flying speed of this magical treasure wasn't bad. At that time, Jing Mo was able to catch up with Song Shuhang even though the latter had used the Ten Thousand Mile Flying Escape Technique.

However, Song Shuhang was currently unable to use it. Moreover, he had the silver dragon puppet which had a better design, better speed, and more importantly, no restrictions on its use. Additionally, Song Shuhang would learn to ride a flying sword anyway after reaching the Fourth Stage. He wouldn't need this gadget.

Perhaps he could sell it in exchange for spirit stones?

The package also had some medicinal pills within. They were the type that could be used to treat injuries on the spot.

Finally, there were a few spirit stones. The spirit stones were of the Fourth Stage rank, and there were twelve of them in total. One of them had been used to practice, and there was only half the quantity of spiritual energy left inside.

If he were to subtract the nine spirit stones of the Fourth Stage he owed Senior White, there were still three left.

It was something worthy of celebration.



After Song Shuhang entered the practicing area, Fourth Cultivator of True Virtue activated the challenge mode.

The massive ancient city appeared once more along with those hundred giants of different sizes.

Song Shuhang took a deep breath and roared, starting another fighting session with giants.

Today, he was much more agile than yesterday.

His silhouette was prancing about amongst the giants and the <Virtuous Man's Ten Thousand Mile Walk> footwork was pushed to the limit.

Ten minutes later...

"Slash!"

The saber light flashed through the surrounding area, and the sharp Broken Tyrant ripped open the defense of the giant by relying on a basic saber technique, cutting open the mark that denoted the giant's fatal weakness.

Fresh blood spurted all over, and the huge giant loudly fell to the ground.

"It's the eighteenth," Song Shuhang said as he slightly panted. Then, his body quickly moved and jumped on the city walls, starting to run alongside them. Afterward, he borrowed the height of the walls and suddenly jumped, using Broken Tyrant to slash open the top of the head of the nineteenth giant.

After suffering all those hardships yesterday, Song Shuhang had progressed with amazing speed.

The same giants that tired him out yesterday with their continuous attacks seemed a bit slow today. Even while the giants surrounded him, he was able to find an opening to break through the encirclement, even smoothly beheading a giant in the process.

If we add the fact that he had the enlightenment stone with him, the comprehension he was gaining after each saber attack was amplified, allowing him to quickly increase the experience he had in regards to saber techniques.

The saying that one could bring out most of their latent capacity only under great pressure had some truth behind it.

"Little friend Shuhang is improving at a very fast pace!" Fourth Cultivator of True Virtue said with a smile. "In that case, I'll increase the gravity! How about five times higher than normal? I believe in you, little friend Shuhang!"

"What? You want to increase the gravity to five times higher than normal?" Song Shuhang immediately shouted. "Senior Fourth Cultivator of True Virtue, please stop!"

His voice had yet to fade when Song Shuhang felt his body

become heavy.

He had just jumped and was midair as his body sunk and crashed to the ground...

It was quite painful!

But the real pain had yet to come... ten giants seized the opportunity and surrounded Song Shuhang.

The feet of the ten giants descended from the sky and brutally trampled Song Shuhang's body, rolling over him and stomping him!

Very soon, the golden radiance of a shield appeared on Song Shuhang's body.

He had failed the challenge.

Song Shuhang twitched like a dead fish while lying on the ground, unable to move.

No matter who it was, they wouldn't feel too good after getting trampled by tens of giants. Song Shuhang wasn't sure whether it was just his misconception or not, but he felt that the feet of these giants were quite smelly~

Just as Song Shuhang was laboriously practicing, Lady Onion was also practicing inside his pocket. She felt that she needed only a little bit of energy to assume human form once more.

However, Lady Onion thought of an important problem at this time... where would the enlightenment stone end up once she turned into a human?

It wouldn't end up being a calculus inside her body, right?

Inside Song Shuhang's size-reducing purse.

A spirit stone of the Fourth Stage came into contact with the

exquisite human puppet. It was precisely that puppet Song Shuhang obtained from the depths of the smelted cave.

Just as the spirit stone came into contact with the puppet, it was absorbed and disappeared like a stone falling into the water...

Chapter 523: Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue's grave exploration guidebook

The human-shaped puppets of the Jet-Black Sect needed energy to move around. The stronger the puppet was, the bigger the amount of energy it required to activate.

After absorbing the spirit stone of the Fourth Stage, the eyes of the puppet faintly lit up. However, they immediately dimmed, and the puppet didn't move in the slightest afterward.

A spirit stone of the Fourth Stage had enough energy inside to allow the silver dragon puppet to fly for a month without breaks. But the same stone wasn't even enough to activate the puppet...

In other words, the human puppet was extremely powerful.

It had to absorb more spirit stones if it wanted to activate, and there just happened to be another eleven spirit stones of the Fourth Stage inside Song Shuhang's size-reducing purse.

The human puppet was unable to move, but the eleven spirit stones of the Fourth Stage would often bump into it while Song Shuhang was battling against the hundred giants.

The spirit stones were absorbed as soon as they bumped into the human puppet.

But right at this time, Song Shuhang was wholeheartedly battling against the giants at a gravity five times higher than normal. Therefore, he had yet to realize the changes that were happening inside his size-reducing purse.

Now then, how many spirit stones would be left in Song Shuhang's pockets after the training was over...?



Time flew by and half a day had already passed. After fighting for half a day in an environment with gravity five times higher than normal, Song Shuhang's body was a complete mess.

China time, 8 PM.

Inside Song Shuhang's room.

Song Shuhang grabbed the paper scroll with the 《Steel Hands Technique》 inscribed on it and unfurled it. He had some free time in the evening. Therefore, he wanted to seize the opportunity and study the technique.

Close to Song Shuhang, Li Yinzhu, Chu Chu, and Yu Jiaojiao were playing cards.

Li Yinzhu fell asleep early this morning and slept for most of the day. Therefore, she was wide awake at this time. After waking up, she ran to Song Shuhang's room and didn't want to leave.

Since she had to take care of Li Yinzhu, Chu Chu decided to follow her and came over as well.

As for Yu Jiaojiao, she had been living together with Song Shuhang all along.

Since they were a bit bored, the three girls decided to play cards. Only God knew where they got the cards from...

They didn't play the 'Fight the Landlord' game. On the contrary, they decided to compare their scores, and the person with the highest score could flick the foreheads of others.

It looked like a very normal game of at first, however...

"Hehehe, I won," Yu Jiaojiao said complacently.

Chu Chu's face was deathly pale, and she stroked her bangs with an agonized expression on her face.

Immediately after, Yu Jiaojiao bent her claws and flicked her forehead.

"Bang~" A clear and resounding sound echoed.

"Aaaah!" Chu Chu called out pitifully, and her whole body was sent flying.

Next, it was Li Yinzhu's turn. She moved her head closer to Yu Jiaojiao with misty eyes.

"Bang..."

"Aaaah!" Li Yinzhu was also sent flying. However, she was much better off than Chu Chu. After all, she had a cultivation of the Fourth Stage Realm, and her body was much stronger than Chu Chu's.

She was sent flying because she purposely lowered her defenses.

"Again!" Chu Chu rubbed her forehead and crawled back.

"Hmm!" Li Yinzhu also rubbed her head.

After a short moment...

"Aaaah~" Chu Chu pitifully called out once again as she was sent flying.

"Ahahaha~" This time, the other person that was sent flying was Yu Jiaojiao. But in the end, she was still the descendant of a flood dragon, and her body was incredibly powerful even with her defenses lowered. Li Yinzhu's full-powered flick was unable to hurt her or make her feel pain.

The nearby Song Shuhang silently put down the paper scroll with the <Steel Hands Technique>, raising his head upward and looking at the ceiling.

There was no way he could properly study with all of this happening right next to him!



The Limitless Demon Sect was a large sect in the world of cultivators that followed the evil path.

The sect was divided into three halls.

Each hall had several Peak Leaders under its control.

The Hall Leaders of the three halls were all powerhouses of the Sixth Stage True Monarch Realm.

At this time, inside the second hall, the Nine-eyed Kama Hall.

The huge statue of the Nine-eyed Kama was enshrined in the center of the hall, and a dim flame was burning beneath the statue of the demon.

Around twenty Peak Leaders were sitting in a circle around the statue of the demon, somewhat resembling the myriads of stars that surrounded the moon.

The Hall Leader of the Nine-eyed Kama Hall sat cross-legged inside the fire burning beneath the statue of the demon. His form was illusory, just as though it was about to fuse with the statue behind him.

The Hall Leader of the Kama Hall slightly opened his eyes and said, "Eight Golden Core Spiritual Emperors were captured?"

After all, we were talking about eight Golden Core Spiritual Emperors, not some weaklings! Even if it was the Limitless Demon Sect, a large sect of the evil path, Golden Core Spiritual Emperors were the core of the sect. Each and every one of them was extremely valuable. If they were to lose eight Golden Core Spiritual Emperors at once, the Nine-eyed Kama Hall would become the weakest amongst the three halls.

"We must rescue the Peak Leaders at all costs," the Hall Leader of the Kama Hall said in a grave tone.

The enemy was Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue, a powerful figure of the Venerable rank. If possible, he didn't want to mess with such an enemy...

But those eight Golden Core Spiritual Emperors had to be rescued

at all costs.

The Peak Leaders present there started to discuss amongst themselves.

Afterward, one of the Peak Leader said, "Hall Leader, according to the information we gathered on the moon, Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue wants to send the eight Peak Leaders to the mines and have them work there. Such being the case, we can attack them halfway through their journey toward the mines and save the Peak Leaders that should be escorted there with an immortal boat."

The Hall Leader of the Kama Hall nodded and said, "Transmit here all the information related to this matter in three hours' time. I'll personally participate in this mission to rescue the other Peak Leaders."

"Yes." The several Peak Leaders got into action and started sending orders.

Inside the dim fire, the Hall Leader secretly sighed.

He had to prepare for both eventualities...

He was planning to prepare a large sum of spirit stones as well while devising a plan to rescue the Golden Core Spiritual Emperors.

If the rescue mission failed, he would have no choice but to brace himself and pay a ransom for his men... and the ransom for eight Peak Leaders was going to be very high!



Beneath the Nine-eyed Kama Hall, on the 69th peak, the Mahoraga Peak.

A puppet was standing on the cliff shrouded in clouds and mist. The puppet was Young Master Hai's clone.

After obtaining the Blood Sea Jade, Young Master Hai's main

body had already started to break through to the Fifth Stage Spiritual Emperor Realm. Thus, the puppet clone was left behind to take care of critical matters in Young Master Hai's stead.

But right at this time, the sea of clouds churned, and a mass of black mist drilled out of it. It was Demon Monarch Anzhi's clone.

Demon Monarch Anzhi practiced a very strange demonic technique that allowed him to have numerous clones. The minds of the various clones were linked together with the main body. Therefore, Demon Monarch Anzhi could scatter his clones all over China to gather information.

"I just obtained an interesting piece of information. Eight Peak Leaders from our Nine-eyed Kama Hall were captured by Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue." Demon Monarch Anzhi paused a moment and continued, "And one of the reasons might be Stressed by a Mountain of Books."

Demon Monarch Anzhi used the secret sound transmission while talking to Young Master Hai so as to avoid others eavesdropping on their conversation.

Young Master Hai's puppet clone slightly moved and likewise said via secret sound transmission, "Stressed by a Mountain of Books was involved? What is the relationship between him and Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue?"

Demon Monarch Anzhi replied, "Their relationship is closer than what I had initially thought, since after arriving on the moon, Stressed by a Mountain of Books has been living inside Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue's residence."

Young Master Hai's puppet didn't speak for a while. It seemed as though it was thinking about something important.

After a short while, he said, "How is the Hall Leader preparing to deal with this matter about the kidnapped Peak Leaders?"

Demon Monarch Anzhi replied, "He naturally wants to save the

eight Peak Leaders."

Young Master Hai's puppet clone said, "The fact that those eight Peak Leaders got captured isn't such a bad thing for us... we must seize this opportunity. We can't allow the sect to rescue all eight Peak Leaders."

As long as a member of the Limitless Demon Sect could advance to the Fifth Stage Spiritual Emperor, they could become one of the Peak Leaders of the sect.

However, all new Peak Leaders had to spend a lot of effort to build their personal peak.

They had to put in a lot of energy, manpower, and natural resources.

Of course, the Limitless Demon Sect would lend some help with the construction of the peak. But the funds they would put at one's disposal were too little, barely enough for the foundation of the peak.

Young Master Hai was planning to have the three of them join the upper echelons of the Limitless Demon Sect within a short period of time. Therefore, they couldn't afford to waste a large amount of energy and time to build a new peak.

Such being the case, it would be perfect if they could 'inherit' the existing peak of another Peak Leader. With that, they would be able to save a lot of time, manpower, and natural resources.

If some of the eight Peak Leaders didn't return, there would be a few peaks left without leaders.

If the three of them could timely advance to the Fifth Stage and become Peak Leaders, they would be able to take over the existing influences and peaks of the previous Peak Leaders.

It might be a little troublesome to take over the influences of the previous Peak Leaders, but it was still much easier than building a new peak from scratch.

Demon Monarch Anzhi immediately understood what Young Master Hai meant. In other words, at least three of the eight Peak Leaders had to stay within Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue's mines.

"How should we proceed?" Demon Monarch Anzhi's clone smiled evilly.

"I need to think this through... perhaps we can borrow Fellow Daoist Stressed by a Mountain of Books' hand," Young Master Hai's puppet said after holding his chin.

Demon Monarch Anzhi said, "How are you planning to borrow his hand? Do you want to leak the plan of the Hall Leader to Stressed by a Mountain of Books?"

"No, that's too dangerous. We'll be easily discovered if we directly sell the information of our teammates to the enemy. Moreover, it would be disastrous for us if Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue were to personally get into action after getting wind of the matter, sending the Hall Leader to the mines too," Young Master Hai replied.

He had to think of a safe method that would allow the Hall Leader to rescue only half of the Peak Leaders.



China, Jiangnan area.

At this time, Gao Moumou was quickly typing on the keyboard... the recent trip to that island of natives where he was forced to teach the inhabitants how to read and write gave Gao Moumou a lot of inspirations.

The only problem was that he couldn't turn these inspirations into words. After all, he didn't have a computer with him back then.

His girlfriend Yayi just happened to return home the day before yesterday.

After that, Gao Moumou stayed in his room for three consecutive days, writing and writing.

Whenever one's head was full of inspirations, they could write at a very fast speed, just as though they had suddenly gained supernatural powers; the process was particularly smooth.

"Wonderful! I wrote 20,000 characters each day for a total of 60,000 in three days. If I release two chapters of 3000 characters each every day, they will last for a whole ten days! Ahahaha!" Gao Moumou laughed complacently.

Then, he divided all the characters he wrote in the past few days into paragraphs and chapters and uploaded them onto the writing platform, setting the timer so that they would be automatically released.

"With so many chapters ready, I can go on a date with Yayi tomorrow. This time, I won't allow anyone to ruin our time together. Stupid Zhuge Yue and stupid Zhuge Zhongyang, go to hell! Ahahaha!"

He had already chosen the place they were going to stay in. He was planning to bring Yayi to a summer mountain villa and stay there for three days and three nights. The thought alone was enough to make Gao Moumou excited.

At first, he was thinking of going to the beach, but he was somewhat sensitive about the sea recently. For this reason, he decided to go to the mountain.

After finishing the chapters, Gao Moumou opened the instant messaging app.

First, he casually sent Song Shuhang, Tubo, and Li Yangde some greeting emojis. But after seeing that no one was online, he logged out of the instant messaging app.

Next, he entered with a different account... it was a secret account reserved for his activities as an author. The only friends he

had on this account were the readers of his books, and he had added none of his real-life friends.

Just as Gao Moumou got into the account...

"Ding, ding, ding~" The sound of a notification echoed. The notification signified that someone had added him as a friend or that someone had joined the public group.

"A reader has added me!" Gao Moumou clicked on the notification.

\[Dragon Maiden Yu Jiaojiao wants to add you as a friend.\]

Attached note: Add me, add me, quickly add me!

"Yu Jiaojiao? Judging from the name, it seems it's a girl," Gao Moumou muttered.

Gao Moumou didn't spend much time on this account. Moreover, the name of the account was never made public. Therefore, the only people that added him were the readers of his books. As long as it was a reader adding him, Gao Moumou would accept the request without too many thoughts.

Gao Moumou casually clicked on the prompt and accept the friend request.

However... the other party had sent the request several days ago and wasn't currently online.

Gao Moumou sent a casual smiling emoji, and that was it.

Afterward, he opened the public group with all the readers and spammed in there for a while.

After he was done spamming, Gao Moumou closed the instant messaging program, completely satisfied.

Immediately afterward, he called his girlfriend Yayi and started to plan their next date.



The next day.

July 30th. Weather unknown since Song Shuhang was currently on the moon. Today's dao name was Tyrannical Saber Song One, kindly provided by Venerable White.

After getting up early in the morning, Song Shuhang tried to practice the 〈Steel Hands Technique〉.

However, the 〈Steel Hands Technique〉 was a cultivation technique of the Second Stage rank, and it was much more challenging to learn than the 〈Basic Buddhist Fist Technique〉. Even after trying several times, Song Shuhang made only small progress.

Just as he was practicing, Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue's voice was transmitted from afar. "Little friend Shuhang, are you ready?"

"Senior Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue, is something the matter?" Song Shuhang asked in puzzlement.

"Don't you remember which day today is? We're going to explore the grave of Venerable Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue today!" Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue said.

I almost forgot about it... the day before yesterday, Senior Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue said that we would explore the grave of Venerable Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue today...

For the past few days, Song Shuhang had been fighting the giants to the point of becoming dizzy.

"No problem, Senior. I'm ready to set out at any time," Song Shuhang said. After battling against the giants in gravity five times higher than normal yesterday, the strength of Song Shuhang's constitution increased by a notch again.

At this time, that bloated and painful feeling in his dantian had already disappeared, and even his head was hurting a lot less.

He could already operate his true qi and was able to use the Flaming Saber Technique, Inverted Scale Saber Technique, and other techniques.

As for his mental energy, he still needed some time to adapt to it. After strengthening his constitution by another notch, he would be able to practice meditation techniques again. Therefore, he was still unable to use magical techniques such as the Lightning Palm that could be performed only with the help of mental energy.

Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue said, "In that case, let's take Chu Chu and the others along and proceed."



The group got into Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue's immortal boat and left the moon, heading toward the outer space.

Along the way, Song Shuhang asked out of curiosity, "Senior, why is the grave of Venerable Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue in space?"

From what he saw in the dreamland, the grave of Venerable Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue was somewhere on Earth!

"The grave of Venerable Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue doesn't have a fixed location. It's a mobile ancient grave whose position can shift at any time. Graves belonging to cultivators aren't the same as those belonging to ordinary people. In fact, this type of ancient grave that moves around was rather popular amongst ancient cultivators back then," Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue explained.

Chapter 524: The keyless entry system of the ancient grave

After ancient cultivators managed to develop these mobile graves, all those treasure-hunting cultivators skilled in geomancy were quite worried.

Back in those days, there were many cultivators skilled in geomancy that would determine the position of a grave with much difficulty just to have the grave run away as they were trying to enter it... it was a rather sad and painful matter.

But even if ancient graves belonging to cultivators could move on their own, wasn't it a bit too exaggerated that this one directly ran into space...?

The nearby Chu Chu was dumbfounded. Did I hear correctly just now? Is this the grave of Venerable Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue?

Were they going to explore the ancient grave of a figure of the Venerable rank?

The old Chu Chu wouldn't even have dared to dream of something of the sort!

But after meeting Song Shuhang, she had seen quite a few Venerables... both alive and dead.

After flying for a very long time, the immortal boat started to slow down.

Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue pointed toward a distant place... it was a meteoroid emitting a dazzling golden light. "We have arrived. It's right there. Do you see that shining big meteoroid? That's where the grave of Venerable Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue is located."

The grave is inside a meteoroid...?

Song Shuhang didn't know from where to start to list all the things that were wrong with this situation. For example, how the hell was this grave exactly moving... to the point that it ended up in space, and inside a meteoroid to boot!

And what was the deal with that meteoroid emitting a blinding golden radiance? Was it possible that all the cultivators roaming in space were blind and none noticed the eye-catching grave of Venerable Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue...?

The immortal boat berthed next to the meteoroid, and it was only at this time that Song Shuhang noticed that the golden radiance was actually a defensive barrier. The immortal boat was unable to get past it.

"Right. Little friend Shuhang, you can already use your true qi, right? I want to teach you a small magical technique before entering the grave of Venerable Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue. I'm sure this technique will come in handy while we are inside the grave," Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue said with a smile.

"Senior, what kind of technique is it?" Song Shuhang asked.

"It's the 'secret sound transmission technique' I promised to teach you if you managed to defeat the hundred giants. Although it's called 'magical technique', it only consists in operating one's true qi according to a special pattern. It's rather easy and quick to learn," Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue said.

"Eh? But, Senior, I haven't defeated the hundred giants yet."

"Haha. Actually, you passed the test in the instant Fourth Cultivator of True Virtue increased the gravity to five times higher than normal," Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue said with a smile.

Song Shuhang had already learned how to fight against colossal

creatures in an environment where gravity was three times higher than normal, and he was already capable of easily killing the giants by relying on the advantage the terrain gave him and striking the 'fatal weaknesses' the giants had.

If Fourth Cultivator of True Virtue hadn't increased the gravity up to five times what it normally was on Earth, Song Shuhang might have already killed the hundred giants.

* * *

Thereupon, Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue started to teach Song Shuhang the 'secret sound transmission technique' before getting into the grave of Venerable Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue.

The 'secret sound transmission technique' consisted in manipulating one's true qi and turning it into a string, directly spreading the words one wanted to say to the ear of the opposite party through the true qi.

It was rather practical and difficult to detect. In an environment such as space where sound couldn't spread, it was simply a lifesaver.

Just as Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue said before, the secret sound transmission technique wasn't difficult to learn.

With Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue personally instructing him, Song Shuhang was able to get a general idea of the technique in about five minutes.

Although his voice was spreading intermittently and sounded like that of a robot, the other party could understand what he was saying.

It was more than enough for now.

* * *

"Now, we have to find a way to get past the barrier. Otherwise,

we won't be able to enter the grave of Venerable Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue," Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue said after teaching Song Shuhang the secret sound transmission technique.

Yu Jiaojiao said, "How are we supposed to get past it?"

"It's very easy. Tell me, what have you discovered after looking at the golden barrier?" Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue said as he pointed toward the barrier.

Song Shuhang looked at the blinding golden barrier.

Very soon, the group noticed something above the golden barrier. They could faintly see something that resembled a window, and inside the window was the figure of a woman sitting in a dignified manner.

"Hiss~" Song Shuhang suddenly trembled. He felt a chill all over his body as soon as he saw the picture of the woman.

What's happening? Did I feel a chill just by looking at the picture of that woman?

"What's that?"

Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue said, "The picture of the dead; it's something very commonly seen within ancient graves belonging to cultivators. After their death, the body of a powerful cultivator will start to emit the aura of death, which will then fuse together with their grave, changing into the picture of the dead. If we want to enter the grave, the first hurdle we have to get past is the picture of the dead."

Chu Chu added at this time, "As soon as I saw the picture of the dead, I felt a chill."

Song Shuhang wasn't the only one that felt the chill!

Song Shuhang tried to recall the memories of that disciple of the Thousand Hands Sect, She Lan, that he experienced back then...

there was indeed a memory related to the barrier of the grave.

Unfortunately, the barrier he saw in the dream back then was a mass of pixels. Moreover, back when She Lan were exploring the grave of Venerable Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue, he and his companions used brute force to destroy the barrier.

But from what Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue said, they weren't meant to destroy the dazzling golden barrier, but use some other method instead...?



After the immortal boat stopped, the door opened.

Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue applied the Turtle Breathing Technique and a defensive formation to the bodies of Song Shuhang and the others. With that, they would be able to freely move around in space without having to worry about oxygen, pressure, radiation, and so on.

Chu Chu, Song Shuhang, Yu Jiaojiao, and Li Yinzhu got out of the immortal boat and arrived next to the barrier of the ancient grave.

How were they supposed to get past the barrier?

"Should I give the secret technique of my clan a try? My father, True Monarch Tyrant Flood Dragon, is very experienced when it comes to destroying seals," Yu Jiaojiao said.

After saying this much, she stretched her right claw out forward, and five water balls appeared on it. "Secret technique, Water of the Black River!"

According to legends, there was a black river in the ancient Heavenly City, and the water of that river could wash away all kinds of seals and magical runes. If a powerful magical treasure were to fall inside the river, the black water would wash away all the runes on it and turn it into an ordinary object.

The secret technique that True Monarch Tyrant Flood Dragon developed, the Water of the Black River, also had the power to remove things such as seals.

In the same instant Yu Jiaojiao stretched her right claw forward, the 'picture of the dead' above the golden barrier moved just as though it was alive and arrived in front of her in the mere blink of an eye.

Afterward, she stretched out her palm and pushed it forward.

Yu Jiaojiao's secret technique, the Water of the Black River, was immediately broken through, and her body reeled backward due to the attack of the picture of the dead.

Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue, who was standing in the rear, said, "You cannot use force to destroy it. After all, it's the barrier of the grave belonging to a Venerable. It's not easy to break through it with force."

"How should we proceed then?" Chu Chu asked.

Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue said, "Why don't you try talking to the picture of the dead? Who knows, perhaps you might obtain some useful information?"

"..." Song Shuhang.

Why does Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue look like one of those NPCs aiding the player with their advice during the game?

Then, Chu Chu followed Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue's advice and tried to communicate with the picture of the dead on top of the golden barrier... and she unexpectedly succeeded!

The picture of the dead was surprisingly open to persuasion, and after the group offered her a high-quality spirit stone of the Fourth

Stage, she gave them a hint: ***There is a dry well on the edge of the barrier of the ancient grave. After digging into the dry well, you will obtain a piece of metal—it's the key to the barrier of the ancient grave.***

Song Shuhang took the initiative to deliver the spirit stone of the Fourth Stage to the picture of the dead... Now then, why am I left with only ten spirit stones of the Fourth Stage after handing over this one?

Strange, why is there a missing spirit stone?

Did I remember incorrectly? No, it can't be! I clearly remember that there were twelve spirit stones in total, and one of them was half-used.

Such being the case, where did the missing spirit stone go?

However, there wasn't time to look for the missing spirit stone.

After pondering for a moment, Song Shuhang took the remaining spirit stones out of the size-reducing purse and put them in his zipper pocket.

Soon after, he went looking for the dry well.



After following the advice of the picture of the dead, the group started to dig into the dry well and really found a piece of metal.

The pictures of a fish and a bird were carved onto the piece of metal.

"How are we supposed to use this key?" Song Shuhang grabbed the piece of metal and curiously pressed on the picture of the bird.

"Clang, clang, clang~"

The golden barrier sent out a grating sound. In the next moment, a three meters high passage appeared within the barrier. It wasn't only the barrier, but a passage leading to the ancient grave also appeared in the meteoroid.

Next, Song Shuhang pressed on the picture of the fish.

"Boom, boom, boom~"

The passage that had appeared in the barrier and the meteoroid closed.

The two pictures were actually buttons... one could open the grave, and the other could close it.

"..." Song Shuhang said, "Is this a keyless entry system?"

Several modern features had been already overused to death by cultivators in ancient times~



Song Shuhang pressed once more on the picture of the bird.

The barrier of the grave opened, and the group got inside.

After passing through the passage in the meteoroid, they soon arrived at the entrance of the real grave.

A gravestone was placed right at the entrance, and the following words were inscribed on it... ***The grave of Venerable Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue.***

The words possessed an incredible power.

Chu Chu felt a tremendous pressure weigh on her body as she slightly approached the gravestone. Her heartbeat sped up and was completely out of control.

Right up to this point, the surrounding environment was the same as the one Song Shuhang saw in the dreamland back then.

But from now on, they would face the real dangers hidden within the grave. Song Shuhang clearly remembered that the disciple of the Thousand Hands Sect, She Lan, had relied on an exquisite secret technique to remove the traps along the way and head toward the depths of the grave. However, he carelessly triggered a trap before reaching the core area of the grave and lost his four

limbs, turning into a human stick.

"Everyone should pay close attention to their surroundings from now on because we are about to enter the real 'grave of Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue'! The whole place is full of dangers. Anyway, come, let's enter! Let's feel the thrill of exploring the ancient grave of a cultivator!" Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue said at this time.

"Little friend Chu Chu, wait a moment. There is a trap ten centimeters away from you, to the right front position. Don't step onto it.

"Little friend Shuhang, pay close attention to the things around you. Although this is only the front section of the grave, there are some pretty good little gadgets lying around."

Senior Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue... your understanding of the grave has already reached the point where you know it like the palm of your hand, hasn't it...?

Chapter 525: The ?Holy Light Sword Technique?

After hearing about the 'grave of True Monarch Fifth Cultivator of True Virtue' and meeting the jade white lion Fourth Cultivator of True Virtue, Song Shuhang already suspected that there was a relationship between Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue and Venerable Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue.

Now, he discovered that Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue was extremely familiar with the ancient grave and capable of guiding them step by step through the whole thing. Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue gave spoilers left and right during the journey... 'there is a trap here', 'there is a treasure hidden there', 'there is something over there', and so on.

It was as if someone wanted to play a single player game but was forced to watch the whole walkthrough before starting... what was the point in playing the game now that they knew everything?! It was going to be extremely boring!

Song Shuhang and the others were in a similar situation right now.

The originally exciting and dangerous exploration of the ancient grave had turned into mere sightseeing.

However, they were able to obtain some small treasures thanks to Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue's spoilers.

Chu Chu obtained a 'demon slaying arrow', an object similar to a talisman. Once activated, the arrow could display a killing power that approached the Fifth Stage rank.

Yu Jiaojiao obtained a water-type treasure, the 'turtle pearl', which could allow her to keep her body wet. With this treasure, she didn't have to use magical techniques to preserve the level of moisture in her body while living on the dry land, allowing her to

save a lot of energy.

Li Yinzhu obtained a bomb-shaped object. If thrown out, it would release toxic mist.

These objects weren't really something originally present in the grave of Venerable Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue... after all, it was the grave of a Venerable, and the treasures inside wouldn't be this weak.

All the treasures belonged to cultivators that entered the ancient grave to explore it. It was likely that they ran into something unexpected while exploring the grave and then left these things behind.

As for Song Shuhang... he obtained the volume of a sword technique!

It was the volume of a sword technique, something he had yearned for for a very long period of time!

It wasn't one of those ordinary sword techniques, either.

The name of the technique was 〈Holy Light Sword Technique〉.

From the name, it didn't look like something that belonged to Chinese cultivators.

"That volume contains a fine sword technique. The style is very awe-inspiring, and the attack power is also good. There are six styles in total, from the Second to the Fourth Stage." Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue gave his evaluation of the volume of the sword technique.

But there was a small problem... the 〈Holy Light Sword Technique〉 wasn't something that had originated from China.

It was a sword technique that belonged to ancient Western paladins and was modified by a powerful cultivator after it spread to China.

The sword technique retained the same style and characteristics

as the swordsmanship of Western paladins.

One could almost say that it was a sword technique born from the combined effort of China and the West.

However, a sword technique with such a style was hardly suitable for Chinese swordsmen.

Song Shuhang opened the volume of the ‹Holy Light Sword Technique› and shot a glance at the first page... First style: Evil Slashing Holy Sword. Sword chant: Holy light, that wicked one seems worth fighting!

After turning the page, Second style: Holy Cross Sword. Sword chant: Honorable opponent, let's fight for glory!

What the hell is this thing?

What's wrong with the chants of this sword technique?

Song Shuhang got the impulse of tearing the book to shreds.

But after pondering for a moment, he decided to keep it... in the end, it was still a sword technique, and he could practice it if he had free time.

Moreover, the ‹Holy Light Sword Technique› wasn't completely useless. One would develop muscles after practicing it.

And developing muscles could indirectly help a cultivator strengthen their constitution.

In the worst case, he could treat it as a body tempering cultivation technique.



Along the way, Song Shuhang and the others were able to avoid a large number of traps, easily get out of each maze, and escape most of the hidden dangers thanks to the living walkthrough called Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue.

In the end, the grave of Venerable Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue

is something like your family's backyard, isn't that right, Senior Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue?

Song Shuhang was sure that they wouldn't have any problems reaching the depths of the ancient grave as long as Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue was with them.

But unfortunately, Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue wasn't able to keep spoiling from beginning to end...

After they passed through the outer area of the ancient grave and arrived at the core area, a total of seven different roads appeared in front of Song Shuhang and the others.

Chu Chu said, "There are seven different roads."

Yu Jiaojiao said, "Which road should we take?"

Song Shuhang looked toward Senior Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue and said, "Senior, which one should we take?"

"Cough~ At last, the small chick must leave the nest and soar into the sky. You can't always depend on your elders in life, it's time to make your own choices," Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue said with a serious expression on his face.

Song Shuhang said, "Alright... how do we choose, then? Shall we cast a vote or throw a branch?"

Chu Chu said, "Maybe let's throw a branch? It seems rather troublesome to cast a vote since there are seven different roads."

Yu Jiaojiao said, "I agree, let's throw a branch. Who feels lucky today should throw the branch."

Li Yinzhu grabbed Song Shuhang's clothes and didn't say anything.

Chu Chu replied, "I feel that my luck today is so-so. I'll pass."

Song Shuhang silently raised his head and said, "Don't look at me."

After all, unfortunate things happened to him on a regular basis. The fact that he was still alive was already a miracle!

"I'll give you a suggestion. Why do you want to throw a branch to choose the road? Since there are seven roads ahead, isn't it better if you separate and take one road each?" The nearby Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue couldn't help but remind them.

Song Shuhang was aware of what Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue was trying to do. Therefore, he said to the others, "In that case, should we take different roads?"

Yu Jiaojiao replied, "Alright, let's take different roads, then."

Chu Chu said, "Fine, let's split up, then. However... I feel that splitting up is a rather stupid thing to do! In horror movies, each time the main and the side characters split up in a dangerous situation, the side characters end up dying! At least they can take care of each other if they stay together."

"..." Song Shuhang.

"..." Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue.



In the end, Song Shuhang's group divided and each of them chose a different road.

After all, it was something that the living walkthrough Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue suggested. Everyone knew that he was related to the grave of Venerable Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue in one way or the other. Therefore, it was better to follow his advice.

Chu Chu chose the fifth road. She turned her head around and shot a glance at Li Yinzhu before entering the passage.

Yu Jiaojiao chose the second road.

Li Yinzhu chose the first road. Before entering, she looked at Song Shuhang with a longing expression on her face, very unwilling to leave him.

Song Shuhang chose the seventh road.

In the next moment, the forms of the four people disappeared within the several passages.

The jade white lion Fourth Cultivator of True Virtue licked its paws and said, "They are gone."

Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue said, "Such being the case, we should move as well. Fourth Cultivator of True Virtue, pay close attention to little friend Shuhang and the others and don't let them go overboard. When Fellow Daoist Thrice Reckless went overboard inside the grave of True Monarch Fifth Cultivator of True Virtue the last time, he almost lost his life."

Fourth Cultivator of True Virtue said, "I feel that it's rare to find someone as death-seeking as Thrice Reckless in the world."

Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue replied, "Better safe than sorry. Moreover, little friend Shuhang is also a member of the Nine Provinces Number One Group. In the past few days, while I was lurking inside the group, the other fellow daoists were discussing his dao names. Amongst the dao names that popped up, there was a certain 'Thrice Song Tyrannical Saber'. This dao name really reminded me of Thrice Reckless. Therefore, it's better to be a bit careful."

The jade white lion Fourth Cultivator of True Virtue said, "What you said is reasonable. I'll pay close attention to them."

Chapter 526: Do you want to sign a contract with me and become...

Chu Chu, who entered the fifth road, was extremely vigilant along the way.

Just as she kept moving forward and got deeper and deeper in the passage, fog started to appear. The fog was very ordinary and didn't contain any spiritual energy or poison.

But the more ordinary the fog looked, the more one had to be careful... the fact that ordinary fog had appeared within the grave of Venerable Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue was an anomaly in itself.

Such a dense mist... she should have a constitution of the water attribute! From the looks of it, it's a very hard to come by pure water-type attribute. A jade eyeball was quietly following behind Chu Chu, keeping a certain distance between them so as to avoid Chu Chu noticing it.

It was the eyeball of Fourth Cultivator of True Virtue that had now separated from its body.

After Chu Chu took a few more steps, there was a sudden change.

Four figures whose bodies were emitting monster qi suddenly appeared in front of her, blocking her path. The four figures had half the body of a human and half the body of a beast. They had a cultivation level of the Second Stage 'Sea of Qi Dantian' Realm, two small realms lower than Chu Chu's.

Chu Chu placed her hand on the short sword attached to her thigh, calmly gazing at the four half-human and half-beast monsters in front of her.

"Roar!" The half-human and half-beast monsters wildly roared. They had bloodshot eyes and didn't seem to have any intellect. There was no difference between them and wild beasts.

Chu Chu took a deep breath and unsheathed her short sword. At the same time, she muttered in a voice that only she could hear, "The sword of my life, appear."

As soon as her voice faded, the short sword in her hands emitted a cry.

Chu Chu slashed out with the short sword, displaying the mysterious 'sword technique'.

The sword attack had twenty-seven different variations concealed within, making it virtually impossible to guard against it.

The four half-human and half-beast monsters that couldn't even properly use their brains had no hope of blocking such a sword technique.

One move was all that was needed. The sword pricked their eyes and sword qi directly pierced through their heads, completely cutting off their chances of survival.

"Uwaaah~" the half-human and half-beast monsters called out in grief. In the next moment, their bodies suddenly dissipated, turning into mist and merging with the dense fog in the surrounding area.

Chu Chu held onto her short sword, maintaining a vigilant posture.

Some time later, after making sure that there weren't other monsters lying in ambush, she finally put her short sword away.

But right at this time, a faint, painful feeling was transmitted from her chest... although her injuries had almost recovered thanks to the two medicinal pastes from Medicine Master, the aftermath of Whale Eight's deathly hug had yet to disappear. A painful feeling would transmit from her chest whenever she made sudden and intense movements.

Chu Chu put the short sword away and kept advancing.

The fog got denser and denser, and a mysterious energy was now mixed in it.

Chu Chu concentrated the true qi in her eyes... At this time, she could only see things within a range of ten meters.

Therefore, she decided to proceed forward even more cautiously.

After she traveled for around fifty meters, another group of half-human and half-beast monsters emitting monster qi from their bodies appeared in front of her, blocking her way. Just as before, they were in the initial phase of the Second Stage. After appearing, they roared and pounced toward Chu Chu.

Chu Chu calmly made her move. She displayed the mysterious 'sword technique' once more and killed the ten monsters.

Then... she traveled for another fifty meters when another group of half-human and half-beast monsters blocked her way.

Chu Chu made her move once more, swiftly and efficiently getting rid of the group of monsters.

This scene repeated ten times in total.

Chu Chu ultimately killed ten waves of half-human and half-beast monsters. The number of the monsters kept increasing after each wave.

"It won't keep going on forever, right?" Chu Chu muttered to herself.

Just as she thought this, a blinding light appeared before her eyes.

In the next moment, she was already out of that passage full of dense fog.

At this time, she was in front of a <anno data-annotation-id="fdb3b582-2c34-b2f7-4cd3-6a6b6b2fb884" data-title="chamber tomb"> chamber tomb 1 </anno> .

The stone of the grave was very simple and didn't have the

beautiful decorations one would expect. From the looks of it, a powerful cultivator had directly scooped out a huge rock and used it to manufacture the chamber tomb.

In the center of the chamber tomb was a coffin made of gold.

"Have I arrived in the depths of the grave of Venerable Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue?" Chu Chu muttered to herself. That was it, so easy?

After pondering for a moment, Chu Chu stepped inside the chamber tomb.

In the next moment, she felt her body become light.

At the same time, the true qi inside her dantian suddenly rose.

She, who was originally at the Second Stage Third Dantian 'Dragon Claw Dantian' Realm, was forcefully promoted a small realm. The true qi inside her body suddenly increased and made her break through to the fourth dantian, the Dragon Body Dantian, in one go!

Compared to the first three dantians that took her four or five years of hardships to break through, breaking through to the fourth one was so swift that Miss Chu Chu almost cried.

She would have never expected that she would advance a small realm in such a way.

If all explorations of ancient graves were so amazing, she would never, ever turn down an invitation to explore an ancient grave!

Just as Chu Chu was lost in this beautiful process, the golden coffin showed some changes.

The coffin suddenly opened.

A figure that was wrapped up like a mummy drilled out of the coffin and started hovering midair, slowly approaching Chu Chu.

Chu Chu immediately thought of unsheathing her short sword, but she discovered that she couldn't move her body—not even her

fingers.

She could only helplessly look at the mummy hovering midair as it arrived next to her. The mummy stretched out its hand and opened Chu Chu's eyelids, looking at her eyeballs. Then, it pinched her nose and opened her mouth, checking out her tongue.

What's happening?

This is disgusting!

After examining Chu Chu's eyes, ears, nose, mouth, and tongue, the mummy grabbed Chu Chu's palm and carefully looked at the lines above.

Afterward, it placed Chu Chu on the ground and took off her shoes and stockings, held her jade feet and carefully inspected the lines on her soles.

Chu Chu was extremely embarrassed and wished she could die.

After examining Chu Chu's soles, the mummy returned next to the golden coffin and picked up a turtle shell, squeezing three copper coins inside.

After standing still for a moment, the figure seemed to have realized that the number of coins wasn't enough. Therefore, it squeezed five more coins inside, reaching an auspicious number.

Chu Chu muttered, "Is this mummy trying to perform a divination?"

It was indeed performing a divination.

In the next moment, the mummy counted on its fingers and squeezed several runes inside the turtle shell. The runes likely contained information about Chu Chu's facial features, palm lines, and sole lines...

Anyway, there was surely information about Chu Chu inside.

After the runes entered the turtle shell, the whole thing lit up. Afterward, it started hovering midair and spun.

After it spun eight times, the eight copper coins were shot out of the turtle shell, just like flowers petals scattered around by a fairy maiden.

The eight coins fell to the ground and formed a circle.

The mummy looked at the copper coins on the ground and started to ponder.

After a short while, it floated in front of Chu Chu once more and asked in a grave tone, "Girl, the structure of your bones really gave me a pleasant surprise. Moreover, you have a pair of beautiful legs. Such being the case, do you want to sign a contract with me and become..."



In the meantime.

In the first road.

Li Yinzhu yawned while walking. A moment later, it started snowing in the whole passageway.

It unexpectedly started snowing... it's a mutation of the water attribute, the ice attribute! It's a very rare attribute... it's a pity that the condition of that girl doesn't seem too good... Fourth Cultivator of True Virtue's eyeball floated behind Li Yinzhu, carefully observing her movements.

Just as Chu Chu earlier, Li Yinzhu proceeded forward amidst the heavy snow.

After walking for a while, Li Yinzhu suddenly squatted down.

She curled up and tightly braced herself, not moving in the slightest.

The cold inside her body had suddenly flared up, making her hibernate.

Fourth Cultivator of True Virtue's eyeball was speechless.

Chapter 527: The inheritance of Venerable Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue?

"Zzzzzzz..." Li Yinzhu.

After hibernating, Li Yinzhu started to sleep soundly.

The jade white eyeball sighed and floated up, arriving next to her body. Then, it magically transformed itself into a small jade white lion and held Li Yinzhu in its mouth, leaving the first road and returning to the immortal boat outside the grave of Venerable Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue.

From the looks of it, there seemed to be no fate between Li Yinzhu and the grave of Venerable Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue.



In the second road.

Just as Yu Jiaojiao was traveling through the passage, it started to pour down... Yu Jiaojiao didn't know where to start to ridicule the fact that there was a thunderstorm within such a small passage.

The thunderstorm represented that Yu Jiaojiao had a constitution with a dual—water and lightning—attribute. Flood dragons could call the wind and summon the rain since birth. Therefore, it was quite normal for Yu Jiaojiao to possess both water and lightning attributes.

Just as Chu Chu earlier, Yu Jiaojiao advanced in the passage until meeting a group of enemies that blocked her way. However, she didn't meet half-human and half-beast monsters. Instead, she met a group of cultivators that followed the evil path, their expressions sinister.

The evil cultivators had also just entered the Fourth Stage Innate Realm; their cultivation realm was the same as Yu Jiaojiao.

However, Jiaojiao had successfully jumped through the dragon gate and gained the ability to assume a half-human and half-fish form. Therefore, her fighting capacity was much higher than that of other cultivators of the same realm.

Yu Jiaojiao killed the four evil cultivators with ease.

After their deaths, the evil cultivators suddenly disappeared and merged with the surrounding thunderstorm.

The thunderstorm got stronger and stronger, completely blocking Yu Jiaojiao's line of sight.

Just like Chu Chu earlier, Yu Jiaojiao could only see things within a range of ten meters or less.

She advanced for another fifty meters before meeting the second group of evil cultivators...

Yu Jiaojiao was lost in thought.

After killing the second group of evil cultivators, she turned around and decided to return to the entrance of the second road.

But after moving fifty meters backward, she found a third group of evil cultivators waiting for her.

Whether she was advancing or retreating, she would find someone blocking her path. Moreover, the strength of the enemies was lower than hers by a notch.

"Such wicked taste," Yu Jiaojiao muttered to herself.

Such being the case, she had no choice but to turn back and keep advancing toward the depths of the passage.

After she took care of ten waves of evil cultivators, Yu Jiaojiao likewise arrived inside a chamber tomb.

Just as she entered the chamber tomb, her body trembled, and she was suddenly unable to maintain her half-human and half-fish form. Therefore, she reverted back to her half-flood dragon and half-fish form.

At the same time, the quantity of innate true qi inside her body rose by a whole 25%, allowing her to thoroughly consolidate her realm!

"It's worthy of being the grave of a Venerable. It gave me such a big boost all at once," Yu Jiaojiao said as she narrowed her eyes, looking at the golden coffin within the chamber tomb.

Right at this time, the golden coffin opened, and a figure drilled out of it.

Although Yu Jiaojiao had reached the Fourth Stage Realm, she wasn't much better off than Chu Chu who was only at the Second Stage Realm in front of this figure that had come out of the coffin.

Her body was also affected by an immobilizing technique and couldn't move in the slightest.

The figure that had drilled out of the coffin floated until arriving next to Yu Jiaojiao. Then, it checked her eyes, ears, nose, mouth, and tongue, as well as her four claws and tail.

Afterward, the figure took out a turtle shell and squeezed eight copper coins inside.

The turtle shell hovered midair and threw out the copper coins that disorderly arranged themselves on the ground.

"Eh? This divination... Sigh, what a pity. I'm sorry, little girl. It seems you are not the person I'm looking for. Although your legs were indeed beautiful while you were in half-human and half-fish form, there is bound to be no fate between us," the figure that had come out of the coffin said regretfully.

"..." Yu Jiaojiao.

"But don't lose hope. Although there is no fate between us, I'll still give you a consolation prize. After all, you have a pair of beautiful legs!"

After saying this much, the figure returned next to the golden

coffin and searched for a while before taking out a precious gem.

"It's a moonstone, something that monster cultivators love. As long as you keep it close to your body, you'll obtain the same effects as you would while practicing under moonlight. The moonstone still has half of its energy left; you can use it for more than ten years." After giving the moonstone to Yu Jiaojiao, the figure stretched out its hand and gently patted her body.

In the next moment, Yu Jiaojiao's body shot out of the ancient grave like an arrow.

After a short while...

When her body stopped, Yu Jiaojiao was already next to the immortal boat outside the ancient grave.

Yu Jiaojiao adjusted her state and assumed once more a half-human and half-fish form.

Then, she turned her head toward the huge grave of Venerable Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue and muttered, "There was no fate between us? In other words, is the grave of Venerable Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue looking for someone that has fate with it...? Is it looking for an inheritor?"

In ancient times, many powerful cultivators wholeheartedly devoted themselves to cultivation—to the point of forgetting about the passage of time. Since they were too engrossed in their practice, these ancient cultivators didn't receive any disciple during their life—or perhaps they found it too troublesome and didn't bother receiving one.

But one day, these cultivators would realize that there was something wrong with their bodies... their lifespan was almost depleted, and they would soon die.

Only at that time would those ancient cultivators start to worry about this matter... but it was too late to receive a disciple since there was not enough time to properly train one, or perhaps they

felt that it was too troublesome and didn't bother at all.

However, passing down one's teachings and inheritance was very important. They couldn't just let it die!

Therefore, some of these ancient cultivators left their inheritance inside their graves, waiting for the predestined person that would inherit their teachings and carry on their legacy.

In other words, the grave before their eyes was left behind by an ancient cultivator to find an inheritor.

"I wonder if someone of us will be lucky enough to become the inheritor of this ancient grave... after all, it's the grave of a Venerable!" Yu Jiaojiao muttered to herself.



In the seventh road.

Around five minutes earlier.

Song Shuhang shot a glance upwards. In there, he saw lightning making crackling noises and explosions of fire.

It seems that little friend Shuhang has a constitution with a dual—fire and lightning—attribute, the jade white lion Fourth Cultivator of True Virtue mused to itself as it followed behind Song Shuhang.

Song Shuhang was also a member of the Nine Provinces Number One Group, and he almost ended up taking the 'Thrice Song Tyrannical Saber' dao name—although he later changed it to Tyrannical Saber Song One.

For this reason, the jade white lion Fourth Cultivator of True Virtue was closely watching Song Shuhang and being extra cautious so as to avoid Song Shuhang seeking death just like Thrice Reckless and almost dying in the process.

Song Shuhang stared for a while at the lightning and fire. After making sure that it wouldn't suddenly come down and fall on his

head, he began to move forward, heading toward the depths of the seventh road.

After walking for a while, he noticed from afar four figures blocking his path.

Song Shuhang found the four figures very familiar... they were wearing black clothing that covered their whole body and sharp needles popped out of their heads.

Those were sea urchin warriors!

Song Shuhang drew his saber without hesitation. As soon as he saw the opposite party, the sea urchin warriors also noticed him! Moreover, Song Shuhang had the 'Mark of the Sea Urchin Slayer' on his body and was the archenemy of sea urchin warriors. There was no chance of reconciliation!

Such being the case, he had to take the initiative and gain the upper hand.

Song Shuhang had now reached the Second Stage Second Dantian 'Dragon Tail Dantian' Realm. On the other hand, the four sea urchin warriors were all in the initial phase of the Second Stage Realm; their cultivation level was one small realm lower than his.

Although the opposite party had four people, Song Shuhang had more than 80% probability of winning with all the treasures and talismans in his possession.

Chapter 528: Do you want to sign a contract with me and become the Eighth Cultivator of True Virtue?

Song Shuhang roared, "Tyrannical Whirlwind Slash!"

In the next moment, Song Shuhang displayed the <Virtuous Man's Ten Thousand Mile Walk> footwork and moved as fast as lightning, slashing at the sea urchin warrior to the rightmost side! Although what he shouted was 'Tyrannical Whirlwind Slash', what he used was the 'Flaming Saber Technique'.

It was something that Song Shuhang had learned after witnessing the battle between the disciples of the Illusory Sword School and the Chu Family on the Grievance Settling Platform. While fighting someone head on, loudly shouting the name of a powerful technique could help strengthen one's imposing manner and slightly increase the strength of the move.

But if one shouted the real name of the technique they were going to use, it would be very easy for the enemy to counter it. Therefore, most cultivators shouted casual awe-inspiring technique names while battling. There were several reasons for it. For example, they could strengthen their imposing manner, confuse the enemy, and, if the real name of their technique sucked, they could just use a fake name to cover it up.

In short, if one shouted aloud 'Bladestorm' and then used the 'Savage Impact', there was a chance that they could happily f*ck over an opponent that was unaware of what was going on.

Unfortunately, the four sea urchin warriors that Song Shuhang was fighting against weren't pushovers. Their eyes were bloodshot, and they had lost their ability to reason. Therefore, they weren't using any sophisticated strategy while fighting.

Just as the sea urchin warrior to the rightmost side saw Song

Shuhang slashing at him, he disregarded his safety and used his chest to block the Flaming Saber Technique. Afterward, he stretched out his hand and tried to grab the treasured saber Broken Tyrant. It wanted to give its three companions the possibility of counterattacking.

"They have the same fighting style as real sea urchin warriors," Song Shuhang muttered to himself. He wasn't even a little bit scared while facing these sea urchin warriors ready to throw away their lives in order to take him down.

Song Shuhang's eyes lit up and recorded each and every action of the sea urchin warriors. At the same time, a strange feeling welled up in his heart... in his eyes, the actions of the four sea urchin warrior were slow and riddled with flaws.

"These guys are actually so slow... moreover, they are making so many unnecessary movements while fighting.

If they plan to rely on their basic speed and not on some footwork... let alone these four, even if ten sea urchin warriors were surrounding me, they wouldn't be able to injure me!"

When Song Shuhang borrowed Young Master Phoenix Slayer's CPU to increase his comprehension of martial techniques back then, he obtained a large amount of basic knowledge as well. As if that wasn't enough, he constantly fought against the hundred giants during the past two days.

As a consequence, his eyesight and fighting experience had increased by leaps and bounds without him even noticing.

While facing these sea urchin warriors that were ready to throw away their lives in order to take him down, Song Shuhang decided to activate the Green Breeze Speed Boost.

"Green Breeze Speed Boost!"

A green wind started to circle around his body, increasing his speed quite a bit.

Next, saber light flashed through the surrounding area.

The sea urchin warrior to the rightmost side wasn't even able to grab the saber when he was shrouded in flames and burned to ashes.

Afterward, Song Shuhang lightly spun his wrist and used the <Inverted Scale Saber Technique—Dragon Dance Style> before the other three sea urchin warriors could launch their attacks.

The saber qi turned into a dragon that spiraled in the air as though it was dancing.

"Ding, ding, ding!"

The <Dragon Dance Style> completely blocked the attacks of the three sea urchin warriors. In addition, they reeled backward due to the power of the saber qi, retreating again and again.

After making the three sea urchin warriors retreat, Song Shuhang didn't seize the opportunity to attack them. Instead, he relied on the speed the 'Green Breeze Speed Boost' granted him and dashed toward the depths of the ancient grave, not wasting time fighting the three sea urchin warriors.

The speed of the Green Breeze Speed Boost coupled with the <Virtuous Man's Ten Thousand Mile Walk> was more than enough to leave the three sea urchin warriors in the dust.



After Song Shuhang advanced for another fifty meters, he discovered that there was an additional group of sea urchin warriors blocking his path.

This time, there were ten of them. They had sinister expressions on their faces and were stubbornly staring at Song Shuhang with their bloodshot eyes.

"Roar~" Song Shuhang opened his mouth and roared. He used the <Roaring Lion's Technique> in conjunction with the innate skill of

his Mouth Aperture, the 'Illusory Sound'. After hearing the roar, the bodies of the ten sea urchin warriors stiffened. They had been affected by the roar of the lion.

Song Shuhang seized the opportunity and jumped, leaping over the heads of the ten sea urchin warriors. Since the effects of the Green Breeze Speed Boost had yet to disappear, he kept running about madly through the passageway.

Just like that, Song Shuhang relied on the 'Illusory Sound' + <Roaring Lion's Technique> combo, as well as the speed-increasing effects of the Green Breeze Speed Boost and <Virtuous Man's Ten Thousand Mile Walk> techniques, to get past five waves of sea urchin warriors.

By the time he encountered the sixth wave, the number of sea urchin warriors in the wave had already reached twenty. There were simply too many of them, and he couldn't leap over them as he did before.

Moreover, the effects of the Green Breeze Speed Boost had disappeared as well.

"It seems I'll have to fight them head on..." Song Shuhang said.

Even if they were brain-dead and could only rely on their instinct to fight, being incapable of using footwork, cultivation techniques, and martial skills, twenty sea urchin warriors in the initial phase of the Second Stage Realm were rather difficult to deal with.

Thereupon, Song Shuhang put his hand in his pocket. He was planning to use a sword talisman to take care of this group of sea urchin warriors.

Just as Song Shuhang was preparing to fight the group of sea urchin warriors head-on, a roar was transmitted from behind.

The five waves of sea urchin warriors that he had left behind earlier had now gathered together, changing into an army of sea urchin warriors that was dashing about madly toward him.

"..." Song Shuhang lamented, "They all ran until here, sigh... couldn't they have obediently stayed where they were after I leapt over them?"

Therefore, Shuhang made up his mind and immediately took out the sword talisman, activating it!

But just as he activated the sword talisman... the sword talisman misfired, and no sword qi burst forth.

"What's happening? Did I end up with one of Senior Seven Lives Talisman defective products?" Song Shuhang immediately picked up another sword talisman and activated it.

However, the second sword talisman also misfired.

If the problem doesn't lie with the sword talismans... is it possible that the grave of Venerable Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue is the real culprit?

Song Shuhang's guess was correct.

A long, long time ago, there was a certain fellow daoist called Thrice Reckless Mad Saber that brought a powerful talisman together with him when he went to explore the grave of True Monarch Fifth Cultivator of True Virtue. As coincidence would have it, Thrice Reckless Mad Saber ended up using the powerful talisman... as a result, he almost made the 'grave of True Monarch Fifth Cultivator of True Virtue' explode and nearly killed himself in the process.

Thereupon, there were many formations inside the grave of Venerable Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue that restricted the use of talismans.



Song Shuhang had no choice but to put the sword talismans away and tightly grab the treasured saber Broken Tyrant. "Had I known earlier that all of this would happen, I would have directly killed each wave of sea urchin warriors when I met them..."

However, it was too late to cry over spilled milk.

The army of sea urchin warriors roared and madly pounced toward him. Their claws, teeth, needles... each part of their body was a powerful weapon.

《Inverted Scale Saber Technique—Dragon Scale Style》!

The saber qi turned into dragon scales that tightly wrapped Song Shuhang, protecting him.

Although there was a large number of sea urchin warriors, only a few of them could attack Song Shuhang at the same time. The 《Dragon Scale Style》 completely blocked their attacks.

At the same time, Song Shuhang started his counterattack.

The 'Basic Buddhist Fist Technique', the 'Flaming Saber Technique', the 'Roaring Lion's Technique', and the 'Steel Hands Technique' that he had studied yesterday, gaining some superficial knowledge, burst forth all together.



After a hard battle, Song Shuhang was finally able to get rid of the group of sea urchin warriors.

The group of sea urchin warriors was in an unusual state. They had bloodshot eyes and didn't even bother cooperating with each other, fighting only by relying on their instincts. Although they had reached the Second Stage Realm, their real fighting capacity was only comparable to that of a cultivator of the First Stage with three or four apertures opened.

As a consequence, Song Shuhang managed to exterminate them even though the opposite party had way superior numbers.

After their deaths, the corpses of the sea urchin warriors didn't stay behind. They turned into fire and lightning and soared into the sky, merging with the fire and lightning existing in the passage.

Song Shuhang raised his head and looked upward, toward the fire and lightning above his head. As expected, those sea urchin warriors weren't living creatures, but something that the grave of Venerable Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue created...

But why did the grave create these sea urchin warriors and made me fight them? What was the meaning behind it?

Forget it. There is no need to think too much about it. I need to traverse the seventh road and reach the depths of the ancient grave first... maybe I'll find the answer there.

After thinking this much, Song Shuhang kept advancing along the seventh road, heading toward the depths of the ancient grave.

This time, Song Shuhang didn't use tricks and immediately got rid of the next waves of sea urchin warriors as soon as he encountered them.

Just like the others, Song Shuhang also reached the chamber tomb of Venerable Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue's grave after taking care of ten waves of sea urchin warriors.

The huge chamber tomb was very simple and without decorations. There was also a golden coffin in the center.

Just as he entered the chamber tomb... Song Shuhang noticed that the amount of true qi inside his body suddenly increased.

Is this a trap?

No, it doesn't seem a trap... it should be the reward for getting past the seventh road!

But the timing of this reward is truly horrible!

So unlucky...!!!

Song Shuhang's heart was in pain. During the past two days, he went through many hardships and was able to strengthen his constitution by a notch after experiencing the Mount Tai Seal and battling against the hundred giants. Thanks to that, his Sea of Qi

Dantian wasn't swelled and on the verge of exploding anymore.

But little did he expect that he would have a fortuitous encounter that would make his true qi increase soon after getting rid of the calamity. His Sea of Qi Dantian had swelled and become a little painful. Moreover, he felt once more as if he could explode at any time.

"Painful, painful, painful... I feel as if I'm about to explode... I won't die here, right?"

Just as Song Shuhang was in deep thoughts, the golden coffin in the center of the chamber tomb opened.

A mummy-like figure drilled out of the coffin and floated until arriving next to Song Shuhang.

As soon as the mummy started to hover midair, Song Shuhang felt as though his body had been immobilized. He couldn't move any part of his body except for his eyeballs.

After floating next to Song Shuhang, the mummy stretched out its hand and opened his eyelids, checking his eyeballs. Then, it checked his nose and mouth. Afterward, it forcefully opened his mouth and checked his tongue.

After examining Song Shuhang's five sensory organs, the mummy grabbed his palms and checked the lines above.

After checking the lines of his hands, it placed Song Shuhang on the ground and grabbed his legs, taking off his shoes and glancing at the lines on his soles.

Song Shuhang felt that his current posture was rather embarrassing, almost making him wish he could die.

After inspecting Song Shuhang's soles, the mummy sighed with emotion and said, "Your legs aren't bad... unfortunately, you are a man."

"..." Song Shuhang.

If I were a woman, I would have already sued you for sexual harassment! Aaaaah!

After placing Song Shuhang's legs down, the mummy floated toward the golden coffin and took out a turtle shell, squeezing eight copper coins inside. Afterward, it changed the information about Song Shuhang's facial structure, palm lines, and sole lines into runes, likewise squeezing them inside the turtle shell.

The turtle shell started to shake and spun several times before throwing out the various copper coins.

After falling to the ground, the eighth copper coins orderly disposed themselves into two rows of four coins each.

It was a rather strange divination.

The mummy stared at the result of the divination for quite a while. Then, it stretched out its hand and started to count on its fingers.

After a good while, it floated next to Song Shuhang once more and said, "Youth, although you are a man, the structure of your bones left a deep impression on me. Moreover, the shape of your legs isn't bad, either..."

"..." Song Shuhang.

"Cough, I'm not sure how to explain it... but I wasn't able to properly calculate the fate between us. Half of the divination implies that there is a very strong fate between us; the other half implies that there is no fate at all. I have no idea how to interpret such a weird divination," the mummy said.

"..." Song Shuhang.

Are divinations and the sort even reliable?

As soon as the word 'divination' was mentioned, Song Shuhang immediately thought of Immortal Master Copper Trigram from the Nine Provinces Number One Group... it was common

knowledge in the group that one had to take for good the exact opposite of what Immortal Master Copper Trigram had predicted. But what would one do if Immortal Master Copper Trigram got two contradictory answers from the divination? What was the 'opposite' in that case? It was a rather interesting topic.

The mummy continued with its speech. "How about this... since the shape of your legs was pretty good, do you want to sign a contract with me and become the Eighth Cultivator of True Virtue?"

You don't really have to give so much face to my legs! Song Shuhang ridiculed in his heart.

Anyway, as soon as the mummy said those words, Song Shuhang immediately took notice of the following words: 'Eighth Cultivator of True Virtue'.

Signing a contract and becoming the Eighth Cultivator of True Virtue?

What does that mean?

Many things started to resurface in Song Shuhang's mind.

Venerable ***Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue*** had a lion-shaped clone called ***Fourth Cultivator of True Virtue***. The seniors of the Nine Provinces Number One Group once explored the grave of True Monarch ***Fifth Cultivator of True Virtue***. At this time, he and the others were exploring the grave of Venerable ***Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue...***

Song Shuhang immediately thought of a possibility.

Is it possible that Fourth Cultivator of True Virtue, Fifth Cultivator of True Virtue, Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue, and Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue all signed a contract with someone and became the XXX Cultivator of True Virtue?

If I sign the contract... will I become the Eighth Cultivator of True Virtue...?

Such being the case, why did the jade white lion Fourth Cultivator of True Virtue become Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue's clone?



Right at this time, the mummy stretched out its hand and grabbed the bandages on its arm, starting to take them off.

Then, just as silk that was being spun from a cocoon, all the bandages wrapping the body of the body of the mummy came down, revealing its true body.

Beneath the thick bandages was an elegant woman.

The woman was wearing a light green skirt. Her light green skirt had butterflies embroidered above and was slit until the thighs; it was both sexy and elegant. The butterflies could even move around, and it felt as though they were dancing on the skirt while flapping their wings.

The woman had long golden hair that resembled a mass of golden threads, shining to the point of the being dazzling. Her eyebrows and eyelashes were also golden.

After she opened her eyes, Song Shuhang noticed that her pupils were also golden.

It took Song Shuhang only a glance to recognize who she was. It was the same golden-haired woman that had defeated a total of fourteen Golden Core Spiritual Emperors belonging to both the Limitless Demon Sect and Loose Cultivator Qian Yan's team with just one move back then.

"You are Venerable Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue?" Song Shuhang called out. Just as the golden-haired woman finished taking off the bandages, the immobilizing technique affecting his body also disappeared.

Is this woman really Venerable Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue?

But she is alive and kicking! Song Shuhang could sense powerful fluctuations of life energy emitted from her body. She wasn't a puppet, a zombie, a resentful ghost, or anything of the sort.

But why did she build the grave of Venerable Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue and bury herself in the golden coffin if she's still alive?

Is it possible that it's a hobby of hers?

"Yes, I'm indeed Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue," the golden-haired woman said indifferently. "But although I had reached the Venerable Realm once, my current strength is limited to the Sixth Stage True Monarch Realm.

Kid, what do you think? Do you want to sign a contract with me and become the Eighth Cultivator of True Virtue?"

In the neighboring symmetrical chamber tomb, Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue asked Chu Chu the same question...

Chapter 529: The primordial treasure 'Nine Virtues Phoenix Saber'

So, this golden-haired woman is really Venerable Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue? In addition, although she had once reached the Seventh Stage Venerable Realm, her strength decreased and returned to the Sixth Stage True Monarch Realm for some reason. Eventually, she built the grave of Venerable Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue and buried herself within...

After that, Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue took the place of the other Cultivators of True Virtue that had retired and started to represent them in the world...?

In other words, if I sign this contract and become the Eighth Cultivator of True Virtue, will I also replace Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue someday in the future?

At this time, the golden-haired woman asked once again, "So, what about it? Do you want to sign the contract?"

Song Shuhang replied, "Senior Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue, can you tell me in detail about this matter of becoming the Eighth Cultivator of True Virtue first?"

Song Shuhang had no idea what was going on. How could he casually sign the contract?

"I knew you would ask this question. Therefore, I prepared myself beforehand." The golden-haired woman took something out of her clothes. It was a precious stone that had several frames recorded inside with the usage of a magical technique. It was one of the several methods that cultivators used in the past to record things, before the invention of cameras and the likes.

"Here it is. Luckily, I kept this stone with me. Although it's a bit old, it's still working," the golden-haired woman said.

After she finished speaking, Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue

activated the precious stone, and the picture of an ancient grave was projected midair.

It was the picture of a plain chamber tomb with no decorations. There was a silver coffin inside, as well as a signboard with the following words written on it: Here lies the body of True Monarch Fifth Cultivator of True Virtue.

It was the grave of True Monarch Fifth Cultivator of True Virtue.

In the video, the lid of the silver coffin was slowly pushed to one side, and a figure came out of the coffin. The figure had a faint smile on his face and seemed rather amiable.

As soon as the man came out of the coffin, Song Shuhang called out, "True Monarch Fallout?!"

The figure that came out of the coffin was precisely that senior from the Nine Provinces Number One Group, True Monarch Fallout. Song Shuhang remembered that True Monarch Fallout was a very patient senior.

Not long ago, when the Nine Provinces Number One Group fought against the blood demon, it was precisely True Monarch Fallout that sat next to Song Shuhang and explained to him everything about the battle.

Afterward, he managed to place amongst the first five in the hand-guided tractor competition and went to explore the ancient ruins together with Venerable White.

True Monarch Fallout is unexpectedly the Fifth Cultivator of True Virtue?

"True Monarch Fallout? Oh, you must be referring to Fifth Cultivator of True Virtue's thirty-something generation descendant. That kid is rather hard-working. He reached the True Monarch Realm at such a young age," the golden-haired woman said thoughtlessly.

"..." Song Shuhang.

If even his descendant thirty-odd generations later has the same face, this Fifth Cultivator of True Virtue must have some pretty incredible genes, right?

Such being the case, do True Monarch Fallout's father, grandfather, and uncles also have the same face?

In the video, True Monarch Fallout's ancestor, Fifth Cultivator of True Virtue, floated above the silver coffin. From the looks of it, he was patiently explaining something to a young cultivator.

After Song Shuhang looked at the young cultivator, he discovered that it was Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue!

Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue looked very young in the video, but his cultivation realm was still at the Fourth Stage Innate Realm or above. He was riding a flying sword in the video, something that only cultivators of the Fourth Stage could do.

Is that a picture of Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue exploring the grave of True Monarch Fifth Cultivator of True Virtue? The picture should have been taken before he signed the contract and became the Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue.

Right at this time, True Monarch Fifth Cultivator of True Virtue started his explanation.

"Becoming the Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue isn't related to a vocation, and you won't become my disciple after signing the contract, either. To be precise, Fifth Cultivator of True Virtue, Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue, Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue, and so on aren't dao names of the same lineage or vocation... what links these several names together is a primordial treasure!"

Just like his descendant thirty-plus generations later, Fifth Cultivator of True Virtue was a very patient man and explained things thoroughly.

A primordial treasure?

In the video, the young Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue was a bit confused.

Song Shuhang, who was looking at the scene, was likewise confused.

What links the various XXX Cultivators of True Virtue together is a primordial treasure? Although I don't know what a primordial treasure is, it should be a type of magical treasure, right? But why are their names related to a magical treasure?

True Monarch Fifth Cultivator of True Virtue continued with his explanation, "This primordial treasure is called 'Nine Virtues Phoenix Saber', and there are 'nine transformation seals' on its blade. After each transformation, the strength of the blade would increase by one Stage. When I obtained the 'Nine Virtues Phoenix Saber' from the Fourth Cultivator of True Virtue, it had already undergone five transformations. Afterward, I refined it until the number of transformations reached six. After completing my mission, I passed it to the Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue, giving them the task to keep refining the saber."

In the video, the young Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue said, "In other words, after inheriting the dao name 'Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue', I'll inherit the 'Nine Virtues Phoenix Saber' as well. Then, I'll keep refining it, and once I succeed, I'll pass it to the 'Eighth Cultivator of True Virtue'?"

"Yeah, that's it." True Monarch Fifth Cultivator of True Virtue nodded and said, "Such being the case, do you want to sign a contract with me? After signing the contract, the legendary primordial treasure 'Nine Virtues Phoenix Saber' would become yours!"

"No," Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue refused and said, "After inheriting the 'Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue' dao name, not only I would have to spend a lot of effort to refine the

Nine Virtues Phoenix Saber, but I would also bear its restriction... and someday in the future, I would have to hand it over to someone else? How does any of it benefit me?"

"Hehe, if there weren't enough benefits to move the heart of a cultivator, how could they accept to inherit the Nine Virtues Phoenix Saber willingly?" True Monarch Fifth Cultivator of True Virtue said with a laugh.

"After you officially inherit the Nine Virtues Phoenix Saber, you will obtain a volume of the ‹Nine Transformations Phoenix Technique›. It's a complete cultivation technique, without a single missing part, that can allow you to reach the Ninth Stage Tribulation Transcender Realm! In addition, you will inherit the cultivation-related experiences and other observations of the previous owners of the Nine Virtues Phoenix Saber."

One could say that the road to the peak would open for whomever got their hands on the Nine Virtues Phoenix Saber.

True Monarch Fifth Cultivator of True Virtue sighed and said, "As you know, it's impossible for us to avoid dealing with the heavenly tribulation once we start practicing. The heavenly tribulation is merciless, and just one small mistake while trying to transcend the heavenly tribulation is enough to cause the flames of tribulation to seep into one's body, dooming them to die."

In the video, the young Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue silently nodded.

The heavenly tribulation was a fearful and unavoidable opponent that all the cultivators had to face on the road to cultivation. Through the ages, at least 25% of the cultivators didn't die of old age, but perished under the might of the heavenly tribulation.

"If you become the owner of the primordial treasure 'Nine Virtues Phoenix Saber', you won't die even if you fail to transcend the tribulation. Of course, although they won't die, the owner of the Nine Virtues Phoenix Saber must pay a price to conceal from

the Wielder of the Will the fact that they are still alive..."

As soon as True Monarch Fifth Cultivator of True Virtue said these words, Song Shuhang immediately understood what the 'price' was.

The price should be something similar to what the jade white lion Fourth Cultivator of True Virtue had to pay. He received the protection of the Nine Virtues Phoenix Saber, but his cultivation realm was restricted, and he became something akin to a 'clone'.

However, it was still better than dying directly.

"But you don't have to worry. Even if you end up paying the price, there is still a way to redeem it," True Monarch Fifth Cultivator of True Virtue said with a smile.

Chapter 530: Song One is the one and only

Even after paying the price, there was a way to redeem it... the Nine Virtues Phoenix Saber was simply the go-to item when it came to transcending the heavenly tribulation!

In the video, the young Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue asked, "Senior Fifth Cultivator of True Virtue, did you also fail to transcend the tribulation and end up staying in this place?"

"That's not the case!" True Monarch Fifth Cultivator of True Virtue shook his head and said with a smile, "What I left inside this grave is a special type of clone. Back then, my main body was able to successfully transcend the tribulation and reach the Sixth Stage Realm. At the same time, I managed to refine the Nine Virtues Phoenix Saber and increase its strength to the Sixth Stage. After that, I left the saber in the care of the Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue. You can say that I retired after completing my mission."

The following words were inscribed on the signboard in the chamber tomb: 'Here lies the body of True Monarch Fifth Cultivator of True Virtue'. It seemed that the 'body' True Monarch Fifth Cultivator of True Virtue was talking about was precisely this 'special clone'.

Anyway, even if he couldn't rely on the 'Nine Virtues Phoenix Saber' anymore, True Monarch Fifth Cultivator of True Virtue still possessed the complete version of the 《Nine Transformations Phoenix Technique》. Unless he died in the meantime due to some unfortunate circumstances, he should have already reached the Eighth Stage Profound Sage Realm or an even higher realm.

"Such being the case, youngster, do you want to sign the contract?" True Monarch Fifth Cultivator of True Virtue asked once again.

In the video, the young Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue pondered about the matter for a long time.

"I accept. I'll sign the contract." In the end, he made up his mind and decided to inherit the 'Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue' dao name and become the new owner of the Nine Virtues Phoenix Saber.

Nowadays, that youngster that took the name of 'Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue' had already reached the Seventh Stage Venerable Realm and was only one step away from breaking through the Eighth Stage Profound Sage Realm. The Nine Virtues Phoenix Saber in his possession was also on the verge of reaching the eighth transformation.

* * *

At this time, the video the precious stone was projecting came to an end.

Song Shuhang shot a glance at the golden-haired woman... It seems that Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue also failed to transcend her tribulation. As a consequence, her strength fell until reaching the Sixth Stage True Monarch Realm once more...

Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue also looked at Song Shuhang and asked, "Such being the case, do you want to sign the contract and become the Eighth Cultivator of True Virtue?"

Song Shuhang pondered for a little while and asked, "Senior Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue, aside from the many benefits, what are the disadvantages of inheriting the Nine Virtues Phoenix Saber?"

This primordial treasure granted so many benefits, but what were the disadvantages and shortcomings?

Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue shook her head and said, "Maybe it has some shortcomings, but I don't remember finding any while I was the master of the Nine Virtues Phoenix Saber. However, each time the owner of the saber faces the heavenly tribulation, it would end up being slightly stronger than normal. I guess it can be

counted as a shortcoming?"

"I see. In that case, Senior Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue, how do we sign the contract?" Song Shuhang asked.

Having to face a slightly strengthened heavenly tribulation was not even worth mentioning if one could obtain a complete cultivation technique that could allow them to reach Ninth Stage Tribulation Transcender Realm plus the experiences of the previous owners of the saber!

Since the day he decided to step on the road of cultivation, Song Shuhang had prepared himself to face death. If he couldn't even take such a small risk, he might as well return home and keep living the life of an ordinary person.

"I knew you would choose to sign the contract," Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue said with a gentle smile. Then, she stretched out her hand and took out a scroll-shaped object from her clothes.

After she unfurled the scroll, the dense and numerous characters written above were fully displayed in front of Song Shuhang. Most of them were names.

The column of the 'Eighth Cultivator of True Virtue' was likewise full of dao names.

Amongst the numerous dao names, Song Shuhang found three of them rather familiar.

Thrice Reckless Mad Saber, Immortal Master Copper Trigram, and Cave Lord Snow Wolf.

These three seniors had once entered the grave of True Monarch Fifth Cultivator of True Virtue together to explore it.

After seeing all these names, Song Shuhang was clear as to what was going on. All the people that had left their names on the scroll were offering themselves as candidates for the position of 'Eighth Cultivator of True Virtue'.

Once Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue was done transcending the tribulation, successfully reaching the Eighth Stage Profound Sage Realm, he would choose the 'Eighth Cultivator of True Virtue' from the several candidates and entrust them with the Nine Virtues Phoenix Saber.

Just as Song Shuhang picked the brush up and prepared to write his name on the scroll, another name suddenly appeared on it; the handwriting was delicate and beautiful.

It was Chu Chu's name.

Miss Chu Chu also decided to vie for the position of Eighth Cultivator of True Virtue?

It's not really that surprising. Compared to myself, who can rely on the Nine Provinces Number One Group, Miss Chu Chu should be more interested in the volume of the *«Nine Transformations Phoenix Technique»*.

Song Shuhang faintly smiled and picked the brush up, writing down his name, 'Song Shuhang', on the scroll.

"Done," Song Shuhang said as he placed the brush down.

"Leave the rest to me," Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue said as she stretched her hand out, preparing to take the scroll back from Song Shuhang.

But right at this time, the words 'Song Shuhang' written on the scroll suddenly disappeared.

A confused expression flashed through Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue's golden eyes. "Eh?"

"What happened?" Song Shuhang asked.

Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue asked, "Did you make a mistake while writing your name?"

"No, I didn't make a mistake. I correctly wrote my name, 'Song Shuhang', on it," Song Shuhang said. He had written his name tens

of thousands of time. How could he possibly make a mistake while writing it?

Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue's golden eyelashes blinked. Then, she said, "Do you have a dao name? Maybe try to write your dao name and see what happens?"

"My dao name? Alright. Do I need to write it down in its entirety?" Song Shuhang asked.

Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue replied, "A dao name must be obviously written down in its entirety."

Song Shuhang nodded and picked up the brush once more, starting to write a long string of words on the scroll.

He started with Monday's dao name, Virtuous Buddhist Sabersman, and wrote down in proper order the following dao names... Tuesday's Tyrannical Saber Song One, Wednesday's Daoist Priest Wood, Thursday's Baijing Street's Traveling Sabersman, Friday's Scholar Mountain of Books, Saturday's Path-seeking Scholar, and Sunday's Virtuous Cultivator.

"..." Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue.

Dammit, I forgot that this idiot had seven dao names. Now, he alone occupied seven columns...

"I'm done, Senior," Song Shuhang said as he placed the brush down.

But just as he placed the brush down, the dao names he had written on the scroll started to disappear one after another. Virtuous Cultivator, Path-seeking Scholar, Scholar Mountain of Books, and Baijing Street's Traveling Sabersman disappeared one after another...

In the end, the only dao name left behind was—Tyrannical Saber Song One.

"..." Song Shuhang.

What's the meaning of this?

Is it possible that the will of the world only recognized 'Tyrannical Saber Song One' amongst my several dao names? But why did it refuse to acknowledge even my real name, 'Song Shuhang'?

Do you really think I won't flip the table at this time?! Tyrannical Saber Song One is just a dao name that I added for Senior White's sake to make up the numbers! I was planning to quietly delete it in a while!

————— ㄥ (' □ ') ㄥ —————

"Tyrannical Saber Song One, what a good dao name!" Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue praised. But her trembling golden eyelashes betrayed her true feelings.

"..." Song Shuhang managed to stop himself with great difficulty from tearing the scroll to shreds.

Next, Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue stretched out her hand and took back the scroll, putting it away after rolling it up. "The contract is complete!"

There was a strange fate between her and this little friend named Song Shuhang. It would be rather interesting if he could become the Eighth Cultivator of True Virtue someday in the future...

But right after Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue rolled the scroll up, half of the dao name 'Tyrannical Saber Song One' disappeared.

The first part, 'Tyrannical Saber', disappeared and only the second part, 'Song One', was left behind.

Neither Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue nor Song Shuhang noticed this fact.

After completing her mission, Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue stretched herself. Afterward, she shot a glance at Song Shuhang, seemingly remembering something.

Song Shuhang's true qi had suddenly increased after he passed through the branch road of the ancient grave. Now, he was in a situation where his body could explode at any time.

She had to find a way to resolve the situation before making him leave the ancient grave because his body might explode for real once it wasn't affected by suppressive formations inside the ancient grave anymore...

Chapter 531: You can borrow my golden coffin for a while and lie inside

The insides of the grave of Venerable Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue were full of suppressing formations.

At this time, Song Shuhang's Sea of Qi Dantian was on the verge of exploding even though he was inside the ancient grave. If he were to leave this place, he would explode for sure and transform into beautiful fireworks.

Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue stared at Song Shuhang, trying to think of a way to resolve the situation.

Song Shuhang noticed that there was something wrong with the way Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue was looking at him. She was looking at him the same way one would look at someone that was about to pass away...

"Senior, is there something wrong with my body?" Song Shuhang asked.

Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue nodded and said, "There is indeed a problem, and I'm trying to think of a way to deal with it. I want to avoid having you explode as soon as you leave this place, making me a murderer."

Song Shuhang asked, "Is it related to the fact that the true qi inside my body suddenly increased?"

Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue nodded once more.

"Senior, do you have the means to resolve this problem?"

Was it possible that she wanted to seal the true qi inside his body?

"You are lucky that the person you met today was me!" Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue said.

After saying this much, she pointed at her golden coffin and said, "Do you see that?"

Song Shuhang nodded and said, "Yes."

"Get into the coffin and lie down. That golden coffin is something I forged in the past hundred years. I gathered all types of special materials that can strengthen the constitution of a cultivator, as well as other thirteen types of precious materials, in the proximity of the moon and used them to forge it. Go and lie inside. The strengthening effects on your body wouldn't be inferior to when you fought against the hundred giants at a gravity five times higher than normal," Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue explained.

Although her realm had been restricted to the Sixth Stage True Monarch Realm, she could still strengthen her constitution.

If we took into consideration that she was practicing a body tempering technique to being with, she had the possibility to push the strength of her body until the Seventh Stage rank if she was willing to spend enough time on it.

Therefore, if she wanted to get stronger before redeeming the 'price' and lift the restrictions on her cultivation realm, she could only follow one path and strengthen her constitution.

The golden coffin was something that Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue had forged precisely for this purpose.

If the golden coffin could strengthen the constitution of a Sixth Stage True Monarch, it was bound to have very good effects on a little cultivator of the Second Stage such as Song Shuhang.

Song Shuhang glanced at the golden coffin and was speechless.

Although he knew that the golden coffin could strengthen his constitution, he was somewhat scared when looking at it.

Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue pushed to one side the lid of the coffin and moved several things outside. There was a turtle shell, copper coins, snacks, and even a TV and a computer.

Lastly, Song Shuhang even saw a wireless Wi-Fi router... needless to say, it was something that cultivators had created using Black Technology. It was a gadget that could allow them to surf the Internet even in space.

Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue said to Song Shuhang, "What are you still doing there?"

Song Shuhang clenched his teeth and steeled himself, getting into the golden coffin.

"Don't make the face of someone about to die a martyr's death. If not for the fact that your body would explode as soon as you get out of here, I would be rather reluctant to let you enjoy my golden coffin, get it?" After saying this much, Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue grabbed the lid of the coffin and closed it.

The insides of the golden coffin became pitch-black and even the sounds coming from the world outside were blocked.

It was black and cold, without even the tiniest sound... the place was even worse than a black room.

It just so happened that Song Shuhang was unable to use his true qi to practice at this time, and he couldn't meditate, either. Therefore, he could only lie inside the coffin with his eyes open.

Now then, for how long do I have to lie inside this golden coffin?

After lying inside the coffin for around three minutes, Song Shuhang stretched out his hand and grabbed his phone, which was magically modified by Venerable White earlier.

After unlocking it, he discovered that there was a Wi-Fi signal close by, and it wasn't password-locked!

Thereupon, Song Shuhang connected to the Internet... he could really go online in space!

If he could go online, he didn't have to be afraid of dying of boredom.



In the Nine Provinces Number One Group.

Scholar Xian Gong: "Dammit... is there really not any news about demodragons? None of the fellow daoists got new information about this matter?"

Northern River's Loose Cultivator: "As before, I haven't received any news of demodragons descending lately. Right, Senior Xian Gong. Did you go online and put information about the transaction you want to carry out on the site I told you?"

Scholar Xian Gong: "Yes, but a lot of the people you meet online are completely unreliable! I registered a new account and put the information about the transaction online. Soon after, two idiots approached me thinking that I was a rookie and tried to sell me the blood of several other types of cosmic demons, passing it off as the blood of demodragon. As a consequence, I caught the duo and sealed their cultivation. Then, I threw them in the spirit beast pen and forced them to raise the spirit beast pigs for me."

"..." Northern River's Loose Cultivator.

In the world of cultivators, there was always someone that would seek death by trying to scam others.

Scholar Xian Gong wrote again. "If there is any fellow daoist that gets info about the blood of demodragon, remember to inform me! I can pay a high price!"

"Don't worry, Senior Xian Gong, I'll surely inform you if there is any news," Fairy Dongfang Snow said.

The other fellow daoists of the Nine Provinces Number One Group also appeared one after another and reassured Scholar Xian Gong that they would notify him if they got any news.



Song Shuhang faintly sighed.

The blood of a demodragon! If he could obtain it, he would surely give it to Senior Xian Gong. If he could drink a little of bit of the 'demodragon medicine' derived from it, his constitution would rise directly until the Third Stage rank.

At that time, he wouldn't have to worry about exploding and dying as he was practicing the 〈Whale Swallowing Technique〉 and 〈Thirty-Three Divine Beasts' Technique〉.

Unfortunately, the blood of demodragon wasn't something so easy to obtain.

Just as Song Shuhang was in deep thoughts, Medicine Master sent him a private message.

Medicine Master: "Little friend Shuhang, you're finally online! While scrolling through the chat logs recently, I noticed that you asked about methods to strengthen your constitution a few days ago, is that correct?"

"Yes, that's correct, Senior Medicine Master," Song Shuhang quickly replied.

"You are currently a cultivator of the Second Stage, right? I just happen to have the formula of a medicinal bath here. After preparing the medicinal bath according to the formula, you have to bathe inside it twice per day. It should allow you to strengthen your constitution quite a lot. So, are you interested in it?" Medicine Master replied.

A medicinal bath that could strengthen his constitution quite a lot... he was surely interested!

"Senior Medicine Master, I'm obviously interested!" Song Shuhang quickly wrote. "Senior, how many spirit stones do you want for the formula of the medicinal bath?"

At this time, he only had ten spirit stones of the Fourth Stage with him. He didn't know if they would be enough.

"Ahaha, it's better if you keep the spirit stones to yourself. You

just stepped on the road of cultivation, and there are many places where spirit stones can come in handy. If you still feel uncomfortable about it... I heard that you are raising a several hundred years old green onion spirit, right? You can casually cut off its green onion shoot and use that to pay off the formula," Medicine Master said thoughtlessly.

After saying this much, he sent Song Shuhang a file. Inside the file he sent were the pictures of the raw materials needed for the formula and other information related to the medicinal bath.

Lady Onion's shoot? Actually, I still have that onion spirit crystal with me... I wonder if I can use it instead of the green onion shoot to pay for the formula?

Just as Song Shuhang was in deep thoughts, something inside his pocket suddenly inflated.

It was Lady Onion.

While in the proximity of the moon, she was also heavily influenced by its mysterious energy. The favorable circumstances ended up speeding up the recovering of her ability to assume human form. Now that she was inside the coffin of Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue, she recovered her ability to assume human form at an even faster pace.

At this time... Lady Onion was once again capable of assuming human form!

Song Shuhang's pocket was burst open.

Lady Onion changed into her human form and lay on Song Shuhang's body.

Coincidentally, the first thing she saw after assuming human form was that reply from Medicine Master displayed on Song Shuhang's phone...

Lady Onion's face immediately turned deathly pale.

Chapter 532: The faintly bulging lower abdomen

At this time, Lady Onion really wished she was nearsighted... because she would be nowhere this scared if she couldn't see clearly the text on Song Shuhang's phone!

Moreover... why were these guys talking about 'casually' cutting off her green onion shoot? Did they take her for Lady Garlic Chives, thinking that it was enough to sprinkle some fertilizer on her after cutting off her green onion shoot to make it regrow?! It was very difficult to grow back her green onion shoot... moreover, it was something akin to cutting off her head! It was such a cruel thing to do!

Lady Onion looked at Song Shuhang with her teary and dim eyes.

"..." Song Shuhang said, "Did you see the text on the phone?"

Lady Onion nodded.

At the same time, Lady Onion quickly operated her brain. Her green onion shoot and happy green onion life were at stake here, she had to quickly think of a way to get out of this situation.

Was it possible that it was time to put the '200 Must-have Skills for a Monster Spirit to Survive' to use?

But then, Lady Onion recalled what happened the last time. At that time, she displayed the '500 Ways to Surrender to a Human Cultivator You're Unable to Defeat' to appease Song Shuhang...

As a result, the opposite party used the Lightning Palm and tried to kill her without showing any mercy.

Afterward, she was also forced to use her secret technique, the 'Ultimate Seducing Skill of a Pretty Female Monster'!

But just as before, the opposite party remained unmoved and didn't show any tender affection.

Although she was rather unwilling to admit it, the '200 Must-have Skills for a Monster Spirit to Survive' seemed to have no effect on Song Shuhang.

As if that wasn't enough, she had no chances of defeating Song Shuhang in a head-on battle, either. She had stayed together with Song Shuhang for quite some time now. She knew that he had quickly advanced in realm and was already at the Second Stage Second Dantian 'Dragon Tail Dantian' Realm, while she was nothing but a pitiful monster onion of the First Stage.

Fighting him head-on was of no use, and fighting him indirectly was of no use, either... was it possible that she had no other choice but to offer her green onion shoot on her own initiative, continuing to live on disgracefully? Never! If they wanted to cut off her green onion shoot once more, she would resist with all her might!

"Lady Onion, can you assume the form of a green onion again?" Song Shuhang asked.

The space inside the golden coffin was limited, and any normal man would find Lady Onion lying on top of them like that rather provocative.

After hearing these words, Lady Onion immediately became anxious.

Was Song Shuhang planning to cut off her green onion shoot once she reverted back to her green onion form?

She couldn't allow it to happen!

"No, I won't do it! I won't let you cut off my green onion shoot!" Lady Onion screamed and started to struggle with all her might.

"Don't move heedlessly! I have no intention of cutting off your green onion shoot! Return to your green onion form for now. I'll explain to you in detail what's going on!" Song Shuhang called out.

He still had that onion spirit crystal with him, and its effects

should be better than an ordinary green onion shoot's. Therefore, it should be possible to use that instead of the green onion shoot to compensate Medicine Master for the formula of the medicinal bath.

"Don't try to trick me! You are thinking of cutting off my shoot as soon as I assume the form of a green onion, right? Don't even think about it!" Lady Onion used all her strength to push the lid of the coffin to one side.

However, the golden coffin was something that Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue forged for herself. Even an ordinary Sixth Stage True Monarch couldn't open it, let alone a small onion spirit of the First Stage.

The lid of the golden coffin didn't move in the slightest, but the sound of Lady Onion's screams and strikes against the golden coffin managed to reach Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue's ears.

Did the voice of a woman come from inside the golden coffin?

"I'm pretty sure that the only person I made enter the golden coffin was Tyrannical Saber Song One," Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue muttered to herself.

Thereupon, she stretched her hand out and pushed the lid of the coffin to one side.



The shocking and censor-worthy scene playing inside the golden coffin was fully displayed in front of Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue's eyes.

Lady Onion was lying on top of Song Shuhang's body, screaming and struggling with all her strength.

Song Shuhang was pressed below Lady Onion and was stretching his hands out, trying to cover her mouth.

After the golden coffin was suddenly opened, both Lady Onion

and Song Shuhang were stunned... the sudden burst of light somewhat blinded their eyes.

At this time, Song Shuhang noticed that the expression on Senior Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue's face had become a little strange... the following words seemed to be written on her face: 'I reluctantly allowed you use my golden coffin in order to strengthen your constitution, but you're unexpectedly having fun with a woman inside...?'

"Senior Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue, it's a misunderstanding! It's all a misunderstanding!" Song Shuhang immediately called out. He felt that he had to explain this matter properly. After all, his reputation was at stake here!

At this time, Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue's gaze finally fell on Lady Onion's body. After that, the expression on her face became even stranger.

Song Shuhang felt that there was something amiss. Therefore, he followed Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue's gaze... and discovered that the clothes around Lady Onion's lower abdomen had been lifted up during the struggle.

Her smooth and white lower abdomen was faintly bulging, giving off a maternal feeling...

After seeing the bulge, one was immediately reminded of a pregnant woman!

Fck, what's happening?*

Song Shuhang was dumbstruck.

Has Lady Onion really become pregnant...? But when did it happen...? Wasn't she in my pocket all along? Why did she suddenly become pregnant?

Is this the doing of that stallion spirit I met recently? Did that guy have the ability to impregnate female monsters with just his gaze?

"Well... it seems I have disturbed you," Senior Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue said in a low voice.

Her golden eyes were expressionless as she quietly stretched her hand out, covering the golden coffin once more. It seemed she didn't want to disturb these two lovers that were having fun.

"Senior, it's a misunderstanding! It's really a misunderstanding!" Song Shuhang's voice was transmitted from within the golden coffin.

Lady Onion was by no means carrying his child!

Such being the case, why was Lady Onion's lower abdomen bulging?!

Wait a moment, is it possible that **that** might be the reason?* Song Shuhang immediately thought of a possibility. After all, Lady Onion had taken root on the enlightenment stone!

While Lady Onion was in her green onion form, her roots were on the upper part of the enlightenment stone. Afterward, as she kept growing, she was able to grow two legs below the enlightenment stone to run around.

If we followed this logic, the enlightenment stone would end up in the same position as her lower abdomen if she turned into a human.



Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue sighed with emotion and said, "Youngsters are surely open about these matters nowadays!"

At this time, a jade white lion appeared next to Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue, silently gazing at the golden coffin.

Fourth Cultivator of True Virtue and Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue could, to a certain extent, share information through the Nine Virtues Phoenix Saber. Therefore, Fourth Cultivator of True Virtue also saw the scene of Song Shuhang and Lady Onion

entangling each other inside the golden coffin, as well as Lady Onion's slightly bulging lower abdomen.

Fourth Cultivator of True Virtue faintly sighed and squatted next to the golden coffin. Then, it casually took out some firewood and placed it beneath the coffin.

At the same time, he picked up a torch with one of its paws and a tank of gasoline with the other.

"Fourth Cultivator of True Virtue, what are you doing?" the golden-haired Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue asked.

Fourth Cultivator of True Virtue was stunned and asked in return, "Eh? Why do I have a torch and a tank of gasoline in my paws?"

Oh, right. The torch and the tank of gasoline aren't that important. What is important is what I'm going to do next.

Burn~ Burn~ Burn, baby! Burn!

Afterward, Fourth Cultivator of True Virtue sprinkled the gasoline on the firewood, using the torch to light it up.

Ah! Burn, holy fire! The man and the woman inside the golden coffin deserve to burn!

"Senior, it's really a misunderstanding! Hear my explanation! The thing inside Lady Onion's belly isn't a baby; it's the enlightenment stone! If you pay close attention to it, you'll surely induce the true nature of the object inside her belly! Moreover, I was arguing with Lady Onion due to the formula of a medicinal bath to strengthen my constitution that Senior Medicine Master sent me earlier!" Song Shuhang called out.

Chapter 533: It's melting~ My body is melting~ (2 in 1)

Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue's golden hair swayed in the air, and she looked at the flames burning beneath the golden coffin, somewhat stunned. "Fourth Cultivator of True Virtue, you really lit a fire beneath the golden coffin... I was just teasing little friend Shuhang earlier!"

Although her cultivation realm had been restricted, she was still a Sixth Stage True Monarch. Even if her eyes couldn't see through objects, she needed but a glance to discern that there was no life aura coming from Lady Onion's bulging lower abdomen!

The jade white lion Fourth Cultivator of True Virtue stiffened. After a short moment, it turned its head around and forced a smile, saying, "Is that so, Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue? Anyway, I was also just joking, wasn't that obvious?"

Only an idiot would believe it! No matter how one looked at your serious expression while you were lighting the fire, it didn't seem that you were joking!

Right at this time, a 'ding, ding' sound was transmitted from Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue's pocket.

She grabbed her phone and unlocked it, discovering that someone had logged in inside her chat account from another phone.

"Eh? Who is using Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue's account?" Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue wondered... she usually used Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue's account to read the recent news and gossip posted in the Nine Provinces Number One Group.

From the looks of it, Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue's main body got online?

Did he finally have the free time to go online?

Thereupon, Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue fiddled with the phone in her hands for a while and logged in with a different account. The name of the account was 'Phoenix Saber Jasmine', and it was a well-hidden account in the Nine Provinces Number One Group that had almost never made its appearance.

Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue rarely used this account since she hadn't added any friends. Therefore, it wasn't as entertaining as Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue's account.

Just as Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue logged in to the 'Phoenix Saber Jasmine' account and got into the Nine Provinces Number One Group, she discovered that someone had posted a picture in the group.

The one that sent the picture was Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue.

The picture depicted a dark chamber tomb with a dazzling golden coffin in the center.

The scene was rather familiar, wasn't it?

A young man with a dumbfounded look on his face was lying inside the coffin, and above him was a cute girl with two lovable green ponytails. The duo was captured during a rather ambiguous scene.

Actually, the real focus of the picture was the lower abdomen of the cute girl with two ponytails...

No matter how one looked at it, that faintly bulging lower abdomen was rather eye-catching!

"What's happening? Who sent the picture in the group?" Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue called out.

She surely didn't send it since she was forced out of the account and had to log in with a different one!

"I didn't do anything. I don't even have a phone with me." The jade white lion Fourth Cultivator of True Virtue waved its paws in the air as a sign of its innocence.

"Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue wouldn't do something so stupid, either. He is a very serious person," Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue added.

Such being the case, who was the culprit?

It shouldn't be Fifth Cultivator of True Virtue, either... After he successfully transcended the tribulation and lost the Nine Virtues Phoenix Saber, the connection between him and the Fourth, Sixth Cultivator, and Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue had become very feeble.

Therefore, whose doing was it...?



For Song Shuhang, who was still inside the golden coffin, it didn't really matter who sent the picture!

As soon as Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue's account sent the picture in the Nine Provinces Number One Group, a lot of seniors that were lurking around immediately showed their faces.

Northern River's Loose Cultivator: "Holy 🙏!"

Treasure Forging Heavenly Mansion's Yang Xian: "Wait a moment, isn't that young man our little friend Shuhang?"

Island Master Tian Tiankong: "You're not mistaken! That's indeed Fellow Daoist Seven Dao Names!"

Vice-Island Master Tian Tianwei: "Who is that little girl lying on him?"

None of the seniors of the Nine Provinces Number One Group had seen Lady Onion's human form.

But there was one of them that was able to guess the identity of the girl correctly after seeing her green ponytails.

This senior was Young Master Phoenix Slayer. While he was madly beating up the stallion spirit back then, he obtained an important piece of information from him. Apparently, there was a female monster called Lady Onion that was currently staying together with Song Shuhang, and she must have been a very pretty monster if the stallion spirit traveled for thousands of miles just to get his hands on her.

Thereupon, Young Master Phoenix Slayer quickly wrote: "Is it possible that she is the onion spirit that little friend Shuhang has been raising?"

"Is she his monster pet? I didn't expect little friend Shuhang to be that kind of person. He even impregnated his monster pet." Fairy Lychee wrote. "But why did the onion spirit get pregnant so quickly?"

"It should be because it's an onion spirit. Its growth cycle should be very fast. Anyway, little friend Shuhang performed brilliantly. The child born from the relationship between a human and a monster onion is bound to be rather interesting, don't you think? Will it be a human with green onion shoots as hair?" The ID 'Hospitalized Copper Trigram' wrote at this time.

"Or perhaps it will be a green onion with hands and feet?" the ID 'Hospitalized Iron Trigram' added.

At this time, Thrice Reckless Mad Saber said excitedly, "Fellow Daoists, should we start discussing which name we should give to little friend Shuhang's child after it's born?"

The Nine Provinces Number One Group immediately became very lively.

The one that had started all of this, Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue's account, had quietly disappeared without leaving any traces.



The corner of Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue's eyes twitched. It seemed she was having a lot of fun.

Inside the golden coffin, little friend Shuhang didn't react, didn't make a sound, and didn't punch the coffin, either.

Even while the fellow daoists in the Nine Provinces Number One Group were happily discussing the name of this future children, Song Shuhang didn't react.

Had he undergone a mental breakdown?

Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue cautiously pushed to one side the lid of the golden coffin... The coffin had become somewhat hot now that fire was burning beneath. However, such a temperature wasn't really a problem for Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue.

After the golden coffin was uncovered a bit, she saw that Song Shuhang was madly pressing on the phone.

"It's over, it's over... my life is over..." Song Shuhang muttered to himself. The screen of his phone was black—it was out of power.

At such a critical moment, the phone had switched off because it ran out of battery.

Such being the case, it should be time for the 'battery charging technique' to enter into action... but no matter how simple it was, it was still a magical technique.

Since it was a magical technique, he needed his mental energy to control the technique while using it.

The Sea of Qi Dantian inside his body wasn't the only thing on the verge of exploding. His mental energy had also increased until it was a little too much to handle, and the place between his eyebrows was hurting for this reason.

Given the condition he was in, he was unable to charge his phone.

This was the real reason Song Shuhang wasn't replying even

though the seniors in the group were happily talking about his future children.

Right before his phone switched off, he saw the picture 'Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue' sent in the Nine Provinces Number One Group, as well as the excited comments sent by the seniors after seeing the picture...

Thereupon, Song Shuhang quickly activated the voice message feature of the instant messaging app, preparing to send a voice message in the chat to explain to the seniors what was going and clear up the misunderstanding.

But just as he activated the voice message feature and prepared to speak, the phone emitted a 'ding' sound and switched off while playing a pleasant background music.

Song Shuhang roared inwardly.

He could well imagine how wild the imagination of the seniors of the Nine Provinces Number One Group would run during the period he was offline and couldn't reply!

Perhaps it wouldn't be long before he was labeled with the following nicknames: Song 'green onion f*cker' Shuhang, Song 'doesn't let off even monster pets' Shuhang, Song 'father of a half-monster' Shuhang, and so on.

"It's over, it's over..." Song Shuhang repeated over and over again.

In the tail section of the golden coffin, Lady Onion was absent-mindedly curling up into a ball. She was using her small hand to feel her abdomen, not daring to believe what was happening. Her world had lost its colors, becoming completely gray. It was unknown what she was thinking at this time.

* * *

Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue thought of covering the golden coffin again, but right at this time, Song Shuhang raised his head

and looked her in the eyes.

It was a very aggrieved look!

"I didn't send the picture," Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue immediately said.

"..." Song Shuhang.

Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue immediately shifted the topic of conversation. "Anyway, little friend Shuhang, how about I use the battery charging technique for you? It's free of charge."

After saying this much, she stretched out her finger and gently poked Song Shuhang's phone.

"Crack~"

An electric spark flashed, and the phone automatically turned on since Song Shuhang had been holding the power button all along.

Song Shuhang's attention was successfully diverted towards the phone.

Now that the phone was working, he could explain to the seniors of the group the truth and clear up the misunderstanding!

Song Shuhang looked at Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue and asked, "Right, Senior Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue. Is it just my misconception or... it's getting rather hot?"

Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue bent her head over and looked at the blazing flames burning beneath the golden coffin.

Immediately after, the golden-haired Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue turned around and ruthlessly kicked away Fourth Cultivator of True Virtue...

"Aaaaah!" Fourth Cultivator of True Virtue called out pitifully. The kick sent it flying and mounted it on the nearby wall.

"You don't need to worry. It was just the masterpiece of that idiotic Fourth Cultivator of True Virtue. I'll immediately restore

the temperature to what it was before," Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue said and secretly stretched out her hand, putting out the 'holy fire' that Fourth Cultivator of True Virtue had lit beneath the golden coffin.

"Ding, ding, ding~" The startup sound of the phone echoed.

Song Shuhang's mobile phone had restarted.

Song Shuhang swiftly moved his fingers and opened the Nine Provinces Number One Group. At this time, his actions were so quick that he had reached supersonic speed.

Right at this time... the seniors of the Nine Provinces Number One Group were discussing how they should name Song Shuhang's grandsons.

Fck, I have been offline for just a few minutes, and the conversation has already reached this point?*

Then, just as Song Shuhang scrolled through the chat logs, he discovered that Fairy Lychee had sent some pictures in the group by using the 'drawing board feature'. The pictures portrayed a long-haired person with a green onion head and a green onion with feet and hands... It was how she imagined Song Shuhang's son or daughter.

No, I cannot allow the imagination of the seniors to keep running wild any further! I must clear the misunderstanding!

Song Shuhang clicked on the chatting window and looked for the voice message feature.

But right at this time, Medicine Master suddenly sent him a private message. "Ahahaha~ Little friend Shuhang, I didn't know that there was this kind of relationship between you and that onion spirit! Anyway, let's forget about that green onion shoot. You can just help me with something the next time we meet as a compensation for the formula of the medicinal bath. Anyway, it's worthy of being an onion spirit; even its pregnancy cycle is so fast.

Congratulations, little friend Shuhang!"

As soon as he finished reading the message, Song Shuhang fell into depression and his head tilted to one side.

At this time, he felt that things would only get worse if he were to make his appearance and try to clear the misunderstanding.

It's over, my life is over...

"Little friend Shuhang?" Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue stretched out her hand and poked him.

Song Shuhang mumbled, "It's over, it's over, it's over..."

Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue felt that leaving Song Shuhang alone for the time being so that he could calm down was the best choice. Thereupon, she cautiously covered the golden coffin once again.

But right at this time, she got a glimpse of the conversation Song Shuhang was having with Medicine Master. They were talking about the formula of a medicinal bath that could allow Song Shuhang to strengthen his constitution.

"Is that one of the last formulas that Medicine Master came up with? It seems a rather economical and practical formula. Unfortunately, it's only suitable for low-level cultivators..."

Eh? Isn't that a pretty good topic to divert his attention?

Thereupon, Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue said, "Little friend Shuhang, do you want the raw materials needed for the formula of the medicinal bath?"

Song Shuhang raised his head and nodded, saying, "Yes."

Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue made some calculations and said, "I have all the raw materials needed for the formula of the medicinal bath stored in this place. I can sell them to you at the purchase price. According to my calculations, you need seven spirit stones of the Third Stage to buy enough raw materials to bathe in

the medicinal liquid once. Are you interested?"

"Sure." Song Shuhang stretched out his hand and took out a spirit stone of the Fourth Stage from his pocket.

Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue received the spirit stone of the Fourth Stage and returned Song Shuhang three spirit stones of the Third Stage.

After taking the three spirit stones of the Third Stage, Song Shuhang opened his size-reducing purse and casually threw them inside.

Then, he kept looking at his phone in a daze.



Three minutes later, Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue returned and moved the lid of the golden coffin to one side.

Afterward, she threw a big basin full of raw materials into the golden coffin... from the looks of it, she wanted to directly use the coffin as a bathtub, allowing Song Shuhang to bathe in there?

After throwing all the raw materials into the coffin, Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue said to Song Shuhang, "Fellow Daoist Tyrannical Saber Song One, you should temporarily leave the superfluous things on your body to me."

Song Shuhang was still in deep thoughts and his body automatically moved, passing his size-reducing purse, mobile phone, and so on to Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue.

After taking the items, Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue shot a glance at Lady Onion who was curled up in one corner of the golden coffin.

At first, she thought of grabbing the monster onion to carry her out of the coffin. But after pondering for a moment, she changed her mind. After all, it was up to her master, Song Shuhang, whether or not he wanted to move her out. There was no need for

her to concern herself with this matter. Perhaps the monster onion would also get lucky and strengthen her constitution a bit.

Moreover, she could take advantage of this opportunity to happily bathe together with her master. Who knew, perhaps she would obtain a favorable impression during this bathing session and make a comeback, becoming the favorite woman of her master?

Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue felt that Lady Onion had a pair of beautiful legs. Therefore, she had a very good impression of her.

After throwing all the raw materials into the coffin, Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue swiftly moved her finger and activated a magical technique.

"Whoosh~" A big ball of water suddenly materialized and fell inside the golden coffin, submerging both Song Shuhang and Lady Onion.

"It's time to take the medicinal bath... it might be somewhat painful at first, but try to endure!" Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue said.

Then, without waiting for Song Shuhang or Lady Onion to reply, she moved the lid of the golden coffin back, sealing it.



At this time, the nearby Fourth Cultivator of True Virtue was already ready to get into action.

Just as Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue sealed the coffin, it threw a small golden flask toward the golden coffin.

Flames shot out of the small flask, igniting once again the firewood and gasoline that Fourth Cultivator of True Virtue had placed there earlier.

Flames endlessly poured out of the small flask, strengthening the power of the fire.

Burn~ Burn~ Burn, baby! Burn! Blazing flames were burning inside Fourth Cultivator of True Virtue's eyes.

"Hmm, it should be enough. According to Medicine Master's formula, Fellow Daoist Tyrannical Saber Song One should be able to thoroughly absorb the strength of the raw materials after soaking in the medicinal water for two hours." Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue nodded satisfied.

* * *

Inside the golden coffin.

As the temperature increased, the medicinal power of the raw materials started to mix with the water.

At this time, Song Shuhang's whole body was submerged in the water. However, the Turtle Breathing Technique Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue applied to his body was still active. Therefore, he didn't need to breathe.

Just as he was looking at the hot bath slowly becoming turbid, Song Shuhang was reminded of the time he prepared the body tempering liquid.

Anyway, Shuhang had started to enjoy the medicinal bath wholeheartedly at this time.

It was better to temporarily forget about the seniors of the Nine Provinces Number One Group discussing the fact that he had seemingly f*cked a green onion. He was an innocent man and had nothing to fear. After the seniors had discussed the matter to their heart's content, he would appear and explain what was going on. The results should be much better that way.

Therefore, he had no reason to be anxious.

After completely relaxing, Song Shuhang finally noticed the effects of the medicinal bath on his body.

As the water was boiling, the power of the raw materials started

to automatically enter his body. Their power directly strengthened Song Shuhang's constitution and bones. He felt that each muscle in his body was getting stronger, and the strength they could produce was continuously increasing.

Moreover, the medicinal bath and Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue's golden coffin were perfectly complementing each other, exponentially increasing the efficacy of the raw materials.

If we were to use numbers to explain the situation, we would have the following setting: if the constitution of a cultivator of the First Stage that had just completed its Foundation Establishment was 100 points and the constitution of a cultivator of the Second Stage was 200 points, the level of Song Shuhang's current constitution was around 230 points.

By lying inside the golden coffin and soaking in the medicinal bath, he could increase the strength of his constitution by 0.1 points every three minutes.

After soaking inside the medicinal bath for two hours, the strength of his constitution would increase by around 4 points. This effect was comparable to him painstakingly practicing on Earth for two or three months if he didn't have any medicine pills at his disposal!

According to the estimations, he wouldn't have to worry about the true qi inside his Sea of Qi Dantian causing him problems once he had increased the strength of his constitution until reaching 240 points.

"This medicinal bath is really incredible! It's all thanks to Senior Medicine Master that I can enjoy it," Song Shuhang muttered to himself.

One would obtain the best results the first time they were soaking in this medicinal bath. After each usage, the strengthening effects of the medicine on the constitution would weaken.

But even if that was the case, Song Shuhang could easily increase the strength of his constitution and reach 250 points by soaking in the medicinal bath six times during the course of these three days.

At the time, his constitution would reach the same strength as that of a cultivator of the Second Stage Fourth Dantian Realm!



Just as Song Shuhang was happily enjoying the strengthening effects of the medicinal bath, Lady Onion, who was shrinking in the tail section of the golden coffin, suddenly screamed in fear, "Aaaaaaah~ What's happening! I'm melting, I'm melting, I'm melting!"

"What?" Song Shuhang raised his head in puzzlement.

Then, he saw a very unscientific scene. Lady Onion... was literally melting.

It started from the legs and spread to the rest of her body... she started to melt just as though she was some kind of slime. But saying that she 'melted like a snow beauty under the sun' was perhaps more fitting in Lady Onion's case.

"I'm dying, I'm dying, I'm dying for real!" Lady Onion's had tears streaming down her face. The fact that she was crazily moving around and struggling only sped up the melting process!

In a very short amount of time, she had already melted until the abdomen... the enlightenment stone was faintly glistening there. If we consider the enlightenment stone as the dividing line, Lady Onion's upper part started to melt and likewise changed into liquid immediately after.

Song Shuhang quickly got up and pounced toward Lady Onion, grabbing the enlightenment stone and trying to move it away from the water of the medicinal bath. "Hey, how come you suddenly melted?"

"I don't know, either! I really don't know! Why did I suddenly

melt... Uwaaah! Am I really going to die?!" Lady Onion's wept copiously, looking extremely aggrieved.

Song Shuhang shot a glance at the boiling medicinal liquid below... was it possible that Lady Onion melting was related to the medicinal bath?

He recalled to mind the scene of him preparing the body tempering liquid the first time... if several raw materials were placed together and heated up, they would give rise to a chemical reaction and melt if they were thrown into a liquid!

Is it possible that the liquid of the medicinal bath also gave rise to a chemical reaction, causing Lady Onion to melt?

Just how big of a coincidence was needed to reach such a result!

Anyway, is Lady Onion really going to die this way?

Just as Song Shuhang was in deep thoughts, most of Lady Onion's body had melted...

Shuhang didn't have much time to think. Therefore, he started to beat against the lid of the coffin and quickly asked, "Is your root still there? Hey, is your green onion root still there?"

It was a very important matter.

Even if Lady Onion's green onion shoot was cut off, she could resurrect as long as her root was still intact, continuing to live on happily.

But if even her green onion root had melted, it was truly over for her.

"It's still there, it's still there. But I feel as if even the green onion root is about to melt!" Lady Onion said anxiously.

Actually, it was just her misconception that the root was also about to melt...

Although it was unknown how she had taken root on the enlightenment stone, something like the boiling liquid of a

medicinal bath had no chances of melting her root thanks to the protection of the stone.

Song Shuhang used all his strength to beat against the lid of the golden coffin.

Soon after, the lid of the golden coffin was moved to one side.

Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue moved a bit closer and asked, "What's up? Is the water too hot? Eeeh?! What's happening!"

Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue also saw the melting Lady Onion.

Just as she pushed to one side the lid of the golden coffin, the remaining part of Lady Onion's body melted and fell into the boiling water of the medicinal bath.

"..." Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue.

Did that monster onion die just like that?

"Senior Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue, help me take a look at the enlightenment stone! Lady Onion's root is still above it!" Song Shuhang said anxiously.

"Her root is still intact? It's fine then. Just pour some water on it, and it should quickly grow back." Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue heaved a sigh of relief.

After taking the enlightenment stone, she said, "Fellow Daoist Tyrannical Saber Song One, keep bathing in the medicinal bath, don't waste it."

Song Shuhang nodded and returned inside the golden coffin.

Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue used the lid and covered the coffin once more.

Then, she stretched out her hand and caressed the enlightenment stone. "I can still sense the aura of life coming from it... I'm not sure if I should consider this monster onion lucky or unlucky..."

After saying this much, she used a healing-type magical

technique that turned into a rain of light that fell upon the enlightenment stone, allowing Lady Onion's life aura to stabilize even further.

Afterward, she got up and left the chamber tomb.

When she returned, she was carrying a flower pot in her hands which she then used to accommodate the enlightenment stone.

"Maybe I should add some fertilizer as well. It should allow her to grow a little faster..." Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue muttered to herself.



Outside the grave of Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue, next to the meteoroid.

Inside Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue's immortal boat.

Li Yinzhu was soundly sleeping. The only problem was that the cold inside her body was getting stronger and stronger. At this pace, it wouldn't take long before her cold disease flared up again.

After she was shot out of the grave, Yu Jiaojiao also returned to the immortal boat.

Her mood was pretty good. Although she was unable to obtain Venerable Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue's inheritance, she still obtained a water-type turtle pearl that could keep her body moist, as well as a precious moonstone. She had benefited quite a lot from this trip.

Soon after, Chu Chu also got out of the grave. After getting into the immortal boat, she couldn't help but shoot a glance at Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue. While signing the contract to become the 'Eighth Cultivator of True Virtue', she obviously came to know the secret behind the various 'Cultivators of True Virtue'.

Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue also looked at her and faintly smiled.

"Now, we only need to wait for Fellow Daoist Tyrannical Saber Song One's return."

"Tyrannical Saber Song One, pfff~" Yu Jiaojiao started to laugh. She was already aware of the origin of this dao name, but no matter how many times she heard it, she would always start laughing when she associated it with Song Shuhang.

"Fellow Daoist Song One might take a little longer to come out. He's taking a bath," the clone of the jade white lion Fourth Cultivator of True Virtue said.

He is taking a bath? But why the hell is he taking a bath while exploring an ancient grave? What's the connection between the two things?

Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue smiled and said, "Is it a medicinal bath? As long as the formula of the medicinal bath doesn't have mistakes in it, it's one of the safest methods to strengthen one's constitution."

Whether it was food or a medicinal bath, the recipe was very important.

Chapter 534: Shallot Song Shuhang

Just as he was bathing inside the medicinal liquid poured into the golden coffin, Song Shuhang felt the strength of the medicine becoming stronger and stronger. At this time, he had started to feel a burning pain all over his body.

However, he felt that there was something wrong with this sudden burning pain he was feeling...

The speed at which my constitution is strengthening has increased quite a lot... Perhaps the true effects of the medicinal bath came into play just now? Song Shuhang thought to himself.

Previously, the strength of Song Shuhang's constitution was increasing by 0.1 points every three minutes. But at this time, it was increasing by 0.2 points every three minutes... In other words, the speed at which his constitution was strengthening had doubled.

As expected, the formula Medicine Master created is truly incredible!

After thinking this much, Song Shuhang submerged his whole body in the medicinal liquid.

Ah~ After recalling that the strength of his constitution was sharply increasing, the burning pain he was feeling all over his body had become somewhat bearable!

...Ahaha, no way, it was still unbearable!

At first, it was just a burning sensation. However, not only did it not decrease in intensity as time passed by, it even got worse!

While soaking in the medicinal liquid, he felt as though thousands of blades were piercing his body and slicing his skin, tearing his whole person apart.

"Painful, painful, painful... ouch, ouch, ouch!" Song Shuhang

rolled in pain within the golden coffin.

The pain had reached extreme levels and was almost comparable to when he experienced Chu Chu's life and suffered that deathly hug back then.

Luckily, the stronger the pain, the higher the speed at which his constitution was strengthening.

Just as Song Shuhang was feeling as though someone was cutting his skin with a blade, the strength of his constitution was increasing by 0.3 points every three minutes.

The boiling medicinal liquid within the golden coffin had unknowingly changed to deep green. Moreover, it had started to shine and was now illuminating the inside of the golden coffin.

Outside the coffin, the intensity of the fire was still as strong as before.

Inside the coffin, the aroma of the medicinal liquid had gotten even stronger... even if he wasn't breathing, a weak scent penetrated inside Song Shuhang's nose.

The aroma that was permeating the whole coffin was enough to make one salivate. It was very similar to the aroma of 'lamb with fried green onions'.

Eh? Wait a moment, the aroma of green onion?!

Is it possible that these changes are related to Lady Onion? Her whole body melted and mixed in the boiling medicinal liquid along with the other raw materials... a several hundred years old onion spirit was suddenly added to Senior Medicine Master's medicinal bath formula.

Did the medicinal bath undergo a mutation as a consequence?

Yeah, it's very likely that this is what happened...

It won't give rise to side effects, right? Song Shuhang was

somewhat worried. However, he didn't detect any other problem aside from the unbearable pain for now.

In the meantime, his constitution was getting stronger and stronger.

Song Shuhang was planning to keep going and see how things went. If something unexpected happened, he would immediately call for Senior Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue who was outside.



Just as Song Shuhang was in deep thoughts, the medicinal liquid inside the golden coffin underwent another change.

The color of the deep-green medicinal liquid slowly started to shift toward a golden green. Moreover, the illusory picture of a green onion shoot appeared within the mist in the coffin. The green onion shoot was swaying from side to side and looked very graceful.

Slowly, the illusory picture of the green onion shoot became clearer, just as though it was changing into a real entity.

After materializing to a certain degree, the green onion shoot slowly floated toward Song Shuhang, stopping at an arm's length from him.

Song Shuhang noticed the illusory green onion shoot thanks to the light the medicinal liquid was emitting.

Now, it's pretty much confirmed that the changes happening in the medicinal liquid are related to Lady Onion... Song Shuhang stretched out his hand and tried to touch the illusory green onion shoot.

However, the green onion shoot wasn't truly a real entity, and Song Shuhang's fingers directly passed through it without being able to touch it.

Although he was unable to touch the illusory green onion shoot,

all the pain he was feeling disappeared in the instant the green onion shoot appeared.

The unbearable pain of having one's body cut to pieces had disappeared just like that!

Soon after followed the pleasant feeling of the medicinal liquid washing his body away. On the other hand, the speed at which the strength of his constitution was increasing was as fast as before.

At this time, the strength of his constitution was increasing by 0.1 points every minute.

"Did I finally get past the pain phase?"

Perhaps because he was extremely tired after experiencing and resisting that sharp pain, Song Shuhang unknowingly fell into a half-asleep state as soon as the pain disappeared and the pleasant feeling of the medicinal liquid took its place.

He lay still, without moving in the slightest, allowing the medicinal liquid to wash his body. At the same time, his consciousness slowly started to lose contact with the outside world.



One hour and fifty-five minutes later, it was time for the medicinal bath to come to an end.

Song Shuhang, who was still in a half-asleep state, finally regained his senses.

At this time, the color of the medicinal liquid inside the golden coffin had become dark green. The reason for this was that Song Shuhang's body had already absorbed the strength of the raw materials inside.

If one were to use numbers to quantify the changes, the strength of Song Shuhang's constitution had increased by 13 points during these two hours.

Originally, the strength of his constitution was around 230 points, 232 to be precise. After adding the 13 points he gained just now, it finally reached 245 points.

Now that his constitution had been strengthened enough, the true qi inside his Sea of Qi Dantian was calm once more.

Although Song Shuhang was still a cultivator of the Second Stage Second Dantian 'Dragon Tail Dantian' Realm, he was already comparable to a cultivator of the Second Stage Fourth Dantian 'Dragon Body Dantian' Realm if one took in consideration only the amount of true qi! Of course, the reasons for this were Venerable White's 'Qi Storage Expanding Technique' and all those small incidents that made his true qi increase suddenly.

The pain between his eyebrows caused by the excessive amount of mental energy had likewise almost disappeared.

"My constitution strengthened a lot all of a sudden... such being the case, I might be able to break through to the Third Dantian, the Dragon Claw Dantian, after nourishing the true qi inside my Sea of Qi Dantian a few more times."

Now that his constitution wasn't holding him back anymore, it was better to open a new dantian so as to avoid the true qi suddenly bursting his currently opened dantians.

The higher the number of opened dantians, the higher the quantity of true qi the body could accommodate.

This time, I should really thank Lady Onion, right? However, she might not want my gratitude. After all, her whole body melted inside the medicinal liquid...

"It's almost time to get out of the medicinal liquid." Song Shuhang slowly sat up and borrowed the radiance the medicinal bath was emitting to shoot a glance at the illusory green onion shoot in the mist.

The illusory picture of the green onion shoot hasn't disappeared

yet?

Is it possible that I have yet to completely absorb the medicinal power Lady Onion's body left behind?

At this time, the ghost spirit in Song Shuhang's Heart Aperture transmitted to him a thought.

Song Shuhang was somewhat dumbfounded. Soon after, he replied, "Fine."

In the next moment, a mini Song Shuhang drilled out of the Heart Aperture, heading toward the illusory picture of the green onion shoot. Afterward, it opened its mouth and gobbled up the illusory green onion shoot.

After eating it, the ghost spirit returned to Song Shuhang's body, perfectly satisfied.

Song Shuhang touched his body all over. However, it didn't seem that eating the illusory green onion shoot had caused any harm to his body.

"Screeeeech~"

Right at this time, Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue pushed to one side the lid of the golden coffin.

Her golden eyes looked at Song Shuhang who was inside the golden coffin. "Bath time is over. You can come out, Fellow Daoist Song One!"

"Eh? This medicinal liquid smells really good! It reminds me of those shallot pancakes that I haven't had in a long time," Fourth Cultivator of True Virtue suddenly said.

Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue held her fair chin and said earnestly, "Which one sounds better, Shallot Song One or Shallot Song Shuhang?"

Chapter 535: I'm going to grab that guy

"..." Song Shuhang.

In the next moment, Song Shuhang propped his body up while inside the golden coffin and lightly jumped.

"Bang!"

His head immediately bumped against the ceiling of the chamber tomb, leaving behind a small hole. Luckily, the ceiling of the ancient grave was quickly restored to its original state thanks to the various formations inside the grave.

"The strength of my constitution sharply increased all of a sudden. As a consequence, I can't control the strength of my muscles properly," Song Shuhang said as he rubbed his head.

However, it wasn't really a big deal. Since the day he had started cultivating up until now, he had experienced several sudden power-ups, and he could easily adapt to them as long as he was given enough time.

Song Shuhang safely landed on the ground.

Then, Fourth Cultivator of True Virtue gently stretched its paw toward Song Shuhang and poked him. Immediately after, a clothing-cleansing magical technique fell onto Song Shuhang's body, drying his wet clothes.

"Thank you, Senior Fourth Cultivator of True Virtue," Song Shuhang said gratefully.

"You're welcome. Now that your clothes are dry, the smell of green onion emanating from your body is even stronger. What a good scent," the jade white lion Fourth Cultivator of True Virtue said while licking its lips.

Fck... Fourth Cultivator of True Virtue isn't planning to eat me, right?* Song Shuhang got a scare.

"Fellow Daoist Song One, here is your mobile phone and size-reducing purse, as well your onion spirit." Miss Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue returned Song Shuhang all his items. At first, she was thinking of performing a divination for Lady Onion to see if there was any fate between her and the position of 'Eighth Cultivator of True Virtue'. However, Lady Onion's whole body had melted, and there wasn't any face, hand, or foot left to get info to perform the divination. She could only wait and see if there was an opportunity the next time.

Song Shuhang asked, "Is Lady Onion alright?"

Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue passed the flower pot with Lady Onion inside to Song Shuhang and said, "She should be fine. Her green onion root is still intact. Therefore, it's only a matter of time before her body reverts to its original state. However, there might be a small problem."

Song Shuhang asked, "What kind of problem?"

Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue replied, "If you try to sense it carefully... you'll notice that there is no monster qi on the root of the onion spirit anymore."

Song Shuhang could reluctantly operate his mental energy at this time. After he used it to sense Lady Onion's condition, he indeed noticed that there wasn't any monster qi left on the root on the enlightenment stone. He remembered that Lady Onion's monster qi was very powerful. After all, she was a monster that had lived for several hundred years.

Although she had no idea how to use her monster qi, she could at least use it to intimidate her opponents. The first time they met, she almost scared Song Shuhang to death by using her monster qi.

At this time, there wasn't even the tiniest bit of monster qi left on her body. It wasn't that it had disappeared just on the surface... on the contrary, all the monster qi inside Lady Onion's body had been eliminated.

"Can she still be considered a monster?" Song Shuhang asked. Had she suddenly turned into a monster with no monster qi?

Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue pondered for a moment and replied, "She should still be a monster. After all, monster qi is just a type of energy that monsters can use. A car without gasoline is still a car, after all."

"That's also true," Song Shuhang said.

"Hmm... the only problematic thing is that the car might not use gasoline in the future anymore... and use cooking oil instead," Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue added immediately after.

"..." Song Shuhang.

What does she mean by 'and use cooking oil instead'? Is it possible that Lady Onion won't use monster qi from now, and use another type of energy instead?

Sometimes, the wheel of destiny would turn and bring one to unexpected places. The fact that Lady Onion wouldn't use gasoline to fight anymore and use cooking oil instead was something completely unexpected!

It should be still okay. Although Lady Onion can't use her monster qi anymore, she still has that impressive buddhist cultivation technique she used the first time she met me...

If possible, I should get my hands on another cultivation technique that is more suitable for Lady Onion and give it to her.

"Since bath time is over, follow me. Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue and the others have been waiting for you for a very long time." The jade white lion Fourth Cultivator of True Virtue gently jumped and took the lead, showing the way to Song Shuhang.

Song Shuhang nodded and said, "Alright."

Before leaving, he recalled another matter and asked, "Senior Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue, can you sell me a few sets of the

raw materials needed for the medicinal bath?"

"Sure. Most of them are low-level raw materials. I have many of them in stock. Each medicinal bath will cost you seven spirit stones of the Third Stage," Miss Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue said.

Song Shuhang replied, "In that case, can you give me ten sets of medicinal materials?"

At this time, Song Shuhang had with him nine spirit stones of the Fourth Stage and three spirit stones of the Third Stage. However, one of the spirit stones of the Fourth Stage was already half-used.

Therefore, he decided to leave behind a spirit stone of the Fourth Stage in case there was an emergency and use the remaining seven to get ten sets of raw materials.

As for the spirit stones he owed Venerable White... he would keep owing them! But there was bound to be a day where he would return them!

If possible, Song Shuhang wanted to buy as many sets of raw materials as possible. If he were to miss this chance to buy them, he would hardly get another opportunity to buy them at a good price.



After getting the ten sets of raw materials for the medicinal bath, Song Shuhang followed the jade white lion Fourth Cultivator of True Virtue and left the 'grave of Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue', returning to the immortal boat.

Soon after, the immortal boat carried the group of people and headed toward the moon.

After they left, the 'grave of Venerable Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue' concealed itself and disappeared without leaving any traces. It was a special type of ancient grave that could move around. Unless Miss Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue wanted to, one could chance upon the grave only by luck.

"Little friend Shuhang also signed the contract?" Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue asked with a smile while sitting next to the window of the immortal boat, looking at the starry sky outside.

"Yes." Song Shuhang nodded and said, "However, Senior Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue said that the results of the divination were quite strange in my case. There shouldn't be much fate between me and the 'Nine Virtues Phoenix Saber. My name is probably there only to make up the numbers."

Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue faintly smiled and said, "Hehe, fate can't be quantified. You either have it or not."



The immortal boat flew in space for around ten minutes before slowing down.

Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue suddenly said, "Little friend Shuhang, it's time for us to say goodbye. Wait for me to uncover the secrets of the gourd, I'll contact you again later."

"It's time to say goodbye? Senior Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue, are you going somewhere?" Song Shuhang asked out of curiosity.

"Yes, I'm returning to my immortal cave. The ones that are leaving are you and the others, little friend Shuhang. The other day, Fellow Daoist White especially got online and chatted with me for a while. He said that I was supposed to throw you into space and let you float there after you were done exploring the grave of Venerable Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue." Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue straightened up his finger and said, "Fellow Daoist White said that this trip to space is a type of training for little friend Shuhang."

"..." Song Shuhang.

"In that case, you should get ready to leave, little friend Shuhang."

I've already prepared everything you needed. For example, your space capsule and spacesuit," Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue said with a smile.

"..." Song Shuhang.

"Shuhang, good luck." Yu Jiaojiao smiled and patted Song Shuhang, saying, "I won't be able to accompany you any further on this trip. I have to return to Earth first."

"Eeeeh? Jiaojiao, you are abandoning us just like that?" Song Shuhang called out.

Yu Jiaojiao said, "Hehe, I already have the moonstone. Therefore, I don't really need to stay on the moon to practice. Moreover, I told you about that guy writing interesting novels the last time—do you remember?"

"Oh, if you hadn't mentioned it, I would have forgotten about it." Song Shuhang was finally clear as to what was going on.

Earlier, he had promised Senior White that they would shoot a movie together.

Song Shuhang was thinking of shooting a short movie with everything done on a small scale, enough for his self-enjoyment~

Then, he would have Papa Song show it during the celebration for the New Year when all close relatives and friends were gathered together. With that, everyone would be able to happily enjoy it.

"Yesterday, I determined that the author got online from home. Therefore, I want to make a trip to Earth to catch him and put him into a small black room," Yu Jiaojiao said with a smile.

Chapter 536: Several unexpected guests

Therefore, Yu Jiaojiao abandoned Song Shuhang and the others and returned to Earth all alone with the intention of catching that cute little author.

Afterward, Song Shuhang, Chu Chu, and Li Yinzhu were catapulted out of the immortal boat and thrown into the vast and boundless space... Yes, they were literally catapulted out!

A little while ago, Chu Chu and Li Yinzhu entered the small space capsule. As for Song Shuhang, he wore the cumbersome spacesuit and chained himself to the space capsule, ready to get out of the immortal boat.

But right at that time, Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue kindly asked, "Are you guys ready to set out?"

Song Shuhang replied, "Yes, we are ready."

Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue continued, "Do you guys want some help?"

Song Shuhang replied, "Some help? Senior Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue wants to send us off? Sure!"

Afterward... Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue squeezed them into what resembled a 'gun barrel' and fired them out of the immortal boat with a large boom, literally catapulting them out.

It was truly an explosive help!

"Senior~ Seventh~ Cultivator~ of~ True~ Virtue~ why you do this?!" Song Shuhang called out in panic. Was it that difficult to send him out of the immortal boat with normal means? The immortal boat obviously had a door!

"Have a nice trip!" One could still see Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue's silhouette standing in front the window

of the immortal boat waving at them, seemingly reluctant to part ways with them.



Just like that, Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue had catapulted Song Shuhang and the others out of the immortal boat, sending them toward an unknown destination.

At this time, they weren't on Earth but in the vast and boundless space. Song Shuhang didn't have one of those 'universal navigation systems' created with Black Technology. Therefore, he had no idea where he was at this time.

While floating in the vast space, Song Shuhang said softly, "Is this Senior White's training...?"

At first, he thought that Venerable White had sent him into space as a punishment for not placing amongst the first ten in the hand-guided tractor competition. But now, it seemed that Senior White had arranged something in space so that he could practice?



At this time, inside Song Shuhang's size-reducing purse.

Since he was violently catapulted out of the immortal boat, the three spirit stones of the Third Stage that Song Shuhang had received after his transaction with Miss Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue came in contact with the exquisite human puppet.

Just as before, in the instant the three spirit stones of the Third Stage came in contact with the human puppet, they were absorbed within its body without leaving traces behind.

Song Shuhang was going to discover something horrifying the next time he would open his size-reducing purse... his spirit stones were gone!



Wenzhou City, Baijing Street, Song Shuhang's house.

Today, a new person moved into Song Shuhang's neighborhood.

After the original owner of the house, Aunt He and her family, received a large and unrefusable sum of money, they moved out and transferred the ownership of the house and furniture to the new owner.

Joseph 'Guy' Maupassant checked out his new home, perfectly satisfied. It was a 200-square-meters apartment, and the previous owner, Aunt He, was obsessed with cleanliness. Therefore, the place was very clean.

"It's truly a good place!" Joseph sighed with emotion.

Right beside him, his daughter, Ji Shuangxue, had a depressed expression on her face. When she heard that her father suddenly wanted to buy a house in China, she thought that he would buy one in Jiangnan's area since she studied at Jiangnan University...

But little did she expect that her father would buy a house so far away from Jiangnan's area... the house was located in Wenzhou City.

Has my father gone mad?

Joseph's wife had likewise no idea what her husband's plans were.

"Since we are here, we better prepare a small gift and go to meet our new neighbors." Joseph was beaming with joy.

"New neighbors?" Ji Shuangxue asked in puzzlement. "Which new neighbors?"

"My teacher's family," Joseph said with a smile.

"Teacher?" Ji Shuangxue immediately had a bad premonition. "...Is it the family of fellow student Song Shuhang?"

"Ahahaha!" Joseph laughed out loud, seemingly very satisfied.

Even someone as gentle as Ji Shuangxue was about to lose her temper at this time.

"It's an opportunity that I obtained with great difficulty!" Joseph said complacently. He vaguely remembered that he had once mentioned to his teacher, Song Shuhang, that he would move closer to his place, and his teacher had accepted his request.

...But there was a small problem. No matter how much he tried to recall it, he just couldn't remember when and where he had mentioned to his teacher that he would move next to him...

Although the memories of the visitors were completely wiped out before they left the mysterious island, there were some deep impressions that would stay behind in their consciousness even after the memories were wiped out.

It was precisely what had happened in Joseph's case.

Anyway, regardless of where and when he had brought up this matter with his teacher, he was already Song Shuhang's neighbor at this time. From now on, he could ask his teacher to guide him in the learning process of the peerless martial technique whenever he wanted.

Then, the delighted Joseph, the confused wife, and the depressed Ji Shuangxue arrived in front of Song Shuhang's house to pay a visit.



Just as Joseph and his family arrived there to visit Song Shuhang's house, there was already another guest inside—Daoist Priest Cloudy Mist.

Daoist Priest Cloudy Mist had visited Song Shuhang's house quite a lot recently, and he had become a close friend of Mama Song and Papa Song.

As you might remember, Papa Song was preparing to open a 'fitness equipment manufacturing company' with two of his friends in the near future.

At first, he was thinking of waiting for Song Shuhang to graduate

so as to avoid influencing his studies. Then, he would resign from his job at the State GRID Corporation of China without worries and open the company together with his companions since he didn't have too much experience in the matter.

However, their plan couldn't keep up with the changes that were happening.

This year, they chanced upon a very good opportunity. There was a fitness equipment manufacturing company here in Wenzhou City, and since the owner urgently needed money to treat his illness, he decided to sell the whole plant, as well as the equipment inside. If they could get their hands on the plant, Papa Song and his two friends would save a lot of time.

In the living room, Daoist Priest Cloudy Mist and Papa Song were discussing the matter about the fitness equipment. Although Daoist Priest Cloudy Mist had heard about this modern fitness equipment just recently, he was still a Fifth Stage Golden Core cultivator! The ideas and concepts that Daoist Priest Cloudy Mist put forward while discussing the subject really enlightened Papa Song. Therefore, Papa Song's favorable impression of Daoist Priest Cloudy Mist increased even further.

Daoist Priest Cloudy Mist took a sip of the Spirit Green Tea and faintly sighed, taking out his mobile phone.

Daoist Priest Cloudy Mist had already abandoned the instant messaging program he was using while imprisoned by True Monarch Yellow Mountain. Now, he was using another instant messaging app for mobile phones with even more features.

It was Papa Song that told him about this app. According to what he said, more than 60% of the people in China were using this instant messaging app.

Daoist Priest Cloudy Mist unlocked his phone and published a message on his wall.

Title: I have been visiting the house of a little friend quite a lot lately. At first, I was thinking of getting a little bit of an advantage from him, but that little friend doesn't ever seem to be at home. I'm very sad. A few days ago, the little friend finally returned home, but I still managed to miss the opportunity to see him. It's a rather worrisome matter. I hope this little friend quickly returns home. I'm mentally exhausted right now.

Attachments: Daoist Priest Cloudy Mist's two selfies.

However, the number of 'like' was very low, and the number of friends was likewise low. After all, it wasn't the selfie of a cute girl. Therefore, not many people looked at it.

This development made Daoist Priest Cloudy Mist miss that instant messaging program he used back then while suppressed in Yellow Mountain's seal. No matter what kind of news he published back then, hundreds of people would pop out to leave comments and like his posts.

Daoist Priest Cloudy Mist really liked the feeling of so many people supporting him.

"Unfortunately, I can't use that instant messaging program again." Daoist Priest Cloudy Mist sighed with emotion. He had realized that there was something wrong with that program. It was very likely that True Monarch Yellow Mountain had tampered with it and that everything happening was part of his scheme.

Therefore, Daoist Priest Cloudy Mist made up his mind and decided to change the instant messaging program he was using.

However, he was unable to quickly add new friends in this new instant messaging program, and the number of likes and comments was very low. It almost made Daoist Priest Cloudy Mist feel as though he was playing a singleplayer game.



Joseph's family of three arrived in front of Song Shuhang's house

and rang the doorbell.

After hearing the doorbell, Mama Song headed toward the door to see who had come to their house. Just as she opened the door, she saw a foreign man with blonde hair and blue eyes standing at the entrance with a foolish smile on his face.

Next to the man was a Chinese woman with an embarrassed smile on her face.

Behind them was a mixed girl with blonde hair.

Mama Song asked, "Hello, might I know who you are?"

The foreigner man opened his mouth and said, "Hello. Excuse me, is this Teacher Song—"

But just as he was halfway through his speech, the mixed girl in the back quickly said, "Hello, Auntie. Is this fellow student Song Shuhang's house?"

Mama Song blinked her eyes and said, "Ah? Yes."

"We just moved here and heard that fellow student Song Shuhang's house was also in the area. Therefore, we decided to drop for a visit," the mixed girl said very politely.

At the same time, the foreigner stretched out his hand and passed a big gift to Mama Song, saying, "It's just a small gift as a token of appreciation."

The spoken Chinese of the foreigner wasn't half-bad.

Mama Song kept blinking her eyes. Were these people also Song Shuhang's friends?

Soon after, she revealed a radiant smile and welcomed the three guests inside the house. "Please, come in. It's enough that you've come, what need there was to bring a gift! Sigh... Why are people so courteous nowadays."

After getting into the house, Joseph impatiently asked, "What about Teacher Song—"

However, Ji Shuangxue stole the limelight before he could finish his sentence and said, "Auntie, is fellow student Song Shuhang at home?"

Mama Song felt that both the father and the daughter were rather amusing. She replied, "In the past few days, Shuhang went on a trip with someone. He said that he would return after one month. Did you need something from him? I can give him a call and get in contact with him if necessary."

Anyway, would Song Shuhang really receive the call if Mama Song was to call him from Earth?

Moreover, what kind of phone bill would be charged if the call went through?

"It's fine, it's fine. There is no need to call him, Auntie," Ji Shuangxue said with a smile. It was truly a wonderful news that Song Shuhang would return after a month... At that time, their university would have started already.

On the other hand, Joseph's expression was one of disappointment.

However, the disappointed look on Joseph's face didn't last for long... because he remembered about a certain matter!

His teacher, Song Shuhang, once told him that the peerless martial technique he practiced was passed down from generation to generation.

Since the technique was passed down from generation to generation... one amongst his father and mother should be an expert in the usage of the technique!

According to China's tradition of passing down secret Kung Fu's techniques... it was very likely that Teacher Song Shuhang's father was the expert in question.

Such being the case, he could simply ask Papa Song to give him pointers about the peerless martial technique.

After all, he was still Song Shuhang's disciple, wasn't he?

After thinking up to this point, Joseph's passion for 'Chinese Kung Fu' was set ablaze once again.

If not for the fact that there was a stranger in the living room (Daoist Priest Cloudy Mist), perhaps Joseph would have rushed in there and performed one set of the technique in front of Papa Song, asking him to give him a pointer or two.



Just as Joseph's family was visiting Song Shuhang's house...

Not far from Song Shuhang's place, two figures stealthily approached.

"Is that house ahead Stressed by a Mountain of Books' residence?" one of the black-robed figures said in a low voice.

"This information directly comes from Senior Brother Young Master Hai. There is no mistake," the other black-robed figure said. At the same time, an excited expression flashed through his eyes. "If we can take the family members of that Stressed by a Mountain of Books as hostages, we can bargain with him and Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue and have them release the kidnapped Peak Leaders of our Limitless Demon Sect. It would be a great achievement on our part."

"Perhaps we can get the Soul Devouring Demonic Gourd too during the process." The eyes of the Black-Robed Man No. 1 shone.

"At that time, we would surely receive a big reward from the sect. Maybe this is our opportunity to advance to the Fifth Stage Spiritual Emperor and become Peak Leaders!" the Black-Robed Man No. 2 said excitedly.

These two black-robed men were the same two disciples of the Limitless Demon Sect that Song Shuhang met just as he got into space.

Back then, they thought of catching Song Shuhang and handing him over to 'Senior Brother Young Master Hai' to curry favor with him. But they didn't expect to meet that group of cultivators demanding their pay and have all their belongings stolen.

Soon after, the Black-Robed Man No. 1 and the Black-Robed Man No. 2 started to observe Song Shuhang's house, trying to confirm the situation.

That middle-aged married couple was very likely the parents of that Stressed by a Mountain of Books.

On the other hand, the foreign man, his wife, and the mixed daughter were either relatives or guests. They might kidnap them as well while they were at it. They might get some extra spirit stones from it.

Lastly, there was another very common man inside the house. He was probably just another guest.

Daoist Priest Cloudy Mist hadn't used medicinal pills to boost his cultivation. He was a Golden Core Spiritual Emperor that had relied on his strength alone to condense his Golden Core and break through while suppressed by the 'Five Fingers Mountain Sealing Technique'! As a result, his foundation was incredibly solid!

Therefore, the two disciples of the Limitless Demon Sect were completely unable to detect the level of his cultivation while Daoist Priest Cloudy Mist was hiding his strength and ended up treating him as an ordinary guest.

The two disciples of the Limitless Demon Sect slowly approached Song Shuhang's house.



Just as the disciples of the Limitless Demon Sect were slowly approaching Song Shuhang's house, a figure hiding on a nearby tree happily smiled.

The figure quietly took out its phone and sent a message.

I discovered two suspicious figures approaching Fellow Daoist Tyrannical Saber's house. I have confirmed that they are disciples of the Limitless Demon Sect, and their strength is at the Fourth Stage Innate Realm. I request the permission to get into action and catch them. Report over.

The message was sent to a certain... Su Clan's Seven.

Very soon, Su Clan's Seven replied: ***Permission to get into action and catch them granted. Fifth squad, get into action and don't leave behind any traces.***

Su Clan's Seven was very happy.

Since the day Song Shuhang took the 'Blood God Crystal' from Young Master Hai's hands, ruining part of his perfect plan, Seven was sure that the latter would surely take action against Song Shuhang.

Therefore, he assigned a permanent duty to the Wenzhou City branch of the Spirit River Su Clan. The duty consisted in watching over little friend Song Shuhang's house. If they could catch the members of the Limitless Demon Sect plotting against Shuhang, they would receive a reward from Seven.

At first, given Young Master Hai's meticulous nature, Seven thought that he would obtain results only after several years. But little did he expect that he would get good news only one month after the duty was issued.



Jiangning area, inside Gao Moumou's house.

Gao Moumou felt somewhat restless today. He felt a cold feeling all over his body just as he was writing the chapter.

"Did I catch a cold today?" Gao Moumou muttered to himself.

Chapter 537: The descendant of the ancient witches

Inside Song Shuhang's house.

In the living room, Daoist Priest Cloudy Mist, who was currently chatting and drinking tea with Papa Song, slightly raised his head and looked outside.

'Is this the aura of two cultivators of the Fourth Stage? Why are they approaching this place?' Daoist Priest Cloudy Mist thought to himself and frowned.

Is it possible that they came here for the enlightenment stone?

Little friend Song Shuhang should be well aware of how precious the enlightenment stone is. Moreover, there was also that powerful senior together with him to advise him. Therefore, he shouldn't have been stupid enough to tell others about the enlightenment stone, right?

If not for the enlightenment stone, why are those two cultivators of the Fourth Stage Innate Realm secretly approaching this place?

"They had better not come here for the enlightenment stone, otherwise..."

Well, there is no otherwise actually! The enlightenment stone isn't even here!

But right at this time, the situation outside changed once again.

Just as the Black-Robed Man No. 1 and the Black-Robed Man No. 2 were secretly approaching Song Shuhang's house, the former felt everything before his eyes going black and fell to the ground with a thump.

Did someone sneak-attack him?

The Black-Robed Man No. 2 immediately became extremely

cautious. A cultivator of the Fourth Stage Realm wouldn't casually trip and fall unless distracted! Since his companion was surely not distracted, he was sneak-attacked by someone!

Before they came here, Young Master Hai repeatedly reminded them to be very careful while approaching the house of that Stressed by a Mountain of Books.

The reason was that there might be a powerful cultivator hiding in the surroundings.

Therefore, the Black-Robed Man No. 1 and the Black-Robed Man No. 2 had both been extremely careful while coming here.

But they didn't expect that someone would still manage to ambush them. At this time, the Black-Robed Man No. 2 was scared out of his wits. The people hidden in the dark seemed rather familiar with their style, or to be more precise, with the style of the Limitless Demon Sect. They knew about the patterns they used to move, the characteristics of their cultivation techniques, their weaknesses, and even how to perform fatal attacks against them by exploiting their flaws.

It felt as though they were fighting against their 'natural enemy'!

The Black-Robed Man No. 2 was very vigilant as he cautiously approached his companion, trying to see if he could wake him up.

But just as the Black-Robed Man No. 2 was cautiously moving toward his companion, a glittering, thin metallic object suddenly attacked him from a dead angle, hitting the back of his head.

The Black-Robed Man No. 2 immediately lost consciousness—just like his companion.

Soon after, the five members of the Spirit River Su Clan showed themselves.

Amongst them, one was holding a blowpipe. It was the person that had knocked out the Black-Robed Man No. 1.

Afterward, another person stretched out its hands and summoned back the metallic object.

These two cultivators weren't part of the 'Fifth Squad' that Su Clan's Seven had appointed... they were members of the 'hunting squad' specially trained by the Spirit River Su Clan. They specialized in tracking and hunting the enemies of the Spirit River Su Clan.

These two members of the 'hunting squad' knew the basic techniques of the Limitless Demon Sect like the palms of their hands. Therefore, it wasn't exaggerated to say that they were the natural enemies of the ordinary disciples of the Limitless Demon Sect.

However, they hadn't come to this place to carry out Seven's mission. After all, such a small task wasn't even worth their time. The fact that they appeared in this place was a mere coincidence!

After completing a mission yesterday, the members of the 'hunting squad' were heading back to the Spirit River Su Clan. On their way back, they just happened to pass through Wenzhou City. As coincidence would have it, they were friends with the members of the 'Fifth Squad' and decided to stop over to talk about the old times.

Afterward, they decided to give them a hand as they heard that the members of the 'Fifth Squad' had to catch two disciples of the Limitless Demon Sect.

After they got into action, it wasn't any different than professional players bullying newbies.

Those two disciples of the Limitless Demon Sect probably didn't read their horoscope carefully while leaving home... because their luck was simply awful!

They met that group of cultivators demanding their pay while in space and the members of the 'hunting squad' of the Spirit River Su

Clan while on Earth. It was truly a heartbreaking turn of events.



The three members of the Fifth Squad faintly smiled and stepped forward, getting ready to tie up the two disciples of the Limitless Demon Sect.

"The mission is complete. We'll invite you guys for a drink as soon as Brother Seven issues the reward," the three members of the Fifth Squad said with a smile.

But just as they were laughing, the bodies of the tied up disciples of the Limitless Demon Sect turned into blood mist that scattered in all directions.

The eyes of the two members of the 'hunting squad' lit up as they exclaimed, "The Menstruation Evasion Technique!"

The three members of the Fifth Squad simultaneously shouted, "The Blood Evasion Technique!"

The Blood Evasion Technique... was also known as the Menstruation Evasion Technique. The analogy seemed really fitting.

The Blood Evasion Technique was a rather tricky and wondrous technique. Just as the technique was used, the user would turn into a mass of bloody mist and scatter in all directions, fleeing from their original position. Finally, the blood mist would converge in one place, and the user would assume their original shape once more.

Even if part of the blood mist was destroyed, the user would at most receive some wounds that would recover in a few days.

If one was lucky, even part of the valuable items they were carrying with them would be engulfed in the blood mist and carried away!

Once the Blood Evasion Technique was practiced to perfection,

the user would be able to survive and return to its previous state as long as a little wisp of blood mist managed to get away. The received injuries would recover in a few years, and the user would restore their strength without problems. It was precisely for this reason that the Blood Evasion Technique was known as a technique that could allow one to get away even from a Sixth Stage True Monarch.

After hearing this much, the technique seemed rather incredible, right?

Yes, it was indeed incredible, and even the two members of the 'hunting squad' were unable to block it. As soon as the Blood Evasion Technique activated, the Black-Robed Man No. 1 and the Black-Robed Man No. 2 were safe and no longer in danger.

But even if they couldn't block the Blood Evasion Technique, the two members of the 'hunting squad' knew how to deal with it and obtain some advantages from it.

In the next moment, the members of the 'hunting squad' stretched out their hands, quickly catching several wisps of blood mist and sealing them inside a special bottle.

Losing a portion of the blood mist wasn't enough to prevent the two disciples of the Limitless Demon Sect from escaping.

However, after the two black-robed disciples of the Limitless Demon Sect had gotten away and returned to their human form, the blood mist sealed inside the bottle would also assume its original shape.

Part of the wisps of blood mist would turn into the treasures the Black-Robed Man No. 1 and the Black-Robed Man No. 2 were carrying with them.

However, the majority of the blood mist would transform into pure energy in the shape of blood-red crystals. One couldn't directly absorb the energy within the blood-red crystals as they

could do with spirit stones. Nevertheless, it was possible to put them inside puppets and formations, effectively replacing spirit stones.

In addition, there was a chance that the blood mist would turn into silver-colored blood. The silver blood was the condensed form of the mental energy of the user of the Blood Evasion Technique.

A part of the person's memories would be concealed within the silver blood.

The reason the members of the Spirit River Su Clan wanted to capture the two disciples of the Limitless Demon Sect was to interrogate them to get additional information about the Limitless Demon Sect from their mouths.

If the blood mist were to turn into 'silver blood', their mission would be considered as complete.

The blood mist scattered in all directions, quickly disappearing.

But the two members of the 'hunting squad' of the Spirit River Su Clan had managed to catch a large amount of the mass of bloody mist.



In the meantime.

In the Limitless Demon Sect, beneath the Nine-eyed Kama Hall, on the 69th peak, the Mahoraga Peak.

On the edge of the cliff shrouded in mist, Young Master Hai's puppet clone slowly stood up. There were two talismans before him. But right at this time, both talismans suddenly burned to ashes.

"The talismans of the Blood Evasion Technique the two junior brothers had with them suddenly activated," Young Master Hai's puppet said while swaying amidst the wind.

The talismans with the Blood Evasion Technique the two

disciples of the Limitless Demon Sect had with them were something that Young Master Hai had gifted them.

After all, it was very likely that a powerful expert was hiding in the house of that 'Stressed by a Mountain of Books'. Therefore, Young Master Hai couldn't casually send two cultivators of the Fourth Stage there to die.

Demon Monarch Anzhi's soul clone appeared and said, "It means that someone is still secretly protecting Stressed by a Mountain of Books."

"Just as we expected." Young Master Hai said with a nod. The two junior brothers were used as pawns to probe into the situation.

At this time, a purple bamboo drilled out from one side. The purple bamboo was Immortal Farming Sect's Zheng Neng's clone. "I have some news. After the conclusion of the hand-guided tractor competition, Stressed by a Mountain of Books exchanged the Blood God Crystal with another cultivator called 'Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman'."

This matter was hardly a secret. On the contrary, Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman himself had decided to make it public to help Song Shuhang. The meaning was: 'Do you want the Blood God Crystal? Come and look for me!'

"Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman? What is his cultivation level?" Demon Monarch Anzhi asked.

The purple bamboo replied, "He is currently at the peak of the Fourth Stage Realm and should be about to break through to the Fifth Stage Realm."

"He is only at the Fourth Stage Realm? Such being the case, shouldn't we send someone to steal the Blood God Crystal from him? Even if we already have the Blood Sea Jade, getting an extra Blood God Crystal should help us increase the chances of getting a good number of dragon patterns on our Golden Cores," Demon

Monarch Anzhi said.

But right at this time, Young Master Hai's puppet clone gently shook his head and said, "If the 'Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman' you mentioned is that grandmaster specialized in manufacturing talismans, we can't make a move against him."

"Why?" Demon Monarch Anzhi asked out of curiosity.

"Even if I dared to provoke the Spirit River Su Clan, I absolutely don't dare to provoke the influence behind Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman. I like to take on dangerous challenges, but I don't like to take on challenges where I'm bound to die for sure," Young Master Hai's puppet said with a smile.

There weren't many people that knew about the influence behind Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman. But all the people that knew about it were unwilling to have it as an enemy.

Demon Monarch Anzhi said disgruntledly, "In that case, are we supposed to let go of the Blood God Crystal?"

"It's the only option for the time being... since the Blood God Crystal isn't in Stressed by a Mountain of Books' possession anymore, we don't need to pay him as much as attention as before," Young Master Hai said.

As for the grudge with Song Shuhang, they would postpone it until after they had broken through the Fifth Stage and consolidated their realm! This matter wasn't going to end just like that!

"Alright, there seems to be no other alternative for now," Zheng Neng said with a sigh. Soon after, he used the secret sound transmission and said, "Right. Did you manage to obtain information about the plan of the Hall Leader to save the captured eight Peak Leaders?"

According to their own plan, it was better if only half of the Peak Leaders returned to the sect. With that, the three of them would

have the opportunity to replace the missing ones and take over their already built peaks, allowing them to increase their status within the Limitless Demon Sect in a very short amount of time.

Young Master Hai faintly smiled and said via secret sound transmission, "Yes, I have. But it wasn't confidential information or anything."

Demon Monarch Anzhi said via secret sound transmission, "Anyway, I've taken care of the matter on my side as well. My clone managed to find the traces of the descendant of the ancient witches, Elise!"

The name 'Elise' wasn't really a western name but the mere pronunciation of a word; it was a so-called 'phonetic name'.

The witches were ancient practitioners that lived throughout China before cultivators started to appear. Their power system was completely different from that of cultivators, but after training their abilities to the peak, they could likewise overturn the seas and the stars.

But after an unknown amount of time, the heritage of the ancient witches had started to disappear, getting replaced with the heritage cultivators left behind.

Slowly, the ancient witches started to disappear from the world. They didn't die or anything, but it became much more difficult to see them around.

The 'phonetic name' was something exclusive to the ancient witches.

Ancient witches wouldn't easily tell their real names to others. After all, their real name possessed all sorts of mysterious powers. For this reason, they would take a special 'phonetic name' and use it to replace their real name.

From this point of view, their 'phonetic name' was somewhat similar to the 'dao name' of cultivators.

However, ancient witches mostly used their phonetic name to cover up their real name. On the other hand, the dao name of a cultivator was like a second name and was somewhat linked to their destiny.

The name Demon Monarch Anzhi mentioned earlier, Elise, was precisely the phonetic name of a witch. Elise was a descendant of the ancient witches and her strength couldn't be measured up in the same way as cultivators. Nevertheless, her pure fighting capacity was comparable to that of a cultivator of the Sixth Stage. But if she made full use of her familiar, voodoo, witchcraft, and so on, her strength would far surpass that of a Sixth Stage True Monarch.

Young Master Hai and the others were looking for the witch Elise because they wanted to make use of her strength to complete their plan.

The ancient witch Elise was a close friend of Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue. Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue had repeatedly saved her life, and Elise was looking for an opportunity to repay the favor.

As a consequence, Young Master Hai and the others decided to borrow the strength of the witch to have some of the Peak Leaders of the Limitless Demon Sect stay behind in Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue's mine. It was a pretty good choice.

Their plan consisted in bringing over the ancient witch while the Hall Leader of the Nine-eyed Kama Hall was rescuing the eight Peak Leaders, giving him time to save only three or four of them. As for the remaining Peak Leaders, they could happily keep mining in Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue's mine.

The only problem was that ancient witches weren't that easy to use.

Perhaps due to the special method they used to practice, all ancient witches were very moody, and their train of thought

wasn't on the same page as normal people.

For someone like Young Master Hai that liked to have everything under his control and leave nothing to fate, it was rather annoying to rely on such a person.

No one knew what this type of person would do in the next instant... because even the person in question didn't know what they would do next!

Young Master Hai sighed and said, "Hopefully, everything will go according to the plan."

At the same time, his puppet clone performed a hand seal.

In the distant Wenzhou City, by Baijing Street where Song Shuhang's house was located. The tree leaves next to the place where the bodies of the two disciples of the Limitless Demon Sect were lying before had wisps of blood mist on them that not even the members of the Spirit River Su Clan noticed.

After Young Master Hai performed the hand seal, the small wisps of blood mist transformed into a button-sized metallic spider.

At this time, the members of the Spirit River Su Clan had already left the scene.

The metallic spider quickly crawled toward Song Shuhang's house. It was something that Young Master Hai had secretly concealed within the Blood Evasion Technique. According to his plan, the metallic spider would quietly sneak into Song Shuhang's house and stay there for the time being.

The metallic spider was part of Young Master Hai's reserve plan. If the plan to bring over the ancient witch failed, he could activate the spider and put into practice his reserve plan, using the relationship between Song Shuhang and Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue to reach his own goal.

Chapter 538: I added a gentle-looking girl yesterday, her name is Yu Jiaojiao

However, it was better not to make use of this plan if possible.

After all, Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue was very troublesome to deal with.

Actually, each and every Venerable was very troublesome to deal with! Only death waited for those that were not careful enough.

The small metallic spider quietly crawled into Song Shuhang's house. Everything proceeded without a hitch, and the spider wasn't stopped by any defensive barrier or discovered.

Young Master Hai secretly heaved a sigh in relief. Soon after, he mobilized the small spider and had it climb the wall until reaching a lamp hanging from the ceiling, commanding it to hide inside.

Afterward, Young Master Hai transmitted another order to the small metallic spider and told it to lie low and temporarily cut off all connections with the external world so as to avoid the expert staying at Stressed by a Mountain of Books' place discovering it.

Now, he had taken care of his second plan as well.

It was a pity that there wasn't enough time. Otherwise, someone with Young Master Hai's disposition would have prepared a third or a fourth plan just to be safe.

As Young Master Hai cut off the connection between him and the small metallic spider, Daoist Priest Cloudy Mist, who had his head lowered and had been drinking tea all along, faintly raised his head and glanced at the lamp where the small metallic spider was hiding. Daoist Priest Cloudy Mist just gave it a casual look and didn't gaze at it a second time.

Afterward, he kept drinking his tea and chatting with Papa Song.

The nearby Joseph also quickly blended in and joined the conversation.

While they were discussing, Daoist Priest Cloudy Mist used his mental energy to pay close attention to the small metallic spider. Is that thing something similar to a hidden camera? What is the guy that placed the metallic spider there planning to do...?

After pondering for a short moment, Daoist Priest Cloudy Mist decided not to destroy the spider for the time being so as to avoid alerting the enemy. He had to make sure whether or not that guy was after the enlightenment stone...

However, he still had to take some safety measures! After all, he couldn't stay at Song Shuhang's place all day. He had to practice and go out to have fun as well.

Therefore, after chatting with Papa Song and the others for about half an hour, Daoist Priest Cloudy Mist decided to leave.

As he left the room, he gently moved his right hand, and the spiritual energy above changed into thin threads... the Emptying Miracle Hand was about to get into action.

In the blink of an eye, Daoist Priest Cloudy Mist cut off the eight legs of the metallic spider, leaving behind only its legless body.

After completing his duty, he left the house, perfectly satisfied.



As soon as Daoist Priest Cloudy Mist left, Joseph got excited. He was planning to get up and perform the <Times are Calling> in front of Papa Song and ask him for pointers.

Bur right at this time, Joseph wife, and daughter, Ji Shuangxue, came over from the other room.

"Dear, it's already late. We should also get going," Joseph's wife said with a smile.

Ji Shuangxue added, "Father, the people from the moving company have arrived. We have so many things we need to move into the new house."

Thereupon, Joseph could only regretfully leave Papa Song.

But it didn't matter too much. Now that he and Song Shuhang were neighbors, he could come over to his house at any time!

There is bound to be a day when I'll also become a martial arts expert and create explosions with my fist just like my teacher! Joseph thought to himself.

From childhood all the way to adulthood, Joseph had dreamt about becoming an expert in Chinese Kung Fu! Now, he was one step away from realizing his dream!

Oh~ Chinese Kung Fu is truly the best!



In the Jiangnan area, inside Gao Moumou's house.

Gao Moumou felt very uneasy today. Whether he was sitting in front of the desktop computer, sitting on the floor with the laptop, lying on the bed with the tablet, or using other different positions to write, he felt as though there was something wrong.

He had already thought of the plot of the story in his head, but his fingers would stiffen whenever he tried to type something, making him feel uneasy.

"Is my sloth cancer flaring up again?" Gao Moumou muttered to himself.

Each month, there would be a few days when he didn't feel like writing anything and would, therefore, take a break. Luckily, he was someone that always kept a stockpile in case of emergency, and whenever he didn't feel like writing a chapter, he could just publish one of the already written chapters. Otherwise, wouldn't the readers start to doubt his gender if he were to take a break for a

few days each month?

"Since my sloth cancer is acting up again, I might as well take a break," Gao Moumou said.

Therefore, he closed the text file and opened the instant messaging program, logging in to both his personal account and the account reserved for his activities as a writer.

When he logged in to his personal account, he saw that Li Yangde and Tubo had sent casual replies to the messages he sent earlier. It was summer vacation and there was hardly anything new or interesting to talk about. Therefore, he also sent some casual replies to Tubo and the others.

Soon after, he opened the window of the conversation with Song Shuhang.

Since he was bored yesterday, he sent Song Shuhang a very concise message: "Are you online?"

This morning, Song Shuhang finally replied and said, "I'm online!"

Gao Moumou typed a few sentences: "Are you still there? Where did you run to have fun?"

Song Shuhang quickly replied, "You would get a scare if I were to tell you. I'm currently floating in the middle of space, and there are only meteoroids around. I'm very bored." Song Shuhang was very bored at this time. After all, he was just aimlessly drifting about in space.

Gao Moumou smiled and wrote: "Have you become an astronaut and decided to take a walk in space amongst the meteoroids? Ahaha, tell me the truth. What are you doing now, are you on a date with a beauty or something?"

"If you don't want to believe me, fine~ but I'm telling the truth. Anyway, how are things on your end?" Song Shuhang asked. At the same time, he secretly thought to himself, Wait until I'm done

with my practice and manage to learn some incredible technique. At that time, I'll bring you for a stroll in space and scare you to death.

"I was planning to go on a trip with Yayi. This time, I absolutely won't let you guys ruin it, wahaha! Therefore, whatever happens, don't look for me during the next ten or so days! Even if the world comes to an end, I'll get through the calamity together with Yayi!" Gao Moumou said complacently.

Just as he was chatting with Song Shuhang, Gao Moumou saw a notification pop up in the bottom right corner of the instant messaging program. It was the profile picture of the girl he added yesterday. Apparently, the name of the girl was 'Yu Jiaojiao'.

Song Shuhang wrote: "Sigh~ One day, we'll really have to tie and beat you up. You goddam winner in life!"

"Ahaha, I truly enjoy seeing you guys writhe in envy in front of the handsome me that has managed to find a girlfriend." Gao Moumou wrote with a complacent look on his face. "I seem to have a certain charm. Just yesterday, another girl added me to her friend list. Are you jealous?"

"..." Song Shuhang.

Gao Moumou wrote: "Unfortunately, I already have a girlfriend. Do you want this brother of yours to probe out the situation and see if the girl is cute? I can introduce her to you if she's cute. Her username is also quite pleasant to hear, Yu Jiaojiao. Just from the name, she seems a cute and beautiful girl. Are you interested?"

In the far away space.

As soon as our little friend Shuhang saw this message that his friend Gao Moumou sent him, he almost spat out a mouthful of blood.

Yu Jiaojiao?

Is it just a coincidence that they have the same name? After all,

the name ' Jiaojiao ' really gives off a cute vibe, and many girls probably like to put it in their online usernames...

Moreover, Gao Moumou doesn't seem like someone that writes webnovels, right?

However, Song Shuhang wasn't completely relieved and wrote: "Moumou, I have a question. You know about webnovel authors, right?"

Chapter 539: It just seems to be a beautiful misunderstanding

Gao Moumou wrote: "What are you talking about? I certainly know about webnovel authors. I'm not an alien or living in seclusion. I frequently read webnovels, and I even made accounts on the various novel sites. I even cast a vote in the monthly ranking and subscribe to the authors I like."

"..." Song Shuhang forced a smile and wrote: "Moumou, such being the case, do you have any interest in writing novels?"

After reading this message, Gao Moumou's heart skipped a beat, and his whole body stiffened.

As previously mentioned, Gao Moumou was indeed interested in writing novels... however, he had never shown the stories he had written to the people he knew in real life.

For Gao Moumou, writing novels was like writing a personal diary. Therefore, he was too embarrassed to make the people he was familiar with read them.

As if that wasn't enough, his pen name was quite childish, and several of the novels he wrote gave off an extreme chuuni vibe. If someone that knew him in real life were to read them, it would be the end of his life!

Why did Song Shuhang ask such a question? Is it possible that he knows about me writing novels in secret? Gao Moumou thought to himself.

Impossible! I took many precautions, and I'm sure I didn't leave any traces behind! Even while stealthily writing in the dormitory, I quietly hid in my upper berth, away from the gazes of my roommates! They shouldn't have discovered me!

After pondering for a moment, Gao Moumou wrote: "No, I don't have such an interest. Anyway, why the question? Shuhang, are

you planning to start writing a novel?"

"No, that's not it. I just thought of something and asked," Song Shuhang quickly wrote in reply.

Since Gao Moumou doesn't seem someone interested in writing novels, the 'Yu Jiaojiao' that added him should have nothing to do with the reversed mermaid Yu Jiaojiao I know, right?

Maybe it's just a coincidence, and she is just another girl using 'Yu Jiaojiao' as her nickname?

After thinking up to his point, Song Shuhang had calmed down a little.

Yu Jiaojiao was planning to catch a certain author and lock him inside a small black room, making him write 20,000 characters every day and not giving him food to eat if he couldn't finish the work in time...

If the author she was going to catch was really Gao Moumou, how was Song Shuhang supposed to face his friend?

After all, Yu Jiaojiao was planning to have that very author write the plot of the small movie they were going to shoot. In that case, how was Song Shuhang, who was one of the investors and actors starring in the movie, supposed to face the author if he was his friend?

Anyway, now that it was confirmed that the author wasn't Gao Moumou, there was nothing to worry about.

"Shuhang, you always ask strange questions lately. Did you turn into a bookworm after reading too many books?" Gao Moumou teased him. Then, he wrote: "Anyway, see you later. Let me dally a bit with Miss Yu Jiaojiao. I'll try to convince her to send me a picture. If she's cute, I'll give you her account number so that you can try to win her over."

After writing this much, Gao Moumou didn't wait for Song Shuhang's reply and switched to Yu Jiaojiao's chat window.

Three minutes earlier, Miss Yu Jiaojiao had sent the following message: "Excuse me, are you Holy Paladin, the author of the <*****> novel? 😊"

Gao Moumou wrote: "Yes, that's me!"

"Holy Paladin, I've been following your book for quite a while~ I have to say that it's really entertaining. Your pen name is also very interesting," Yu Jiaojiao wrote.

Gao Moumou wrote: "👉 Miss Jiaojiao, your username is also very interesting."

"Holy Paladin, do you live in the Jiangnan area of China?" Yu Jiaojiao asked.

Gao Moumou wrote: "Ah, yes. It's all written in my basic information~ Anyway, what about you, Miss Jiaojiao?"

Yu Jiaojiao wrote: "I live close to the East China Sea, hehe."

"Close to the East China Sea? What a coincidence. I went on a trip to the East China Sea and returned just recently." Gao Moumou skillfully typed on the keyboard.

After a few sentences, Gao Moumou had already started to get more familiar with Yu Jiaojiao. Of course, he had no intention of starting an online love affair.

He already had a girlfriend, and he wasn't someone that would go around hitting on girls in real life. After all, he was very faithful to Yayi, it should be clear from his actions on the mysterious island. In order to save his beloved girlfriend, he rushed ahead by disregarding his own safety and fell into the talons of the huge eagles. It was a pity that Gao Moumou had lost memory of it.

Anyway, since he couldn't flirt with girls in real life, he could only flirt with them online. Moreover, he wasn't using his personal account to flirt but the one reserved for his activities as an author.

As the saying went: 'practice makes perfect'.

Unknowingly, Gao Moumou's 'online flirting' skills had reached a very high level.

After a while, thanks to Gao Moumou's skills, the two of them had started to happily chat as though they were a couple.

Thereupon, Gao Moumou seized the opportunity and asked Yu Jiaojiao to send him one of her pictures.

"Sure, just wait a moment. I'll flip through the photo album and send you a picture." Yu Jiaojiao's reply was very straightforward.

Soon after, Yu Jiaojiao sent him the picture of an incredible beauty.

The background of the picture was a beautiful pond located inside a courtyard. The sun was shining brightly, and a woman with black, wavy hair was sitting next to the small pond. Her exquisite facial features resembled that of an elf, and she gave off the faint impression of being an ethnically mixed person. She had light blue eyes and skin that was as white as jade. She was wearing a long skirt; the end of the skirt was immersed in the water of the pond.

The beautiful woman was holding a small thing in her hand. But due to the distance, it wasn't clear what that thing was.

Yu Jiaojiao indeed sent one of her pictures...

However, the beautiful woman in the picture was Yu Jiaojiao's mother. Her mother was a fish of the Fifth Stage Realm that could assume human form. She was extremely attractive, just like a mermaid.

As for Yu Jiaojiao... she was that small thing that her mother was holding in her hand, hardly visible.

After seeing the photo, Gao Moumou was dazzled by the beauty of the woman. The girl in the picture was truly attractive!

"Is this the work of a god-like photographer? Or is the picture

photoshopped?" Gao Moumou copied the picture and sent it to Li Yangde.

Gao Moumou: "Yangde, are you online? Can you tell me if the girl in this picture was photoshopped?"

Li Yangde replied: "Wait a moment."

Ten seconds later, Li Yangde wrote: "It doesn't look photoshopped. However, it's true that the picture seems a little too beautiful! Either it was photoshopped so well that even I didn't notice or the girl in the picture is really that beautiful, and it reached such a perfect result coupled with the godly skills of the photographer.

Gao Moumou smiled and wrote: "In other words, the picture is real? This girl is even more beautiful than the celebrities you see on the TV! I'll send the picture to Tubo and Shuhang as well. It's a girl that I just added as a friend online, do you want me to introduce her to you?"

"There is no need. I'm fine as long as I have my computer." Li Yangde sent a very straightforward message.

"..." Gao Moumou.

Afterward, he sent the picture to Song Shuhang and Tubo, writing: "Shuhang, this is the picture of that 'Yu Jiaojiao' I told you about earlier. What do you think of her? She is beautiful, isn't she? Did she manage to move your heart?"

After receiving the picture, Song Shuhang looked at it for a while. The girl didn't seem to be the half-human and half-fish Yu Jiaojiao he knew. Such being the case, was it just a beautiful misunderstanding?

At this time, Gao Moumou smiled and wrote: "Do you want this brother of yours to introduce you two so that you can know each other better?"

Song Shuhang gently smiled and replied, "There is no need, but

thanks for your kind intentions."

At the moment, he really didn't have the time to fall in love!

Chapter 540: The Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion

After the conversation with Gao Moumou was over, Song Shuhang thought of sending a private message to Yu Jiaojiao and asking what the appearance of the author she wanted to catch was, where they lived, and whether they were male or female.

Although Gao Moumou himself assured him that he wasn't interested in writing webnovels and even sent him the beautiful picture of her online friend 'Yu Jiaojiao', the cautious Shuhang still decided to contact Yu Jiaojiao and confirm the situation to prepare for all possible eventualities.

But just as he prepared to click on Yu Jiaojiao's conversation window and send her a message, a big red exclamation mark appeared on the interface of his instant messaging program, accompanied by the following message: ***The Internet is not available in the most remote corners of the world. Please, check your network settings.*** 😊

"What? The Internet isn't working?" Song Shuhang returned to the homepage of the phone and discovered that the mobile phone had no signal at this time.

Now then, the fact that the mobile phone could get a signal in space was already something rather unscientific to begin with...

But at the end of the day, it was a mobile phone that Senior White had modified personally. Even if it could suddenly transform into one of those lightsabers that the Jedi wielded, Song Shuhang wouldn't be too surprised.

"There is no signal in this place. It seems that I'm currently too far away from Earth. Even the mobile phone Senior White modified personally is unable to get a signal here," Song Shuhang said.

Shuhang had no other option but to put the phone away. Now, he could only wait until he drifted to a place that was a little closer to Earth and ask Yu Jiaojiao those questions at that time.

Nothing bad would happen in the meantime, right?

* * *

Song Shuhang kept floating in the vast universe.

In the nearby space capsule, Chu Chu was holding Li Yinzhu in her embrace and slightly shivering.

The cold emanating from Li Yinzhu's body was getting stronger each day, and it was only a matter of time before her disease flared up again. The strength of the cold emanating from her body could injure even the ancestor of the Chu Family who was a cultivator of the Fifth Stage Realm, let alone a Second Stage True Master like Chu Chu.

"Can you hold on?" Song Shuhang asked via secret sound transmission.

Chu Chu didn't reply, but silently nodded.

At this time, she was using all the true qi in her body to resist the cold emanating from Li Yinzhu's body. Therefore, she didn't have the luxury to divert her attention and use the secret sound transmission to communicate with Song Shuhang.

Song Shuhang heaved a sigh. It seemed they had to look for a place to rest first.

Just as this thought flashed through his mind, he saw a palace-like building located on a meteoroid several thousand meters away from him. A formation protected the building and only cultivators could see it.

Song Shuhang pondered for a moment and decided to operate the formation on his spacesuit. He wanted to steer clear of that palace!

When he saw that strange palace built on a meteoroid right in the

middle of space, his sixth sense told him that it was going to be a rather troublesome place!

He was currently in space, and he couldn't casually head toward that place before making sure whether the people there were friends or foes.

Therefore, it was better to steer clear of that place for now and see how things evolved.

Just as this thought crossed his mind, the front gate of the palace-like building suddenly opened.

Afterward, a pair of male and female attendants came out of the palace; both of them were very good-looking. They stood beside the gate of the palace and noticed Song Shuhang with but a glance.

The pair of male and female attendants were very polite and greeted Song Shuhang from afar.

Song Shuhang pondered for a moment and also greeted the pair of male and female attendants while still wearing his cumbersome spacesuit.

The pair laughed in unison, and although they were standing very far away, their smiling faces were clearly visible.

In the next moment, Song Shuhang felt his body getting attracted toward the palace-like building.

He was simply unable to stop!

Not good... did I fall into their trap the instant I greeted them?

Is it possible that it's like that scene from Journey to the West with the Golden-Red Gourd? 'Monkey, I'll call your name, do you dare to reply?', and if one replied, they would get sucked into the gourd?

Is it possible that I activated the trap by returning their greetings, stimulating this particular feature of the palace that started to attract me over?

Forget it. Since I'm being attracted to that place, I might as well go over and take a look. But I need to take precautions as well.

Song Shuhang was only a cultivator of the Second Stage while the opposite party had such tricks at their disposal. Since he didn't have the strength to revolt and couldn't escape, either, his only option was to go over and meet the opposite party face to face.

But just as he was in deep thoughts, Song Shuhang suddenly felt that his eyelids had become incredibly heavy...



July 31st, Wednesday. Today's dao name was 'Daoist Priest Wood'. Since Song Shuhang was currently in space, the weather on Earth was unknown.

After Song Shuhang greeted that pair of male and female attendants yesterday, the gate of the palace suddenly attracted him over.

Immediately after, just as Song Shuhang prepared to act according to the circumstances... a burst of sleepiness rushed to his head and made him lose consciousness.

In the blink of an eye, it was already the next day.

It was the last day of July, the 31st day.

Just as he opened his eyes, Song Shuhang noticed that he was lying on a colossal arched bridge.

There were two lampposts on each extremity of the arched bridge, illuminating it with their white light. Song Shuhang was currently lying in the center of the bridge.

"Here am I?" Song Shuhang muttered as he looked all around. The arched bridge was comparable to the modern bridges used to cross the sea. It was very long, and Song Shuhang could only faintly see the lampposts at the two extremities.

Then, he shot a glance at this body. He was still wearing the

cumbersome spacesuit and Chu Chu and Li Yinzhu were still sleeping in the nearby space capsule.

All the treasures he had with him were still there; he hadn't lost any of them. Song Shuhang took out his mobile phone and looked at the time. It had already been a day since he had come here. There was no signal at this time, and he couldn't get in contact with the outside world.

Song Shuhang shot another look all around. However, he didn't manage to see that pair of male and female attendants he saw yesterday.

"It doesn't even feel as if I'm in space!" Song Shuhang muttered to himself.

Below the arched bridge was a boundless sea of clouds that seemed to have no end. When he raised his head and looked upward, he saw a blue sky with iridescent clouds spread all over. The sky was slightly dark at this time.

After taking off the helmet of the spacesuit, Song Shuhang discovered that the surrounding area was filled with oxygen. The quality of the air was even better than the one on Earth. Pure spiritual energy entered his body after each mouthful of air he was inhaling, refreshing both his body and mind.

The quality of the spiritual energy is incredibly high here... is it possible that the entrance to the palace I saw yesterday was actually the entrance of an immortal cave?

"Hey, is there someone around?" Song Shuhang called out.

However, no one replied to his question.

Song Shuhang pondered for a short while and decided to head toward one of the extremities of the arched bridge while carrying the space capsule on his shoulders.

Since he was standing in the center of the bridge, he casually chose one side.

After traveling for around 5,000 meters, Song Shuhang finally arrived at the end of one of the two extremities of the bridge.

What appeared in front of him at the end of the road was a double-layered ancient Chinese-style pavilion.

The pavilion was positioned at the end of the bridge and blocked the only road one could travel on, blocking Song Shuhang's way just as though it was the gate to a city.

There was a signboard mounted on the pavilion with the following words written on it: Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion.

"The Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion? It sounds like the name of a school or a sect?" Song Shuhang arrived in the front of the door of the pavilion and stretched out his hand to knock on it.

"Clang~"

But right at this time, the huge door of the pavilion opened, and the pair of male and female attendants Song Shuhang met yesterday appeared before his eyes.

The female attendant blinked her eyes and said, "Fellow Daoist that has come here from afar, we have come to welcome you!"

The male attendant smiled and said, "I knew that there was fate between us, Fellow Daoist. I was sure you would choose the road that would lead to the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion."

The arched bridge was a small test to determine one's fate. The bridge had two extremities. One of them led toward the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion while the other one toward the exit.

Chapter 541: Have you come here to make fun of me?

Fate?

As soon as he heard this word, Song Shuhang felt as though he had something stuck in his throat... I'm just an innocent passerby that got attracted for no reason by the gate of your palace! What does this have to do with fate?!

What happened was no different than a person standing in front of their own house seeing a good-looking girl or guy passing by in the streets and ending up knocking them out with a stick and dragging them into the house.

Right, then the person prepared two doors. One that led outside, and one that led to the bedroom.

Afterward, if the unlucky guy or girl ended up getting into the bedroom of the person... they were suddenly fated to be together! They might as well get into some action while they were at it, right?

Fate your sister!

Song Shuhang didn't say any of this out loud, but that pair of male and female attendants seemed to have read his mind and realized what he was thinking at this time.

"Fellow Daoist, it wasn't a coincidence that you drifted until the entrance of our Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion. Fellow Daoist, you were surely delivered here by someone!" the male attendant said.

The female attendant covered her mouth and gently smiled, saying, "We just prevented you from bumping into the outer gate of the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion. There are some copper nails on the gate outside, and it would have been rather painful to bump into them. For this reason, we decided to bring you to the arched bridge."

The male attendant also added, "The choice you made afterward represent that there is fate between you and the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion."

Can these guys read my mind?

Song Shuhang kept under control his emotions and didn't indulge in flights of fancy.

Moreover, if he didn't casually drift until the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion and was, on the contrary, delivered here by someone... who was this person that sent him here?

Was it possible that it was Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue?

Earlier, Song Shuhang was squeezed into the cannon barrel of the immortal boat and shot outside. Such being the case, did Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue deliberately fire him toward the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion?

"It seems that Fellow Daoist is wondering who might have sent you here," the male attendant said with a smile.

Song Shuhang gently smiled and didn't reply.

After all, what he was hearing was the one-sided story of the other party. Since he didn't know the intentions of the other party, he couldn't blindly believe their words, but had to take everything with a grain of salt.

The female attendant continued, "Fellow Daoist, since there is fate between us, do you want to become part of our Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion, becoming one of its disciples?"

"It has been several hundred years since our Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion has accepted a disciple," the male attendant said.

Become a disciple of the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion?

"But... am I suitable?" Song Shuhang took off the cumbersome spacesuit and said with a smile, "I have already missed the best

period to practice, and I don't have that 'innate true qi' inside my body anymore. Moreover, my talent can be regarded as average at most when it comes to cultivation."

He had reached the Second Stage so quickly because the seniors of the group were taking care of him; another reason was Venerable White's incredible luck.

"We don't care about either of them while accepting someone as a disciple of the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion," the male attendant said while smiling.

The female attendant added, "Talent and age don't really matter to us people of the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion. As long as you are willing to stay in the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion, we'll provide you with enough natural resources to cultivate."

I have to stay in the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion...? Ah, that's right. Staying in the school or sect is a basic requirement for disciples that have just joined. A disciple isn't allowed to easily leave the school unless they have reached a certain realm and can defend themselves.

Of course, the disciples of the outer courtyard were an exception. After all, the disciples of the outer courtyard were only considered as preparatory disciples at most.

Song Shuhang gently shook his head and said, "Thank you for your kind intentions, but I'll have to refuse." Whether he would join a school or stay as a loose cultivator was something he had decided soon after joining the Nine Provinces Number One Group.

For the time being, he didn't want the rules of a school or sect to restrict him. Staying as a loose cultivator was currently the best option for him. Moreover, Song Shuhang didn't really need to rely on an organization.

He was a member of the Nine Provinces Number One Group—as long as he was willing to work hard enough, he could obtain

rewards that weren't inferior to the ones that disciples of large sects or schools could get.

"Fellow Daoist, don't be so impatient to refuse our offer. How about taking a look at our Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion first?" the male attendant said with a smile.

Soon after, both he and the female attendant stood to the two sides of the pavilion and made a 'welcome' gesture to Song Shuhang.



Taking one step and stepping into a dreamland... this was Song Shuhang's first impression after seeing the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion.

After stepping inside the pavilion, Song Shuhang felt as though he had stepped into a fairyland.

He could hear the singing of birds and smell the fragrance of flowers. White jade had been used to pave the main road, and valuable raw materials were scattered everywhere. The water running in the rivers was also full of spiritual energy.

Actually, the whole air surrounding the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion was full of spiritual energy.

The spiritual energy in the area surrounding the pavilion was extremely rich. If one were to stay in the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion and only breathe the air there, without even bothering to painstakingly train, they could obtain effects similar to practicing and meditating diligently in the outside world.

That pair of attendants guided Song Shuhang and led him to the innermost tower of the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion. That place was the dwelling of the master of the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion, 'Fairy Chu'.

Along the way, all the disciple of the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion regardless of their gender warmly greeted the attendants. The

atmosphere really resembled that of a true 'family'.

There were no personal conflicts between the disciples there. Harmony and kindness reigned supreme, and the gentleness came directly from the hearts of the disciples of the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion.

This place really resembled that 'paradise' that was often mentioned in religions!

However, a strange feeling welled up in Song Shuhang's heart.

He could feel that the kindness of the disciples of the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion was genuine... but at the same time, he had the vague feeling that it was all 'false'.

It wasn't that there was something wrong with the kindness the disciples of the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion were showing to each other... however, he still felt that there was something strange about the whole Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion.



"Right in front of us is the 'Celestial Pavilion', the place where the master of the pavilion resides. The pavilion master is waiting for you in there, Fellow Daoist." The pair of attendants stopped after leading Song Shuhang in the front of the high tower.

At this time, Chu Chu, who was inside the space capsule, had also woken up.

Song Shuhang opened the space capsule and took Li Yinzhu from Chu Chu's arms.

Afterward, he asked, "Can I bring them together with me to meet the master of the pavilion?"

"Of course. The pavilion master isn't waiting only for you, Fellow Daoist. She is waiting for these two fairy maidens as well," the pair of male and female attendants said with a smile.

Soon after, the male attendant opened the door of the tower.

Song Shuhang held Li Yinzhu in his arms and entered the tower together with Chu Chu.



After following the stairs that spiraled upward, they ultimately reached the topmost door.

After pushing the door open, the trio entered a room full of mist.

The room wasn't big, and the first thing that appeared before their eyes was a reclining chair made of wood.

There was also a pill furnace made of metal in the middle of the room that was emitting smoke. It seemed that the smoke the pills emitted had turned into a dense mist, filling the whole room.

Just as Song Shuhang and the others entered the room, the figure sitting on the reclining chair slowly stood up.

It was a woman with black hair. Her hair was very long, and it was unknown how long it had been since the last time she cut it. Her hair was hanging loosely and covered the whole area surrounding the chair. The skin of the woman was very pale, to the point that it almost seemed transparent. Her eyes were half-closed and half-open, making her look rather sleepy. Moreover, she was emitting a dispirited aura from her whole body.

But when the dispirited aura was coupled with the looks of the woman, it gave her the aura of an incredibly lazy beauty.

After standing up, she carefully looked at Song Shuhang.

"It's you." The woman yawned and continued, "What are you doing here? Have you come here to make fun of me? Slow-Witted Song."

"Senior, do we know each other?" Song Shuhang asked.

The half-closed and half-open eyes of the woman looked at Song Shuhang carefully. Afterward, she muttered, "Oh... I mistook you for someone else."

Chapter 542: The Time City

She mistook me for someone else? A certain 'Slow-Witted Song'?

It's already the third time that I'm mistaken for someone else... the first time was inside Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman's treasure house. Back then, the bamboo shoot mistook me for another person and ruthlessly hit me.

The second time was when I was dreaming about my own experiences on the mysterious island. At that time, I saw a small white dragon in the underground chamber tomb that Senior Lightning Pig arranged. Later, the white dragon also ruthlessly hit me after mistaking me for someone else.

Now, the master of the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion also mistook me for someone else...

Song Shuhang looked at the lazy, black-haired woman in front of him and asked, "Senior... who is this 'Slow-Witted Song'?"

Is it possible that I'm the reincarnation of some ancient cultivator?

"Slow-Witted Song..." The black-haired woman raised her head and reclined against the wooden chair, seemingly thinking about something. "He's a fellow daoist that I knew a long, long time ago. The relationship between the two of us was pretty good I would say. But so much time has passed, and I have no idea if he's still alive. It's been quite a while since the last time I've seen him."

"Senior, is it possible that I'm his reincarnation?" Song Shuhang asked about the matter that concerned him the most.

Although he didn't have experience in this subject, he knew that cultivators could really reincarnate. As long as the cultivator wasn't killed by the heavenly tribulation and both their body and soul weren't destroyed by an enemy, there was a chance that they would reincarnate.

"Hmm~ that should be impossible." The black-haired woman reclined against the chair even more and raised her head, looking at Song Shuhang. Afterward, she said lazily, "That Slow-Witted Song fellow doesn't have a 'next life' ahead of him. If he wants to 'reincarnate', he can only take over the body of another person or that of a puppet."

If he had taken over someone's body, Song Shuhang wouldn't be himself but the 'Slow-Witted Song' that the black-haired woman mentioned.

If he had taken over the body of a puppet, it was even more impossible that 'Slow-Witted Song' had any relationship with Song Shuhang.

But if this is the case and there isn't any relationship between me and this 'ancient cultivator' the black-haired woman mentioned just now... why do people keep mistaking me for him? Since I'm constantly mistaken for him, is there some 'karma' between the two of us?

Song Shuhang asked once again, "Do this person and I look alike?"

When Shuhang talked about 'looking alike', he didn't mean just their facial features, but something more profound.

In this world, there weren't two completely identical tree leaves, and the same was also true for people.

While judging a person, cultivators didn't rely on their facial features alone to make the judgment... However, the bamboo shoot, the white dragon, and the lazy black-haired woman before Song Shuhang's eyes all managed to mistake him for someone else!

"How can I explain it... If we consider your outward appearance, the two of you are only somewhat similar. But if we consider your soul and aura, it's very easy to confuse you guys. It's indeed strange... are you perhaps his descendant?" The lazy, black-haired

woman looked upward and continued, "I remember that he once had a woman... maybe you are his direct descendant. It's a possible explanation."

"Descendant?" Song Shuhang shook his head in puzzlement. For various reasons, his family moved several times and the records about his family tree had been long lost—to the point that the oldest information available was the one about his grandfather's father...

Suddenly, the black-haired woman got up from the chair. Her hair was both thick and long, draping over shoulders like a cloak and getting dragged on the ground as she moved forward.

After getting up, she arrived in front of Song Shuhang and raised her head, gazing at him. As she came closer, Song Shuhang realized that the black-haired woman was actually quite short. While standing up, she reached to his chin at most.

"Now that I think about it, Slow-Witted Song left a certain thing in the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion back then, saying that he would come back one day to retrieve it. Unfortunately, I'm unable to return that thing to him now... because I've already used it! Wahaha!" The black-haired woman laughed complacently.

"..." Song Shuhang.

Then, the black-haired woman stretched out her hand and flicked it. Immediately after, Li Yinzhu, who was in Song Shuhang's embrace, was picked up by an invisible strength and sent to Chu Chu who was standing at the entrance of the room.

Afterward, Fairy Chu stretched out her hands again and gently caressed Song Shuhang's cheeks.

Her hands were icy cold and gave off refreshing and cool feeling.

"Hmm, let me see. The cultivation technique you practice is the <Basic Buddhist Fist Technique>... as well as the <Thirty-Three Divine Beasts' Technique>? Are you then a disciple of the Thirty-

Three Divine Beasts' Sect?" the black-haired woman asked.

Only her fingers came in contact with Song Shuhang's body and yet she could name the cultivation techniques Shuhang practiced as though she was extremely familiar with the subject! Both the strength and knowledge of this senior were immeasurably deep!

At the same time, Song Shuhang felt a powerful oppressive aura coming from the body of the black-haired woman. This aura reminded him of Venerable White, Venerable Spirit Butterfly, Venerable Tornado, and Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue...

The black-haired woman before his eyes was undoubtedly an existence of the Venerable rank.

No, perhaps she was even stronger!

"Senior, I'm not really a disciple of the Thirty-Three Divine Beasts' Sect." Song Shuhang shook his head and said, "The Thirty-Three Divine Beasts' Sect has already disappeared from the world. The <Thirty-Three Divine Beasts' Technique> I'm practicing is something that Senior White recovered and revised on my behalf. Afterward, I chanced upon the <Whale Swallowing Technique> by luck and finally completed the technique."

"The Thirty-Three Divine Beasts' Sect has unexpectedly disappeared from the world?" The black-haired woman was astonished. Back in those days, the Thirty-Three Divine Beasts' Sect was a large and influential sect, and there were several figures of the Venerable rank belonging to the sect. She didn't expect that such a sect would have been destroyed.

"The world is truly ever-changing..." the black-haired woman said while holding Song Shuhang's face with both hands.

Then, she slightly furrowed her brows, and the lazy expression on her face disappeared.

Afterward, she dragged her long black hair on the floor and

returned to the big reclining chair, lying on it.

"I'm tired," the black-haired woman said.

"?" Song Shuhang.

"I'm tired, and I'm sleepy as well. Therefore, I plan to sleep for a while... See you tomorrow." After saying this much, she took a quilt out of nowhere and used it to cover her body. Next, the reclining chair under her body started to transform just like a Transformers, turning into a big, comfortable bed in the blink of an eye.

"Good night." The black-haired woman waved at Song Shuhang and the others.

Song Shuhang didn't know whether to laugh or cry. Just what was happening?

In the rear, the door of the room was pushed open and the pair of male and female attendants entered the chamber. They smiled apologetically at Song Shuhang and Chu Chu and made a "please, this way" gesture.

"Sure, Senior. See you tomorrow."

Song Shuhang had no choice but to leave the pavilion for the time being.



After Song Shuhang, Chu Chu, and Li Yinzhu were gone, Fairy Chu opened her eyes.

Her eyes slightly moved. Afterward, runes appeared and automatically formed several pictures in front of her.

There was the picture of a blazing saber capable of burning the heavens.

There was the picture of a thick, golden chain with thirty-three animals carved on it.

There was the picture of an exquisite puppet.

There were also the illusory pictures of a bamboo leaf and a white dragon.

In addition, there were the pictures of a silver glove and a blood bone...

Each of these objects was linked to a powerful cultivator.

"Even if we put that mysterious 'Scarlet Heaven' aside for now... what are the others trying to do?" Fairy Chu muttered.

After a short moment, Fairy Chu pulled the quilt toward her body and comfortably stretched herself. "Anyway, it doesn't have anything to do with me. I'm so tired... Right, since he seems to be related to Slow-Witted Song, I might as well give him a hand...

"The Time City is a pretty good place. I'll bring them there tomorrow to make them relax," Fairy Chu said while sleep-talking.

Chapter 543: There is an express delivery for you downstairs

After leaving Fairy Chu's Celestial Pavilion, the pair of male and female attendants led Song Shuhang and the others to a lawn adjacent to the river.

In that place, the kind-hearted disciples of the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion had already prepared a banquet to welcome Song Shuhang, Chu Chu, and Li Yinzhu.

Song Shuhang just happened to be starving. After all, he hadn't eaten anything since yesterday when he fell unconscious up until now.

During the banquet, the attendants, elders, and masters of the other branches of the pavilion asked Song Shuhang and Chu Chu about the matters that had occurred in the outside world, how society had developed, and so on...

At the same time, they indirectly tried to convince Song Shuhang and Chu Chu to become their disciples. From a certain point of view, it almost seemed as though they were promoting themselves and trying to get the best disciple, even promising them all sorts of benefits.

These propositions somewhat moved the nearby Chu Chu. After all, she would become a disciple of the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion as soon as she agreed—a direct line disciple at that.

Later, all the cultivation techniques and natural resources of the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion would be at her disposal. Although she had already signed the contract and offered herself as a candidate for the position of 'Eighth Cultivator of True Virtue', it had nothing to do with becoming a disciple of the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion; the two weren't mutually exclusive.



After the banquet, the pair of male and female attendants led Song Shuhang and the others toward the palace reserved for the guests to rest.

"Fellow Daoist Song, Fellow Daoist Chu Chu, you have now a better understanding of our Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion. Have you decided whether or not you want to join the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion as disciples?" The pair of male and female attendants didn't forget to ask this question along the way.

Chu Chu faintly nodded; her interest had been piqued. However, she still wanted to think about it properly.

Song Shuhang asked out of curiosity, "Can I ask you two a question? Why do you want us to become disciples of the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion?"

After all, the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion was also a powerful sect of cultivators. Were they really in such a hurry to recruit disciples?

The pair of male and female attendants looked at each and smiled, saying, "Because it has been a long, long time since a new disciple joined our pavilion."

Song Shuhang faintly nodded. However, this reason wasn't enough to convince him.

From the looks of it, the pair wasn't planning to tell him the real reason.



After Song Shuhang and the others entered the palace reserved for the guests, the pair of attendants smiled and left.

Song Shuhang, Chu Chu, and Li Yinzhu each got a room.

Even after lying in bed for a long time, Song Shuhang was unable to fall asleep. After all, he had woken up on that arched bridge not too long ago. Therefore, he wasn't sleepy at this time.

Moreover, he felt that there was something wrong with each and every part of the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion.

Only after midnight was Song Shuhang finally able to fall asleep...



The next day, August 1st, Thursday.

Early morning, 6:30 AM. Song Shuhang opened his eyes.

"Today's dao name should be Baijing Street's Traveling Sabersman..." Song Shuhang took out his mobile phone and looked at the date. As before, the phone had no signal.

"Good morning, Baijing Street's Traveling Sabersman." Right at this time, a sleepy voice echoed in Song Shuhang's ears.

Song Shuhang turned his head around and saw that the black-haired master of the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion was sitting not too far away from the bed. Her long black hair was spread all over the floor.

It seemed as if she had been sitting there for a long time.

Song Shuhang said, "Good morning, Senior Chu."

Luckily, Shuhang didn't have the habit to sleep naked...

"Fellow Daoist Baijing Street's Traveling Sabersman, wash your face and rinse your mouth. I'll bring you to a good place after you are done eating breakfast!" Pavilion Master Chu said.



Morning, 7 AM.

Under Pavilion Master Chu's lead, Song Shuhang and Chu Chu headed toward the depths of the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion. At this time, Li Yinzhu's disease had flared up again and she entered into a hibernation-like state. It was unknown how long she would sleep this time...

After walking for around twenty minutes, Pavilion Master Chu led Song Shuhang and the others and arrived in front of the walls of a city.

"We have arrived. This is the Time City," Pavilion Master Chu said.

The Time City was the place she had created by using the treasure 'Slow-Witted Song' had left behind.

As the name suggested, the treasure left behind was a valuable item related to 'time'. Under Pavilion Master Chu's control, the treasure brought into full play its wondrous effects.

The Time City was divided into two portions: the 'Upper City' and the 'Lower City'.

In the Upper City, one day was equivalent to twelve days in the outside world. The flow of time was accelerated.

On the other hand, it was the exact opposite inside the 'Lower City'. Twelve days in the Lower City were equivalent to one day in the outside world. The flow of time was greatly slowed down.

But whether it was the Upper City or the Lower City, a cultivator could stay in there only for 30 days the first time they entered the place.

Pavilion Master Chu was planning to bring Song Shuhang and Chu Chu to the Lower City.

Twelve days in there would be equivalent to one day in the outside world.

While others practiced for one day, the people in the 'lower portion' of the Time City could practice for twelve days in the same amount of time.



In the Jiangnan area, inside Gao Moumou's house.

"Shuhang has yet to reply. At this pace, he's going to end up all

alone and stay as a virgin forever!" Gao Moumou was lying on the chair, swinging back and forth.

However, that 'Yu Jiaojiao' girl from yesterday was gorgeous. But where did she live precisely, and did she already have a boyfriend?

Gao Moumou was thinking of introducing her to Song Shuhang or Tubo if there was an opportunity. It would be a pretty good move, right?

Just as he was in deep thoughts, Gao Moumou's phone suddenly rang. It was an unknown number.

"Who might it be? Who is calling me so early in the morning? Is it possible that it's a scammer or one of those salesmen?" Gao Moumou straightened himself and took a sip of the tea.

Gao Moumou and Tubo loved to chatter away with scammers and salesmen. If the opposite party was a girl, their fighting capacity increased by three times.

Thereupon, Gao Moumou picked the phone up and said, "Hello~"

"Hello. May I ask if you are Mister Gao Moumou?" The pleasant-sounding voice of a girl was transmitted from the other end.

It was a girl!

Gao Moumou replied, "Yes, it's me. Is something the matter?"

"I'm from the Blue Sea Express Delivery. I request you to come downstairs to retrieve your express delivery!" the girl said gently.

Is it a swindler?

Gao Moumou had no other choice but to wear his night clothes and go downstairs. Now then, he didn't remember buying anything on the Internet in the past few days!

Was it possible that Yayi, Song Shuhang, or another of his roommates had sent him a gift?

After going downstairs, Gao Moumou quickly found the far-off

vehicle of the 'Blue Sea Express Delivery'. It was a 7-passenger minivan.

Gao Moumou arrived next to the express delivery vehicle and knocked on the window, saying, "I'm Gao Moumou, what about the express delivery?"

In the next moment, the door of the van slid to one side, and the first thing that appeared before Gao Moumou's eyes was a pair of white thighs.

Immediately after, a monstrous claw appeared out of nowhere and caught Gao Moumou.

"Ah?" Gao Moumou was dumbfounded.

In the next moment, he felt an incredible strength dragging him inside the minivan.

"Aaaah~" Gao Moumou called out pitifully.

Is this an abduction? Am I really being kidnapped? What was that monstrous claw that I saw earlier?

"Hello, Mister Gao Moumou. We finally meet face to face." The gentle voice from earlier belonged to the owner of the two beautiful legs.

Gao Moumou looked at the girl. She was wearing a hoodie and big flu mask. "We finally meet face to face...? Who are you?"

"Let me introduce myself. I'm Yu Jiaojiao," the girl kept smiling and said, "I'm precisely that fan of yours, Yu Jiaojiao."

"..." Gao Moumou.

Chapter 544: Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion, frozen in time!

Gao Moumou was currently dumbstruck.

Yu Jiaojiao?

How the hell did she find where I live? Moreover, why did she use the pretext of the 'express delivery' to get me downstairs and ultimately drag me inside the minivan? What she did isn't any different than kidnapping!

Gao Moumou was somewhat scared at this time. Therefore, he tried to probe the situation. "Jiaojiao, why did you come all the way here to my house? Do you want my signature or something?"

Yu Jiaojiao shook her head and said, "To tell you the truth, I thought of looking for you quite some time ago, but I managed to get an opportunity only today. Now then, Holy Paladin... we need to talk about your release speed... I feel that it was a little too slow recently!!!"

The speed of my releases was too slow?

What's happening? Did a fan visit me to urge me to write faster?

Gao Moumou wanted to cry but had no tears... readers like these were truly scary!

No, wait a moment! The speed of my releases was pretty good recently!

Even if he was stranded on that island of natives in the East China Sea for some time, the releases of his webnovel didn't stop since he had prepared a stockpile beforehand. Moreover, as soon as he returned home, he prepared even more chapters! At this time, he had already prepared all the chapters that had to be released by the end of the month!

I think it would be pretty hard to find another kind-hearted

author such as myself in the entire circle of webnovel authors, wouldn't it?

Gao Moumou felt that he was a true saint compared to those authors that updated once every day, once every three or four days, or once every month.

Yu Jiaojiao seemed to have realized what Gao Moumou was thinking after seeing the expression on his face. "You usually release 5,000 or 6,000 characters every day... but that's simply too little!"

"!" Gao Moumou.

Releasing 5,000 or 6,000 characters every day is too little now? How much do I need to write to be qualified?

"If you don't write from 10,000 to 20,000 characters every day, how do you think to survive in this super-competitive field?!" Yu Jiaojiao's voice was out of control. Could Gao Moumou really consider himself a webnovel author if he wasn't even writing 10,000-20,000 characters every day?!

Just as she was speaking, the door of the minivan was locked, and the vehicle slowly started moving forward.

"Wait, wait a moment! Yu Jiaojiao, where are we going?" Gao Moumou called out. At the same time, he grabbed the door of the van and thought of getting down.

But right at this time, the man in a formal suit standing next to Yu Jiaojiao stretched his hands out and tightly hugged Gao Moumou, not allowing him to move in the slightest.

"Don't worry, Holy Paladin. We don't want to hurt you," Yu Jiaojiao said with a smile. "We'll bring you to a good place where you can write chapters in peace."

"..." Gao Moumou.

She wants to bring me to a good place so that I can write chapters

in peace...? Visiting the home of an author and telling him to write faster is already quite scary, but directly grabbing him and forcing him to write... this is what criminals would do! That's a crime, guys!!!

"There is another thing I need to tell you, Holy Paladin. Before I came here, I talked to your parents and reached an agreement with them. They also approve of my actions," Yu Jiaojiao said with a smile. It was unknown what kind of method or excuse she had used to convince Gao Moumou's parents...

Gao Moumou turned his head around and saw through the window of the minivan his mother standing on the balcony, happily waving her hand at him.

How is this possible? What kind of method did Yu Jiaojiao use that even my mother is so relieved while seeing her son getting carried away?

Then, Yu Jiaojiao said, "Therefore, obediently follow me and prepare to write lots of chapters, alright? Ahahaha!"

"No, no, no! I refuse! I have some matters to attend to in the next days! Right, Yu Jiaojiao! I still have many chapters in my stockpile! I can give all of them to you!" Gao Moumou called out. He had to go on a date with Yayi in the next days; the two of them were getting ready to go on a trip again!

The duo was planning to enjoy their vacation without any third wheel bothering them! What would happen to the date with Yayi if he was kidnapped and forced to write chapters?

It was regrettable that Gao Moumou's refusal was of no use... In the end, he was still carried away by Yu Jiaojiao.

To make him write an interesting plot for Song Shuhang and Venerable White's movie, Yu Jiaojiao had already prepared an adorable, small black room with a super-computer inside.

The goal was to make him write from 10,000 to 20,000 characters

every day.

She wouldn't give him any meals if he didn't write. Moreover, the earlier he could finish writing the agreed number of characters, the earlier he could take a break. But if he couldn't finish them in time, he would have to stay up all night to finish them.

Yu Jiaojiao had already prepared several things for Gao Moumou's usage, such as 'Spirit Green Tea', 'Eye-Opening Pills', 'Energizing Medicinal Liquid', and so on. The average man could also take medicinal pills and drink medicinal liquid.

With all these gadgets, she was sure that Gao 'Holy Paladin' Moumou could stay full of energy 24h a day and write without breaks! Let alone writing 20,000 characters every day... with such wonderful conditions, it wasn't impossible to reach the dream-like goal of 30,000 or 40,000 characters every day!



In the meantime.

In the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion.

In the end, the black-haired woman brought Song Shuhang and Chu Chu to the 'lower portion' of the Time City.

It was an underground world made of several passages.

"This is the 'Lower City' of the Time City. The flow of time in this place is different from the outside world. Twelve days here are equivalent to only one day in the outside world. Incredible, isn't it?" the black-haired woman said lazily.

It was obviously something worth showing off, but her tone while introducing the Time City was still dispirited.

"Is this the 'good place' that Pavilion Master Chu mentioned back then?" Song Shuhang asked.

"Yes... this place is very good for practicing. Other than having a

flow of time that is different from the outside world, it's the place with the highest concentration of spiritual qi in the entire Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion. One can obtain twice the results with half the effort while practicing here. It's a very good place if one wants to close up for a short amount of time." Pavilion Master Chu rubbed her eyes and continued, "If your luck is good, you might learn a little bit about the principles of time. You guys should practice here in the Time City for today... Hmm, by today I mean the 'today' in the outside world. Therefore, it's twelve days in the 'Lower City'. After the time is up, I'll return here to bring you back!"

After saying this much, Pavilion Master Chu waved her hand at Song Shuhang and Chu Chu, leaving just like that.

Song Shuhang and Chu Chu were still standing in place, staring blankly.

After entering the strange Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion, they met the strange Pavilion Master Chu and were brought to the strange Time City.

Something like the 'Time City' would be surely a forbidden area in other sects! But Pavilion Master Chu brought two strangers like them here and wasn't worried in the least?

Was it because there was fate between them?

Song Shuhang was completely unable to understand Pavilion Master Chu's train of thought.

"But with things the way they are, we might as well make the best use of our time. This place is indeed really good for practicing. Therefore, we better practice here for a while since we have the opportunity," Song Shuhang said with a sigh.

Chu Chu nodded. A training place like the Time City was everything she could wish for. For her, getting into the Time City could be regarded as a fortuitous encounter itself.

It was like a meat pie falling from the sky; there was no reason to refuse it!



After leaving the Time City, Pavilion Master Chu sleepwalked until reaching the city walls of the Time City.

Then, she suddenly stopped and stood in place without moving in the slightest... it seemed she had fallen asleep?

It was an innate skill that could allow her to sleep everywhere and at any time... it wasn't something one could learn in a mere one or two days!

Around an hour later.

Pavilion Master Chu suddenly woke up and stretched herself while yawning.

Next, she rubbed her eyes with a confused expression on her face.

"Eh? What I'm doing next to the Time City?" Pavilion Master Chu blurted out.

Afterward, a pensive expression replaced the confused one.

From what she remembered, she had slept for a long, long time. Then, while she was in a half-awake and half-asleep state, she vaguely remembered that some of her acquaintances had come over to see her. Afterward... well, there was no afterward. She was too lazy and sleepy to think about what happened later.

She didn't remember what she had done or what she had discussed with her acquaintances.

It was the same as someone soundly sleeping receiving a sudden call. The person would pick up the phone and talk to the person on the other end in a daze. But upon waking up, they would find it very hard to remember what they had talked about.

In other words, Pavilion Master Chu's memories about meeting Song Shuhang and making him enter the Time City were

extremely vague.

She had forgotten about Song Shuhang and Chu Chu existences even though she met them only one hour ago!

There were quite a few problems with Pavilion Master Chu's current state!



"Ah... Whatever. If I can't remember it, I won't force myself. After all, those matters don't have any relation with me if I don't remember anything about them," Pavilion Master Chu muttered to herself.

In the next moment, she spread her divine sense out and covered the whole Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion.

The disciples of the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion were diligently practicing as before. Each of them was filled with infinite energy and quickly progressing.

The elders and attendants were either practicing, discussing profound principles, playing chess, or happily chatting with each other.

Inside one of the rooms of the palace reserved for the guests, the pair of male and female attendants was changing the quilt of an adorable little girl with white hair that was sleeping over to her place.

There is a guest in the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion? It seems she came here with one of my acquaintances... but where has that acquaintance of mine gone?

Ah, I can't remember~ Anyway, it doesn't matter. Since it's one of my acquaintances, there won't be any problems.

"Even today, the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion is as peaceful as always." Pavilion Master Chu happily smiled.

Afterward, she dragged her long hair along and quickly left the

Time City, returning to her Celestial Pavilion.

"This time, I feel really, really tired. Therefore, I want to sleep for a little longer!" Pavilion Master Chu muttered as she returned to her bed and found a good place to curl up into.

Very soon, she fell asleep and sunk into the world of dreams.

This time, it was different from the past several days.

Because this time, she had thoroughly fallen asleep.

In the same instant Pavilion Master Chu fell asleep... the whole Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion outside stopped in its tracks.

It almost felt as if time itself had stopped.

That pair of male and female attendants that was changing Li Yinzhu's quilt was frozen in the same position as before, with none of them moving in the slightest.

The ordinary disciples of the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion that were practicing outside were also frozen in time, keeping the postures they had before Fairy Chu went to sleep.

Even the attendants, vice-palace masters, and elders were frozen in their original positions. Some of them were drinking tea while others were playing chess, discussing profound principles, or chatting.

Not only the cultivators of the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion, but even the running water of rivers and fountains, the birds in the sky, and the animals and insects on the ground had stopped in their tracks.

The whole Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion was frozen in time.

The only person unaffected was Li Yinzhu, who was soundly sleeping on the sickbed after her disease had flared up.

Li Yinzhu was breathing steadily, but the cold air inside her body changed into a white mist whenever she breathed out through her mouth or nose. Without even noticing it, the whole room had been

filled with cold air.

Li Yinzhu's eyelashes slightly trembled. It was unknown whether she was going to wake up or if she would be sealed by the ice once more...



In the lower portion of the Time City.

Song Shuhang and Chu Chu passed through a very long passage and finally entered a wide hall. Except for the portrait of an ancestor of the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion, there wasn't any other object in the hall.

The amount of spiritual qi in the wide hall was three times higher than in the world on the other side of the passage.

Thereupon, Song Shuhang and Chu Chu started practicing in the Lower City.

The two of them immediately displayed their respective techniques.

What Chu Chu practiced was the 'mysterious sword technique' of the Chu Family. It was a cultivation technique that could allow one to directly reach the Fifth Stage Realm. After that, she also practiced a set of basic saber techniques.

She had obtained this set of basic saber techniques from Miss Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue after she signed the contract to become the 'Eighth Cultivator of True Virtue' candidate.

After inheriting the name of 'Eighth Cultivator of True Virtue', one would also inherit the 'Nine Virtues Phoenix Saber'. Since she would perhaps inherit the Phoenix Saber, Chu Chu needed to learn saber techniques as well.

On the other hand, Song Shuhang was mainly practicing the <Immovable Body of the Buddha> and the <Steel Hands Technique> he had obtained from Venerable Seventh Cultivator of

True Virtue.

His objective was to increase the strength of his constitution as much as possible. If one used numbers to describe the situation, the strength of Song Shuhang's current constitution was around 245 points. In other words, it wasn't much inferior to Chu Chu's who was a cultivator of the Second Stage Fourth Dantian Realm.

Song Shuhang's aim was to quickly strengthen his constitution until it reached 250 points. With that, he could finally try to break through to the Third Dantian, the Dragon Claw Dantian, without worries!

After opening the Dragon Claw Dantian, Song Shuhang could finally try to eat raw spirit beast crystals and practice the ‹Thirty-Three Divine Beasts' Technique› again.

Song Shuhang's ‹Immovable Body of the Buddha› had already reached the 'master level'. Therefore, he could practice this supplementary body tempering technique without moving in the slightest.

In comparison, the ‹Steel Hands Technique› was more difficult to practice.

Song Shuhang had been practicing this technique for blacksmiths for the past few days. Whenever Song Shuhang operated the ‹Steel Hands Technique› with all his might, only the fingertips of his ten fingers would be coated with a metallic color.

Let alone taking head-on magical treasures of the Second Stage rank with his bare hands and obtaining a superhuman strength, the current level of his ‹Steel Hands Technique› wasn't even enough to take head-on a normal pointed weapon.

"This situation really makes me miss a certain senior!" Song Shuhang sighed.

The nearby Chu Chu, who had just finished practicing her sword technique, asked, "Are you talking about Venerable White?"

Chu Chu really envied the fact that Song Shuhang had a senior of the Venerable rank by his side to direct his training every day.

"It's not Venerable White. It's another cool senior with a very powerful CPU," Song Shuhang said with a smile.

Although Venerable White was also an excellent teacher and could explain magical techniques and martial skills using simple words and methods, the person Song Shuhang missed the most was Senior Young Master Phoenix Slayer.

What was the best way to properly grasp cultivation techniques? Training hard? No, it was to look for Young Master Phoenix Slayer!

One only needed to borrow his CPU for a while and increase the level of their skills. After the grinding process was complete and one had returned to their body, they needed to use the skill a few times to familiarize oneself with it and reach the master, if not above, level.

"Although I'm not sure what Fellow Daoist Shuhang is talking about, that senior must be pretty good," Chu Chu said.

"Eh, he's indeed excellent." Song Shuhang gave the thumbs up and said, "Right, Miss Chu Chu. I saw that you were practicing basic saber techniques earlier. Do you need any help?"

Song Shuhang's comprehension of basic saber technique was very good. Back then, he was almost tortured to death by that young man wearing green clothes in Venerable White's illusory reality, ending up learning the foundations of saber techniques.

Afterward, when he borrowed Young Master Phoenix Slayer's CPU to practice the <Inverted Scale Saber Technique>, his comprehension of basic saber techniques increased even further and reached a very high level.

Chapter 545: Did Pavilion Master Chu forget about us?

Of course, Chu Chu wouldn't refuse the help of a cultivator that had reached the 'master level' in the field of saber techniques. Although he had cheated to increase his skills, Song Shuhang's comprehension of saber techniques had indeed reached the master level!

Thereupon, Song Shuhang began to teach Chu Chu about the foundations of saber techniques.

The methods he used were the same as that young man wearing green clothes he met in Venerable White's illusory reality—simple and crude.

At first, he explained to Chu Chu how to use all sorts of saber techniques. Then, he picked up his treasured saber Broken Tyrant and decided to let Chu Chu experience the charm of saber technique with her body.

The only problem was that Chu Chu didn't have a saber with her at this time. Therefore, she had no choice but to use her sword to execute saber techniques, increasing the difficulty of the training.

However, Chu Chu's comprehension abilities were very strong, and she could easily learn after following the examples.

This was what it meant to have true talent. Miss Chu Chu wasn't just limited to swords or sabers.

The first day in the Lower City passed with Song Shuhang and Chu Chu practicing.

In the evening, the two of them separately sat in meditation.

The duo had enough fasting pills and didn't need to worry about food.



During the second day in the Lower City.

Song Shuhang and Chu Chu tried to leave the wide hall by traveling through the passageways of the Lower City.

After traveling for half an hour, they arrived in a new, wide hall.

In the wide hall, there were more than thirty huge copper tubs with black crystals below in there.

The copper tubs were something that cultivators could use to take medicinal baths. In the nearby area were also placed several weapons such as sabers, spears, staffs, and so on.

It was the same as timely getting what one needed because everything the two of them required had suddenly come their way. Song Shuhang just lacked a tub to take the medicinal bath, while Miss Chu Chu lacked a saber for her training.

Thereupon, Song Shuhang decided to happily take a bath.

The black crystals below the copper tubs were something akin to firewood. A small spark was enough to ignite them.

After correctly allocating the raw materials and throwing them into the copper tub, Song Shuhang filled the tub with water.

Afterward, he comfortably sighed while bathing inside the medicinal liquid.

Unfortunately, the effects of the medicinal bath weren't as awesome as the ones Song Shuhang experienced in Miss Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue's golden coffin. While he was taking the medicinal bath inside the golden coffin, the strength of his constitution was increasing by 0.1 points every three minutes.

But now, it was increasing by 0.1 points every ten minutes. After two hours, the strength of his constitution had increased by only 1.2 points...

Well... still better than nothing, right?

Moreover, he could bathe in the medicinal liquid two times in a

day for a total increase of constitution by 2.4 points.



In the meantime, Miss Chu Chu casually picked up a saber and started to practice saber techniques.

After she was done practicing saber techniques, she chose a copper tub far away from Song Shuhang's and arranged a curtain before filling it with water.

When she entered the medicinal tub, she lowered her head and looked at her chest.

After she was almost hugged to death the last time, she was lucky to get help from that skilled doctor friend of Song Shuhang. Thanks to him, her wounds had already recovered.

However, her chest had yet to recover its original shape. She didn't even know if it would ever return to how it was before.

But even if it could recover its previous shape, would it be still as bouncy and elastic as it once was?

After all, breasts were like a second face for girls. She couldn't neglect this aspect.



During the third day in the Lower City.

Upon waking up, Miss Chu Chu sat cross-legged and started her practice.

Then, she started breaking through a small realm.

After seeing that Chu Chu had started breaking through, Song Shuhang moved closer and acted as her protector.

The job of a protector wasn't only to stop the outside world from influencing the person that was breaking through, but also to give them a hand if something unexpected happened during the breaking through process, such as feeding them a medicinal pill to

increase their true qi when needed and prevent them from succumbing to their Inner Demon.

Two hours later.

Chu Chu opened her eyes. She had successfully managed to open her Fifth Dantian, the Dragon Palm Dantian!

At this time, an almost complete true dragon had condensed behind her back, only the neck and head were missing.

"Huff~" Chu Chu spat out a mouthful of bad air.

This time, it took her less time to advance in realm than the past. She felt that the entire process had been very natural and smooth.

After all, she had been almost killed not too long ago. The benefits she had obtained from that experience between life and death were enormous.

Besides, she followed Song Shuhang to space a few days ago and was suppressed by the 'Mount Tai Seal'. Afterward, she practiced inside Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue's underground room with increased gravity, obtained a reward inside the grave of Venerable Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue, and also managed to practice inside the Time City. In the past, she experienced only one fortuitous encounter within several years. But now, fortuitous encounters had come her way like a flowing river and she was basically experiencing a new fortuitous encounter every day...

Therefore, it wasn't unexpected that her strength increased so quickly.

After Chu Chu managed to break through, Song Shuhang started his own practice.

When he operated the <Steel Hands Technique> at this time, both palms of his hands were covered by a metallic color, just as though he was wearing a pair of iron gloves.

Practicing the ‹Steel Hands Technique› could also increase the strength of Song Shuhang's constitution. Today, he had already successfully increased the strength of his constitution until reaching 250 points. Therefore, he could already try to break through to the Third Dantian, the Dragon Claw Dantian!

But Song Shuhang wasn't in a hurry and didn't plan to break through today.

He was planning to use today's day to nourish and warm up the true qi inside his dantian as well as adjust his mental energy to reach an optimal condition.

"I'll try to break through tomorrow!" Song Shuhang said softly.



During the fourth day in the Lower City.

Song Shuhang adjusted his state and was now in optimal condition. Afterward, he asked Chu Chu to tell him about her own experience while she broke through the Dragon Claw Dantian.

The last time, he almost failed to break through to the Dragon Tail Dantian due to being inexperienced. Luckily, there was a good-hearted anonymous senior that helped him while he was breaking through and guided him step by step during the whole process.

Speaking of which, who was that kind senior that helped him the last time?

Apparently it wasn't one of the seniors of the Nine Provinces Number One Group that helped him back then!

After Chu Chu told him about her own experience, Song Shuhang started to break through to the Dragon Claw Dantian. At the same time, Chu Chu sat next to him and acted as a protector.

The Dragon Claw Dantian also didn't stop at only one layer. One had to break through the several checkpoints in order to complete

the breakthrough process.

Anyway, it didn't take Song Shuhang much effort to break through to this small realm. At this time, he had a huge quantity of true qi inside his body. He, who was at the Second Stage Second Dantian Realm, had a quantity of true qi that wasn't inferior to that of a cultivator of the Second Stage Fourth Dantian Realm.

The checkpoints of the Dragon Claw Dantian were like mud walls and were destroyed layer after layer under the strength of Song Shuhang's raging true qi.

Around half an hour later.

Song Shuhang had successfully broken through the Dragon Claw Dantian and entered the nourishing stage that came after the opening of the dantian.

In the rear, for some unknown reason, Chu Chu felt a little bit depressed...



Time flew by.

Very soon, the twelve days they had to stay in the Lower City had come to an end.

During these twelve days, Song Shuhang had already used all the raw materials he bought from Miss Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue back then.

At this time, even his realm after breaking through to the Third Dantian, the Dragon Claw Dantian, had thoroughly consolidated. Now that he had an additional dantian to bear the pressure of his true qi, Song Shuhang didn't have to worry about suddenly exploding.

Technically speaking, Song Shuhang could already start eating spirit beast crystals again. However, he decided to wait a bit and strengthen his constitution some more so as to avoid ending up in

a state where his body could explode once more.

At the same time, he had practiced the <Steel Hands Technique> until making it reach the 'beginner level'.

With that, the strength of Song Shuhang's constitution increased again, reaching 265 points. If he could increase the strength of his constitution a bit more, he would end up having a constitution of the Third Stage rank while being in the Second Stage Realm, a case similar to that of Dharma King Creation's.

After a cultivator reached the Third Stage Battle King Realm, their true qi would liquefy. Moreover, its quality was much superior when compared to the true qi of a cultivator of the Second Stage Realm.

In addition, cultivators of the Third Stage had another special characteristic. They could burn the 'liquid true qi' inside their bodies and bring forth the 'Body of the Battle King', obtaining a large increase in fighting power within a short period of time.



"The twelve days are almost over!" Chu Chu held a sword in her left hand and a saber in the right one. She was truly a talented cultivator. She had completely mastered the foundations of saber techniques within these twelve days.

In the future, she would perhaps become an outstanding cultivator specialized both in the way of the sword and the saber.

Chu Chu was somewhat unwilling to leave this place. While training in the lower portion of the Time City, the practicing speed was from five to six times faster than the outside world. In there, she was obtaining the same effects she would if she was continually taking valuable medicinal pills to aid her training!

Therefore, she was a bit unwilling to leave this wondrous place.

Not too far away from her, Song Shuhang was grasping with both hands a large sword.

In the next moment, he jumped up and a blinding light was emitted from the strange sword.

At the same time, Song Shuhang recited a strange incantation. "Holy light, that wicked one seems worth fighting!"

Evil Slashing Holy Light Sword!

It was that technique that had been adapted from a western-style sword technique. Although its raw power wasn't bad, the 'chant' of the technique was just too embarrassing.

However, Song Shuhang was still very happy.

After all, it was a sword technique! A real sword technique!

Although the sword was somewhat big and could be wielded only with two hands, it was still a sword, right?

At last, he, too, could practice a sword technique. Beyond that, the 'Evil Slashing Holy Light Sword' seemed to have a pretty good raw power.

Earlier, Chu Chu tried to cross swords with him.

When she faced head-on the 'Evil Slashing Holy Light Sword', Chu Chu had to burst forth with twenty-one ordinary swords attacks in one go to ward off the attack of Song Shuhang's sword.

Moreover, when Song Shuhang used the sword technique, the sword light released holy flames too. The holy flames were rather interesting. Although they didn't cause much damage, they would stick to the enemy.

In addition, if one was hungry, they could use them to cook as well!



Since their days in the 'Lower City' of the Time City were almost over, Song Shuhang and Chu Chu didn't waste their time and practiced until the early hours of the morning.

"Now, we only need to wait for Pavilion Master Chu to bring us out," Song Shuhang said while holding the large sword with both hands. He looked incredibly tired at this time.

Chu Chu was sitting cross-legged next to him while wearing women's clothing made from a curtain stitched together. She looked at the Time City behind them, somewhat unwilling to part with it.

It was such a good place! How wonderful would it be if she could stay here for a few more days!



However, the two of them waited for a long time—they waited for more than half a day—but Pavilion Master Chu, who should have come to pick them up, never came.

Chu Chu furrowed her brows and said, "What happened? It should be already time for us to leave the Time City."

Song Shuhang pondered for a moment and said, "Perhaps... Pavilion Master Chu is still sleeping? She was in a strange state the last time, and seemed very tired. Perhaps she just overslept? After all, the flow of time in this place is different than the outside world. One day in the outside world is equivalent to twelve days in the Lower City. If she oversleeps for just a few hours in the outside world, several days will pass in this place."

A happy expression flashed through Chu Chu's eyes as she said, "In that case, shouldn't we keep practicing for a few more days?"

Song Shuhang was somewhat worried about Li Yinzhu. However, they couldn't get out of the Time City without Pavilion Master Chu's help.

Since they couldn't do anything about the matter, the best course of action was to follow Chu Chu's advice and keep practicing.

After all, practicing in the lower portion of the Time City was very effective.



Therefore, the duo returned to the Time City and kept practicing.

One day, two days, three days...

Very soon, another twelve days passed... however, Pavilion Master Chu didn't come to find them.

Song Shuhang had started to wonder whether Fairy Chu had actually forgotten about them...

Chu Chu was very happy to be able to practice in the Time City every day. She felt that she was getting stronger and stronger with each day of practice, and was extremely pleased about it. Chu Chu was a simple girl, and it was rather easy to satisfy her.

Song Shuhang had practiced the <Steel Hands Technique> until reaching the intermediate level, and even the whole set of the <Holy Light Sword Technique> had reached the beginner level.

Although he had already finished the raw materials necessary for the medicinal bath, Song Shuhang had managed to increase the strength of his constitution until reaching 275 points by relying on the continuous use of the <Steel Hands Technique> within these twelve days.

In addition, he finally found the time to research a certain thing within these days... the human puppet inside his size-reducing purse!

Then he discovered that the damnable thing could eat spirit stones!

The previous time, when he bought the medicinal materials from Miss Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue and received those three spirit stones of the Third Stage back, he put them in the size-reducing purse... but now, those spirit stones had disappeared without traces!

Song Shuhang felt his heart twitching in pain. After all, those were three spirit stones of the Third Stage! It was something he would obtain after working for more than half a day in the mines!

Why did those spirit stones he put in the size-reducing purse suddenly disappear?

Song Shuhang got curious and picked the last two spirit stones of the Fourth Stage he had left. Then, he threw that half-used spirit stone into the size-reducing purse.

Next, he shook the purse a bit and finally discovered the culprit... it was that human puppet! That thing could eat spirit stones!

"My heart is truly in pain at this time..." During the experiment, Song Shuhang even lost that half-used spirit stone of the Fourth Stage.

With how things were, Song Shuhang didn't dare to place any other spirit stone in the size-reducing purse.

In addition, he studied the small human puppet every day after practice.

Unfortunately, without enough energy to power it up, the human puppet wasn't any different from an ordinary little toy. Besides, Song Shuhang wasn't an expert when it came to puppets. Therefore, he didn't obtain any useful information after studying the puppet.

"Maybe I should wait until I return to Venerable White's side and give him the puppet so that he can study it?" Song Shuhang muttered to himself.

After all, Senior White was extremely adept at disassembling things.

It was regrettable that he wasn't as much adept at assembling them back, and even if he could assemble them back, those things could explode at any time.

"Whatever... it's not like this thing belongs to me. I don't really care even if Senior White ruins it. It's settled then. I'll give it to Senior White the next time I see him so that he can disassemble it." Song Shuhang had made up his mind.

❄ ❄ ❄

"Even today, Pavilion Master Chu didn't come to pick us up," Chu Chu said.

She and Song Shuhang had stayed in the 'Lower City' of the Time City of 24 days already.

But Fairy Chu still hadn't come to look for them.

"Yeah, and it has already been two days in the outside world," Song Shuhang replied.

It would be wonderful if the phone had a signal at this time. In that case, they could simply call Fairy Chu and tell her to come to the Time City to pick them up.

Chu Chu pondered for a moment and said, "Fellow Daoist Shuhang, should we return to the 'Lower City' of the Time City and explore its depths? Perhaps we will find a way out."

Even if she wanted to stay in this place and keep practicing, looking for an exit wasn't a bad idea. With that, they would have a way out in case there was an emergency.

Chapter 546: Miss Chu Chu's unbelievable expression

Even after all the delay, Pavilion Master Chu didn't come over to the Time City to pick Song Shuhang and Chu Chu up.

Thereupon, Song Shuhang and Chu Chu explored the various passageways in the Time City, as well as the rooms, caves, and halls inside, after their daily training. They wanted to see if they could find a way to leave the Time City.

When Song Shuhang and Chu Chu entered the 'Time City', it was Pavilion Master Chu that brought them there. At that time, the restrictions and the maze of passages surrounding the Time City were in an inactive state. As such, it was going to be quite difficult if they wanted to get out of the Lower City of the Time City without Pavilion Master Chu's help.

In the blink of an eye, another two days passed.

Within these two days, Song Shuhang and Chu Chu explored nearly seventy rooms, halls, and caves... but they were still unable to find a way out of the Time City.

At this time, the duo was in a predicament because not all the halls of the Time City could be regarded as 'safe'.

Song Shuhang and Chu Chu had entered an underground arena with a lot of bronze statues inside a few minutes ago.

There were 108 bronze statues in the underground arena, and all of them had the strength of the Second Stage rank.

Had it been a one versus one match, Song Shuhang and Chu Chu wouldn't have been scared of the statues.

But as soon as they entered the underground arena, the 108 bronze statues were activated all together and arranged themselves according to a special formation, completely surrounding Song

Shuhang and Chu Chu.

Even by joining their forces, Song Shuhang and Chu Chu were able to barely resist against the attacks of the 108 bronze statues.

Chu Chu's sword light flashed through the air and got rid of the three bronze statues before her eyes. "Fellow Daoist Shuhang, let's quickly get out of this place! These bronze statues don't seem to suffer from fatigue. We won't have any strength left if we keep fighting them!"

Song Shuhang used his fist of steel and sent flying the bronze statue in front of him, saying, "Miss Chu Chu, try to get me some time, two breaths are enough! I'll operate the ⟨Inverted Scale Saber Technique—Dragon Dance Style⟩ at full strength and hold the bronze statues back. We can use the opportunity to get away from here!"

The ⟨Inverted Scale Saber Technique⟩ didn't have any attack power, but its defensive abilities were very good!

"Sure, no problem!" Chu Chu replied. At the same time, she reduced the range of her sword qi and formed a circle, encompassing Song Shuhang and protecting him.

Song Shuhang took a deep breath and operated the true qi inside his body. Afterward, he used the ⟨Thirty-Three Divine Beasts' Technique⟩ in conjunction with the ⟨Inverted Scale Saber Technique⟩, bringing his power into full play.

Immediately after, he shouted, "⟨Dragon Dance Style⟩!"

In the next moment, the true qi turned into a lifelike dragon made of saber light that wrapped Song Shuhang's body, forming a tight defense around him that repelled the bronze statues trying to come over. Even Chu Chu was forced to take two steps backward due to the saber light of the ⟨Dragon Dance Style⟩.

Song Shuhang immediately controlled the defensive ring of the ⟨Dragon Dance Style⟩ and temporarily opened a gap in the place

Chu Chu was standing.

The dragon-shaped true qi continuously danced in the air as the range of its defense expanded, heading toward the exit!

"Now is the chance! Miss Chu Chu, quickly enter the range of the defense of my ⟨Dragon Dance Style⟩ and let's get out of here together!" Song Shuhang called out.

Chu Chu immediately took back her ring of sword qi and jumped toward the gap Song Shuhang had opened inside the ⟨Dragon Dance Style⟩, getting inside the defensive barrier.

"Success, let's get going! Ahahah!" Song Shuhang laughed out loud.



But right at this time, a wooden box automatically drilled out of Song Shuhang's size-reducing purse, starting to float next to him.

In the next moment, the wooden box opened on its own and revealed a magical rune inside... it was precisely Venerable White's Ten Thousand Mile Flying Escape Technique!

Song Shuhang had already stayed inside the lower portion of the Time City for 26 days.

In addition, he had already spent another four days visiting Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue's immortal cave, exploring the grave of Venerable Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue and visiting the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion.

Therefore, it had been 30 days in total since he had come to space.

Venerable White's Ten Thousand Mile Flying Escape Technique was supposed to automatically activate after 30 days; the countdown started as soon as Song Shuhang was launched into space.

Now that the time was over, the Ten Thousand Mile Flying

Escape Technique that Venerable White had prepared finally activated!

The runes turned into a ring of light particles that surrounded Song Shuhang.

* * *

Not even 0.01 seconds passed since the time the wooden box came out of the size-reducing purse to when the Ten Thousand Mile Flying Escape Technique was activated.

Neither Song Shuhang nor Chu Chu had the time to react.

The light of the Ten Thousand Mile Flying Escape Technique shrouded Song Shuhang and made him fly upward!

"No! This is too sudden~" Song Shuhang called out. It wasn't only him... even the saber qi of the <Dragon Dance Style> was picked up and brought upward! Afterward, Song Shuhang whizzed out of the underground arena with the 108 bronze statues inside.

Song Shuhang suddenly left—just like that. Everything had been so sudden that Miss Chu Chu was still standing in her original position with a dumbfounded look on her face.

She was looking at Shuhang 'pewing~' away with an unbelievable expression on her face.

Chu Chu had just taken back her ring of sword qi and was preparing to rely on the defense provided by Song Shuhang's <Dragon Dance Style> to run away from the encirclement of those 108 bronze statues...

But now, Song Shuhang had suddenly flown away together with the saber qi of the <Dragon Dance Style>, leaving Chu Chu without defenses and completely exposed to the attacks of the bronze statues.

"Isn't that the same as backstabbing your teammate?!" Chu Chu wanted to cry but had no tears.

At this time, tens of bronze statues had formed a circle around her, attacking her simultaneously. In the meantime, the remaining ninety or so statues formed a big battle formation and surrounded Chu Chu to stop her from escaping.

The 108 bronze statues versus Chu Chu, second round, start!

Even with Song Shuhang's help, Chu Chu could barely hold on against the formation of the 108 bronze statues!

Now that she was alone, she really had no hope of resisting them!



Song Shuhang could only helplessly wave at the distant Chu Chu. As soon as the Ten Thousand Mile Flying Escape Technique activated, he entered the 'spectator mode' and was unable to control the flying technique.

He had no alternative but to send a message to Chu Chu via secret sound transmission. "Chu Chu, try to follow behind me once you manage to break through the formation of the bronze statues."

There was the possibility that the Ten Thousand Mile Flying Escape Technique could allow him to leave the lower portion of the Time City.

Then, just in this fashion, Song Shuhang was shrouded in a layer of light and forced to shuttle back and forth at high speed within the passageways of the Lower City.

Nevertheless, the current version of the Ten Thousand Mile Flying Escape Technique seemed to have been improved.

Song Shuhang remembered that he bumped into all kinds of obstacles back when Venerable White gave him that tattoo of the Calabash Brothers with the 'Ten Thousand Mile Flying Escape Technique' engraved on it.

Back then, he bumped into the back of 'Cold Flame Sword', a member of the Penniless Thief Sect, and was forced to travel

alongside him for a long time.

But now, it felt as though the Ten Thousand Mile Flying Escape Technique had a certain intelligence. Whenever something appeared in front of it, it would quickly dodge it.

As long as nothing unexpected happened, he should be able to leave the Time City.



The layer of light was like an experienced driver and would timely turn left and right whenever there was a need to. In the end, it thrust into a jet-black passageway.

All the passageways in the lower portion of the Time City were brightly illuminated, but this jet-black tunnel seemed different from the others... was it possible that it was the exit?

Song Shuhang's mood got much better.

The jet-black passageway was very long, and even after flying inside for more than ten minutes with the incredibly high speed of the layer of light, he was still unable to see the end.

Afterward, as the layer of light traveled for around half an hour, a bright light suddenly appeared before Shuhang's eyes.

He was about to get out!

Since the end coordinates of Ten Thousand Mile Flying Escape Technique were set on Venerable White's body, it was very likely that Song Shuhang would directly leave the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion and return to Earth.

Such being the case, he wouldn't have the opportunity to say goodbye to Pavilion Master Chu. Actually, it was pretty embarrassing for a guest to sneakily leave without even saying goodbye.

There was also Li Yinzhu. Song Shuhang was likewise unable to pick her up. Therefore, he could only hope that Chu Chu would

take care of her after she managed to get out of the Time City.

Although Li Yinzhu wasn't his daughter, Song Shuhang had been deeply influenced by the memories of the loose cultivator Li Tiansu he'd experienced back then. For this reason, he felt very close to Li Yinzhu and really cared about her.



Just as he was in deep thoughts, the layer of light had already barged into that 'light' ahead of them.

Immediately after, Song Shuhang felt as though he had bumped into a soft barrier.

Then, his whole body was forcefully thrust into the barrier due to the strength of the impact caused by the Ten Thousand Mile Flying Escape Technique!

"I'm finally out... Huh? Wait a moment, what the hell is this place?!" Song Shuhang stared at the space before his eyes.

What appeared before his eyes wasn't the scenery outside the Time City or the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion... it was instead a huge hollow tree.

Inside the tree hollow was a huge jellyfish with a luminous body.

There were tens of thousands of tentacles made of light linked to its luminous body, spreading out and covering the whole tree hollow.

"If it's not the exit... what is this place?" Just as Song Shuhang saw the big, dazzling jellyfish, his hair stood on end.



As though it had reacted to the presence of the intruder, the countless tentacles of the luminous jellyfish rushed toward Song Shuhang.

Even the agile Ten Thousand Mile Flying Escape Technique was unable to dodge this attack that literally filled all the surrounding

space! Even if it was ten times more agile, it wouldn't stand a chance against this AOE attack that covered all the space within the tree hollow.

However, the tentacles of the jellyfish didn't directly attack Song Shuhang's body.

They arranged themselves in a radius of two meters with Song Shuhang as the center, tightly wrapping him up. It was the same as a silkworm spinning a cocoon. At this time, the tentacles had formed a thick cocoon around Song Shuhang.

After the cocoon was spun, something akin to suckers appeared on each tentacle.

The suckers contracted and pasted themselves onto the layer of light generated from the Ten Thousand Mile Flying Escape Technique.

In the next moment, the layer of light that the 'Ten Thousand Mile Flying Escape Technique' had generated was transformed into pure spiritual energy and absorbed by the tentacles...

It unexpectedly ate the Ten Thousand Mile Flying Escape Technique?

Song Shuhang sighed faintly... such bad luck!

It seemed he had used up all the luck he had saved up during the past few days. Now, it was time for his unlucky life to begin!

As soon as the layer of light of the 'Ten Thousand Mile Flying Escape Technique' disappeared, Song Shuhang felt like suffocating... because there was unexpectedly no air within the tree hollow!

There wasn't any gravity, either. Therefore, Song Shuhang was floating in midair while entrapped by the cocoon made of tentacles.

After swallowing down the Ten Thousand Mile Flying Escape Technique, the countless tentacles of light started to wriggle. In the next moment, the tips of the tentacle headed toward Song Shuhang.

"<Inverted Scale Saber Technique—Dragon Dance Style>!" Song Shuhang wielded the treasured saber Broken Tyrant and his true qi burst forth, changing into a true dragon dancing in the air.

The saber qi had transformed into a lifelike dragon.

But just as the <Dragon Dance Style> took shape and transformed into a dragon, the suckers on the various tentacles quickly pasted on it. Then, the suckers contracted, and the dragon-shaped saber qi of the <Dragon Dance Style> was completely absorbed.

It was swallowed down by the suckers just like the Ten Thousand Mile Flying Escape Technique earlier.

It can absorb true qi and spiritual energy even if they are not in their pure energy form... Just what is this jellyfish! Song Shuhang had a very bad premonition.

Whether it was the layer of light of Venerable White's Ten Thousand Mile Flying Escape Technique or the saber qi of his own <Dragon Dance Style>, they were easily transformed into pure energy and absorbed by the jellyfish.

The luminous jellyfish seemed to be the natural enemy of cultivators!

Song Shuhang grabbed the treasured saber Broken Tyrant.

After eating the true qi of the <Dragon Dance Style>, the luminous jellyfish seemed to have eaten its fill.

It didn't try to invade Song Shuhang with its tentacles, but still maintained the cocoon around his body, keeping him trapped inside.

Is it not planning to attack me on its own volition?

Song Shuhang operated his true qi and drew the rune of the Turtle Breathing Technique in the center of each palm. Afterward, he joined his palms together and activated the runes of the technique with his mental energy, displaying the Turtle Breathing Technique.

The most important thing to do inside the tree hollow devoid of air was to find a way not to suffocate.

But just as Song Shuhang joined his palms together and activated the runes of the technique, one of the tentacles forming the cocoon stretched out at lightning speed and bumped into his palm.

In the next moment, the runes of the Turtle Breathing Technique were transformed into pure energy and absorbed by the tentacles of the luminous jellyfish.

"..." Song Shuhang.

It seemed that the luminous jellyfish didn't attack him, because it was waiting for him to use his true qi to display magical or saber techniques so that it could absorb it!

But if this keeps going on, I'll die due to the lack of air!

Song Shuhang grabbed the treasured saber Broken Tyrant and put his strength in both hands. If true qi and spiritual energy were useless... he could only rely on pure, physical strength.

Shuhang started to ruthlessly slash after grabbing the saber. He didn't use any true qi, just pure physical strength.

"Ding, ding, ding~"

A series of sparks flew out.

But each and every one of those soft-looking tentacles was harder than a godly weapon.

Although the treasured saber Broken Tyrant could cut the physical body of a cultivator of the Fourth Stage, it didn't leave so much as a scratch on the tentacles.

As expected, physical attacks were also useless. After all, the jellyfish had easily taken care of the Ten Thousand Mile Flying Escape Technique that Venerable White had prepared. Even if it wasn't an existence of the Venerable rank, it was surely an existence of the Sixth Stage True Monarch rank!

Song Shuhang couldn't use saber qi, and magical techniques were likewise useless...

Such being the case, he could only give that a try!

Song Shuhang put away the treasured saber Broken Tyrant and took out a huge two-handed sword.

〈Holy Light Sword Technique〉— Evil Slashing Holy Light Sword!

The raw power of this sword technique was pretty good, but it was nowhere near enough to break the tentacles of the jellyfish.

Song Shuhang's true aim was to summon the holy flames that appeared whenever the sword technique was used.

Although the power of the holy flames wasn't that high, they were ravenous, sticky, and very difficult to extinguish. Moreover, could the jellyfish eat this stuff imported from the West as well?

The Evil Slashing Holy Light Sword bumped into the tentacles of the jellyfish.

Another jingling sound was heard, but the tentacles of the jellyfish were still undamaged.

But the holy flames were now stuck to the tentacles of the jellyfish and had started to burn them up.

The holy flames had very low lethality, and they wouldn't be able to harm the jellyfish even if they kept burning for another hundred years.

The suckers on the tentacles of the jellyfish activated once more and transformed a large amount of the holy flames into pure energy, starting to absorb it.

It's not over yet! Song Shuhang displayed another small magical technique... the 'fire controlling art'!

The 'fire controlling art' could manipulate the holy flames as well. Song Shuhang had confirmed this point 14 days ago when he was practicing together with Chu Chu.

Right at this time, the holy flames happened to be attached to the tentacles of the jellyfish.

Under the effects of the 'fire controlling art', the holy flames started to burn frantically... the aim wasn't to injure the opposite party, but to increase the area where the flames were 'burning'.

The bigger the area where the holy flames were burning, the bigger the probability that the jellyfish would move its tentacles away to put out the fire, giving Song Shuhang a small opportunity to escape.

In the end... the tentacles indeed moved.

Thirty or so tentacles behind Song Shuhang twisted and combined into a large stick that headed toward him...

Chapter 547: 88,888 voices!

"Bang~"

The surprise attack of the tentacles that had twisted and transformed into a stick failed. A small golden shield had managed to block the attack.

The ghost spirit had been hiding inside Song Shuhang's Heart Aperture all along and had used its unique senses as a ghost spirit to help its master monitor the situation around him. Just as the tentacles tried to hit Shuhang, the ghost spirit automatically used its innate skill and blocked the attack with its golden shield.

But in the next moment, up to a hundred suckers appeared on the surface of that stick made of tentacles.

The suckers firmly attached themselves to the small golden shield and activated. Immediately after, even the small golden shield of the ghost spirit was transformed into pure energy and absorbed by the luminous jellyfish.

Even an innate skill such as the golden shield was transformed into pure energy and absorbed!

"I'm not afraid of you making a move... because I'm more afraid of you NOT making a move! Fire controlling art, make the fire burn at maximum intensity!" Song Shuhang clenched his teeth and operated the 'fire controlling art' with all his might, making the holy flames burn with even more strength.

Hopefully, he would be able to induce the jellyfish to move some more and get the opportunity to escape.

"Buzz, buzz." Right at this time, the luminous jellyfish emitted a strange sound. Then, after it was done absorbing the energy of the small golden shield of the ghost spirit, it withdrew its tentacles and maintained the 'cocoon' around Song Shuhang.

Afterward, it didn't move in the slightest and allowed the holy

flames to burn on its tentacles. A little bit later, it activated its suckers and started to slowly transform the holy flames into pure energy, absorbing them.

"..." Song Shuhang.

Song Shuhang had no alternative but to stop using the 'fire controlling art'. Increasing the area and intensity of the holy flames only created additional energy for the opposite party. It was just a waste of time.



Next, Song Shuhang didn't move in the slightest and tried to find a way out of the situation.

Since he wasn't moving, the tentacles of the jellyfish weren't moving, either.

But just as Song was unable to resist and tried to use the Turtle Breathing Technique, the tentacles quickly stretched out and transformed the runes on Song Shuhang's palms into pure energy, absorbing it.

If he couldn't think of anything, Song Shuhang would suffocate for real and die in that place.

It's bad... I'm at my limit without the Turtle Breathing Technique... Song Shuhang thought to himself.

But right at this time, the cocoon that was tightly wrapping him up started to wriggle. Then, a small mouth that started to emit white mist appeared on each of the internal tentacles of the cocoon... was it possible that they were releasing air?

At first, the luminous jellyfish kept interrupting Song Shuhang's Turtle Breathing Technique, but now, it was giving him air on own initiative? What was it planning to do?

Was it possible that there was something wrong with the air? Who knew, perhaps it was poisoned?

However, Song Shuhang had really no choice at this time and was at a dead end.

Of course, he wasn't planning to casually inhale the air without taking any precautions.

Song Shuhang took the 'Gentle Dao Pill 5th Star edition' that Senior Ancient Lake Temple had gifted him out of his size-reducing purse. It was a medicinal pill that one could take orally to treat and heal their wounds. In addition, it also had a certain detoxifying effect.

Song Shuhang put the Gentle Dao Pill in his mouth and cautiously took a breath of air... if there was something wrong with the air the luminous jellyfish had released, he would immediately swallow down the Gentle Dao Pill to counter its negative effects.

Song Shuhang spat the bad air in his lungs out and took a deep breath.

The fresh air entered his body and soothed his lungs that were on the verge of exploding.

In the next moment, a feeling of happiness welled up in Song Shuhang's heart.

The air was very clean, and there wasn't any trace of poison inside.

But just to be safe, whether there actually was poison in the air and regardless if the medicinal pill could stop it, Song Shuhang still swallowed down the 'Gentle Dao Pill'.

Suddenly, just as Song Shuhang swallowed down the 'Gentle Dao Pill', he felt a burst of dizziness rush up to his head. Immediately after, his mind became blank, and everything around him started spinning.

In the next moment, he collapsed and lost consciousness.

"Buzz, buzz." The luminous jellyfish made another strange sound. It almost felt as though it was evilly laughing...

Soon after, it dragged Song Shuhang toward its body while maintaining the cocoon around him. Next, a mouth suddenly appeared on the body of the jellyfish and swallowed Song Shuhang down.



After an unknown amount of time, Song Shuhang finally regained his senses.

I actually fainted after eating the medicinal pill... that's the opposite of what should have actually happened!

After opening his eyes, he looked all around. After a quick look, he discovered that he was in a strange place.

There were many mirrors all around him, and countless Song Shuhangs were reflected inside these mirrors. There were both gravity and air inside this room full of mirrors.

In addition, there was a faintly discernible black sphere with an irregular surface three meters away from him.

The black sphere was emitting a faint radiance, illuminating the strange room full of mirrors.

"What is this place?" Song Shuhang muttered to himself.

He turned his head around and shot a look at the surrounding area. At the same time, his image reflected in the several mirrors also turned its head around and looked at the surroundings.

In the whole room, there was nothing else aside from mirrors.

The only exception was that shining black sphere.

"Was I brought here by the luminous jellyfish?" Song Shuhang pondered for a moment and took out the treasured saber Broken

Tyrant, poking at the black sphere in front of him.

Then, just as though it was an illusion, the tip of the treasured saber Broken Tyrant directly passed through the black sphere as it poked at it.

"Is this thing an illusion?" Song Shuhang furrowed his brows and prepared to take the saber back.

But right at this time, the black sphere actually followed the saber back and quickly rolled in Song Shuhang's direction.

The black sphere wasn't an illusory object. Although Song Shuhang couldn't touch it, the black sphere could come in contact with both Song Shuhang and the saber.

The black sphere rolled toward him very fast. Song Shuhang didn't even have the time to let go of the saber when the sphere had already touched his fingers.

In the next moment, countless things poured into Song Shuhang's head from the black sphere.



Immediately after, 88,888 voices echoed in Song Shuhang's head in unison, talking about topics that Shuhang didn't understand in the least.

The number of the voices was simply too high, and after the voices overlapped, everything turned into a buzzing sound. Song Shuhang was unable to differentiate between the voices or understand what they were trying to say.

He felt as though his head was going to explode—even listening to Dharma King Creation's song from close range didn't have such an impact on him.

But the most absurd thing was that he knew the exact number of the voices... he knew that there were 88,888 voices altogether! Not one less, not one more!

"Is this some kind of deathly trap?!" Song Shuhang held his head with both hands. At this time, the only thing missing was someone popping out of nowhere and saying 'You're already dead' with Song Shuhang's head deforming and exploding.

If it was really a trap, the one that had arranged it must have been affected by an obsessive-compulsive disorder! They decided to place exactly 88,888 voices inside~ such a perfectly balanced trap~

Dammit! It feels as though my head is going to explode! If all the voices keep speaking at the same time, I'm really going to turn insane!

Song Shuhang stretched out his hand and prepared to punch himself in the head. He wanted to see whether he could knock himself out.

But just as this thought flashed through his mind, the 88,888 voices in his head became even louder, and the speed at which they were talking increased by three times.

The CPU of Song Shuhang's brain was overloaded and his whole body crashed. At this time, he felt as though he had been struck by an 'immobilizing technique' and was thus completely unable to move.

The 88,888 voices continued to reverberate in Song Shuhang's head, filling his head with all kinds of mysterious information.

While he was in this state, Song Shuhang's brain lost the ability to think. He had no choice but to passively listen to the 88,888 voices with a stupid look on his face.



In the world of cultivators, some magical or cultivation techniques possessed the power of the natural laws or of the great truth.

Therefore, it was impossible to write these peerless cultivation techniques or extraordinary magical techniques down with

something as simple as 'words', and even if one were to forcefully use letters to write them down, the letters would be destroyed by the power of the principle of the world...

As a consequence, it was extremely difficult to pass down these peerless cultivation techniques or extraordinary magical techniques.

Cultivation techniques that possessed not too much of the power of the natural laws or of the great truth could be passed down to the younger generation through jade strips or similar materials.

But cultivation techniques that possessed the complete power of the natural laws or of the great truth were impossible to write down on those jade strips that were usually used to pass down techniques. Even the creator of the cultivation or magical technique found it very difficult to pass it down to the disciples through the mere usage of 'words'.

For this very reason, many valuable magical techniques and peerless cultivation techniques had been lost forever due to the inability to pass them down.

One could say that ancient cultivators really racked their brains to think of methods to pass down their peerless cultivation techniques and extraordinary magical techniques...

Time slowly passed by.

In the end, after a full 45 hours and almost two days' worth of time...

The 88,888 voices in Song Shuhang's head were about to stop with their mumbling!

At last, the voices shouted in unison, and the buzzing sound that had continued for full 45 hours stopped.

Song Shuhang weakly lay on the ground.

In the next moment, fresh blood started to flow out of his eyes, nose, ears, and mouth.



One day later.

Song Shuhang finally regained his senses.

His head was aching, and he felt as if it was going to split into two. On the other hand, a cool and refreshing feeling was transmitted from the place between his eyebrows.

Song Shuhang propped himself up. At the same time, a rumbling sound was transmitted from his hungry stomach. Hence, he quickly opened his size-reducing purse and took out a fasting pill, swallowing it down.

Fasting pills also had different effects according to their different qualities.

If the average man was to take an ordinary fasting pill, they wouldn't need to eat for one month. If it was a cultivator of the First Stage, they wouldn't need to eat for ten days. But if it was a cultivator of the Second Stage, the effects would last only for four or five days.

The fasting pills Song Shuhang had with him were a gift from Su Clan's Sixteen. One fasting pill was enough to keep a cultivator of the First Stage sated for more than two months, and even a cultivator of the Second Stage didn't need to eat for around one month.

Su Clan's Sixteen wanted to give him fasting pills of an even higher quality, but Song Shuhang's cultivation level was too low back then. If the quality of the fasting pills was too high, the pills would fill him to the point of bursting.

But even after Song Shuhang swallowed the fasting pill down, he still felt very hungry.

Therefore, he put another fasting pill in his mouth and swallowed it down.

Then, another one, another one, and another one...

After eating eight consecutive fasting pills, he felt that his belly was only 70% full.

"For how long have I been unconscious, to the point that I became so hungry?" Song Shuhang muttered to himself. At the same time, he raised his head and looked in the mirror on the side.

His face reflected in the mirror was deathly pale, and it felt as though he didn't have any vitality.

Moreover, there were traces of dried up blood around his eyes, nose, mouth, and ears.

But what piqued his interest was the area between his eyebrows. A bronze-colored radiance was frequently emitted from that place. The presence of the bronze light signified that his mental energy had increased once again. The quantitative change had triggered a qualitative change as well, carrying out a strange mutation.

The amount of mental energy he possessed right now was already something that didn't belong to the realm of a cultivator of the Second Stage.

Recently, Song Shuhang had carefully looked up the info concerning the 'constitution' and 'mental energy' of cultivators. Therefore, he knew that the bronze light implied that his mental energy had reached the Third Stage rank.

"I'm in big trouble." Song Shuhang grimaced.

Chapter 548: A billion years old... rock

As it was circulating in the area between his eyebrows, his mental energy was intermittently emitting a cool and refreshing aura.

Then, as the cool and refreshing aura accumulated and reached a certain degree, it changed into a dazzling bronze light emitting from Song Shuhang's glabella.

At this time, Shuhang felt that the area between his eyebrows was slightly swelled and aching. The pain implied that his constitution was unable to keep up with the sudden increase of mental energy.

Besides, the feeling of pain would become more and more intense as time passed by.

Technically speaking, one could condense and materialize the originally invisible mental energy only after reaching the Third Stage.

The bronze-colored light implied that his mental energy had transformed and entered an embryonic stage. In this stage, the mental energy was the same as an infant, and although it was rather weak while attacking directly, it still had many wondrous uses.

Then, after strengthening itself along with the cultivator, the color of the mental energy would also change and become bright silver. The silver color implied that the mental energy had matured. It also meant that the cultivator had enough mental energy to practice sword riding techniques and fly in the sky.

After incessantly speaking inside Song Shuhang's mind for two days and two nights, the 88,888 voices had pushed his mental energy directly to the Third Stage rank.

Song Shuhang had just managed to increase the strength of his constitution with much difficulty, but now, his mental energy had

suddenly increased and his body was once again unable to keep up with it...

At this time, the level of his mental energy had far exceeded the amount his body could withstand. The disparity between the two was so big that it was impossible for Song Shuhang to close the gap by practicing a body tempering technique such as the *Steel Hands Technique*.

"What a headache... although it's a good thing, it's still very troubling. I need to find another way to quickly increase the strength of my constitution," Song Shuhang muttered to himself.

Apparently, no matter how much he strengthened his constitution, it was still not enough.

Should he follow Dharma King Creation's example and learn a body tempering cultivation technique? At the end of the day, Dharma King Creation's *Warring Buddha's True Body* was rather cool. Whenever the technique was displayed, he would turn into a Super Saiyan, a bald Super Saiyan.



After wiping the traces of blood from his face, Song Shuhang rested a bit. Afterward, he shot a look all around. He was still inside that room of full of mirrors, but the only source of light in the room, the black sphere, had disappeared.

After losing its only source of light, the room had, on the contrary, become brighter. Each of the mirrors was emitting light at this time.

"Now then, what was the deal with those 88,888 voices?" Song Shuhang rubbed his temples and tried to recall those 88,888 voices that had nearly driven him insane by continuously talking for almost two days and two nights.

Dammit... my head hurts too much. As soon as he tried to recall the 88,888 voices, Song Shuhang's complexion became pale and his

body lost its strength.

Therefore, he stretched out his hand and leaned against the nearby mirror, gasping for breath.

"Buzz~"

Suddenly, a buzzing sound was transmitted beside his ear. At the same time, he felt as though the right hand he had used to lean against the mirror had been pushed into a meat grinder. He felt a piercing pain transmit from the hand to the rest of the body and huge beads of sweat started to slide down from his forehead.

"What happened?" Song Shuhang took his hand back. Immediately after, he saw that hundreds of wounds had appeared on his right hand.

The wounds weren't too deep, and he could easily heal them within a few minutes by relying on the current strength of his constitution... but the pain he was feeling was absolutely excruciating. It felt as though the nerves controlling his sense of pain had magnified the sensation by hundreds of times!

"Strange... I'm pretty sure no one attacked me just now!" Song Shuhang muttered to himself. After all, he had only used his hand to lean against the mirror, why had so many wounds suddenly appeared on his left hand?

Song Shuhang shot a glance at the mirror he leaned against earlier. Was it possible that there was something wrong with the mirror?

At this time, Song Shuhang's picture was reflected upside down inside that mirror.

As he gazed at the mirror, the 'he' in the mirror also gazed back at him.

After a short moment, Song Shuhang discovered that there was something wrong with the 'he' in the mirror.

To be precise, there was something wrong with the eyes!

At this time, numerous runes had appeared in the eyes of the Song Shuhang reflected in the mirror. Then, after the runes completely filled his eyes, they unexpectedly came out of his eye sockets and darted ahead!

It's not the 'me' in the mirror that has some problems... the problem lies in my eyes!

Immediately after, the runes in Song Shuhang's eyes fell on the mirror and formed the indistinct picture of a 'clock'.

The hands of the clock started to quickly move counter-clockwise, instantly completing hundreds of cycles.

Next, the runes that formed the picture of the clock scattered, leaving the mirror and returning to Song Shuhang's eyes.



As soon as the runes returned to his eyes, Song Shuhang unconsciously muttered, "It's ordinary glass that was strengthened with the usage of a magical technique. It's harder than steel... but it's unknown when it was manufactured or who manufactured it. Fairy Chu carried it here while building the Time City. Afterward, she put all the mirrors together and cast a lighting technique on them."

After saying this much, Song Shuhang paused.

Eh?

Why did I suddenly start to speak?

When he returned to his senses, he discovered that he was telling the story of the mirror in front of him.

Apparently, the mirror was made of ordinary glass and was strengthened by an expert with the usage of a magical technique. Afterward, Fairy Chu moved it here while she was building the 'room of mirrors'.

In other words, the 'room of mirrors' is Fairy Chu's work? Such being the case, is the luminous jellyfish also related to Fairy Chu?

Song Shuhang rubbed his brows to alleviate the pain he was feeling and tried to put his thoughts in order.

* * *

Did I unknowingly use a magical technique earlier? Moreover, the magical technique I used seemed to be something similar to an 'appraisal technique'...

Of course, it wasn't something as simple as an ordinary appraisal technique! Earlier, Song Shuhang saw that the runes flashing through his eyes fell on the mirror and formed the picture of a 'clock'.

Such being the case, is it possible that it's a magical technique related to time?

Anyway, how does it work, and how do I use it?

"Clang, clang, clang~"

Just as he was in deep thoughts, the two mirrors in front of Song Shuhang automatically opened, revealing a passage that brought out of the 'room of mirrors'.

It was quite obvious that someone had been paying attention to him all this time. Then, after making sure that he had accepted the inheritance and learned the secret technique, they opened the exit for him.

Is it possible that it was the luminous jellyfish that opened the exit? After all, it's very likely that it was the one that brought me here...

* * *

Song Shuhang grasped the treasured saber Broken Tyrant and moved toward the passage with large strides. At the same time, he was wondering what the luminous jellyfish was planning to do.

The tunnel wasn't very long.

After five minutes, Song Shuhang was already out of the tunnel. But what appeared before his eyes wasn't the tree hollow where the luminous jellyfish was residing.

As soon as he got out, he found himself in one of the passageways of the lower portion of the Time City.

In front of him was precisely that wide hall that he and Chu Chu entered when they arrived in the lower portion of the Time City together with Fairy Chu. The wide hall was completely empty, and the only thing inside was the portrait of the ancestor of the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion hanging on the wall.

Song Shuhang turned his head around and discovered that the 'tunnel' he came out of was nowhere to be seen.

If not for the fact that the area between his eyebrows was faintly swelled and aching, he would wonder if he had just been just sleepwalking all along...



"I should look for Chu Chu first," Song Shuhang said after pondering for a moment.

The hundreds of wounds on his hand had almost healed. The only problem was the stabbing pain, which was still there.

Speaking of which, when the 'Ten Thousand Mile Flying Escape Technique' activated the last time, it suddenly dragged him away, leaving Chu Chu all alone to fight against the great formation of the 108 bronze statues. How was she doing at this time?

The 108 statues didn't beat her until she started crying, right?

Hopefully, she is safe and sound... if she already left the Time City, even better.

Looking for Chu Chu wasn't difficult. Song Shuhang only needed to follow the scent of her body to find her. After all, the nose of a

cultivator of the Second Stage was really sensitive!

Of course, having a keen sense of smell was also a cause of worry for cultivators of the Second Stage.

For example, if someone were to throw at Song Shuhang a 'stinking pill' now that he was still unable to freely control his sense of smell, he would feel nauseated and throw everything up!

Thereupon, Song Shuhang followed the scent Chu Chu had left behind in the Time City and started to run through the various passageways of the Lower City.

At the same time, he recalled the scene of himself displaying the strange 'appraisal technique' earlier. Even though the technique wasn't something as simple as an ordinary 'appraisal technique', Song Shuhang had decided to call it that way for the time being.

Anyway, when he unintentionally used the appraisal technique back then, he was recalling the content of the speech of those 88,888 voices.

At the same time, he unwittingly put his right hand on the mirror.

Afterward, he felt a stabbing pain transmit from his hand, and magical runes came out of his eyes, falling on the mirror.

Then, just as those runes returned to his eyes, he somehow obtained the information related to the mirror.

"Maybe I should give it another try?" Song Shuhang muttered to himself.



Said and done!

Song Shuhang tried to recall the buzzing sound that the 88,888 voices were emitting back then. However, recalling the scene was like a form of self-torture. It was a terrible experience altogether.

Well then, what was he going to appraise this time?

Song Shuhang looked all around while running.

Very soon, he found a suitable target. While he was passing through one of the passageways of the Lower City, he saw a place with strange rocks. The rocks there seemed very interesting.

Thereupon, Song Shuhang headed toward the place and picked up a fist-sized rock with his left hand, staring at it.

Around two breaths later, Song Shuhang felt a burning hot feeling transmit from his left hand!

After the searing pain, he discovered that the skin of his palm had been burned and was now charred black.

The scene was similar to when hundreds of wounds had suddenly appeared on his right hand. Although Song Shuhang didn't suffer any attack, his left hand was injured!

Song Shuhang clenched his teeth and muttered, "As expected, the strange injuries and the sharp pain are both related to the 'appraisal technique'. Is this the price to use the technique?"

Song Shuhang tried to endure the searing pain and stared at the stone.

Then, things went just as he had predicted.

Several runes appeared in his eyes and then fell on the surface of the rock, forming the picture of a 'clock'.

Afterward, the hands of the clock quickly turned counter-clockwise.

After a hundred or so cycles, the runes returned to Song Shuhang's eyes.

At the same time, they carried back some of the information related to the strange rock.

It's a one billion years old rock. It's just an ordinary rock, and its only strong point is that it's very hard.

It was a very succinct description.

"..." Song Shuhang.

After all, not everything that had existed for a very long time was a treasure!

Rocks weren't like ginseng, they wouldn't become more valuable as time passed by.

Therefore, a billion years old ordinary rock was still an ordinary rock.

To obtain this (useless) piece of information, Song Shuhang had experienced that searing pain and suffered a painful injury on his left hand.

Song Shuhang didn't know whether to laugh or cry. He threw the rock back to where he found it and kept following Chu Chu's smell in the hope of finding her trail.

At the same time, he thought of another matter.

There was a mysterious puppet inside his size-reducing purse. If he were to appraise the puppet with the new secret technique he had learned, would he obtain some information on it?

Chapter 549: Is it out of control? Someone might die!

In the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion.

A luminous jellyfish was heading toward Fairy Chu's Celestial Pavilion, and all the plants, people, animals, and rivers it met while crossing the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion were frozen in time.

The luminous jellyfish didn't pay attention to the time-frozen disciples of the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion and directly passed above their heads.

The jellyfish seemed very familiar with the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion and thus quickly arrived at Fairy Chu's Celestial Pavilion.

The Celestial Pavilion was Fairy Chu's resting place, and it was full of defensive barriers and mechanism that could let Fairy Chu wake up at the slightest sign of trouble.

But when the luminous jellyfish drifted through the place, none of the secret mechanisms or defensive barriers activated.

It was because Fairy Chu's mechanisms and barriers weren't programmed to guard against it! It meant that Fairy Chu had absolute trust in the jellyfish.

The luminous jellyfish quietly fluttered until arriving next to Fairy Chu.

"Sigh... she is in a deep sleep," the luminous jellyfish said with a sigh. The jellyfish spoke in a human language and had a girlish and pleasant-sounding voice.

Fairy Chu was still into a deep slumber at this time and wasn't showing any sign of waking up.

"I know you are sleeping, but I won't wait for you to wake up. Therefore, you can listen to the words I'm about to say through the

surveillance system after you wake up."

After pausing for a moment, the luminous jellyfish continued, "Just as per our agreement, I've been quietly cultivating in the 'Lower City' since the day the Time City was constructed up until now. Simultaneously, I've been guarding the magical technique Slow-Witted Song left behind in the Lower City. During this whole time, seventeen cultivators were lucky enough to barge into the tree hollow I was guarding. It's regrettable that not even one of the previous sixteen cultivators was able to inherit the magical technique that Slow-Witted Song left behind in that place...

But today... the 17th cultivator, a young boy, was able to successfully inherit it after getting in there. Hence, as per our agreement, I'll leave the Time City this very day.

In addition, I'll take with me the 'Dark Night Time Ring' Slow-Witted Song left behind to pass down the technique. As per our agreement, it has to be turned over to me after the duty was completed." After saying this much, the luminous jellyfish swayed its tentacles and revealed a fluorescent black sphere. It was precisely that black sphere with the 88,888 voices inside that almost tortured Song Shuhang to death.

After it was done with its speech, the luminous jellyfish stretched out several of its tentacles and molded them into the form of a human palm, gently patting Fairy Chu's face.

"In that case... let us meet again, Chu," the luminous jellyfish said gently.

I wish you to quickly wake up from this never-ending dreamland, my dear friend.

After saying this much, the luminous jellyfish left a small tentacle next to Fairy Chu's body. The small tentacle would protect her and pass on the jellyfish's message after Fairy Chu had woken up.

After completing its duty, the jellyfish wrapped up the 'Dark Night Time Ring' and fluttered out of the Celestial Pavilion.

Then, its body flickered several times and instantly left the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion.

"Now then, which place should I visit first? Or should I check which of my old friends are still alive?"

After saying this much, the body of the luminous jellyfish flickered again, disappearing in the vast universe...



How did it feel to be hacked into pieces by a thousand blades?

Our Song Shuhang was now aware of the answer!

At this time, he was painfully rolling all over the ground while shedding some not very manly tears. These tears were just a natural reaction of the body. For example, tears would automatically start to flow if one was punched in the nose.

Thirty seconds earlier, after getting a gist of how the appraisal technique worked, Song Shuhang took the human puppet out of his size-reducing purse. All of this while still following the scent Chu Chu left behind in the Time City.

Then, he silently recalled the content of the 88,888 voices and grabbed the waist of the human puppet with both hands, closely staring at it. He was really curious as to what the background of the human puppet was.

In the next moment, something like 10,000 wounds suddenly appeared on his body, making him trip and fall to the ground.

He literally felt as though thousands of blades were slicing him up. At this time, there was hardly any place on his body that wasn't wounded. His whole body was dyed with blood, and he was rolling on the ground in pain.

He wasn't even able to sit or stand, because his butt and the soles

of his feet were covered with wounds as well.

Luckily, although the pain was absolutely unbearable, the wounds weren't too deep. They were similar to the wounds that opened on his left hand earlier. They would heal on their own after a few minutes.

The strange injuries that had appeared on his body out of nowhere were one of the 'prices' Song Shuhang had to pay for the usage of the appraisal technique.

The higher the quality of the object, the higher was the price he had to pay to appraise it.

Besides, Song Shuhang was basically ignorant as to how the appraisal technique worked. Only after he had completely recalled the content of the 88,888 voices would he attain the beginner level in regards to this particular secret technique.

After experiencing the excruciating pain, Song Shuhang got some small information about the human puppet.

A tailor-made, high-quality puppet manufactured for one of the VIP clients of the ancient Jet-Black Sect. It has many wondrous uses and needs 50,000 spirit stones of the Eighth Stage to be activated.

50,000 spirit stones of the Eighth Stage?

What kind of nonsense is that!

Even if Song Shuhang were to sell himself ten million times, he wouldn't be able to gather 50,000 spirit stones of the Eighth Stage! For Shuhang, 50,000 spirit stones of Eighth Stage were a sky-high and unaffordable price!

As if that wasn't enough, the puppet was a tailor-made object for one of the VIP clients.

The fact that it was a tailor-made item implied that it possessed unique properties. Perhaps there was some unusual way to control

it and only its rightful owner could make use of it.

Such being the case, there was a chance that he might not be able to use it even after spending the 50,000 spirit stones of the Eighth Stage necessary to activate it.

"I'll seal up this damned thing forever!" Song Shuhang clenched his teeth and threw the human puppet back into the size-reducing purse. He wouldn't let that thing come in contact with his spirit stones ever again.

50,000 spirit stones of the Eighth Stage were just too much of a scam.



Around five minutes later, the wounds on Song Shuhang's body finally cicatrized, allowing him to reluctantly move again.

The only problem was the buzzing sound reverberating in his head. It should be the aftereffect of using the appraisal technique several times in a row within a short period of time.

"If possible, it's better not to use this masochist secret technique at all." Song Shuhang still had a lingering fear at this time.

He had to experience the pain of being cut into thousands of pieces just to obtain some small information about the human puppet. His whole body was covered with wounds as a result.

If he were to chance upon something of the same level as the Nine Virtues Phoenix Saber and were to appraise it in a fit of retardation, wouldn't he directly lose his life?



Once he slightly recovered from his wounds, Song Shuhang kept looking for Chu Chu.

After half an hour, Shuhang finally managed to find Chu Chu. Miss Chu Chu was currently sitting cross-legged inside a daoist temple, meditating.

After hearing the sound of the approaching footsteps, Chu Chu immediately opened her eyes. Immediately after, she saw Song Shuhang, whose whole body had been dyed with blood. Needless to say, our Shuhang looked extremely pitiful at this time.

At first, Chu Chu was still a little angry. After all, Song Shuhang suddenly disappeared after the activation of the 'Ten Thousand Mile Flying Escape Technique' while they were in the 'Lower City' a few days ago, leaving her to fight against the 108 bronze statues all alone. That day, the bronze statues bullied her until making her miserable, and she had to use two precious talismans in order to get away from their encirclement.

Therefore, Chu Chu was planning to complain to Song Shuhang as soon as he saw him.

But after seeing Song Shuhang's blood-soaked figure, who looked like someone that had just come out of hell, the anger in Chu Chu's heart vanished without a trace.

From the looks of it, Song Shuhang suffered even more than her during the past few days! As a result, Miss Chu Chu's heart became peaceful once again.

Chu Chu stood up and approached Song Shuhang, asking, "Fellow Daoist Shuhang, are you alright?"

"I'm fine. The wounds I received aren't too deep." Song Shuhang clenched his teeth and said, "Right. Miss Chu Chu, did you obtain any clue about the exit during the past few days?"

Chu Chu shook her head.

Song Shuhang forced a smile and said, "Sigh~ It seems we'll have to keep looking for an exit until Pavilion Master Chu finally remembers about us and comes to pick us up."

"Yes, we should try our best." Chu Chu faintly smiled and nodded. This coincidentally conformed to her wishes. After all, she really wanted to keep practicing inside the Lower City for a few

more days.

Thereupon, the two stretched out their arms and gently shook their hands with an understanding smile on their faces.



But just as Song Shuhang shook hands with Chu Chu, thirty or so wounds appeared on his right hand, and fresh blood spurted out! The blood spurted out vigorously, and even Chu Chu's hand was completely dyed with blood.

Fck, what's happening? I didn't even use the secret appraisal technique... why did these wounds suddenly appear on my hand?* Song Shuhang was likewise dumbfounded.

Next followed an intense pain that made Song Shuhang clench his teeth. The number of wounds was much inferior to when he accidentally appraised the mirror, but the thirty or so wounds that had opened just now were both deeper and painful! The quantity of blood that had spurted out was also higher.

"Fellow Daoist Shuhang, your wounds opened again!" Chu Chu quickly took out a bandage from behind her body and dressed the wound for him.

Just as Chu Chu was dressing his wound, runes flowed out of Song Shuhang's eyes and fell onto Chu Chu's back, forming the picture of a clock.

The hands of the clock turned counter-clockwise once again.

After a few breaths, the clock had managed to successfully collect the information related to Chu Chu's life and background.

Immediately after, the runes returned to Song Shuhang's eyes as though they were the running water of a river.

During the whole process, Chu Chu didn't react one bit to the changes that were happening. She didn't notice the runes flowing out of Song Shuhang's eyes or forming of the picture of a clock on

her back.

Ultimately, pieces of information related to Chu Chu were transmitted to Song Shuhang's mind.

It's a young female cultivator. Age: 28. Cultivation level: Second Stage Fifth Dantian 'Dragon Palm Dantian' Realm. Height: 1.68 cm. Weight: 48 kg. Her potential is huge, and her innate talent is also pretty good.

Song Shuhang felt that he had been scammed. He already knew all of this!

As if that wasn't enough, he knew way more than that!

After all, he once experienced Chu Chu's life while dreaming. One could say that he was one of the people that understood Chu Chu the most in this world. He understood her even more than her own mother!

However... this wasn't the problem!

The problem was that he clearly hadn't activated the appraisal technique, neither he tried to recall the 88,888 voices!

Why did blood suddenly spurt out of my body?

Is it possible that the secret technique is out of control?

That's bad... if it's really out of control, I might die! Even a cultivator of the Second Stage will end up dead if they lose too much blood!

Chapter 550: The ?Tome of Never-Ending Tears?

Song Shuhang was particularly aggrieved at this time.

Earlier, he had been rather lucky that the target of the appraisal technique was Miss Chu Chu. Therefore, the price he had to pay was just some blood spurting out of his right hand.

But if the secret technique was really out of control and was automatically appraising everything he was touching, Shuhang wouldn't survive even if he had a blood bank at his disposal!

As long as it was something like a rock or a plant, it wasn't such a big deal. But if he was careless and ended up falling on the floor, accidentally appraising the ground below... wouldn't he appraise the meteoroid on which the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion was built?

If an ordinary rock billion years old was capable of causing harm to his body, wouldn't he directly lose all his blood and die if he were to appraise a huge meteoroid that was only God knew how old?

Just as he was in deep thoughts, Song Shuhang felt a burning pain transmit from his finger to the rest of the body through his nerves.

"Rip~" Several wounds opened on his finger, and the wounds on one's fingers just happened to be particularly painful~

Again?

What is it this time?

Runes flashed through Song Shuhang's eyes, rushing out of his eye sockets and falling onto the bandages covering his hand. Ultimately, they formed the picture of a clock.

Next, as the runes returned to his eyes, Song Shuhang got a new

piece of information.

It's an ordinary bandage for medical use. It's sold in all big pharmacies and can stop bleeding. The disciples of the Chu Family always carry it with them in order to prepare for all possible contingencies.

"..." Song Shuhang.

What's the point of giving me this type of information!

The nearby Chu Chu furrowed her brows. She noticed that several other wounds had appeared on Song Shuhang's finger. There was definitely something wrong with what was happening because she clearly remembered that there wasn't any wound there earlier!

The wounds on Song Shuhang's body had basically appeared out of nowhere!

"Fellow Daoist Shuhang, were you affected by something similar to a magical curse?" Chu Chu asked. There were indeed some curse-like magical techniques that could cause strange injuries such as these.

"It should be something of the sort." Song Shuhang faintly sighed. After much difficulty, he could somehow make use of the 'appraisal technique', but how could he switch it off now?

After saying this much, Song Shuhang stretched out his shivering hand and took the 'Gentle Dao Pill' out of his size-reducing purse to treat his wounds.

Just as he took the medicinal pill out, his innocent arm was caught in the crossfire. Thirty or so circular wounds appeared on his arm as blood started to flow out incessantly.

Afterward, runes flew out of his eyes and formed the picture of a clock. This time, the target of the appraisal technique was the 'Gentle Dao Pill'.

It's the 'Gentle Dao Pill 5th Star edition'. It's a wound-treating medicinal pill that can be taken orally. It can counter poisons, treat wounds, and help one recover their energy. Produced by the Ancient Lake Temple. It's a medicine with gentle properties.

"..." Song Shuhang.

Shuhang was speechless and didn't know what he was supposed to say at this time.

Was the technique planning to appraise all the items he had with him?

From the looks of it, everything that was coming in contact with his hands was going to be appraised!

It's over!

Should I consider writing a will just in case?

But... will the technique appraise the pen and the paper as well if I decide to write a will?

As soon as he imagined the tragic scene, Song Shuhang felt his eyes tearing up.

Chu Chu said, "Fellow Daoist Shuhang, let's try to find a way to quickly get rid of the magical curse affecting your body!" She noticed that new wounds were continuously appearing on Song Shuhang's body, with blood spurting out vigorously. It seemed he was going through a very painful experience.

Song Shuhang swallowed down the Gentle Dao Pill 5th Star edition and clenched his teeth, saying, "Miss Chu Chu, knock me out! Perhaps it's the only way to prevent me from continuously losing blood!"

Song Shuhang believed that the 'appraisal technique' would stop working if he was unconscious.

"Good!" Chu Chu quickly moved and arrived in front of Song Shuhang. Then, she stretched out her finger, poking at him.

Song Shuhang lowered his guard and didn't try to stop her.

Chu Chu used her finger to poke at his neck, operating her true qi at the same time.

In the next moment, Song Shuhang loudly fell to the ground, quickly losing his consciousness.

The effects of the Gentle Dao Pill 5th Star edition were superb. The wounds on Song Shuhang's body quickly healed under the effect of the medicinal pill.

After he was knocked out, the runes flashing through his eyes finally stopped and disappeared.

As expected, asking Chu Chu to knock him out had turned out to be quite effective.

However... the 88,888 voices started to talk over inside Song Shuhang's head as soon as he lost consciousness, talking about things he didn't understand in the least.

These 88,888 voices wouldn't stop with their mumbling until Song Shuhang had thoroughly grasped the magical technique.

Chu Chu carried on her shoulder the fainted Song Shuhang, dragging him and placing him in the corner of the daoist temple.

Then, she secretly sighed after looking at the blood-soaked Song Shuhang.

The 'Lower City' of the Time City was more troublesome than what she had originally expected.

Aside from that fearsome formation with the 108 bronze statues, weird curses were also lying around.

She and Song Shuhang were going to have a difficult time while looking for a way out of the Lower City!

Anyway, it's better to rest inside this daoist temple for some time...



Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion, inside the palace reserved for the guests.

Li Yinzhu opened her eyes and finally woke up from her hibernation-like state.

"So cold," she muttered. At this time, the whole room was full of white and icy air, somewhat resembling a freezer.

The cold inside her body had flared up while she was sleeping.

As a consequence, the cold air inside her was released outside while she was fast asleep, filling the whole room.

"Where am I?" Li Yinzhu muttered to herself.

Very soon, she noticed a pair of male and female attendants standing next to the bed.

The pair of male and female attendants was still holding the quilt in their hands, seemingly trying to cover her up. However, they were standing still at this time and weren't moving in the slightest.

Li Yinzhu couldn't even feel the aura of life come from the bodies of the two attendants. At this time, there was absolutely no difference between them and two statues carved out of stone.

Li Yinzhu furrowed her brows and jumped down from the bed. Then, she approached the body of the female attendant and stretched out her hand, touching her. Her body was icy cold and hard.

Li Yinzhu tried to put more strength into her hand, but the bodies of that pair of male and female attendants were like glued to the floor and didn't budge.

What is this place? What happened earlier? And where are Chu Chu and Shuhang?

"So cold." Li Yinzhu tightly hugged the magical clothes she was wearing and stopped paying attention to the pair of male and

female attendants, directly leaving the palace reserved for the guests.



But as soon as she got out of the palace, Li Yinzhu discovered that the whole world was frozen in time.

The disciples strolling through the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion, the birds in the sky, the spirit beast on the ground, the trees, and the water in the rivers... had all stopped in their tracks.

"Time has stopped?" Li Yinzhu said in puzzlement.

After strolling along the periphery of the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion for a while, she discovered that all things, without exception, were frozen in time. At this time, the whole Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion was shrouded in a deathly silence.

Li Yinzhu started to look for Chu Chu and Song Shuhang's trail.

But even after looking through more than half of the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion, she was still unable to find them.

Li Yinzhu started to panic, and her small hands aimlessly grabbed at the air in front of her in the hope of grasping something.

"I can't panic... I mustn't panic. I can sense his presence in this place." Li Yinzhu rubbed her eyes and finally headed toward the highest building in the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion.

It was the Celestial Pavilion, the place where Pavilion Master Chu was sleeping.

All sorts of defenses and traps were arranged around the Celestial Pavilion. The reason the luminous jellyfish could freely move through the barriers and restrictions was that it had Pavilion Master Chu's complete trust!

However, Li Yinzhu didn't have such privileges.

Therefore, she activated something akin to an alarm as soon as she approached the Celestial Pavilion.

In the depths of the Celestial Pavilion, the eyelashes of the fast asleep Pavilion Master Chu slightly trembled...

As soon as the alarm-like formation woke Pavilion Master Chu up, the time stop applied to the whole Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion was lifted, and the place slowly started to move again.

The water of the rivers started to flow again, and the birds in the sky also started to flap their wings.

The disciples of the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion continued with their practice, etc.

The Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion slowly returned to life.



In the meantime, in the proximity of the moon, on a hollowed out meteoroid drifting in the void.

Inside the hollowed out meteoroid, a white-haired old man stood up after completing his daily session of meditation.

"He's still not here? Where has that little friend Song gone?" The white-haired old man took out a smartphone and swiped on the screen to unlock it. Soon after, he opened the photo gallery.

In the photo gallery, there was unexpectedly a picture of Song Shuhang.

The old man was a loose cultivator, and his dao name was 'Sobbing Old Man'. The man was a powerful Fifth Stage Spiritual Emperor.

Moreover, the old man practiced a weird cultivation technique that was passed down in ancient times, the <Tome of Never-Ending Tears>.

As the name suggested, the <Tome of Never-Ending Tears> was an unusual cultivation technique that forced both the practitioner and the enemies into a state of endless sorrow, without any possibility of escaping it.

When he was young, the Sobbing Old Man entered some ancient ruins related to the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion, obtaining the <Tome of Never-Ending Tears>.

By relying on this tome, he slowly became a powerful Fifth Stage Spiritual Emperor.

After looking at Song Shuhang's picture, for some unknown reason, a sad feeling welled up in the heart of the Sobbing Old Man, making him unable to resist the urge of shedding some tears.

"Sob, sob, sob~" The Sobbing Old Man wept bitterly. The more he was crying, the more he looked aggrieved.

If someone unaware of the truth were to witness this scene, they would surely think that the white-haired old man was mourning the death of a loved one.

"Little friend Song, where are you! Even after all these days, you haven't appeared! How am I supposed to explain things to Senior White!" The Sobbing Old Man wiped the tears from the corners of his eyes. Even his eye sockets had become red.

The Sobbing Old Man ended up owing Venerable White a very big favor 500 years ago, and just like True Monarch White Crane, he had been looking for an opportunity to return the favor all along.

A short time ago, the Sobbing Old Man discovered through his personal channels that Venerable White was planning to send a cultivator of the younger generation into space and arrange a few trials for him there.

As soon as he got a hold of this information, the Sobbing Old Man knew that the time to repay his debt to Venerable White had come!

Thereupon, he seized the opportunity and contacted Venerable White on his own initiative, taking the task of arranging a few trials in space and welcoming the young cultivator surnamed Song.

Venerable White agreed to his request and sent him a picture of

Song Shuhang, as well as a talisman capable of locking Song Shuhang's coordinates.

Thereupon, the Sobbing Old Man prepared a very good trial in the proximity of the moon.

Everything was ready. Now, he only had to wait for little friend Song Shuhang to come over and enjoy the exciting trial he had prepared for him, allowing him to strengthen himself.

But...

Little friend Song Shuhang never came.

Some time later, the Sobbing Old Man discovered that Song Shuhang had gone to explore an ancient grave together with Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue. But according to the time, he should have already returned from that place...

"Sob, sob, sob~ Fine, fine, it seems I'll have to look for Little friend Song Shuhang on my own although this might end up reducing the enjoyment of the trial," the Sobbing Old Man said while wiping his tears.

Since he had with him a talisman that could lock Song Shuhang's coordinates, he would personally look for him and bring him back here.

Chapter 551: The sobbing beauty

The Sobbing Old Man activated the talisman Venerable White had provided him to lock onto Song Shuhang's coordinates.

Soon after, two dots appeared in the mind of the Sobbing Old Man.

One of the dots was green, it showed the position of the Sobbing Old Man. The other dot, which was red in color, was very far away and indicated Song Shuhang's approximate location.

"It's worthy of being a talisman Senior White manufactured; it works wonders~ Sob, sob, sob~ I'm really touched." The Sobbing Old Man cried out loud once again.

He was moved for a rather weird reason~

After getting all emotional and crying, the Sobbing Old Man meticulously covered up the trial he had prepared for Song Shuhang so as to avoid strangers barging in by mistake and ruining his setup.

Afterward, he headed in the direction of the red dot! He wanted to get ahold of little friend Song and bring him back here so that he could happily enjoy the trial he had prepared for him to repay Senior White!



The Sobbing Old Man flew through space for a long time, directly until evening. At last, he arrived at the coordinates where Song Shuhang was supposed to be according to Senior White's talisman.

But what appeared before his eyes... was a huge meteoroid. Moreover, a palace-like building was built on it. The only problem was that the whole construction was concealed with a magical technique and its true appearance wasn't clearly discernible.

Only the huge gate of the palace, which was covered with copper

nails, was clearly visible to the Sobbing Old Man.

The Sobbing Old Man was currently dumbstruck and didn't even have the time to cry. He just quietly sized up the palace gate before his eyes.

Soon after, he raised his head and gazed at the space above the gate.

In there were engraved three twisted words. It was unknown in which language the three words were written, but the Sobbing Old Man knew their meaning...

'Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion!'

When he was young, the Sobbing Old Man entered some ancient ruins related to the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion, obtaining the <Tome of Never-Ending Tears> inside. Thanks to this cultivation technique, he managed to condense a Golden Core and become a powerful loose cultivator of the Fifth Stage.

Such being the case, although he was from a different generation, the Sobbing Old Man was somehow an inheritor of the teachings of the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion!

Therefore, he had some understanding of the matters related to the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion.

"There is no mistake. The picture of the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion I saw in the ancient ruins was very similar to this construction." The Sobbing Old Man jumped down from his meteor-like magical treasure and arrived in front of the gate of the palace, gently stretching out his hand and caressing the copper nails on the main gate.

But why had the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion appeared in this place, right in the middle of space?

After all, wasn't the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion involved in a war against a powerful sect of cultivator a long time ago and destroyed in the process?

From what the Sobbing Old Man remembered, the ancient Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion had been completely destroyed after a fierce battle against another sect of cultivators.

Was it possible that the later generations of the lucky survivors of the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion had decided to rebuild it?

The hand of the Sobbing Old Man faintly trembled. Next, tears copiously flowed out of his eyes without any sign of stopping.

"Sob, sob, sob~" The Sobbing Old Man looked especially aggrieved while crying. But this time, he was crying tears of joy!

The <Tome of Never-Ending Tears> he obtained back then wasn't complete. After practicing until the Fifth Stage Realm, he had reached a dead end and needed the remaining part of the cultivation technique to keep practicing. But the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion had been destroyed, and the <Tome of Never-Ending Tears> just happened to be a cultivation technique that exclusively belonged to the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion!

It was such a heartbreaking matter, right?

If the Sobbing Old Man wanted to advance further on the path of cultivation, he had to either change the cultivation technique he was practicing or find the complete version of the <Tome of Never-Ending Tears>.

Hence, the Sobbing Old Man had been looking for the complete version of the <Tome of Never-Ending Tears> all along. Unfortunately, he wasn't able to obtain any good result in his endeavor.

But if the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion had really survived the calamity back then, there was a chance he might be able to obtain the complete version of the <Tome of Never-Ending Tears>! No matter how low the probability of obtaining the technique was, it was still better than having no chance at all!

At this time, the Sobbing Old Man was gently caressing the gate

of the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion, just as though it was his little darling... after all, the only hope he had to advance to the Sixth Stage True Monarch Realm lay on the other side of the gate!

However, the Sobbing Old Man started to get a bit anxious at this time. He felt as if he was about to visit his native place after many years of absence.

After a long time, he made up his mind and knocked on the gate.

"Knock, knock, knock~"

The knocking sound resembled that of a doorbell and was transmitted very far away. A formation protected the meteoroid. Therefore, there was air inside the place that could allow the sound to travel.

After knocking on the gate, the Sobbing Old Man anxiously waited for a reply for quite some time. But the front gate of the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion showed no sign of opening.

The Sobbing Old Man mustered his courage and knocked on the gate once more.

"Knock, knock, knock~"

However, the gate still didn't budge.

There is no one around? Or is it possible that they don't want to open the gate on purpose?

"Should I just try to barge in?" the Sobbing Old Man muttered to himself. However, he quickly cast aside this thought. If he were to randomly barge into the place, the opposite party would surely regard him as an enemy.

At that time, there was no way the opposite party would give him the complete version of the <Tome of Never-Ending Tears> even if they had it. No, it was more likely that they would kill him directly if he were to forcefully barge into the palace.

Thereupon, the Sobbing Old Man retained his cool and kept

knocking on the gate.

The Sobbing Old Man was a very patient man. When he was young, he once thought of visiting a senior loose cultivator to study under his guidance. In the end, the Sobbing Old Man ended up kneeling in the front of the immortal cave of the senior cultivator for five days and five nights.

Such being the case, it was now time to bring his patience into full play...



In the meantime, in the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion.

As soon as Li Yinzhu approached the 'Celestial Pavilion' Fairy Chu was residing in, she activated an alarm-type formation arranged next to the place. Thereupon, Pavilion Master Chu also woke from her deep slumber.

Simultaneously, the defense system of the Celestial Pavilion also activated, and a crystal tower supported by stone columns rose from the ground next to the Celestial Pavilion.

Li Yinzhu immediately realized that she had barged into a restricted area. Therefore, her small feet stamped on the ground, and a sword orb flew out of her mouth, changing into a sword light that rushed beneath her feet.

She wanted to get away from the Celestial Pavilion as soon as possible.

However... it was too late. The defense system of the Celestial Pavilion was something that Pavilion Master Chu had set up personally.

Just as Li Yinzhu rode her flying sword and rushed upward, a huge net came down from the sky and wrapped her up. Next, ten chains popped out of nowhere and tied her up like the '大' character, making her dangle in front of the entrance of the Celestial Pavilion.

It felt rather embarrassing to dangle in the air like that...

At this time, Li Yinzhu wanted to cry but had no tears.

With her strength of the Fourth Stage Realm, she was unable to free herself from the chains. The more she was struggling, the more the binding of the chains was getting tighter.

"Help! Please, set me free! I came here by mistake!" Li Yinzhu shouted. At the same, Song Shuhang's figure appeared in her mind.



In the Celestial Pavilion.

After making sure that the trespasser had been taken care of, Pavilion Master Chu fell asleep once more.

Perhaps because she had already slept for two days, she didn't enter a deep slumber this time. Thereupon, the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion didn't completely stop in its track as before.

The cultivators in the sect continued with their actions.

The disciples running along the road continued running. The disciples that were practicing kept practicing. The elders that were either playing chess or drinking tea also continued with their actions, enjoying their carefree life.

They were completely unaware that everything was frozen in time just a moment ago.

Only the pair of male and female attendants in the palace reserved for the guests was grabbing the quilt with confused expressions on their faces.

From what they remembered, they had brought an unconscious guest to this room.

But now, the whole room was full of cold air, and the little guest was nowhere to be seen.

The pair quickly started to look for the guest that had suddenly disappeared.



At the same time, at the entrance of the Time City.

A female disciple of the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion entered the Time City while holding a thick book in her hands, heading toward the 'Lower City'. The entrance she used to get into the Time City wasn't the same as the one Pavilion Master Chu used when she brought Song Shuhang and Chu Chu there.

No disciples were guarding the entrance Pavilion Master Chu used back then. It was quite obvious that Fairy Chu used a secret shortcut while leading Song Shuhang and Chu Chu to the Time City.

One of the disciples in charge of guarding the Time City said with a smile, "Senior Sister Ye, it seems you also plan to enter the Lower City to practice."

"Yes, I'm planning to practice in there for a month." The female disciple called 'Senior Sister Ye' turned her head around and smiled. When she said 'month', she referred to one month in the outside world and thus close to one year in the Lower City.

At this time, she was hugging a thick book in her bosom and wearing a light purple skirt.

She had long brown hair that was carefully braided into pigtails, and her long bangs faintly covered her eyes.

When she turned her head around and smiled at the disciples, it turned out that her eye sockets were very red, and there were still tear stains visible. It seemed she had just finished crying.

The girl was like a hyacinth, delicate and attractive.

After faintly smiling, she tightly held the thick book in her bosom and jogged toward the Lower City, leaving behind the faint

fragrance of book ink.

Once the hyacinth-like girl was far away, the two disciples in charge of guarding the entrance of the Time City both sighed with emotion. "Did Senior Sister Ye just cry?"

It had increased her charm by 100 points!

The saying 'a woman looks even more beautiful while crying' was extremely well-suited while talking about Senior Sister Ye.

The sobbing beauty, Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion's miracle tears... names such as these were fairly popular in the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion.



In the Lower City of the Time City.

Song Shuhang finally returned to his senses.

Just as he woke up, Shuhang discovered that he was inside the room he had used to take the 'medicinal bath' back then.

Did Chu Chu move him to this room?

"Did you finally wake up?" At this time, Chu Chu was wearing a new dress made out of a curtain stitched together.

"For how long was I unconscious?" Song Shuhang rubbed his temples. The 88,888 voices kept torturing him even while he was unconscious. They had kept talking over in his mind for the whole time.

"You have been unconscious for three days and three nights," Chu Chu replied.

At this time, it had already been 34 days since Chu Chu and Song Shuhang had come to the Time City. Therefore, around three days had passed in the outside world.

"I slept for a long time!" Song Shuhang forced a smile. Then, he cautiously stretched out his hand and grabbed one of the nearby

copper tubs used to take medicinal baths. He wanted to see whether or not the appraisal technique was still active.

After he grabbed the copper tub, runes didn't appear in his eyes, and neither did the wounds on his body!

Song Shuhang was immediately delighted. "Wonderful!"

The effects of the appraisal technique seemed to be finally over. Now, he didn't have to worry about casually touching something and unknowingly activating the appraisal technique, causing his body to rupture and spurt blood everywhere.

From the looks of it, knocking him out was enough to put a stop to the appraisal technique.

After seeing Song Shuhang's happy expression, Chu Chu asked, "Have the effects of the curse on your body disappeared?"

"Yes, they seem to have disappeared. Now, I won't have to worry about randomly losing blood. Such being the case, we might as well keep looking for the exit." Song Shuhang stood up from the ground with a jump and moved around his body a bit. After all, he hadn't moved for three days and three nights.

Just as he got up, his body emitted the same crackling sound as firecrackers.

Chapter 552: I can feel it, it's coming!

Along with the crackling noises of his bones, Song Shuhang discovered that his constitution had unexpectedly gotten a little stronger. However, the increase in strength was still very small.

It wasn't only his constitution, because even his height seemed to have increased a little.

While he was unconscious during the past few days, not only his body didn't weaken... but it strengthened instead?

Is this the doing of the appraisal technique? Did my body get stronger while I continuously lost blood back then?

However, he would rather not have to go through the experience again if the benefits were so low! There was just too much difference between the price he had to pay and the benefits he received in return. It was like running a business at a loss!

"You slept for a few days in a row. Therefore, I carried you along with me to every room I went during the past several days," the nearby Chu Chu said.

After saying this much, she took some fasting pills out of a small package and handed them over to Song Shuhang, saying, "Do you want some? I have several fasting pills with different flavors here with me. You slept for such a long time. You must be hungry, right?"

"You have fasting pills with different tastes?" Song Shuhang asked out of curiosity.

The fasting pills Su Clan's Sixteen gifted him were all flavorless. Therefore, he thought that all fasting pills were the same and didn't have any flavor.

Chu Chu explained, "Yes, amongst the fasting pills I have here with me there are fruit-flavored, roasted meat-flavored, tomato-flavored, chicken-flavored, and so on."

"Can you let me have a try of the chicken-flavored ones?" Song Shuhang asked.

He and Chu Chu had stayed in the Time City for around a month and had eaten fasting pills during the whole time. Therefore, recalling the flavor of chicken was enough to make Song Shuhang's mouth water.

Chu Chu handed him a light yellow-colored fasting pill.

After taking the pill in his hands, Song Shuhang smelled it. To his surprise, it really had the faint smell of roasted chicken. His mouth started to water as he said, "It smells really good. Where are such fasting pills sold? And there are unexpectedly so many different types available..."

As soon as he finished speaking, Song Shuhang's complexion changed.

In the next moment, twenty or so knife wounds of different depth abruptly appeared on the arm holding the fasting pill.

Afterward, blood violently spurted out.

Again?!

This damned appraisal technique hadn't actually switched off?

Dammit, I'm not a blood bank! The quantity of blood I've lost in the past few days is more than I've lost during my whole life!

Chu Chu said, "That's bad! Fellow Daoist Shuhang, you are losing blood again!"

"Yeah, this indeed seems to be the case..." Song Shuhang stared at the wounds on his arm. So much of his blood had been wasted just in this fashion~

Given the current situation, shouldn't Song Shuhang consider raising a vampire-like pet and always keep it close to him so as to avoid wasting all the precious blood he was losing? From what he knew, vampires and the likes really existed in this world. However,

he was unaware if they were like the ones he had seen in movies, with each male and female being handsome and beautiful.

Chu Chu said, "The blood's showing no sign of stopping..."

"It will stop after a while. I feel that I'm somehow getting used to it," Song Shuhang said indifferently.

There seemed to be a lot of blood, but it was mainly due to the high number of wounds that opened on his body. Most of the injuries were shallow, and Shuhang only needed a little bit of time to heal them.

However, due to the wounds opening, recovering, and opening again, there were now a lot of scars all over his body.

Some said that a man had to wear their his scars like medals... Song Shuhang felt that his whole body would be decorated with medals a month later if this kept going on.

Chu Chu asked, "Is the curse still in effect?"

"Yeah, it seems it wasn't fully eradicated earlier..." Song Shuhang heaved a sigh.

However, the situation had improved a bit. Earlier, the mysterious appraisal technique was activating whenever he was touching something. But now, it was just activating randomly~

Just as he was speaking, the runes gushed out of his eyes as though they were a stream of water and fell on the fasting pill, forming the picture of a clock. Then, the hands of the clock quickly turned counterclockwise.

After a short moment, the runes returned to Song Shuhang's eyes.

***It's a chicken-flavored fasting pill, very crisp. It can satiate a cultivator of the First Stage for one month. It was manufactured in April 2018. Shelf life: 20 years. Place of origin: Southern China, Immortal Food Cave. One spirit stone of the Second Stage is

enough to buy twenty such fasting pills. It's possible to obtain it at discounted price if one is planning to buy them in large quantities.***

"..." Song Shuhang.

Is the appraisal technique trying advertise the Immortal Food Cave and their products now? Did the Immortal Food Cave invest in such a business?

Ah? Wait a moment!

When I took the fasting pill in my hand, didn't I unconsciously ask Chu Chu 'where are such fasting pills sold'?

Immediately after, the appraisal technique activated and appraised the fasting pill. Moreover, it didn't only appraise its effects, but it also told me in details about the 'place of origin'. Such being the case... did the appraisal technique activate because I was wondering where the fasting pill was being sold?

Song Shuhang was in deep thoughts at this time. If his guess was correct, it meant that he had understood how the appraisal technique worked.

"By the way, how can you get used to wounds suddenly appearing on your body!" Chu Chu didn't know whether to laugh or cry. Afterward, she took some other bandages out and started to dress the wound on Song Shuhang's arm.

At this time, both his hands were wrapped up in bandages, making him resemble those guys practicing mixed martial arts.

After looking at his hands, Song Shuhang muttered to himself, "Perhaps I should give it another try?"

Chu Chu asked, "Give it a try? Try what?"

Song Shuhang looked around, and his gaze lastly fell on the new bandages wrapped around his hands. If he were to appraise the bandages, only a few wounds on his fingers would appear!

Such being the case, it was better to test the technique on them!

Song Shuhang took a deep breath and said, "Where were these bandages manufactured?"

Without waiting for Song Shuhang's appraisal technique to activate, the nearby Chu Chu replied, "Our Chu Family produced them. Our Chu Family founded a company that produces goods for medical use in China. The goal is to supply the needed goods to the disciples during their practice. After all, cultivators frequently get injured while tempering their body. "

Miss Chu Chu had dashinglly raced to be the first one to reply!

"..." Song Shuhang.

Perhaps because Chu Chu replied first, the appraisal technique didn't activate this time. After Song Shuhang regained his senses, the appraisal technique had slightly changed and was now more flexible.

Forget it. I'll look for something in my purse to appraise. It's better if I find something that requires a small price for the appraisal.

Thereupon, Song Shuhang took out his size-reducing purse.

Then, he suddenly thought of something. Wait a moment, the last time, when I took the 'Gentle Dao Pill' out of the size-reducing purse, didn't I touch the purse first and only later the pill?

Back then, the out-of-control appraisal technique decided to appraise the 'Gentle Dao Pill' instead of the 'size-reducing purse'... and this had allowed Song Shuhang to unknowingly dodge a calamity!

Even if one were to use their feet instead of their head to think, they would realize that the background of the mysterious size-reducing purse was surely more troublesome than that of the Gentle Dao Pill 5th Star edition from the Ancient Lake Temple!

Due to the fact that he had lost the memories related to the 'mysterious island', Song Shuhang had no idea how he had gotten his hands on the 'size-reducing purse'. If not for the small piece of paper inside the purse that cleared things up, he might have already gifted the cute rabbit-shaped purse to someone else or directly thrown it away.

Now then, how did I exactly get my hands on this 'size-reducing purse' during my trip to the mysterious island?

Since he had lost his memories, he was unable to recall what had happened in there.

...Dammit!

Sh\!t, sh\!t, sh\!t! That thought just now was very dangerous!*

I quickly need to cast aside these foolish thoughts!

A calm heart allows one to keep their head cool and believe in their strength, with no desires and no demands~ I need to empty my mind... equality, fairness, lawfulness, patriotism, professionalism, honesty, friendliness, democracy, civilization, kindness... blah, blah, blah... protect my body! Song Shuhang tried his best to empty his mind.

However... it was too late!

The human brain really worked in strange ways sometimes. The more one didn't want to recall a certain matter, the more that matter would pop up in their mind and not go away.

Song Shuhang could already feel the stabbing pain he was about to experience.

I'm done for, I'm going to die!

"Rip, rip, rip~"

In the next moment, several thousand wounds of different severity appeared on Song Shuhang's body, with blood spurting out as though there was no tomorrow. Song Shuhang was

completely dyed with blood once more.

"Aaaaaaah~ Painful, painful, painful! I'm dying, I'm dying, I'm dying~"

Manly men didn't easily shed tears, but they, too, would cry when the pain was too much to bear.

Therefore, Song Shuhang shed his manly tears again. However, he didn't cry due to the pain, but because of his stupid mistake. These were tears of deep regret.

"Fellow Daoist Shuhang!" the nearby Chu Chu called out in alarm, unsure what to do.

Song Shuhang gritted his teeth and gave Chu Chu the thumbs-up while in extreme pain. "It's fine. It's just a small wound... well, the number is actually way higher than one, but I'm fine."

"There is no way this can be regarded as a 'small wound'! You are losing blood from all over the body!" Chu Chu quickly took out a few more bandages. However, she didn't know where to start to patch him up.

Song Shuhang was losing blood from everywhere. If she started dressing all his wounds, Shuhang would turn into a mummy. But the problem was that she didn't have so many bandages with her!

Song Shuhang said, "It's alright. Wounds of this degree should recover in a few minutes."

"No matter how I look at you, you don't seem 'alright' to me! What's the deal with this curse affecting your body? How did you end up with this curse in the first place? We should quickly try to find a way to get rid of it!" Chu Chu said hastily.

With Song Shuhang continuously losing blood due to the curse, they were unable to do anything!

Song Shuhang clenched his teeth and said, "Don't worry. I've already discovered the cause of the loss of blood."

At the same time, runes flashed through his eyes and rushed out of his eye sockets like a stream of water, falling on the size-reducing purse. Afterward, they formed the picture of a clock and returned to Song Shuhang's eyes.

It's a cute rabbit-shaped size-reducing purse manufactured from the snakeskin of the Little Finger Snake. The creator of the purse, **, is a Ninth Stage Tribulation Transcender that loves rabbits. It's something she manufactured personally and gifted to Fellow Daoist Song Shuhang.***

The asterisks implied that part of the information was censored. That ***** should have been either the 'dao name' or personal name of the Ninth Stage Tribulation Transcender that loved rabbits.

It seemed that the Ninth Stage Tribulation Transcender had taken some precautions and concealed information about her past, present, and future. Therefore, even Song Shuhang's appraisal technique was unable to discover her dao name or personal name.

However, it was a good thing that the powerful senior on the mysterious island had concealed her personal information... because if Song Shuhang were to appraise the information related to a Ninth Stage Tribulation Transcender, the price to pay wouldn't be as simple as some blood spurting out of his body.

Perhaps all his blood vessels would rupture at that point, making him die.

I unexpectedly met a Ninth Stage Tribulation Transcender during my stay on the mysterious island? Song Shuhang thought to himself.

But after recalling that time he experienced part of his own life while he was on the mysterious island in the dreamland, he remembered that he had met Miss Nine Lanterns—as well as that small white dragon in the chamber tomb—on that island.

It seems that the mysterious island is far from being a simple place!

Chapter 553: A hard-to-come-by kindred soul!

One day later.

At this time, Song Shuhang was walking in one of the underground passages of the Time City all alone.

Yesterday, after he appraised the size-reducing purse by mistake and lost a lot of blood, he and Chu Chu were forced to stop for an additional day.

As such, the duo teamed up early this morning and decided to keep exploring the Lower City in order to find an exit.

Song Shuhang and Chu Chu decided to explore the Lower City together.

The Lower City was, after all, a place full of dangers. That great formation of 108 bronze statues, the wounding curse that Chu Chu believed had affected Song Shuhang's body, and so on were all incredibly dangerous for them.

Since the surrounding environment was so dangerous, it was wise for the duo to move together and help each other in case of need.

Song Shuhang and Chu Chu didn't intend to follow the plot of those movies where the people that had teamed up with the main character would all split up after reaching a dangerous place.

However, Shuhang hadn't expected that he would be still separated from Chu Chu in the end!

Back then, Chu Chu was leading the way in one of the passages, but after she turned the corner, she suddenly disappeared!

Of course, Song Shuhang quickly followed behind her. But when he turned the corner, he suddenly lost sight of Chu Chu. Instead, he felt something akin to zero gravity feeling, just as though he

was inside an elevator.

Song Shuhang immediately guessed what had happened. It seemed that the various passageways inside the 'Lower City' could actually move.

It was a such a cheap move!

After separating from Chu Chu, Song Shuhang had no choice but to travel all alone while looking for both the exit and Chu Chu.

As such, he decided to leave a different mark in each room he visited.



Unknowingly, another day had passed.

As before, Song Shuhang still had to find traces of Chu Chu.

"I have no idea according to what pattern the passageways of the Lower City are moving, and I can't rely on my sense of smell, either. It seems I can only rely on my luck to find Chu Chu this time," Song Shuhang muttered to himself.

Speaking of which, his luck had been awful recently!

Just as he was in deep thoughts, Song Shuhang noticed a brightly lit room at the end of the passageway. Moreover, there was a human figure moving inside!

There is someone in there!

Is that Chu Chu, or is it a disciple of the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion?

Regardless of who it is, it's good news for me!

"I finally got lucky, huh?" Song Shuhang said.

Song Shuhang picked up the pace and quickly headed toward the room at the end of the passageway.



After getting into the room, Song Shuhang discovered that it was a huge library.

Or at least... it should be a library?

The room that appeared before his eyes was full of books. There were books all over the place, probably more than a hundred thousands. It was literally an ocean of books.

However, the books weren't orderly put on the bookshelves. Instead, they were piled up on the ground, and the room looked very messy.

At this time, a hyacinth-like girl was squatting down in the middle of the ocean of books.

She wore a purple skirt, and her long brown hair was carefully braided into pigtails; her long bangs faintly covered her eyes.

At this moment, she was holding a thick book in her hands and reading it with great interest. After a short moment, she said softly, "No place can compare to the 'Lower City' of the Time City! Here, I can read books for twelve days while only one day has passed in the outside world~ I'm so happy!"

She spoke in a low voice, but Song Shuhang was still able to hear her words thanks to his great hearing.

Girl, if you use the time-related abilities of the 'Lower City' for things such as these, you're going to make Pavilion Master Chu cry!

At the same time, Song Shuhang's favorable impression of the girl increased by 20 points. He felt that he had met a kindred soul. Just like him, the girl liked squatting down and read while surrounded by books. As long as she had a book in her hands, she was in heaven.

"Sob, sob, sob~" But right at this time, the girl suddenly started crying while reading.

Tears copiously flowed out of her eyes and streamed down her

delicate cheeks, soaking the book she was holding in her hands.

The girl panicked and quickly stretched her hand out, wiping the tears away from the book. But due to the tears continuously flowing, the water drops falling on the book were continually increasing even if she was wiping them off. Very soon, the entire page of the book was soaked.

Did she start crying after reading about a very sad plot development in the book?

It seems she's an emotional and well-read girl.

Song Shuhang's favorable impression of the girl increased by another 20 points.

After witnessing this scene, he was even surer that he had met a kindred soul.

Should I go inside and greet her?

She should be a disciple of the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion. Such being the case, she must know the way to leave the Time City, right?

Thereupon, Song Shuhang called out, "Excuse me, may I disturb you for a moment~"

At this time, the book-loving girl noticed that a person was coming over.

She quickly hid the book she was reading behind her back and carefully looked at Song Shuhang.

In the meanwhile, tears were still copiously flowing out of her eyes. Her misty and teary eyes increased her charm even further, making her look even more beautiful.

Somewhat embarrassed, Song Shuhang waved his hand and said, "Hello."

"Hello. Sob, sob, sob~" The girl nodded and started crying even more loudly.

After seeing that she was still crying, Song Shuhang felt a bit awkward.

Just as though she had sensed Song Shuhang's embarrassment, the hyacinth-like girl gently waved her hand and said, "Please, don't mind me, sob, sob, sob~ Once I start crying, sob, sob, sob~ I won't be able to stop any time soon. Anyway, Junior Brother, which branch of the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion do you belong to? Sob, sob, sob~ I don't think I've seen you around before?"

"Hi, I'm not a disciple of the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion. I got by chance into the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion a few days ago and managed to meet Pavilion Master Chu. Afterward, Pavilion Master Chu led both me and my companion here to the Time City," Song Shuhang replied.

"I see... sob, sob, sob~ So you are a guest of our Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion."

The girl didn't doubt Song Shuhang's words. After all, the Time City was a very special place that was related to the concept of 'time'. Therefore, someone that didn't have Pavilion Master Chu's permission to get into the city being there was impossible.

"Sob, sob, sob~ I'm part of the generation of disciples of the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion surnamed 'Ye'. Therefore, my dao name is Ye Si. Sob, sob, sob~" The well-read girl wiped away her tears and continued, "Moreover, since I like reading books and ponder over matters, my junior and senior sisters, and other people as well, often call me 'Pensive Ye'."

As for 'Sobbing Beauty' and 'Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion's Miracles Tears'... she absolutely wouldn't acknowledge such names!

Song Shuhang blinked his eyes. Why was this senior sister telling

him her nicknames after meeting him for the first time?

However, he still politely replied, "Hello, Senior Sister Ye. My name is Song Shuhang. As for my dao name... today should be either Wednesday or Thursday in the outside world... alright, it's Wednesday. Therefore, my dao name is Path-seeking Scholar!"

"Path-seeking Scholar? Do you also like reading books?" Senior Sister Ye's eyes lit up. At this time, she had stopped crying and was only sobbing from time to time.

"Indeed, I quite like reading books," Song Shuhang replied firmly. After all, reading books was one of his biggest hobbies!

Senior Sister Ye shot a glance at Song Shuhang. As soon as she saw him, she felt as though she had met a kindred soul that liked reading books as much as her!

Since they shared a common interest, the two of them quickly engaged in conversation.



"Anyway, what were you reading earlier, Senior Sister Ye?" Song Shuhang asked out of curiosity. What kind of book made Senior Sister Ye cry so much?

"Actually, it's just a book I casually picked up." Senior Sister Ye showed Song Shuhang the book she was hiding behind her back.

Song Shuhang took the book in his hands and looked at it.

'Theories on how cultivators can save up true qi or spiritual energy while riding a flying sword!'

Chapter 554: The temperature of their fingers

I have to stay calm, I have to stay calm!

After seeing the title of the book, Song Shuhang tried his best to keep his calm and not let his thoughts wander so as to avoid accidentally triggering the appraisal technique and spurting out blood in front of Senior Sister Ye.

Immediately after, Song Shuhang glanced again at the serious-looking title of the book. But even after looking at it a second time, he just couldn't imagine which part of the book could have made Senior Sister Ye burst into tears...

Is it possible that the content of the book is more complex than what the title suggests?

For example, although the title is serious-sounding and seemingly about academical discussions, the actual content of the book is that of a tragic love story... In the past, Song Shuhang, too, had bumped into the so-called clickbait titles!

Thereupon, Song Shuhang started to quickly flip through the book called 'Theories on how cultivators can save up true qi or spiritual energy while riding a flying sword!' and deliberately arrived at the page that was soaked in Senior Sister Ye's tears.

But what appeared before his eyes was... a series of mathematical equations.

He quickly shot a glance at the content and flipped through several pages, but the only things he saw in there were boring theories about how cultivators could save up true qi or spiritual energy while riding a flying sword...

He was unable to find anything remotely related to a 'tragedy' or something of the sort!

F*ck, just what kind of reader is she? Did Senior Sister Ye start crying after reading about these boring theories?

Is it possible that she is one of those readers with a very, very wild imagination?

For example, some readers might start treating a manga where there was a hot-blooded battle amongst robots with the following lines flying around— ['Look at my dazzling explosion!', 'Eat my light beam!', 'Have a taste of my metallic rod!', 'I'm going to break through your impenetrable defense!'] (<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=drvAZ7efAw>) —as a mecha porn story...

But even if Senior Sister Ye was one of those readers with a very wild imagination, how did she exactly end up treating those complex theories and mathematical equations as a 'tragic love story'...?

Is it possible that rune X is the male lead, rune Y is the female lead, and rune Z is another man, and their sudden combination led to a heartbreaking plot development...?

Song Shuhang silently returned the 'Theories on how cultivators can save up true qi or spiritual energy while riding a flying sword!' to Senior Sister Ye.

It seems I'm still unable to understand the world of a well-read girl...

Does it mean that I've not advanced far enough on the road of literature?

"Junior Brother Path-seeking Scholar, I feel that you're thinking about something quite inappropriate at this time," Senior Sister Ye said disgruntledly, both her eyes very red.

Song Shuhang quickly waved his hand and denied, "No, I did no such thing!"

"After seeing your guilty conscience, I'm even surer that you were

thinking about something inappropriate." Senior Sister Ye sobbed a few times and covered her face with both hands. Waterdrops incessantly streamed down her cheeks as she burst out in tears again, looking very aggrieved.

"..." Song Shuhang.

"I'm sorry. I didn't start crying because of you, sob, sob, sob~ It's just that I suddenly felt very sad and couldn't help but burst out in tears. Sob, sob, sob~ I'm telling the truth, it doesn't have anything to do with you. Don't misunderstand, please." Senior Sister Ye aggrievedly cried while waving her hand at Song Shuhang, comforting him.

"..." Song Shuhang.

Senior Sister Ye was crying for the strangest reasons~

However, she looked rather cute when she was trying to comfort others while crying aggrievedly.

At last, with much difficulty, Senior Sister Ye managed to stop crying.



"I showed Junior Brother Path-seeking Scholar a rather embarrassing sight." Senior Sister Ye was still sobbing from time to time.

Song Shuhang gave her a tissue. It wasn't that he was carrying tissues around with him. It was just that there were many of them placed next to Senior Sister Ye and he simply picked up one.

Senior Sister Ye wiped away her tears and tried to awkwardly shift the topic of conversation. "Junior Brother Path-seeking Scholar, what kinds of books do you like reading?"

Song Shuhang pondered for a moment and replied, "I like all kinds of books. You can say that I'm just someone that simply likes reading."

Whether it was a book about boring theories, a textbook, a novel, a manga, a science thesis, or ancient poetry... in short, as long it was something with text written on it, Song Shuhang could lose himself in it and read it for the whole afternoon, if not longer, without breaks!

"You like all of them?" Senior Sister Ye asked out of curiosity.

Song Shuhang nodded.

"You and I are the same. I also like reading all kinds of books. Although I'm unable to understand the content of many difficult books properly, as long as it's book, I'll definitely like it. It's for this reason that I like staying in the 'Lower City' of the Time City. Because I can read even more books here!" Senior Sister Ye said happily.

The two of them were really similar from this point of view!

The duo looked into each other's eyes.

Song Shuhang felt he and Senior Sister Ye were like kindred souls!

Senior Sister Ye asked at this time, "What kinds of books do you usually read the most?"

"The books I read the most are probably school books and the likes. Since I'm still a student, I usually get in contact with these types of books the most," Song Shuhang recalled and continued, "But aside from that, the ones I read the most are probably novels and manga. These two types are really good for relaxing. Then, in the third place, I would say famous literary masterpieces and poetry."

"Like historical romance novels and picture albums? I'm also really interested in those two types of works. Do you have any historical novel or picture album to recommend?" Senior Sister Ye said happily.

When the two bookworms discussed, the topic of conversation

could but revolve around 'books'.

It was a 'common topic' they could talk about forever.

Thereupon, Song Shuhang told her about some of the novels he liked.

Since the range of the works was very broad and went from famous pieces of literature to classic martial arts novels, and again to modern webnovels, there were several works that he liked and thus wanted to recommend.

After hearing the names Song Shuhang mentioned, Senior Sister Ye sighed with emotion and said, "I haven't heard about any of the works you mentioned just now. Were all these works produced in the last several hundred years?"

Song Shuhang nodded and said, "Yes, that's indeed the case."

Time was truly a marvelous thing. Several hundred years of time could pass since a cultivator went into secluded meditation to when they came out. Sometimes, the entire world would have changed by the time they came out.

"In that case, how about giving me a brief introduction of these interesting works you mentioned? I'm very interested in them!" Senior Sister Ye said expectantly.

"Sure. I can briefly describe to Senior Sister Ye the interesting parts and general plot of those works. If Senior Sister Ye is really interested in them, I can bring them to you if I have another opportunity to visit the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion in the future," Song Shuhang said with a smile. His memory had become pretty good since he had become a cultivator. Therefore, it wasn't a problem to remember most of the plot of a novel after reading it once.

"Right, Senior Sister Ye. Earlier, while I was in one of the passages of the Lower City, I accidentally separated from my companion. Do you have any method to find her?" Song Shuhang

asked.

Aside from Chu Chu's whereabouts, he had to seize the opportunity and ask Senior Sister Ye about the exit of the Lower City as well.

"Hehe, it seems you guys happened to enter the area of the Time City that was about to shift. In order to lighten the effects of the erosion of 'time', the internal structure of the Time City would change from time to time," Senior Sister Ye explained. "Do you have any item with you that has the aura of your companion? Give it to me if you have it, I'll use it to look for your companion."

"Can bandages work?" Song Shuhang took off the bandages on his arm. Chu Chu had used those bandages to dress his wounds and her aura was still on them.

"Yes, bandages are also fine." Senior Sister Ye smiled and took the bandages in Song Shuhang's hands.

When she took the bandages from Song Shuhang's hands, her finger touched Shuhang's. The two of them could feel the temperature of each other's fingertips...

Chapter 555: Fellow Daoist, do you have a girlfriend?

When their fingertips touched, Song Shuhang's complexion quickly changed.

It's bad!

"I can feel it, it's coming!" Song Shuhang muttered to himself.

What he felt was coming was the peculiar feeling of the appraisal technique activating!

Senior Sister Ye blinked her eyes and looked in puzzlement at the convulsing Song Shuhang.

"Senior Sister Ye, quickly dodge!" Song Shuhang shouted.

But without waiting for Senior Sister Ye to move to one side, Song Shuhang's body spurted out blood like a fountain! As if that wasn't enough, the blood spurted out even more violently than before!

Senior Sister Ye gently waved her hand, and an invisible barrier blocked all the blood heading in her direction.

"Dammit! So painful!" Song Shuhang said as he suppressed his voice so as to avoid screaming in pain.

But in the next moment, blood spurted out of his mouth as well. "Blech~"

Although wounds appeared all over his body earlier too, it was his first time vomiting blood! Just what kind of secret was Senior Sister Ye hiding? The wounds Shuhang received when he appraised her were even more serious than the ones he received while appraising the 'human puppet' and the 'size-reducing purse' back then.

Song Shuhang gritted his teeth and activated the 'healing

technique' on his ancient bronze ring. The wounds he received the previous times were all superficial and he could recover from them within a few minutes, but the ones he received this time were somewhat serious. Such being the case, he decided to use the 'healing technique' engraved on the ancient bronze ring, something he could use only a limit number of times each day.

The radiance of the healing technique covered Song Shuhang's body and started to heal his wounds.

However, the wounds on his body were quickly splitting open soon after healing. As if that wasn't enough, more and more new wounds were continuously appearing. The price to appraise 'Senior Sister Ye' had been incredibly high!

In addition, the appraisal technique had activated all of a sudden.

Song Shuhang hadn't wondered about Senior Sister Ye's background or identity, neither he had considered appraising her. Such being the case, why had the appraisal technique suddenly activated on its own?

Song Shuhang had vomited a lot of blood. In his current state, he wasn't even able to take a medicinal pill to treat his wounds.

Very soon, he started becoming dizzy due to the excessive loss of blood and his eyelids got very heavy.

Senior Sister Ye was temporarily at a loss. But just as she returned to her senses, she quickly performed a hand seal and used a healing technique on Song Shuhang's body. The level of the healing technique she used was way higher than the one on Song Shuhang's ancient bronze ring.

Under the effects of the healing technique, the condition of Song Shuhang's body quickly stabilized. The wounds started to recover slowly and weren't reopening.

Senior Sister Ye asked, "Do you feel a little better now?"

"Yes, I feel much better now. Thank you, Senior Sister Ye," Song

Shuhang said.

Earlier, he really felt as though he was at death's door!

Just as he was speaking, runes flashed through his eyes and gushed out of his eye sockets like running water, dashing toward the well-read girl in front of him. Under normal circumstances, the runes would fall on Senior Sister Ye's body and form the picture of a clock. Afterward, the hands of the clock would turn counterclockwise.

But what happened this time was somewhat different.

When the runes gushed out of his eyes and fell on Senior Sister Ye's body, they directly entered her body, and only at that time did they transform into a clock. During the whole process, Senior Sister Ye was completely unaware of the changes happening right next to her.

After a short moment, the runes finally returned to Song Shuhang's eyes.

All the information related to Senior Sister Ye's appraisal were directly delivered to Song Shuhang's mind.

***The master of the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion, Fairy Chu...
*****__***

Only this piece of information was conveyed to Song Shuhang's mind. The following series of asterisks implied that the appraisal wasn't too successful.

The master of the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion, Fairy Chu?

What kind of relationship is there between Senior Sister Ye and Fairy Chu?

And what's the deal with the censored part of the appraisal?

Song Shuhang gasped for breath, and in the next moment, everything before his eyes turned black. Immediately after, Song Shuhang fell loudly to the ground and lost consciousness.

Just an instant before fainting, several pieces of information were transmitted to his brain in rapid succession. It was the text after the long series of asterisks.

Fairy Ye Si. She is also known as the 'Sobbing Beauty' and 'Miracle Tears' of the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion. She treats others kindly and loves reading books. She is also known as the 'Living Library' of the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion. She perished in the—

Unfortunately, the following piece of information was cut off due to Song Shuhang losing consciousness!

"Blech~" After he fainted, Song Shuhang spat out another mouthful of blood.

Along with his consciousness fading, the appraisal technique also switched off.

After the massive loss of blood earlier, without anyone noticing, a small part of Song Shuhang's blood had converged into his pocket.

In there, the enlightenment stone and Lady Onion's root were soaked in his blood, the latter slowly starting to grow up as though she had received some kind of tonic.



Around two hours later.

Song Shuhang finally regained consciousness.

Of course, he was able to wake up this quickly only thanks to Senior Sister Ye's magical technique.

"Fellow Daoist Path-seeking Scholar, what happened earlier? Why did you start spraying blood from all over your body? Moreover, so many wounds suddenly appeared..." Senior Sister Ye asked in puzzlement.

Song Shuhang forced a smile and said, "How can I explain it...

you can regard it as the backlash of a magical technique or something like a curse activating."

He himself was not sure how the appraisal technique worked. Therefore, he found it quite difficult to explain it to others.

"The backlash caused you to spurt blood from all over your body? Just what type of magical technique is this?" Senior Sister Ye asked in puzzlement. "If you want, you can describe to me the technique a little. After all, I've read many books about magical techniques. Therefore, I can perhaps find a way to resolve your problem."

Senior Sister Ye had read many books about magical techniques and accumulated a vast amount of knowledge that could perhaps come in handy. In addition, for unknown reasons, she had knowledge of several magical techniques that she herself had never heard of before!

"Of course, if it's a special or secret technique, you shouldn't casually reveal it to others. That's common knowledge," Senior Sister Ye also added.

Song Shuhang slightly nodded. It was a secret technique he'd obtained somewhere in the Time City. Moreover, even he himself was not clear how to describe its functions to others.

But since Fairy Ye Si was a kindhearted person and was also known as the 'Living Library' of the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion, perhaps it was worth it to give it a try and explain the situation to her.

"I'm not sure how to properly explain things, either, but it's a skill that can 'appraise' items. The only problem is that it makes me spurt blood from all over the body as a price for the appraisal. Moreover, it has been out of control since the first time I've used it." Song Shuhang vaguely described the effects of the magical technique to Senior Sister Ye.

Senior Sister Ye pondered for a moment, but even she who was

known as the 'Living Library' of the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion had never heard or read about similar symptoms.

Things such as appraisal techniques existed in the world of cultivators. For example, some ocular techniques could observe the goods in details and be even more effective than microscopes or similar items.

There were also magical techniques that could allow one to determine the age of an item through the appraisal of the chemical elements, as well as other several techniques of this genre. But there wasn't any appraisal technique amongst the ones Senior Sister Ye knew that would make the user violently spurt out blood whenever it was used.

Senior Sister Ye shook her head and said, "I haven't heard of a magical technique with such symp— ah?"

But right at this time, she had a sudden enlightenment! She had actually heard of a magical technique with similar effects somewhere!

...But the problem was that she couldn't recall where.

Given the powerful memory of cultivators, it should be normally impossible for such a thing to happen. In that case, was it possible that she had only quickly glimpsed at the content of the book describing those symptoms?

"Wait a moment, I think I've read about similar symptoms somewhere!" Senior Sister Ye rubbed her brows and, somewhat uncertain, said, "The only problem is that I can't temporarily recall in which book I've read this information!"

Actually, she was unsure whether she had read about it in a 'book'. The knowledge about these symptoms had appeared in her mind very suddenly, just as though it wasn't originally part of her memory.

"Really?" Song Shuhang said happily.

"Fellow Daoist Path-seeking Scholar, if you don't mind, how about looking for that piece of knowledge together? I've brought several books with me as I came to the room in this passageway. Many of them contain information about theoretical knowledge and use of magical techniques. Therefore, we can look through the material and try to see whether we can find a case that is similar to yours," Senior Sister Ye said.

"Thank you, Senior Sister Ye. But can I really read the books you have here?" Song Shuhang asked. After all, the content of all the books here present was related to cultivation.

In the outside world, even ordinary and widespread techniques such as the 'Flaming Saber Technique' were worth several spirit stones of the Third Stage and the content of the books Senior Sister Ye brought here was surely more valuable than something like the Flaming Saber Technique.

Senior Sister Ye nodded and said, "Now that I think about it, it's indeed a problem."



Thereupon, Senior Sister Ye started to rummage through the ocean of books all alone.

"Right, I've already found your companion through a magical technique related to the shifting passageways of the Time City. I used the aura on the bandages to lock her position. It will take just a little bit to lead her here where we are," Senior Sister Ye said while quickly flipping the pages of the book she was holding.

"Thank you, Senior Sister Ye!" Song Shuhang said gratefully. Now that Chu Chu was also safe, he could be at ease.

Afterward, he squatted on one side, really itching to take a look at the book Senior Sister Ye was flipping through.

Senior Sister Ye looked really happy while sitting amidst the ocean of books and flipping through the various books.

He would have really liked to squat next to her and rummage through that huge amount of books... but it was a pity that he didn't have the qualifications to read the books present here.



Senior Sister Ye rummaged through the ocean of books for a long time.

Then, she suddenly asked, "Fellow Daoist Path-seeking Scholar, to which sect do you belong to?"

"I don't belong to any sect or school. I'm a loose cultivator," Song Shuhang said with a smile.

"Eh? A loose cultivator?" Senior Sister Ye couldn't help but glance at Song Shuhang. Cultivators had their own methods to determine the age of a person. Therefore, she could easily tell that Song Shuhang wasn't even twenty years old yet. Nevertheless, he had already reached the Second Stage Third Dantian 'Dragon Claw Dantian' Realm. Moreover, the color of his mental energy was bronze. It was a sign that the strength of this mental energy had reached the Third Stage Realm already.

"Fellow Daoist Path-seeking Scholar, how about joining the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion then?" Senior Sister Ye's eyes lit up as she asked this question.

"I thank Senior Sister Ye for her kind intentions... but I'm afraid I won't be able to join any sect or school in the near future," Song Shuhang politely refused.

"Ah, it's such a pity. If you were to join us, the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion would surely put a lot of effort into training someone as talented as you," Senior Sister Ye said with a smile.

Song Shuhang laughed bashfully. Actually, his natural talent was very average, and he had missed the best period to practice as well. Therefore, he wasn't a genius or anything.

Senior Sister Ye had completely immersed herself in the ocean of

books, incessantly flipping the pages of the various books.

While she was calmly flipping through the books, Song Shuhang was squatting on one side and looking at her, somewhat bored.

Since he had nothing to do, Song Shuhang started to quietly practice the <Steel Hands Technique> and the <Immovable Body of the Buddha>.

"Right, Fellow Daoist Path-seeking Scholar. Do you have a girlfriend?" Senior Sister Ye suddenly asked out of curiosity.

Chapter 556: Then become my boyfriend!

"A girlfriend? No, I don't have one. I'm still young, after all. Hahaha..." Song Shuhang made a hollow laugh. Although our Shuhang was already in university, he was still single. It was truly a tragic and sad matter.

"You still don't have one?" Senior Sister Ye covered her mouth and laughed.

At this time, Song Shuhang felt as though Senior Sister Ye was taunting him.

"In that case... do you want to become my boyfriend?" Senior Sister Ye stretched out her hand, pointing at herself and blinking her eyes.

"Ah?" Song Shuhang was dumbstruck and wondered whether his hearing had problems.

"I said, how about becoming my boyfriend then?" Senior Sister Ye said once again.

Song Shuhang asked a stupid question in return, "Why?"

Song Shuhang didn't consider himself to be on par with those alpha Chinese main characters. Such being the case, why had Senior Sister Ye asked him on her own initiative to become his girlfriend? After all, they had met not too long ago.

"I feel that we are made for each other, and we also share the same hobby." Senior Sister Ye's eyes lit up as she continued, "Although I don't know the reason, I got the sudden urge to get into a relationship with you. It's a very strong feeling!"

The feeling she got was very sudden and strong! In the past, she had never considered the idea of getting into a relationship with someone... but now, this strong desire had suddenly manifested in her heart.

The strong desire was almost like a fixation; if she had to get into a relationship with someone, it was better to find a person that had interests similar to hers, as well as the same hobbies. Such being the case, Song Shuhang just happened to be the perfect partner for her.

At the very least, both of them liked to read books and had a common topic to talk about. They were like two kindred souls.

"Uh, but isn't that a bit too sudden?" Song Shuhang forced a smile. He had a very favorable impression of Senior Sister Ye. She was a well-read girl with tastes similar to his, and it was pleasant to converse with her.

But the two of them had just met, right?

"You have a point. It's indeed a bit sudden." Senior Sister Ye nodded and said. Then, she pondered for a moment and said, "But if we get into a relationship, you won't be regarded a stranger anymore! Therefore, you will be able to read all the books here present!"

After saying this much, Senior Sister Ye stretched out her hands and pointed at the hundreds of thousands of books and cultivation-related materials lying inside the room.

Song Shuhang forced a smile... Senior Sister, is it really alright for you to try to tempt me like that?

After seeing Song Shuhang forcing a smile, Senior Sister Ye also realized that her attempt to entice him had been too direct. Therefore, she laughed embarrassedly.



Afterward, Senior Sister Ye kept looking through the books while Song Shuhang practiced.

"Anyway, Fellow Daoist Path-seeking Scholar, have you really not considered it? I feel that we two are really suited for each other," Senior Sister Ye said. "Maybe we can wait some time and

try to understand each other better, becoming partners only afterward?"

Song Shuhang silently gazed at Senior Sister Ye. According to the information he obtained from the appraisal technique, Senior Sister Ye had two very positive nicknames. It seemed she was quite popular amongst the disciples of the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion!

Song Shuhang was sure that if Senior Sister Ye stood in the middle of the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion and shouted 'I want a boyfriend', there would be dozens of male cultivators that would fight to the death to become her partners.

Actually, Song Shuhang was really tempted to agree to her proposal just for the sake of reading those several hundred thousand books.

However, he decided against it because it would be an irresponsible thing to do.

After all, becoming partners wasn't that different than becoming husband and wife.

If he were to agree without properly thinking about it, other than being irresponsible, he would be unfair to Senior Sister Ye.

Seeing Song Shuhang's embarrassed look, Senior Sister Ye blinked her eyes.

"Eh? Even slowly building our relationship is not good?" Then, just as though she had realized something, she asked, "Fellow Daoist Path-seeking Scholar, is it possible that you like someone else?"

Do I like someone else?

Before becoming a cultivator, Song Shuhang was leading the life of a single and his objective was to find a cute girlfriend during the four years of university.

But after becoming a cultivator, he decided that it was better not

to get into a relationship for the time being. As he saw it, cultivating was more important than getting a girlfriend; even now, he was of the same idea.

After stepping into the world of cultivation, Song Shuhang met several good-looking female cultivators. He had a good relationship with Soft Feather, Sixteen, and Chu Chu, and had spent quite some time together with them. In addition, there were the pretty female seniors of the Nine Provinces Number One Group as well.

However, he wasn't in that kind of relationship with any of them. He was nowhere close to becoming a partner with them.

As such, Song Shuhang shook his head.

"In that case, you should really give it a thought! We are currently in the 'Lower City' of the Time City, and twelve days in here are equivalent to only one day in the outside world. Hence, we can spend a lot of time together here and get to know each other better. One year in this place is equivalent to only one month outside," Senior Sister Ye said.

"I will give it a thought then—" While he halfway through his sentence, Song Shuhang noticed that Senior Sister Ye's eye sockets had become red.

Ah? Is Senior Sister Ye about to cry?

Just as this thought flashed through Song Shuhang's mind, tears copiously flowed out of Senior Sister Ye's eyes, with teardrops falling incessantly.

She really started crying!

"Sob, sob, sob~" Senior Sister Ye wiped away her tears and used a book to cover her face, starting to cry even more loudly.

At the same time, she stretched out her hand and waved at Song Shuhang, saying, "Sob, sob, sob~ Don't mind me. It's just that a sad feeling suddenly welled up in my heart, and I couldn't help but

start crying. It doesn't have anything to do with you, sob, sob, sob~ Fellow Daoist Path-seeking Scholar, please, don't mind me, sob, sob, sob~ It really has nothing to do with you!"

What Senior Sister Ye said was the truth. The cultivation technique she practiced was the ‹Tome of Never-Ending Tears›, a technique that exclusively belonged to the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion. After successfully practicing the technique, the user would start crying for the strangest reasons.

Sometimes, a certain word would suddenly strike her heart while reading, causing her to weep bitterly.

Sometimes, she would suddenly associate someone's face with some other thing and start crying.

Sometimes, she would start crying while conversing because a certain word moved her.

The most wondrous thing was that she herself was unaware why these things were making her feel emotional. In short, whenever the thought of crying crossed her mind, regardless of the situation, she would start crying.

Earlier, as soon as Song Shuhang said the word 'I', it unknowingly struck her heart and triggered her reaction, making her burst into tears.

The hyacinth-like and well-read girl cried aggrievedly. She was delicate and had a clear conscience, worthy of being called 'Sobbing Beauty'.

"..." Song Shuhang.

Senior Sister Ye really cries for the strangest reasons~ However, she looked very cute when she was trying to comfort me while crying!

Senior Sister Ye's charm increased by 100 points while she was crying. Then, as she revealed her slightly red eyes after crying, her charm increased by another 20 points!



Song Shuhang rubbed his brows and pondered the situation.

Perhaps I can temporarily agree to Senior Sister Ye's request to get into a relationship. According to what she said, we won't become partners immediately but will try to get to know each other better first, deciding only later what to do.

Perhaps Senior Sister Ye would calm down after a few days and realize that Song Shuhang wasn't the best partner for her?

Or perhaps it was something she had decided on a whim and would get bored of playing this husband and wife game after a few days and lose interest in him?

Aside from that, a well-read girl like Senior Sister Ye that liked reading books and had the same hobbies as him indeed conformed to Song Shuhang's view of the ideal wife. Therefore, he wasn't too much against it.

"...Maybe we can give it a try, Senior Sister Ye," Song Shuhang replied.

"Eh?" Senior Sister Ye Si put down the book she was holding. At this time, the tear stains on her cheeks were still visible, and teardrops were incessantly falling from her eyes, making her look lovely.

Song Shuhang said, "Perhaps we can try to understand each other better and see if we are indeed suited to become partners."

"Sure, let's give it a try!" Senior Sister Ye's eyes lit up. Soon after, she happily burst out in tears again and said, "In that case, sob, sob, sob~ we are officially dating now, sob, sob, sob~"

"Officially dating? Sure, no problem," Song Shuhang said with a smile.

"Let's try to get to know each other better then!" Senior Sister Ye wiped away her tears and said, "Right, Shuhang. Since we are just

dating, we can't have sex yet. We would have to wait until we truly become husband and wife for that!"

"..." Song Shuhang.

"Another thing, I think we should briefly introduce ourselves so that we can get to know each other better," Senior Sister Ye said as she knelt in front of Song Shuhang, just like those ancient people.

"Alright." Song Shuhang copied Senior Sister Ye's posture and also knelt.

"I'll go first, alright?" Senior Sister Ye finished thinking about her speech and said, "As I said before, I'm part of the disciples of the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion surnamed 'Ye', and my dao name is 'Ye Si'. My teacher brought me to the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion when I was still a child. Therefore, my dao name is the same as my personal name. I'm currently a cultivator of the Fifth Stage Spiritual Emperor Realm, and my teacher, Chuyu Xingzhe, is the pavilion master of one of the branch pavilions of the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion, the Silver Moon Pavilion. The cultivation technique I practice is the *«Tome of Never-Ending Tears»*. As you can guess from the name, the reason I suddenly get sad and burst out into tears is related to this technique. However, the *«Tome of Never-Ending Tears»* is extremely powerful. Therefore, you'd better not underestimate me!

My main hobby is reading books, and I really like to come to the 'Lower City' of the Time City to read them. Twelve days in here are equivalent to only one day in the outside world. With that, I can seize the opportunity to read many more books while I'm here. Of course, I can't neglect my practice, either. Otherwise, my teacher won't allow me to come to the Lower City of the Time City anymore.

Then, the things I like to eat the most are... and my best friends are..."

Senior Sister Ye quickly introduced herself, wishing she could

tell Shuhang about her whole life since the day she was born up until now.

Song Shuhang silently nodded and kept in mind everything Ye Si said.

"Alright, now it's your turn," Senior Sister Ye said as she blinked her eyes. She had told Song Shuhang everything about her, without leaving anything out.

"My personal name is Song Shuhang. As for my dao name... hmm, Virtuous Buddhist Sabersman, Tyrannical Saber Song One, Daoist Priest Wood, Baijing Street's Sabersman, Scholar Mountain of Books, Path-seeking Scholar, and Virtuous Cultivator!" Song Shuhang said his seven dao names in one go.

Senior Sister Ye Si blinked her eyes and said, "Your dao name is very long!"

Song Shuhang changed his tone and said, "No, these are my seven dao names. One for each day of the week!"

"..." Senior Sister Ye Si.

Is it possible that having more than one dao name is a new trend in the world of cultivators? What a strange trend!

Chapter 557: Hugging each other and crying

"One for each day of the week? Does it mean that you have a different dao name every single day during the course of the week? Isn't that rather tiresome?" Senior Sister Ye asked.

"Ahaha, about that... I got used to it after a while." Song Shuhang forced a smile. Then, he continued with his self-introduction.

He told her how his life as a cultivator began three months ago when he was added to the Nine Provinces Number One Group by mistake.

Afterward, he spoke how he managed to complete his 'Hundred Days Foundation Establishment' thanks to the help of the seniors of the Nine Provinces Number One Group; then, he continued describing everything he went through during the following two or so months.

"Hold on!" Senior Sister Ye suddenly asked, "How much time has passed since you started cultivating?"

Song Shuhang replied, "About two months, I guess? But if you add the time I've passed here in the 'Lower City' of the Time City, it should be around three months."

Three months?! Senior Sister Ye's eyes became red, and she burst out in tears.

Song Shuhang was speechless. Just what had happened to Senior Sister Ye?

Senior Sister Ye waved her hand and said, "Don't mind me, please, sob, sob, sob~ You can continue with your introduction. Sob, sob, sob~ A sad feeling suddenly welled up in my heart, and I couldn't help but cry. It's absolutely not because I've heard that you started cultivating just recently. I'm not sad for that reason; it's completely not your fault! Sob, sob, sob~"

"..." Song Shuhang.

Shuhang felt that he had to adapt to her habit of suddenly bursting into tears if he wanted to pass the rest of his life with Ye Si.



After the brief self-introduction, the two of them now had a better understanding of the other one.

Senior Sister Ye wiped away her tears and said, "In that case, from today onwards, we should start dating and try to become partners, that kind of relationship where you have sex."

Senior Sister, can you stop mentioning the word 'sex' every time?

"Anyway, now you can also read all the books here present! There is a huge number of books here, enough for you to read for a very long time!" Senior Sister Ye smiled and stretched out her hands, pointing at the hundreds of thousands of books inside the room.

Song Shuhang asked in puzzlement, "Eh? Is that alright? After all, we haven't become partners yet."

The cultivation techniques, experiences, and knowledge that sects had accumulated over time were secret that had to be treasured and couldn't be passed down to outsiders.

Even the disciples of the sect had to slowly make their own way if they wanted to get a hold of the cultivation techniques, experiences, and knowledge safeguarded in their sect.

"Yes, it's fine. The content of the books here present is not related to the cultivation techniques passed down in our Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion. The content of the books is mostly related to theories, techniques, and cultivation experiences that are already widely known in the world of cultivators. As long as the two of us are fated to get into a serious relationship, you can also read these books," Senior Sister Ye replied.

In other words, the hundreds of thousands of books present here were books about the 'general knowledge' of the world of

cultivators. The ancient world of cultivators was incredibly prosperous before the new Wielder of the Will brought disaster on it. Back then, some individuals gathered all the valuable knowledge and cultivation-related experiences and orderly arranged them into volumes, allowing all the people in the world of cultivators to read them in exchange for a large number of spirit stones.

It was one of the best periods for loose cultivators.

"I see." After hearing this much, Song Shuhang was much more relieved and casually picked a book from the many lying around.

There were four words written on the cover of the book. The words were written using an ancient language that Song Shuhang couldn't understand. But as soon as he looked at the four words, the true qi inside his body surged and moved according to the pattern drawn by the words.

Then, just like that, he was able to read and understand the meaning of the four words.

《Tome of Never-Ending Tears》.

Fck!*

Isn't this the cultivation technique that Senior Sister Ye is practicing?

"Senior Sister Ye, you placed the book of this cultivation technique here by mistake." Song Shuhang quickly returned the 《Tome of Never-Ending Tears》 to Senior Sister Ye.

One had to pay a big price if they were to casually look at the unique cultivation techniques of other sects, and Song Shuhang had no intention of getting involved in such a troublesome matter.

"Path-seeking Scholar, you can just call me Ye Si! We are partners now... well, still dating actually, but it's the type of relationship where one ends up having sex!" Senior Sister Ye said earnestly.

Afterward, she stretched her hand and took the <Tome of Never-Ending Tears>, returning it to Song Shuhang after glancing at it.

"?" Song Shuhang.

"The <Tome of Never-Ending Tears> isn't really a secret technique of the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion. It's something my teacher and I created together. It's a tailor-made cultivation technique just for me. Although it's not complete yet, it can allow the user to reach the Sixth Stage Realm. Anyway, it's a cultivation technique that belongs to me. Therefore, you can borrow it as long as you have my permission," Senior Sister Ye said complacently.

An exclusive, tailor-made cultivation technique!

Tailor-made cultivation techniques were perhaps not comparable to top-notch cultivation techniques. However, they were surely the most suitable for the user and could allow one to bring into full play their skills.

No wonder Senior Sister Ye placed the book related to this cultivation technique directly amidst the ocean of books.

But wasn't it a bit too coincidental that I casually picked up a book and it turned out to be the <Tome of Never-Ending Tears>?

"Do you want to take a look at the cultivation technique? Perhaps you can understand me better by taking a look at it. After all, from a certain point of view, the <Tome of Never-Ending Tears> is like a small biography of my life," Senior Sister Ye said with a smile.

Song Shuhang shot her a glance and opened the <Tome of Never-Ending Tears>.

The words used to describe the cultivation technique resembled Chinese characters, but at the same time, they were somewhat different.

Just like the with the four words of the title, as soon as Song Shuhang looked at the content of the <Tome of Never-Ending Tears>, the true qi in his body slowly started to surge.

Then, he began to understand the content of the <Tome of Never-Ending Tears> as though it was something natural.

First page!

Song Shuhang had just shot a glance at the first page of the tome when a sad feeling welled up in his heart.

The sad feeling was incredibly strong!

Song Shuhang started to recall various trivial matters that happened to him from his childhood up until now. For example, when his Elder Sister Yaya stole his candies, when he tripped and fell while running, when a large hole suddenly appeared next to him, when he almost choked while eating, when a group of people starting chasing him for unknown reasons and wanted to kill him, when his mental energy sharply increased and his constitution couldn't keep up with it anymore, or when his body started to spurt out blood...

Countless sad memories gathered together and simultaneously attacked Song Shuhang's spirit. Soon after, he felt a lump in his throat and his eye sockets reddened.

He felt incredibly sad at this time!

Immediately after, tears started to stream down his cheeks, without any sign of stopping.

"Sob, sob, sob~ I'm so sad. Why am I so sad~" Song Shuhang knelt on the ground and shouted, "My life up until now has been simply a tragedy, totally miserable. Why have I been living such a life up until now? Just what's the point of keep living in this world? Sob, sob, sob... I feel as though I have been living a super unhappy life all along. Sob, sob, sob~"

Wait... wait a moment! Just what the hell am I saying? Why did I suddenly get depressed?

How can a little bit of misfortune stop me? I'm iron-willed Song Shuhang!

The depression won't easily defeat my will!

However, he still felt quite sad.

Song Shuhang felt as though his will had separated from his body. Although his will was as strong as iron, his body was unexpectedly weak and couldn't keep up.

At last, he burst into tears and cried copiously, looking very aggrieved.

His tears fell incessantly, just as though they were raindrops, and soaked the ground below.

Senior Sister Ye quickly said, "Ah! Path-seeking Scholar, don't cry so aggrievedly! If you keep crying like that, you'll affect me as well!"

"I know... Senior Sister Ye, I know... sob, sob, sob~ but I just can't stop. It's so embarrassing, sob, sob, sob~ and so sad. The sadness is simply too much. I, too, would like to stop, but my body just isn't listening to me." The sound of Song Shuhang's crying was getting louder and louder. The more he was embarrassed, the more loudly he was crying. His sense of shame became another source of energy for his sadness.

This is bad... I need to drink more water. I've lost a lot of body fluids lately. Be it blood or tears, both are out of control recently and flow incessantly.

"Sob, sob, sob~ Path-seeking Scholar! Stop crying! Oh, no. Now I also feel like crying..." After seeing Song Shuhang cry, Senior Sister Ye was also infected and couldn't help but weep.

It was like: 'If you cry, I'll also cry'.

Hearing Shuhang cry like that made Senior Sister Ye feel very sad.

Of course, Senior Sister Ye crying sound also made it so that Song Shuhang cried even more aggrievedly.

In the end, the two of them hugged each other and cried bitterly.

Their cries only contributed to making the other person sadder, making it more and more difficult for them to stop.

As a result, the duo hugged each other and leaned against each other's shoulder.

Senior Sister Ye's tears soaked Song Shuhang's shoulder.

Song Shuhang's tears also soaked Senior Sister Ye's shoulder.

It's bad! Not only my tears are flowing out, but even my nasal mucus is! If I lean against Senior Sister Ye's shoulder like this, I'll dirty her clothes.

The experience just now was bound to become one of the most embarrassing and darkest parts of his life. It was very likely that he would want to crawl into a hole whenever he thought about this scene in the future.

Stop! Stupid tears, stop!

But I feel really sad... I just can't stop. Moreover, the more I'm crying, the more I feel free from worries. It feels as though all the pressure I was feeling was expelled through the tears.

Forget it. It's not like it's a crime for a man to cry. As long as no one sees this scene, it's all good, Song Shuhang thought to himself.

Just as this thought crossed his mind~ a little bird made of bandages entered the 'library room' through the open door.

Immediately after the little bird, a beautiful leg wrapped in black stocking appeared before Song Shuhang's eyes.

Miss Chu Chu was finally here.



Chu Chu had come here by following the little bird made of bandages.

Earlier this morning, she teamed up with Song Shuhang and

started to explore the 'Lower City' in order to find an exit. But as they were exploring the place, they suddenly separated.

Later, a little bird made of blood-soaked bandages came to look for her. She immediately recognized the bandages as the ones she had wrapped around Song Shuhang's hand. After all, there was the 'Made in Chu Family' writing on them.

Chu Chu was very worried at that time and feared that something had happened to Song Shuhang.

Thereupon, she immediately followed after the little bird and came to this place.

But just as she arrived at the destination, she saw Song Shuhang hugging a girl with a scholarly aura while kneeling on the ground and crying bitterly.

From where she was standing, she could see an incredible amount of tears streaming down Song Shuhang's face, and even his nasal mucus was about to come out.

Miss Chu Chu was speechless.

She opened her mouth and tried to speak. However, she didn't know what she should say at this time.

Should she come up with something to comfort Fellow Daoist Shuhang and the well-read girl?

Chapter 558: Running for 5000 meters on four limbs

"You two can continue. I'll see myself out." Chu Chu decided to play it safe and not get involved with whatever Song Shuhang and the well-read girl were doing.

Song Shuhang stretched out his hand and called out, "Sob, sob, sob~ Miss Chu Chu, wait a moment! Sob, sob, sob~ It's not as you think! You are definitely misunderstanding the situation!" Given Chu Chu's vigilant look, it was very likely that she had misunderstood what was going on.

"In that case, why is a big man like you crying so aggrievedly?" Chu Chu stopped in her tracks. However, her body still unconsciously leaned toward the exit of the 'library'.

"It's the effect of a cultivation technique. Sob, sob, sob~ Due to it, I can't help but cry," Song Shuhang replied.

Chu Chu paused for a moment and asked out of curiosity, "In that case, why is the fairy maiden next to you also crying?"

Senior Sister Ye took the initiative to reply, "Sob, sob, sob~ It's because Fellow Daoist Path-seeking Scholar and I are dating. After seeing him cry so aggrievedly, I couldn't help but cry myself. Sob, sob, sob~"

Dating?

Chu Chu counted on her fingers, trying to calculate how much time had passed since she had separated from Song Shuhang.

They had separated for a rather short amount of time!

And during such a short amount of time, Song Shuhang and the well-read fairy maiden started dating?

Casanova, impregnating touch, walking debauchery, and other fancy words resurfaced in Chu Chu's mind.

However, she quickly shook her head and cast these thoughts aside.

After all, it wasn't her first time dealing with Song Shuhang. Therefore, she had an idea of his character.

Nevertheless, the fact that Song Shuhang and that well-read fairy maiden, who seemed incredibly strong, had started dating so suddenly gave Chu Chu quite the shock.



Half an hour later.

Song Shuhang and Senior Sister Ye finally stopped crying.

Little friend Shuhang was exhausted both in mind and body. Since the day he was born up until now, he had never cried for so long and shed so many tears!

After a short rest, the trio decided to avoid talking about what happened earlier.

To make things less awkward, Senior Sister Ye decided to instruct Song Shuhang and Chu Chu during their practice.

After all, Senior Sister Ye was an expert of the Fifth Stage Spiritual Emperor Realm.

Moreover, she wasn't an ordinary Fifth Stage Spiritual Emperor. She was a very talented cultivator that had created a tailor-made cultivation technique for herself with the help of her teacher.

She had a great knowledge when it came to cultivation techniques, martial skills, magical techniques, and techniques to operate one's true qi and spiritual energy, with her expertise in regards to skills that exclusively belonged to her being even higher.

Listening to Senior Sister Ye's suggestions greatly benefitted Chu Chu.

After a short moment, Chu Chu silently moved to one side, starting to ponder over the newly obtained information.



Next, Senior Sister Ye helped Song Shuhang with his cultivation.

However, she rubbed her brows immediately after, somewhat worried.

Although Song Shuhang knew only a bunch of cultivation techniques and martial skills, he had already reached the master level in most of them.

《Basic Buddhist Fist Technique》, 《Immovable Body of the Buddha》, 《Inverted Scale Saber Technique》, 《Virtuous Man's Ten Thousand Mile Walk》, 《Thirty\ -Three Divine Beasts' Technique》, 《Whale Swallowing Technique》, Lightning Palm... all the above\ -mentioned cultivation techniques and martial skills were already at the master level.

Therefore, she could help Song Shuhang only with the 《Steel Hands Technique》 that he had just started practicing and that weird 《Holy Light Sword Technique》.

There weren't many things she could help Song Shuhang with when it came to cultivation techniques. She could only tell him about some little tricks, and that was it.

For example, how to use the minimum quantity of true qi to obtain the best effects while using saber qi and the likes.

Or how to take advantage of the explosive power of one's true qi while using the 《Virtuous Man's Ten Thousand Mile Walk》 to increase both the speed and efficiency of the footwork.

These not too showy small tricks were the essence of the knowledge countless senior cultivators had accumulated in the past.

Perhaps the proper use of these small tricks could make the difference between life and death or victory and defeat at the crucial moment.



After the practice, Song Shuhang and Senior Sister Ye started to rummage through the ocean of books once more in the hope of finding a method to stop Song Shuhang from spurting out blood from all over the body while using the appraisal technique.

Chu Chu didn't touch any of the books.

Since she was a girl, she was unable to become Senior Sister Ye's boyfriend and thus didn't have the qualifications to look at the books inside the room.

Thereupon, she decided to quietly move to one side and rest, playing the part of the third wheel. She was very curious as to how things between Song Shuhang and Senior Sister Ye would evolve.

Unfortunately, perhaps because she was such a glaring third wheel, there wasn't any development between Song Shuhang and Senior Sister Ye.

The two of them squatted down amidst the ocean of books while holding thick books in their hands, reading them with great interest. Only when they were exchanging books would they give each other a knowing smile.

Aside from that, the duo didn't get any more intimate.

The slow development made the nearby Chu Chu somewhat anxious.

Should I go to the room next door so that the relationship between Fellow Daoist Shuhang and Senior Sister Ye can advance further? Chu Chu thought to herself.



The next day, early morning.

It had been 37 days since Song Shuhang and Chu Chu had entered the Time City.

Song Shuhang opened his eyes.

Four days should have already passed in the outside world, right?

Song Shuhang was now sure that Pavilion Master Chu had really forgotten about the fact that he and Chu Chu were in the Time City.

Such being the case, he would seize the opportunity and practice here for a few more days. After all, it was a very good place to practice.

But right at this time, the muffled sound of a sob reached his ears.

Is Senior Sister Ye crying? It's still early morning. What did she think of that she started crying so early?

Thereupon, Song Shuhang turned his head around. Immediately after, he saw that Senior Sister Ye was curled up like a small cat, sobbing from time to time. It seemed she was having a nightmare.

Given her realm, Ye Si didn't really need to sleep.

But yesterday, after seeing that Song Shuhang had gone to sleep, she randomly found a place and lay down, resting a bit.

After falling asleep, she unexpectedly had a dream, something she hadn't had in ages.

"Hey, Senio— Ye Si, Ye Si, wake up." Song Shuhang stretched out his hand and gently shook Senior Sister Ye.

Senior Sister Ye opened her eyes and sobbed a few times. Afterward, she said embarrassedly, "Was I crying?"

"Yes. Senio— Ye Si, what did you dream about?" Song Shuhang asked.

Senior Sister Ye pondered for a moment and forced a smile, saying, "It was a rather inconceivable dream... in the dream, it felt as though the world was ending. Cultivators were brutally killing each other, and there was destruction everywhere. I haven't had a dream for a very long time. But now, I suddenly had this strange

dream. It was rather heartbreaking."

"It was a nightmare then," Song Shuhang said softly.

"Yes, but I feel much better after crying," Senior Sister Ye said with a smile, stretching herself.

Tears were the best way to release the pent-up emotion within one's heart.



Song Shuhang and the others ate lamb-flavored fasting pills for breakfast.

Afterward, Shuhang and Chu Chu started their daily practice with Senior Sister Ye supervising them.

Within just a day, Chu Chu's swordsmanship had reached new heights, and her understanding of basic saber techniques had also reached the beginner level, with Song Shuhang's gains being even higher.

After practice, Chu Chu found an excuse to temporarily leave the library room, giving Song Shuhang and Senior Sister Ye the possibility to spend some time together.

Unfortunately, Song Shuhang and Senior Sister Ye didn't really think about the fact that a man and a woman were inside the room all alone.

Senior Sister Ye happily dove into the ocean of books, holding a thick book in her hands and reading it with great interest.

On the other hand, Song Shuhang took a horse-type spirit beast crystal out of his size-reducing purse. He had obtained this horse-type spirit beast crystal from that stallion spirit that had tried to kidnap Lady Onion back then.

The rank of the spirit beast crystal was quite low, only of the Second Stage rank. Back then, the stallion spirit must have really given his best to gather so many low-level spirit beast crystal of

the Second Stage.

Eating the crystal was equivalent to absorbing the energy of a spirit stone of the Second Stage.

At this time, the strength of Song Shuhang's constitution had increased and was basically approaching the peak of the Second Stage Realm while his mental energy had already reached the Third Stage rank.

He had managed to open his third dantian—the Dragon Claw Dantian—recently. Thanks to that, he didn't have to worry about his body suddenly exploding due to the excessive amount of true qi. At this time, aside from his glabella hurting due to the extra amount of mental energy, his body didn't have any other problem.

Such being the case, he could try to use the <Whale Swallowing Technique> to eat spirit beast crystal once more, fully developing the embryonic form of the 'pseudo\-innate true qi' inside his Sea of Qi Dantian.

Since the spirit beast crystal the stallion spirit gave him was of the Second Stage rank, Shuhang could eat it without problems.

The only thing he didn't know was whether the horse\-type spirit beast crystal would influence his mental energy as well.

Just as he was in deep thoughts, Song Shuhang's heart jumped.

In the next moment, blood spurted out of the right hand he was using to hold the spirit beast crystal. Two small but very painful wounds had appeared on it.

Song Shuhang clenched his teeth.

Afterward, runes emerged from his eyes and fell on the spirit beast crystal, forming the picture of a clock.

After a short moment, they returned to Song Shuhang's eyes.

***It's a horse\-type spirit beast crystal of the Second Stage rank. It can be eaten through the <Whale Swallowing Technique> and

can slightly strengthen the constitution, increase the quantity of true qi, and further develop the 'pseudo\innate true qi'. After eating it with the <Whale Swallowing Technique>, the quickest way to absorb it is to run for 5000 meters on four limbs.***

"..." Song Shuhang.

"Path\seeking Scholar, did you get injured?" Senior Sister Ye put down the book she was reading and run to Song Shuhang's side, using a healing technique to treat his wounds.

"You don't need to worry, Senio— Ye Si. It's just a small wound," Song Shuhang said with a smile.

He didn't need a healing technique to cure wounds of such degree. He could heal them within a minute by relying on the strength of his constitution alone.

"Did the appraisal technique activate?" Fairy Ye Si asked.

"Yes." Song Shuhang nodded.

Fairy Ye Si sighed and said, "It seems we need to quickly find a way to deal with the aftereffects of this secret technique. Otherwise, I fear that you might truly die if you end up appraising something too strong someday."

Song Shuhang forced a smile.

At this time, Shuhang was really scared of tripping and falling to the ground. Because if he were to touch the ground with his hands, appraising either the Time City or the meteoroid below, he would die for sure.

Chapter 559: Swordsman Wooden Ox's gloves of passion

Should I consider wearing gloves from now on? Song Shuhang thought to himself.

According to the information he had gathered up until now, his hands had to touch the 'object' to appraise in order to trigger the secret technique.

Then, just as his vision concentrated on the item, or he wondered about its characteristics, there was a very large probability that the appraisal technique would activate.

Since touching the 'object' with his fingers was one of the main conditions to trigger the appraisal technique, perhaps he could reduce the chances of the secret technique activating if he was wearing a pair of gloves and thus not directly touching the object in question?

At most, he would receive a small wound while wearing the gloves, which he could easily endure.

Perhaps it could really work!

"What are you thinking about?" Senior Sister Ye asked after seeing Song Shuhang's pensive look.

Thereupon, Song Shuhang told Senior Sister Ye about what he was thinking just now.

"Gloves? If you need them, I just happen to have a pair of gloves here with me! I have no idea where these gloves come from, but I found them next to me when I came out of secluded meditation one month ago. Since I found the whole thing quite strange, I decided to pick them up and keep them. Come, give them a try and see if they fit your hands," Senior Sister Ye said and stretched out her hand, placing it on her bracelet. In the next moment, she took a pair of white gloves from inside the bracelet.

The bracelet was a space-related magical treasure, an incredibly valuable item! An ordinary Fifth Stage Spiritual Emperor wouldn't be able to obtain such an item even if they were to sell their whole property.

Anyway, a pair of old-looking gloves appeared before Song Shuhang's eyes. The pair of gloves wasn't a magical treasure. Therefore, Senior Sister Ye gifted them to Shuhang.

"Thank you, Senio— Ye Si. I'll give them a try." Song Shuhang happily took the pair of white gloves and prepared to 'appraise' them.

However, the appraisal technique didn't activate this time.

Apparently, it disliked this pair of gloves and felt that they weren't worth appraising.

"..." Song Shuhang.

Are you making fun of me?!

Earlier, you continuously activated on your own. But now that I'm trying to activate you of my own volition, you are ignoring me?!

Song Shuhang started to recall the scene of the 88,888 voices speaking in his mind, stubbornly staring at the pair of gloves.

At the same time, he silently thought in his heart, I'm really curious about this pair of gloves. I really wonder what's their story and what they are made of!

After a short moment, the appraisal technique activated, and several light wounds appeared around the wrist place of his right arm.

The bandages wrapped around his right arm were dyed red with blood, and the pain was propagated to the rest of his body through his nerves, making Song Shuhang clench his teeth.

After that, runes rushed out of Shuhang's eyes and fell on the

gloves, forming the picture of a clock.

The hands of the clock turned counter-clockwise and returned to Song Shuhang's immediately after.

The gloves of passion. It's a pair of gloves that a swordsman nicknamed 'Wooden Ox' lost in the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion 600 years ago. His lover, Fairy Yi, wove the silk of the ice silkworm into a pair of gloves. As a consequence, every inch of the gloves is full of the love Fairy Yi had for him. The user's luck will increase after wearing them!

A pair of gloves that his lover made for him... that Swordsman Wooden Ox must have been so scared of his lover that he probably knelt on the washboard for a whole day after he carelessly lost them, right? Hmm, wait a moment. It seems it's trendy to kneel on diamond-hard durians as a punishment in the world of cultivators.

Song Shuhang remembered that a senior of the Nine Provinces Number One Group had once posted a piece of news related to the world of cultivators in the group. According to the content of the news, the sect master of one of the four great sword sects, the Southern Eternal Sword Sect, quarreled with his wife. The sect master used harsh words and wanted to break up with her, but in the end, he had to kneel for a whole day on a 'diamond-hard durian' as a punishment.

Song Shuhang didn't have any idea as to what these 'diamond-hard durians' looked like, but they should be way scarier than ordinary durian fruits.

The pain transmitting from his wrist made Song Shuhang clench his teeth, allowing him to return to his senses.

At the same time, he thought to himself, This pair of gloves is something Swordsman Wooden Ox forgot here in the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion when he came as a guest 600 years ago... but why did they suddenly appear next to Senior Sister Ye a month ago? Moreover, Senior Sister Ye doesn't seem to know the origin of

these gloves, either...

After reaching this conclusion, Song Shuhang didn't ponder the matter further.

He quickly wore the 'gloves of passion'.

The size was perfect. It seemed that the hands of Swordsman Wooden Ox were precisely as big as Shuhang's!

Such being the case, Song Shuhang decided to be impolite and keep the 'gloves of passion'. If he were to meet Senior Swordsman Wooden Ox some day in the future after he had left the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion, he would remember to return the gloves to him!

The 'gloves of passion' were made from the silk of the ice silkworm and were extremely light, almost weightless. Song Shuhang tried to move his fingers while wearing the pair of gloves and noticed that they hardly hindered his movements.

The only drawback was that the temperature of the gloves was rather low, and his hands would become numb after wearing them for a long time.

"These gloves are pretty good," Song Shuhang said in praise.

Senior Sister Ye smiled and narrowed her eyes. Although she practiced the *«Tome of Never-Ending Tears»*, she was a very cheerful girl that loved smiling.



After wearing the gloves, Song Shuhang tried to touch objects in the surrounding area such as the table lamp, the floor, the stool, rocks, and so on.

Afterward, he took out of his 'size-reducing purse' the spirit-binding ice bead, all sorts of medicinal pills and talismans, the silver dragon puppet, and other items, touching them with his hands.

There wasn't any reaction after touching the spirit-binding ice bead!

There wasn't any reaction after touching medicinal pills and talismans.

And there wasn't any reaction after touching the silver dragon puppet, either!

Even after he had touched all the items inside the size-reducing purse, the appraisal technique didn't show any sign of activating.

"It works!" Song Shuhang said happily.

He wasn't sure if the gloves could completely stop the appraisal technique from starting. However, it seemed they drastically reduced the probability of it activating.

Such being the case, it was better if he kept them on before finding a way to permanently prevent the appraisal technique from making him spurt blood from all over the body. Of course, he could take them off if there was an emergency.



Around five minutes later.

Song Shuhang was now holding in his hand the horse-type spirit beast crystal, wiping it clean since he was about to eat it with the <Whale Swallowing Technique>.

On one side, Senior Sister Ye was curiously looking at Song Shuhang, who was preparing to use the <Whale Swallowing Technique>.

She was very curious about this cultivation technique that could allow the user to eat and absorb spirit beast crystals. Moreover, with her being there, she could promptly help Song Shuhang if something unexpected were to happen while he was using the <Whale Swallowing Technique>.

Song Shuhang adjusted his state and tried to be at his best.

Afterward, he put the horse-type spirit beast crystal in his mouth.

After the activation of the ‹Whale Swallowing Technique›, Song Shuhang's teeth became capable of biting the spirit beast crystal to pieces, and his stomach and digestive system capable of absorbing the spirit beast crystal. Aside from that, it was possible to flawlessly lead the energy inside the spirit beast crystal into one's dantian through the technique.

While practicing the ‹Whale Swallowing Technique›, Song Shuhang had always been wondering if he could use it to bite people other than eating and absorbing spirit beast crystals.

After all, Shuhang's teeth turned as hard as a treasured weapon after the usage of the technique. If he were to bite the enemy, it wouldn't be a problem to chew away their flesh.

Cough... of course, such a technique wasn't truly a good sight to behold. Therefore, it was better not to use it if possible.

"Crack, crack, crack~"

The hard spirit beast crystal was bitten to pieces just like that.

"Chew, chew, chew~"

"Gulp~"

"This time, it tasted like roasted meat. The taste was somewhat astringent, I guess?" Song Shuhang muttered to himself.

The previous time, when he ate the shark-type spirit beast crystal, it tasted like raw fish.

And when he ate the sheep-type spirit beast crystal while dreaming, it tasted like lamb chops.

Such being the case, was the taste he felt just now the taste of roasted horse meat?

The nearby Senior Sister Ye exclaimed, "You really ate it! It looked rather incredible!"

It was very difficult to extract the spiritual energy within spirit beast crystals. But now, she witnessed that it was possible to make use of them by simply 'eating' them. The senior that created the <Thirty-Three Divine Beasts' Technique> must have been a very talented person!

"Shuhang, although you managed to bite to pieces the spirit beast crystal and eat it, it's still a piece of crystal in the end. Won't it give you indigestion later? What if it gives you diarrhea as well?" Senior Sister Ye asked. She was pondering about this matter from an academic point of view.

"..." Song Shuhang.

Why is everyone asking me if I'll have diarrhea after they see me use the <Whale Swallowing Technique> to eat spirit beast crystals?

First, it was Senior Phoenix Slayer that asked this question. Now, it was Senior Sister Ye.

In the end, Song Shuhang forced a smile and shook his head, saying, "The <Whale Swallowing Technique> can allow me to completely digest the spirit beast crystal. There won't be pieces left behind in my stomach that would cause me trouble."

"So that's how it was." Senior Sister Ye nodded.

The <Whale Swallowing Technique> was activated, and everything proceeded without a hitch.

Song Shuhang didn't dare to be careless and sat cross-legged, operating the <Thirty-Three Divine Beasts' Technique> to lead the spiritual energy inside the spirit beast crystal to his dantian. At the same time, he guided the 'origin true qi' inside the horse-type spirit beast crystal as well, making it mix with the embryonic form of the 'innate true qi' in his dantian.

The whole process proceeded well, and aside from the place between his eyebrows hurting due to the excessive amount of mental energy, nothing unexpected happened.

In the end, the small illusory figure of a horse appeared next to the embryonic form of the 'innate true qi' in Song Shuhang's Sea of Qi Dantian. Afterward, it circled the embryonic form of the innate true qi together with the figures of the shark and sheep, revolving around it.

Song Shuhang opened his eyes.

Now, he had to do one last thing...

'After eating it with the <Whale Swallowing Technique>, the quickest way to absorb it is to run for 5000 meters on four limbs.'

Do I really have to do that?

It was a rather embarrassing thing to do, especially with Senior Sister Ye still there.

However, there were many passageways and rooms in the 'Lower City' of the Time City.

Song Shuhang could quietly find a lonely place and run on four limbs in there.

Thereupon, Song Shuhang stood up and said to the nearby Senior Sister Ye, "Ye Si, I'm going out to exercise a bit. I'll come back in a while!"

He just had to run for 5000 meters, and even if he had to do it on four limbs, it wouldn't take him more than a few minutes if he were to do it quickly.

"Be careful on the road. Right, carry this badge with you. You don't have to worry about losing your way if you have it," Senior Sister Ye said as she passed Song Shuhang a button-sized badge.

Song Shuhang took the badge and left Senior Sister Ye's private library room.

After walking straight in the passageway, he arrived at what

resembled a huge arena. The arena was very big, basically the same as the race tracks in schools. Completing one lap around the arena should be comparable to running for 300-400 meters.

"It should take me around twenty laps to completely digest the spirit beast crystal." Song Shuhang placed both his hands and feet on the ground.

It wasn't that easy to 'run' while maintaining this posture.

Perhaps I should try to leap around like a cheetah?

Chapter 560: Broadcasting the practice of Senior Sister Ye's partner

Song Shuhang placed both his hands on the ground and stuck his butt up.

In the next moment, he jumped up. According to Song Shuhang's imagination, his current posture was like that of a cheetah and was full of explosive power.

But in truth, his current posture wasn't appealing in the least. He didn't resemble a cheetah at all while he was propping himself up with his hands and jumping around... on the contrary, he looked more like an amphibian excelling at swimming.

It was the difference between the three following point of views: what you look like in someone else's eyes, what you look like in your own eyes, and what you actually look like.

Anyway, regardless of Song Shuhang's current posture, he was the only person inside the huge arena. Since there was no one around, he could be at ease and jump around without a care. He could leap around in any way he wanted. After all, he just had to run for 5000 meters with both his hands and feet simultaneously touching the ground to completely absorb the energy inside the spirit beast crystal.

After madly dashing about (or rather, leaping around) for approximately 200 meters, Song Shuhang finally got used to running on four limbs.

His speed was getting faster and faster as he was running, and after running for another 200 meters, Song Shuhang started to apply a few small tricks belonging to the 〈Virtuous Man's Ten Thousand Mile Walk〉 footwork to his current set of movements. Grasping a cultivation technique didn't mean using a fixed set of movements rigidly. The more one was skilled in the usage of the

technique, the more they could make a variegated use of it. Then, after reaching a high enough comprehension, they could assimilate the knowledge inside the technique and make it their own.

Song Shuhang's speed got faster and faster and as he got used to running in that posture.

What the mysterious appraisal technique told him earlier wasn't wrong. While he was running on his four limbs, the energy of the horse-type spirit beast crystal inside him quickly started to merge with the rest of his body.

Although he didn't know why or how it was happening... he felt that what he was currently doing was very effective!

"I should accelerate a bit. I only have to run for 5000 meters; it shouldn't take me too much," Song Shuhang muttered to himself.



Next door, inside Senior Sister Ye's library.

At this time, Fairy Ye Si wasn't reading books. Instead, she was assembling a small magical treasure.

It was a mirror-type magical treasure with eight trigrams engraved on the back. Senior Sister Ye was currently installing several accessories on it.

This gadget was very similar to the 'eight-trigram information collecting formation' used in the hand-guided tractor competition to broadcast the race to the rest of the world. The only difference was that the version Senior Sister Ye had with her was several times smaller and less powerful.

"It's finally finished, and only one last step is left," Senior Sister Ye said softly.

The magical treasure had the ability to lock the position of the badge Song Shuhang was wearing.

It was possible to produce a resonance between Song Shuhang

and the magical treasure. With that, there was no need to worry about him losing his way even if the passageways of the Time City were to shift.

However, she still had to activate both the magical treasure she had assembled and the badge Song Shuhang was wearing.

Thereupon, Senior Sister Ye entered the following information in the small magical treasure.

***Petition to activate the locating badge and the locating mirror.

***Dao name of the owner of the badge:

******1) Virtuous Buddhist Sabersman ******2) Tyrannical Saber Song One ******3) Daoist Priest Wood ******4) Baijing Street's Sabersman ******5) Scholar Mountain of Books ******6) Path-seeking Scholar ******7) Virtuous Cultivator ******Note: The above-mentioned dao names all belong to the same person.

***Status:

******1) A guest of the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion that was personally led to the Time City by the Pavilion Master.

***2) My partner!

***Name of the petitioner: Ye Si.

After writing the message, Senior Sister Ye gently tapped with her finger and submitted the information to the control center through the locating mirror.

It was the last step necessary to activate the locating mirror and the locating badge.

In the next moment, the petition was submitted to the 'monitoring hall' of the Time City through Ye Si's locating mirror.

Later, the cultivators on duty in the 'monitoring hall' of the Time City would take a look at the petition and determine the status of the owner of the badge through the submitted information, activating the two magical treasures.

It was a system that allowed them to manage the Time City with ease.



Soon after Fairy Ye Si submitted the information related to Song Shuhang's badge to the control center, the person on duty in the 'monitoring hall' of the Time City received them.

The person in charge today was a female cultivator of the Fifth Stage rank who just happened to be Fairy Ye Si's junior sister.

"Eh? According to this petition, the owner of the badge has seven dao names... that's quite something," the female cultivator said with a smile.

Then, she looked at the remaining part of the information.

"So it was guest that the Pavilion Master led to the Time City personally! It seems they got inside the city directly and didn't go through the guarded entrance. Hehe... eh? Wait a moment. What does 'my partner' mean? The petitioner is Senior Sister Ye Si... is it possible that the newly arrived guest is Senior Sister Ye Si's partner?"

Weird, since when does Senior Sister Ye Si have a partner? The girl was totally oblivious to this fact!

Let alone she, the whole Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion was unaware that the 'Sobbing Beauty' of the Crystal-Clear Water

Pavilion had found a partner!

It was an explosive piece of news!

The female cultivator first activated the locating mirror and the locating badge.

"Ooooh~ let me lock his position and see where Senior Sister Ye's partner is. If I can find out what he's doing, even better." The female cultivator started to fiddle with the eight trigram mirror magical treasure on one side.

At the same time, another thought flashed through her mind, Ooooh~ It's such an explosive piece of news. I have to let the whole Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion know about it! It would be selfish of me to keep it to myself!

Thereupon, the female cultivator used her other hand to operate another mirror-like magical treasure next to her.

The mirror-like magical treasure on the left side could lock the position of the owner of the badge, Song Shuhang in this case. Then, the person in charge of the monitoring hall could, after receiving the permission of the owner of the badge, see the owner of the badge and the area around them through the mirror-like magical treasure.

On the contrary, the mirror-like magical treasure on the right side was linked to the large screens arranged in all the important parts of the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion.

The large screens were originally used in case of emergency.

But later, people slowly started to use them to issue important news.

"Linking process completed. Now, I only need to send a request to Senior Sister Ye's partner to link his position to the screens!" The female cultivator fiddled with the control panel and sent a request to create a connection with Song Shuhang's badge.



Song Shuhang, who was currently madly dashing about, discovered that the button-sized badge on his chest started to emit a red light.

What's happening?

Song Shuhang stretched out his hand while running and pressed on the button-sized badge.

After a short moment, the badge stopped flashing.

"Strange, what's happening?" Song Shuhang was very confused.

He had been counting the distance he had traveled in his mind, and he still had to run for another 3000 meters to completely absorb the energy of the spirit beast crystal.

After he was done running, he would ask Senior Sister Ye why the badge was emitting red light earlier.



Inside the monitoring hall of the Time City.

The eyes of the female cultivator lit up as she said, "The connection was established. Senior Sister Ye's partner is truly amazing!"

After all, not everyone was willing to let other people peep at what they were doing, even if it was only for a few minutes.

After saying this much, she smiled and locked Song Shuhang's position.

In the next moment, wave-like ripples appeared on the eight trigram mirror on the left side.

Slowly, a blurry figure appeared in the mirror. From the looks of it, the figure was in the midst of practice?

It seemed that Senior Sister Ye's partner was a very hard-working man.

The picture reflected in the mirror slowly started to become clear.

In the meantime, the female cultivator operated the eight trigram mirror on the right side and synchronized the picture appearing on the two mirrors.

While she was at it, she gave a title to the broadcast.

Broadcasting the scene of Senior Sister Ye's partner's painstaking practice!

Clothes made a man... and a title made the news. An eye-catching title was bound to attract the highest number of people.

The disciples of the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion, which were either practicing or resting, stopped what they were doing, and their vision concentrated on the explosive title displayed on the large screens arranged everywhere in the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion.

The blurry picture of a man, seemingly in the midst of practicing, appeared on the screens. After a short moment, the picture started to become clearer...

The scene of Senior Sister Ye's partner practicing? At what time the Miracle Tears of our Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion got a partner?

What kind of joke is this? Which bastard managed to conquer her heart and become her partner?!

Show yourself and let us see your face!

Don't blame us for cutting you to pieces if you anger us!

Very soon... the picture on the screen finally became clear.

The man that appeared on the screen had delicate features, as well as a gentle-looking face. It was difficult for such a gentle-looking person to provoke the anger of others.

At this time, the young man was quickly running on his four

limbs.

Sometimes, his hind legs would slightly bend and look as though he was crawling at a very fast speed.

Other times, he would start jumping up, springing around the arena.

Even while springing around, he would do it in several different ways. Sometimes, he would jump around like a swimming amphibian; other times like a muscular kangaroo, and also like a handsome cheetah.

What is he doing?

At this time, more than 1/3 of the disciples of the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion were staring at the large screens, looking at the strange postures Senior Sister Ye's partner was assuming while practicing.

"Is it possible that he's practicing some unique cultivation technique? In the past, I've heard people mention that there are techniques such as the <Frog Technique> and the likes."

"Perhaps it's the <Animal Imitating Technique>. It's rumored that cultivators that have the bloodlines of ancient monsters will act like wild beasts during their daily practicing session to better arouse the power of their bloodline. I've heard people say that there is a cultivator next door that has been eating grass like an ox for more than thirty years."

The disciples of the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion were animatedly discussing the scene.

"Anyway, it's rather amusing!"



In the meantime, a figure just happened to pass by the arena where Song Shuhang was practicing.

It was Chu Chu.

In order to avoid bothering the couple, she intentionally left the library room so as to give Song Shuhang and Senior Sister Ye more time together.

But since she was curious, she turned back a little later to see if the flame of passion had exploded between Song Shuhang and Senior Sister Ye.

On her way back, she passed by the arena where Song Shuhang was practicing. It was at that time that she saw Song Shuhang madly dashing about on his four limbs.

Chu Chu was immediately dumbfounded.

What is Fellow Daoist Shuhang doing? Instead of seizing the opportunity to further develop his relationship with Senior Sister Ye while they were all alone in the room, he came here to run...?

Chapter 561: Appraising oneself?

Song Shuhang, who was madly dashing about, started to feel somewhat uneasy at this time. Strange, why do I feel as though countless pairs of eyes are staring at me?

Is it just my misconception? After all, running on four limbs is a rather embarrassing thing to do...

"There are still 1000 meters left," Song Shuhang muttered to himself. Such being the case, he gritted his teeth and decided to finish the last 1000 meters in one go!

Thereupon, Song Shuhang used his fastest speed to cover the last 1000 meters.

Although seeing someone running on four limbs wasn't a good sight to behold, Shuhang had to admit that his comprehension toward the <Virtuous Man's Ten Thousand Mile Walk> had gotten much better while running in that posture.

Regardless of what we were talking about, if one were to look at it from a different angle, they would surely obtain new insights during their contemplation. One just couldn't look at things from only one side!

"It seems I've obtained some unexpected insight."



At the entrance of the arena. Miss Chu Chu blinked her eyes and quietly left. I didn't think I would find Fellow Daoist Shuhang in there... but why was he running on four limbs?

Perhaps it's a hobby of his, who am I to judge! Anyway, perhaps he was practicing a cultivation technique?

Regardless of what Song Shuhang was doing in there, Chu Chu decided to pretend that she had seen nothing. She was a clever girl that knew how to protect the dignity of a man.

After all, saving the reputation of a person was a big deal.



In the meantime, the speed of the scene the disciples of the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion saw on the screens started to speed up.

After all, the ratio of time between the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion and the Time City was of 1:12.

As the broadcasting started, the speed of the scene was normal. However, it wasn't truly a live broadcast, and the scene was broadcast after it was stored inside the eight trigram mirror.

Then, just as the scene was broadcast for a certain amount of time, things literally started to speed up.

Halfway through the broadcast, the speed of Song Shuhang's actions increased by twelve times!

How to explain it properly... regardless of the scene, if its speed was increased by twelve times, everything would turn incredibly fast, to the point of becoming 'amusing'.

The disciples of the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion felt the same. After watching the scene of Song Shuhang madly dashing about on his four limbs at a speed twelve times faster than normal, they started to find it somewhat cool.

Some of them took out their imprinting stones, photographic crystals, and so on to record the scene displayed on the screens.

It was such a wonderful scene, and it deserved to be stored.



In the Time City.

Song Shuhang finally completed his 5000 meters run!

At the same time, a warm feeling surged out in Song Shuhang's Sea of Qi Dantian.

The spiritual energy inside the horse-type spirit beast crystal was thoroughly absorbed, to the point that the portion of true qi Song Shuhang obtained from the crystal was now the same as the one he would obtain after practice. There was no need to refine it further.

Generally speaking, whenever 'spirit stones' or 'medicinal pills' were used to supplement one's practice, the cultivator had to refine several times the true qi obtained in the process. It was similar to a 'taming' process. After refining it, the cultivator could transform the foreign true qi into their own, and only at that time could they use it freely.

The true qi that condensed inside Song Shuhang's body after his 5000 meters run didn't need any refining and was the same as the one he would obtain from his daily practice.

"Although the posture was a little ugly, the overall effects were truly excellent," Song Shuhang muttered to himself.

Then, after resting for a while, he got up and returned to Senior Sister Ye's 'library room'.



In the library room.

Senior Sister Ye had taken a huge chair out of nowhere.

At this time, she was curling up into a small ball, lying on the big chair. She was holding a thick book in her hands and reading it with great interest.

Although there wasn't any wind, her carefully braided pigtails would sway with each movement of her body.

It created a rather picturesque scene together with the pile books in the background.

As soon as Song Shuhang saw the scene after entering the room, he was mesmerized by it.

The curled up Senior Sister Ye seemed to have noticed that

someone had entered the room. She raised her head and looked at Song Shuhang with her slightly red eyes. It seemed she had just cried.

Soon after, she put on a happy face and said gently, "You are back."

She was smiling with tears in her eyes.

Song Shuhang also replied gently, "Yes, I'm back. Now that I've moved around a bit, my body feels much better."

Afterward, he moved toward Senior Sister Ye and casually picked a thick book and bent his body down, preparing to sit on the floor next to Senior Sister Ye's body.

But right at this time, Senior Sister Ye moved her body away and made room for another person on the big chair.

The two of them were dating and were planning to ultimately become partners... such being the case, wasn't it normal to sit together?

Song Shuhang smiled and understood Senior Sister Ye's meaning. Therefore, he also got on the big chair, and the two of them leaned against each other.

Sweet~ Your smile is so sweet~ 1

❄ ❄ ❄

This picture was likewise broadcast to each corner of the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion through Song Shuhang's 'locating badge'.

A wave of sadness immediately spread through the whole Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion.

Even if the broadcast scene was twelve times faster than normal, it wasn't anything special before the powerful eyesight of cultivators. They could directly transform the sped up scene into a normal one within their brains.

The 'Miracle Tears' and 'Sobbing Beauty' of their Crystal-Clear

Water Pavilion had really become someone else's woman.

"I feel like crying, I really feel like crying~"

"Quickly delete this scene! Why is such a scene getting broadcast, quickly get rid of it!"

"Why was such a cruel display of affection showed to the public?"

"My knees have gone soft, I can't even properly stand up... No, my whole body has gone soft... I need a cute junior or senior sister to give me a mouth-to-mouth insufflation to keep me alive."

"I suddenly feel like practicing the <Tome of Never-Ending Tears>."

"Wait, if you practice the <Tome of Never-Ending Tears>, you would be constantly reminded of Junior Sister Ye and feel even sadder."

"But won't I be able to grasp the principle behind the <Tome of Never-Ending Tears> at an even faster pace then?"

"Ah? What you said actually makes sense."

In the library room.

Song Shuhang took off the 'locating badge' on his chest and asked, "Ye Si, I need to ask you something."

Senior Sister Ye replied, "What it is?"

"Earlier, while I was practicing, the badge started to emit a red light intermittently. Do you have any idea what it meant? Afterward, just as I stretched my hand and poked the badge, it stopped flashing," Song Shuhang said.

"..." Fairy Ye Si.

After a moment of silence, she stretched out her hand and took Song Shuhang's locating badge, placing it in front of her eyes. Then, he stretched out her finger and resolutely pressed right in

the middle of the badge.

The broadcasting feature of the locating badge was finally interrupted!

The disciples of the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion that were watching the scene were at a loss.

Then, Fairy Ye Si explained, "The flashing red light is a type of signal and signifies that someone from the control center of the Time City is requesting you to give them permission to lock onto your position. As soon as you pressed on the badge, you agreed to have your position locked onto."

"I agreed to have my position locked onto? And what does that implies exactly?" Song Shuhang had a bad premonition. At this time, he recalled the strange feeling he was having while he was running on four limbs. He felt as though countless pairs of eyes were staring at him. Was it possible that it wasn't his misconception, but everything was real?!

Fairy Ye Si replied, "It's not a big deal, and it won't cause you any harm. Anyway, after you agreed to have your position locked onto, the control center of the Time City can naturally lock onto your position. In addition, if they want to, they can also see the area surrounding the 'locating badge' through the main 'eight trigram mirror' magical treasure. In other words, they can spy on you through the mirror."

They can spy on you... they can spy on you... they can spy on you...

In that case, the feeling of having countless pairs of eyes staring at me wasn't just a misconception?

Immediately after, Song Shuhang asked while holding a sliver of hope in his heart, "Ye Si, I have something to ask. After I pressed on the badge, the people in the control center can see my whole body or only a portion of it?"

Song Shuhang decided not to give up as long as there was a small chance!

"They can obviously see the whole person! The 'locating feature' is usually used to save people in case of emergency, and it's possible to see everything within a radius of 200 meters with the locating badge as the center," Fairy Ye Si replied.

See everything within a radius of 200 meters...

In other words, someone had seen the whole scene of him madly dashing about on four limbs...

Song Shuhang felt like shedding a few tears at this time.



Time quickly flew by, and another three days had passed in the Lower City.

During the past few days, Song Shuhang's brain refused to recall the matter about the locating badge.

As for Chu Chu, she was practicing under Fairy Ye Si's guidance every day. After that, she would leave the library room and look for a place where she could quietly continue with her practice.

These days had been like a blessing for her. She had a Fifth Stage Spiritual Emperor that was meticulously supervising her practice and giving her pointers. Moreover, the spiritual qi in the surrounding area was extremely rich and was comparable to that of a 'secret realm'. Thanks to all this, her strength had increased by leaps and bounds, advancing at a very quick pace.

If she could practice here for a year, she was sure she could try to break through to the sixth dantian of the Second Stage Realm, the Dragon Neck Dantian.

Actually, she wished she could practice here for a lifetime!

Thanks to Chu Chu unconsciously giving Song Shuhang and Fairy Ye Si the opportunity to spend time alone, the sentiment

between the two also started to get better.

After all, it took time to cultivate the feelings between two people properly.

The two of them were glued to each other all day and reading books.

In addition, they had a common topic of conversation, and there was a wide range of things they could discuss. Such being the case, their relationship got better and better.

Fairy Ye Si told Song Shuhang about several interesting matters that happened in ancient times, as well as about a few small cultivation-related tricks.

On the other hand, Song Shuhang told Fairy Ye Si about the interesting matters currently going on in the outside world, about all sorts of modern products, and a few interesting things that had taken place in the world of cultivators—such as the hand-guided tractor competition.

Afterward, he told her that he was planning to shoot a small movie and that there were already several fellow daoists and seniors that wanted to make an appearance.

Fairy Ye Si was quite interested in this 'movie' Song Shuhang wanted to shoot.

At this time, the duo was sitting back-to-back and chatting about the 'movie'.

"Things such as theatre plays actually developed to such an extent." Fairy Ye Si sighed with emotion. Although there were things such as photographic crystals and imprintings in the world of cultivators, cultivators never thought of shooting something akin to a movie.

Cultivators were after all different from mortals, and their main interest lay in practicing.

Fairy Ye Si made up her mind and said, "I also want to participate in the movie you are planning to shoot. Now that I think about it, I haven't left the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion in a long time."

"Sure. The plot is still work in progress. Once we go back, we can tell the author in charge to prepare the plot to reserve an interesting role for you," Song Shuhang said softly.

"It's settled then!" Fairy Ye Si said happily.

Song Shuhang also smiled.

Now then, how should Song Shuhang introduce Fairy Ye Si to his parents if they were going to leave the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion and return to Earth together?

I surely can't tell them that she is my partner, right?

In that case, should I introduce her as my girlfriend?

Girlfriend, huh?

Fck, didn't I wish to get a girlfriend just as I entered university? I wanted to get a cute girlfriend within the four years of university...*

Has my wish finally come true...?

I still can't believe that it's real...

At noon. Chu Chu had yet to return. Therefore, Song Shuhang and Senior Sister Ye were in the room all alone.

Song Shuhang was sitting on the floor and leaning against the wall, reading a book about cosmic demons.

Fairy Ye Si was leaning against his shoulder. But then, she saw a series of formulas that suddenly reduced her to tears, making her cry copiously.

Song Shuhang hugged her and allowed her to lean against his chest.

After happily crying for a while, Fairy Ye Si embarrassingly leaned against Song Shuhang's shoulder, perfectly still, just like an ostrich.

Song Shuhang gently smiled and continued to flip the pages of the book about cosmic demons.

After flipping a few pages, he finally arrived at the page introducing 'demodragons'.

Demodragons were another type of cosmic demon, and their strength was even higher than that blood demons'.

But even amongst cosmic demons, demodragons were considered rather special. After their death, other cosmic demons would leave behind equipment and raw materials. On the other hand, demodragons were known as poor wretches, and if one could obtain a few spirit stones after killing them, they could consider themselves quite lucky already.

However... although demodragons didn't leave treasures behind, their body itself was a treasure.

For example, the blood of demodragon was the main ingredient used to create several special 'medicinal pills' and 'medicaments' in the world of cultivators.

The skin of demodragon was a high-quality material used to manufacture magical clothes.

I wonder if Senior Xian Gong managed to successfully prepare his 'demodragon medicine', Song Shuhang thought to himself.

It was a miraculous medicine that could greatly strengthen the constitution of whoever drank it, and it happened to be the thing Song Shuhang needed the most at this time.

The sensation of stabbing pain he was feeling in the place between his eyebrows was getting stronger as time passed by.

Although he was practicing a body tempering cultivation

technique such as the 〈Steel Hands Technique〉, the boost it gave to his constitution simply wasn't enough.

Song Shuhang was planning to eat several spirit beast crystal within these several days so as to break through to the fourth dantian, the Dragon Body Dantian, as soon as possible.

After increasing his strength by a small realm, he could increase the strength of his constitution as well, alleviating the pain his excessive mental energy was causing him.

As soon as he recalled the spirit beast crystals and the problem about his constitution, a miraculous glow flashed through Song Shuhang's mind.

Shuhang glanced at the gloves he was wearing on his hands. Swordsman Wooden Ox's gloves of passion were really good. Song Shuhang didn't lose any blood since the day he started wearing them.

When I used the appraisal technique to apprise the horse-type spirit beast crystal back then, the technique didn't only tell me about the type of the crystal, but it also told me about a method to quickly absorb it after I was done eating it with the 〈Whale Swallowing Technique〉 I'm practicing.

The answer he obtained from the appraisal technique back then was already quite different from what he would obtain from a normal item-appraising technique.

Just hypothetically speaking... If I were to use the appraisal technique to appraise the current condition of my body, would I obtain some information on how to solve the problem caused by the excessive amount of mental energy?

Song Shuhang's imagination started to run wild!

Chapter 562: Journey toward a sea of virtue

Whenever Song Shuhang used the mysterious appraisal technique he'd recently obtained, the price he had to pay in order to appraise an item depended on the rank of the item itself.

Such being the case, the price for appraising myself shouldn't be too high, right?

After all, I have a rather good understanding of myself already. The only thing I need to find out at this time is a way to solve the problem related to my mental energy...

I should give it a try, perhaps it might really work!

Song Shuhang wasn't someone that gave up easily. Once he had made up his mind and decided to do something, he would find a way to complete the task.

"What are you thinking about?" Senior Sister Ye, who was leaning against Song Shuhang's shoulder, curiously asked after noticing Song Shuhang's expression.

Thereupon, Song Shuhang told Senior Sister Ye about the idea he had just now.

"Your appraisal technique can appraise something like that too? That's already something beyond a simple 'appraisal'!"

After pondering for a moment, Senior Sister Ye nodded and said, "If you really want to give it a try, I'll watch over you. However, let me prepare a formation first."

"What kind of formation?" Song Shuhang asked.

Senior Sister Ye replied, "A small healing formation. If you stand inside the formation, the pain caused by the wounds opening on your body will be reduced, and the recovery will also be accelerated. In addition, it can strengthen the effects of my healing technique by two times. Thanks to all this, I can immediately help

you if your appraisal technique were to suddenly go out of control."

She was also very curious about the effects of the mysterious appraisal technique Song Shuhang mentioned.

Was it possible that the mysterious appraisal technique Song Shuhang obtained was somehow related to the 'Great Way'?



Senior Sister Ye moved the various books to one side, creating some empty space within the ocean of books. Afterward, she used a sword as a brush and engraved a simple formation on the ground.

Song Shuhang prepared himself and stood inside the formation.

Then, he took the gloves off his hands.

After taking a deep breath, he finally placed his hands on his chest.

The appraisal technique didn't activate on its own.

Thereupon, Song Shuhang started to recall those 88,888 voices. Whenever he slept or rested during the past few days, the 80,000+ voices would continuously reverberate in his head.

Song Shuhang's current understanding of the secret appraisal technique was much better than when he'd just obtained it.

Just as he recalled the 88,888 voices, Song Shuhang started to mutter to himself, "I want to find a way to solve the problem of my body having too much mental energy. I only need information about this matter and nothing else!"

Five breaths later.

It's coming! I can feel it!

It was the feeling of the appraisal technique activating!

However, no wounds appeared on Song Shuhang's body.

It was a rather strange occurrence. After all, previously, wounds

had appeared on his arm even though he'd appraised just a small pebble. Such being the case, for what reason nothing happened this time?

Is it possible that I don't have any value?

Am I less valuable than even a rock?

Or perhaps... I don't need to pay any price to appraise myself?

"No wounds appeared this time? Or do you still have to activate the secret appraisal technique?" Senior Sister Ye asked curiously.

Song Shuhang replied, "The appraisal technique was already successfully activated but, strangely enough, no wounds appeared. Is it possible that I don't need to pay any price while appraising myself?"

But just as he finished his sentence, Song Shuhang's face twisted.

Pain, pain, pain!

It wasn't that there was no price to pay... the price was just delayed!

The delayed pain turned out to be especially strong.

The strange thing was that although Song Shuhang felt an extreme pain all over the body, no wounds appeared.

Things were so strange that Song Shuhang couldn't even point out from which part of the body the pain was coming from. He just felt a stabbing pain all over the body!

Senior Sister Ye quickly asked, "Are you hurt somewhere?"

At the same time, she used her healing technique on Song Shuhang's body.

With the help of Senior Sister Ye's healing technique, Song Shuhang recovered a bit and said slowly, "I should be hurt somewhere... but the problem is that I don't know where!"

There wasn't a single place on his body that wasn't hurting. But

when he glanced at his hands, feet, and chest, he didn't see any wound.

Aside from that, no runes flashed through his eyes, either!

Did the appraisal technique fail?

"You also don't know where you were hurt? Your injury this time is rather strange," Senior Sister Ye said. Her delicate hands were still emitting the radiance of the healing technique as she touched Song Shuhang's body, trying to check up his wounds.

But after giving his whole body a rough check-up, she was unable to find any wound. There was no trace of bloodstains on Song Shuhang's body.

Fairy Ye Si furrowed her brows and said, "It's very strange... Shuhang, take off your clothes and let me take a careful look."

Song Shuhang was somewhat embarrassed at this time.

"Why are you acting all shy now! Aren't we supposed to become partners?" Senior Sister Ye said.

"I'm not acting shy! It's just that I'm not used to it!" Song Shuhang started to take off his clothes and left only his shorts on.

Senior Sister Ye gave Song Shuhang's body another check-up.

But as before, she didn't find any wound!

"I'm back! Fellow Daoist Shuhang, Senior Sister Ye, I've found a room with a kitchen and all kinds of ingredients inside. We can finally eat a different meal this afternoon, and the effects of the fasting pills just happened to be almost over." Miss Chu Chu barged into the library in high spirits.

But in the next moment, she ran out of the room at a speed three times faster than the one she used to enter, saying, "Excuse me, I didn't see anything. Fellow Daoist Shuhang, Senior Sister Ye, you can keep doing what you were doing. I won't be back before

tomorrow noon so as to avoid disturbing you two. Bye!"

I wish Fellow Daoist Shuhang and Senior Sister Ye good luck! I really hope they can have a cute baby!

Song Shuhang stretched out his hand and called out, "Fellow Daoist Chu Chu, don't go! It's not what you think! It's a misunderstanding!"

But Miss Chu Chu had already disappeared without any trace~

"Hehe." Senior Sister Ye gently laughed. Her hand was still emitting the radiance of the healing technique and covering Song Shuhang's body. "As before, I didn't find any injury. Is it possible that the pain is only a misconception in your mind?"

"A misconception in my mind? No, impossible. At this time, my whole body is in extreme pain. It's absolutely not a misconception," Song Shuhang replied.

Senior Sister Ye said, "In that case, is the wound in that place I have yet to inspect..."

"That shouldn't be the case—" Song Shuhang said. But just as he was halfway through his speech, a violent wave of pain suddenly attacked his body.

The pain already surpassed the amount Song Shuhang could currently withstand!

It was thousands of times more painful than the time he was hugged to death in the dreamland while experiencing Chu Chu's life. Song Shuhang felt as though someone had thrown a steamroller on his body and had rolled over him a few times.

And yet, there was absolutely no injury on his body.

Just what the hell was happening...

But just at this time, pieces of information started to appear in his mind. This information was related to his body!

The appraisal technique hadn't failed.

Name: Song Shuhang.

Gender: Male.

Age: 18.

Height: 182 cm.

Address: Wenzhou City's Baijing Street.

Cultivation realm: Second Stage Third Dantian 'Dragon Claw Dantian' Realm.

Attribute: Lightning and fire.

Practices the following techniques: <Basic Buddhist Fist Technique>, <Immovable Body of the Buddha>, <True Self Meditation Scripture>, <Holy Light Sword Technique>, <Inverted Scale Saber Technique>, <Heaven Burning Flaming Saber Technique>, <Roaring Lion's Technique>, <Virtuous Man's Ten Thousand Mile Walk>, <Thirty-Three Divine Beasts' Technique>, <Huge Whale Chapter>, <Whale Swallowing Technique>, <Steel Hands Technique>.

Magical techniques: Lightning Palm, Battery Charging Technique, Fire Controlling Art, Hair Growing Technique.

Dao name: One week, seven dao names.

Song Shuhang already knew about all this information.

Aside from his height, which had increased by 2 centimeters, and Daoist Priest Scarlet Heaven 'Flaming Saber Technique' changing to <Heaven Burning Flaming Saber Technique>, there was no other change.

Without even noticing, I got to learn so many cultivation techniques?

Just as he was pondering, the information being transmitted to his brain stopped.

It's over?

Just like that?

I suffered so much just to obtain this much information?

I already know about all this! Why was the price I had to pay so high?



Is this case similar to that of fortune tellers who can calculate the fate of other people but not theirs, and have to pay an incredibly high price if they try to predict their own fate?

But I didn't obtain anything even after suffering all that pain!

What a scam!

But right at this time, other pieces of information were transmitted to Song Shuhang's mind. It was the follow-up part of the secret appraisal technique.

The current state of the body is abnormal, and the quantity of mental energy is too high.

Recommendations to solve the problem:

1. Take medicine such as: demodragon medicine, tyrant body medicine, radiant pill.

2. Practice powerful body tempering cultivation techniques such as: ⟨Warring Buddha's True Body⟩, ⟨Dragon King's Body⟩, ⟨Blood Demon's Metamorphic Body⟩.

3. Use seals such as: mental energy seal.

4. Cultivate the light of virtue: Use the ⟨Ksitigarbha's Soul Ferrying Scripture⟩ and so on techniques to lead to the right path 100,000 resentful souls. At that time, the light of virtue would undergo a qualitative change and strengthen both constitution and mental energy. The light of virtue can share the burden of the mental energy together with the constitution.

This was the information Song Shuhang was looking for!

Shuhang gently rubbed his temples. This time, the flow of information of the appraisal technique was truly over.

Afterward, another pair of soft hands pressed on his temples, rubbing them for him. Senior Sister Ye asked, "Was it effective?"

"Yes, the appraisal was successful." Song Shuhang sighed and told her about the information he'd obtained from the appraisal technique.

As for the medicine, he hadn't heard about any of them except for the 'demodragon medicine'. However, they shouldn't be much easier to obtain compared to the demodragon medicine.

If he could find the traces of a demodragon or some of its blood, he could cooperate with Scholar Xian Gong and obtain a little bit of the demodragon medicine from him.

As for the other several medicines, it was better not to think about them for now.

As for cultivation techniques... even in this case, he had only heard about the ⟨Warring Buddha's True Body⟩. It was the signature skill of the Soul King 'Dharma King Creation'. Aside from losing all the hair after its activation, it didn't have any other shortcoming.

But if he wanted to practice this cultivation technique, he had to enter Dharma King Creation's sect, the Warring Buddha Sect. However, it wasn't something that the current Song Shuhang was willing to do, and even if he were to enter the sect, it would take him tens of years to learn it.

As for the other two body tempering techniques, they also had to be amongst the best of the best if they were mentioned together with the ⟨Warring Buddha's True Body⟩. There was no way Song Shuhang could easily obtain them.

As for sealing his mental energy, Song Shuhang didn't want to do

so unless it was truly necessary. Doing so was equivalent to binding one's hands and feet and didn't have any advantage to it.

Finally, that 'cultivate the light of virtue' made Song Shuhang's eyes lit up.

Some of you might still remember the western monk on the banks of Lake Daming, right?

No, wait a moment. That wasn't it... it was that cool western monk that was unjustly accused in the subway!

The body of the western monk was shrouded in thick 'light of virtue'. Compared to the others, the fourth point seemed much easier to accomplish.

To gather the 'light of virtue', one only needed to learn something like the *«Ksitigarbha's Soul Ferrying Scripture»* and lead to the right path the souls of the dead.

If Song Shuhang wanted to obtain such a technique, it wasn't a problem. The problem was to lead to the right path 100,000 resentful souls...

Of course, it didn't mean that one had to lead to the right path exactly 100,000 resentful souls.

Powerful resentful souls such as ghost generals were equivalent to 10, 100, or even 1000 resentful souls.

Back then, Song Shuhang really envied the 'light of virtue' shrouding the body of the western monk and its body tempering effects. Therefore, he especially looked for info about the light of virtue.

"If I really can't get my hands on the demodragon medicine, perhaps I should really consider the light of virtue," Song Shuhang muttered to himself.

The best thing to do was to cultivate the light of virtue and keep looking for information about the demodragons.

If he could obtain the demodragon medicine, it would be the best outcome possible. But if he couldn't, he could just keep cultivating the light of virtue.

Just as he was in deep thoughts, a sharp pain transmitted to his body.

The sharp pain came to him in 'waves'... moreover, just like oceanic waves, each wave was stronger than the previous one!

This wave of pain was ten times stronger than the previous one!

The previous wave of pain already surpassed the amount Song Shuhang could withstand, the current one surpassed that limit by ten times!

Song Shuhang felt as though each part of his body was flattened and destroyed. He felt as though his fingers, toes, and neck were continuously twisted and broken, over and over again!

Song Shuhang gritted his teeth and tried to endure. But after two seconds, he finally fell to the ground!

"Shuhang! Shuhang!" Senior Sister Ye called out in alarm. Although she continuously used the healing technique on Song Shuhang's body, it didn't have any effect.



Then, just as Song Shuhang fainted, an illusory figure drilled out of his back, just like a butterfly breaking out of a cocoon.

The illusory figure looked the same as Song Shuhang. The only difference was that the size of its body was around half of Shuhang's

Was his soul leaving his body?

Had our Song Shuhang really died?

"A ghost spirit?" Senior Sister Ye said at this time.

The illusory figure was precisely Song Shuhang's ghost spirit... the expression of the ghost spirit was currently twisted due to the

pain.

There were two deep wounds that reached the bones on its bare back.

These two wounds were rather strange. It was possible to see the 'bones' of the ghost spirit inside the wound, but the rest of the space inside the wound was like a black hole, completely dark.

It seemed that the 'wounds' Song Shuhang received after appraising himself had been shifted onto the body of the ghost spirit.

"No wonder there was no improvement after I used the healing technique on his main body." Senior Sister Ye forced a smile. Afterward, she switched to a special type of healing technique was designed for ghost spirits.

The healing techniques used to cure humans and ghost spirits were different.

The radiance of the healing technique fell onto the body of the ghost spirit, and the black hole-like wounds on its body started to heal.

The painful expression of the ghost spirit also reduced a bit.

Very soon, the wounds healed.

Senior Sister Ye stopped using the healing technique.

But just as she stopped using the healing technique, the wounds on the back of the ghost spirit opened once more...

"Aaaaaaaah~" the ghost spirit called out pitifully.

"Aaaaaaaah~" the unconscious Song Shuhang also called out pitifully.

Senior Sister Ye's eye sockets immediately became red.

Chapter 563: The western monk was released from the prison

While he was unconscious, Song Shuhang had a dream. This time, he didn't dream of someone else's life, it was just a dream about his own life.

The dream started since when he was a child and slowly moved forward, just like a movie, without leaving anything out.

A lot of small memories that Song Shuhang had already forgotten suddenly resurfaced in his mind. As if that wasn't enough, several matters that Song Shuhang wanted to forget also resurfaced in his mind, giving him a bittersweet feeling.

But just as he was unconscious and dreaming, Song Shuhang seemed to have heard Senior Sister Ye's cry.

He wanted to wake up as soon as possible, but his dream had just reached the second year of middle school, and there was still half of his life left until he reached university. Therefore, he wouldn't be able to wake up in a short time.

It's all that damned secret appraisal technique's fault! Song Shuhang thought to himself.

Although he experienced unimaginable pain and almost died, he at least managed to obtain some good results, obtaining several methods to solve the problem related to his mental energy. As soon as he regained consciousness, he would try to gather the 'light of virtue'. But before doing so, he needed to learn something like the *«Ksitigarbha's Soul Ferrying Scripture»* to lead the souls of the dead to the right path.

It would be really good if Song Shuhang could meet that western monk again. The light of virtue shrouding the body of the opposite party was very thick and almost palpable. From the looks of it, he should have led to the right path tens of thousands of souls, right?

Or perhaps he had already saved 100,000 souls, making his light of virtue undergo a qualitative change!

Although he was just at the First Stage Dragon Gate Realm, the western monk had already led to the right path several tens of thousands resentful ghosts, ending up with such a powerful 'light of virtue'. He was very experienced in this field.

If I can meet him again, perhaps I can ask him for advice on how to lead resentful ghosts to the right path.

Just as he was pondering about this matter, Song Shuhang suddenly felt his body become lighter!



Time City, library room.

Senior Sister Ye's tears started to stream down her face. "Sob, sob, sob~ I'll say it first! I'm not crying because you received such a serious injury! Sob, sob, sob~ I'm only crying because I feel sad! I don't want to cry, sob, sob, sob~, but I simply can't stop my tears!"

Senior Sister Ye was shedding tears while using the healing technique on the body of the ghost spirit.

The light of the healing technique endlessly fell on the body of the ghost spirit, trying to stabilize the wounds on its back. But as soon as Ye Si stopped her healing technique, the wounds on its back would open once more.

"How much time will it take for these wounds to recover? Will they keep opening again and again? Sob, sob, sob~" Senior Sister Ye said in a low voice.

Just as she was speaking, the wounds on the back of the ghost spirit opened again!

Moreover, it happened even though Senior Sister Ye's healing technique was still active. The wounds on its back were reopening and getting more and more serious.

The insides of the wounds were pitch-black, just as though there was a bottomless black hole concealed beneath.

"What's happening?" Senior Sister Ye increased the strength of the healing technique, but the wounds on the back of the ghost spirit were showing no sign of recovery.

Is it possible that there is no way to heal these wounds?

"What should I do? Should I ask for help from my teacher?"

But right at this time, the ghost spirit stopped screaming.

The wounds on its back were still there. However, they weren't hurting anymore.

The ghost spirit weakly came down and lowered its head, floating on Song Shuhang's back.

The unconscious Song Shuhang also settled down.



Senior Sister Ye asked in a low voice, "You don't feel pain anymore?"

The ghost spirit faintly nodded.

Senior Sister Ye curiously stretched out her finger and poked the wound on the back of the ghost spirit.

But her fingers had yet to touch the wound that the ghost spirit quickly moved to one side.

The sense of sight of the ghost spirit was different than that of a human being. The ghost spirit could see everything happening around its body and didn't have any blind angle. Therefore, it easily noticed that Senior Sister Ye was trying to touch its wounds.

"Will it hurt if I touch it?" Senior Sister Ye asked out of curiosity.

Song Shuhang's ghost spirit nodded.

Then, the ghost spirit suddenly thought of something.

It whizzed toward Senior Sister Ye and arrived in front of her. Afterward, it stretched out its finger and touched her hand.

"?" Senior Sister Ye was confused as she touched the fingers of the ghost spirit.

In the next moment, a thought was transmitted from the ghost spirit to her mind.

"Oh? You want to leave the Time City and the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion?" Senior Sister Ye asked.

The ghost spirit nodded.

Senior Sister Ye said, "Where are you planning to go after leaving the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion?"

I want to return to Earth. The ghost spirit kept transmitting its thoughts.

"Shuhang's body is still here. Is it alright for you to go back alone?" Senior Sister Ye asked, somewhat worried.

It's fine. I'm going back to take care of an order I received from the main body. I need to look for a method to resolve the problem of the excessive mental energy, the ghost spirit weakly replied.

Senior Sister Ye nodded and said, "Fine. I'll tell you how to leave this place."



At last, Senior Sister Ye told the ghost spirit how to leave the Time City and the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion.

As such, the ghost spirit fluttered through the Time City and ultimately left the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion.

Since it was just a soul, its speed was extremely fast—to the point that it was several times faster than a cultivator of the Fourth Stage riding a flying sword. Moreover, it could directly pass through material objects such as asteroids.

In just half a day, the ghost spirit returned to Earth and arrived in China.

Along the way, it was very careful and didn't attract the attention of any cultivator.

After returning to China, the ghost spirit first went to Song Shuhang's house in Wenzhou City's Baijing Street.

After making sure that Shuhang's parents were fine, it fluttered to a place close to Baijing Street, Mountain Niuding.

In there was stationed a film crew that was preparing stage props and other things needed for the movie they were going to shoot. It was the crew of Professor Smith's friend.

From the looks of it, the crew had yet to start filming.

After floating above the film crew for a while, the ghost spirit fluttered away.

It would return once the crew had started shooting the movie.

❄ ❄ ❄

Next, the ghost spirit thought of looking for Yu Jiaojiao to see if she had managed to catch that author that wrote interesting novels.

However, it was unable to sense Yu Jiaojiao's aura.

Moreover, it didn't have her contact details, either. Actually, Song Shuhang had saved Yu Jiaojiao's mobile phone number in his own phone. Therefore, it only needed to wait until after Song Shuhang had regained his senses to contact Yu Jiaojiao again.

Such being the case, the ghost spirit temporarily cast aside the thought of looking for Yu Jiaojiao.

In that case, it was now time to carry out the order the main body had given it!

❄ ❄ ❄

The ghost spirit kept fluttering in the sky.

The main reason it had returned to Earth this time was to look for that western monk!

While he was unconscious, Song Shuhang thought of looking for the western monk to ask him to give him advice on how to lead to the right path resentful ghosts.

But for some unknown reason, the ghost spirit mistook Song Shuhang's 'thought' for an 'order'.

Thereupon, it left the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion and returned to Earth after traveling thousands of miles to look for this western monk.

However, it had no idea of the current location of the western monk. It didn't have the contact details of the western monk, and China was so big; it didn't know from where to start to look for him.

The ghost spirit started to recall things. Its mind and sensory organs were linked to Song Shuhang's. As long as it had Song Shuhang's permission, Shuhang's memories were the same as its own memories.

According to Song Shuhang's memories, the western monk was finally arrested by the police and thrown in Jiangnan's prison.

Should I go to Jiangnan's prison to take a look? Perhaps I can find some clues, the ghost spirit thought to itself.

Thereupon, the ghost spirit fluttered toward Wenzhou City's train stop, preparing to hitch a ride.

But according to the timetable of the trains, the next train headed to the Jiangnan area would be there in only three hours. I'll have to wait for a long period of time! Should I consider taking a plane instead?

But right at this time, a feeling of extreme exhaustion attacked

the ghost spirit.

Today, it flew to Earth directly from space and also spent a long time floating around in Wenzhou City. As a consequence, it was exhausted. Therefore, it wasn't a bad idea to rest for some time and recover some of its strength. The current realm of the ghost spirit was the same as Shuhang's, Second Stage Third Dantian Realm. Therefore, it had been quite taxing to perform all those actions.

The best thing to do was to take advantage of these three hours to rest.

The wounds on its back were still there, but they weren't aching. It was unknown how much time it'd take to heal them.

The ghost spirit fluttered above the train stop, resting.



Right at this time, the western monk was at Jiangnan area's train stop.

It had already been several days since he was released from Jiangnan's prison. Actually, he could have left the prison long ago if he wanted to, but he stayed inside to convert criminals and save the wronged souls, prolonging his stay in jail.

The western monk had successfully managed to jump through the dragon gate and was now a cultivator of the Second Stage.

His body was covered with a thick light of virtue that made one envious. Therefore, the same dragon gate that scared off most of the ordinary cultivators of the First Stage was nothing special in front of the western monk. He didn't encounter any difficulties and was able to easily jump through the gate and become a cultivator of the Second Stage!

After successfully advancing in realm, he decided to leave the prison.

When he left the prison, the happiest person was surely Zhao

Bulu, the person he received as a disciple during his permanence there. Zhao Bulu was that disciple of the outer courtyard of the Moon Saber Sect that had forcefully stolen Sima Jiang's express delivery and had his legs broken after the companions of the latter seized him.

Then, just as he was thrown into prison, the pitiful Zhao Bulu met the western monk.

After that, he was forcefully led to the right path, turned into a monk and had six burn marks imprinted on his head. In addition, he had to discuss religious texts with the western monk every day. But the worst thing was that the meals in prison were already bad, but the western monk made it so that he could eat only vegetarian meals.

Zhao Bulu thought several times of committing suicide while he was in prison.

Such being the case, Zhao Bulu was surely the happiest person when he heard that the western monk was going to leave the prison. Of course, if the western monk hadn't said 'teacher will come to look for you once you leave prison' just before leaving, Zhao Bulu would have been even happier.

After leaving the prison this week, the western monk begged for alms and roamed about while consolidating his realm at the same time.

Along the way, he also oversaw a lot of ceremonies and funeral procession for other people, obtaining enough money for several vegetarian meals.

"I've now reached the Second Stage Realm. Should I return to the sect and meet my teacher, Wu Yinzi?" the western monk muttered to himself.

However, he would have to remove the monk robe he was wearing and replace the monk's staff with a flying sword before

meeting his teacher...

After thinking of this scene, the western monk felt a wave of weariness attack his mind.

"I think I should wait for a few more days before returning to the sect. Otherwise, teacher would surely reprimand me." The western monk rubbed his head and already imagined the scene of his teacher flying into a rage.

It's settled then. I won't go back for now!

"Since I'm not going back to the sect... where should I go next?" The western monk took out his mobile phone and started to look at the map.

The world was such a big place~

Where should he go to take a stroll?

"Ding~" Right at this time, an advertisement appeared on his mobile phone.

The renowned director 'Mister Jacob' had arrived in China's Wenzhou City the day before yesterday. In addition, he chose Baijing Street's Mountain Niuding as the place to shoot his new movie.

"Mister Jacob has come to China to shoot a new movie?" After reading this news, the heart of the western monk was touched.

Although he had shaved his hair and become a monk, most of his hobbies and interests were still the same.

Aside from leading to the right path resentful ghosts, he was rather fond of movies. Moreover, he really liked this director, 'Mister Jacob', that came from his same country—a world-class director that was the pride of their country!

It would be rather cool if I can manage to get a small role in the movie Mister Jacob is planning to shoot! the western monk thought to himself.

It's settled then! The next stop will be Wenzhou City's Baijing Street!

Thereupon, the western monk got onto the train headed for Wenzhou City.

Three hours later.

Next to Wenzhou City's train stop.

The 46 years old Zhou Li dragged his tired body back home, parking his brand-new electric motorbike and putting a lock on it.

The fact that his company was making him work overtime during the past few days had rather annoyed Zhou Li.

Moreover, a petty thief stole his old electric motorbike two days ago. Therefore, he had to spend 3000 RMB to buy a new one. Half of his monthly pay had disappeared just like that!

As if that wasn't enough, he was scolded by his wife for one full evening and was barely suppressing the anger in his heart.

"Dammit! Don't let me find who that bastard that stole my motorbike is! If I find him, I'll make sure to let him have a taste of my fists!" Zhou Li shook his fists in anger.

Just the thought of that thief was enough to make him grit his teeth.

After putting a lock on his new electric motorbike, Zhou Li dragged his tired body to the upper floor of his house.

Right at this time, a thin and weak figure loitered over from a distant place.

"Hehe, I just stole the old one a couple of days ago, and here he comes with a new one. Today's meal has been taken care of." The thin and weak figure smiled. Afterward, it quickly glanced all

around.

There was no one in the surrounding area. It was a good opportunity.

Thereupon, the figure quietly approached Zhou Li's new electric motorbike.

"He put a new lock on? Tsk, how naive. I can open such a lock in three seconds." After approaching the electric motorbike, the thin and weak figure squatted down. Then, an iron wire appeared in its hands and started to fiddle with the lock, trying to open it.

However, although the lock seemed an old-style one from the outside, it was rather sophisticated inside. Even after five seconds, the thief was unable to open it.

"Dammit, what's wrong with this lock!" the weak and thin figure said, somewhat depressed. It wasn't able to open the lock.

After clenching its teeth, the figure took out a chain from its pocket. It was a habit of his. If he was unable to open the lock of a certain vehicle, he would add an extra lock to it... the meaning was: If I can't steal the vehicle, I won't allow you to use it, either!

If there was an opportunity to see the owner of the vehicle fly into a rage, it would make him even happier.

It was a rather twisted mentality. This person needed mental help!

But right at this time, a western monk approached from afar.

"Benefactor, stop immediately!" the western monk called out, his voice like thunder. "Benefactor, stealing is a bad thing! One should abstain from committing such evil acts! I request you to quickly stop so as to avoid being punished!"

As soon as he mentioned the word 'punishment', the eyes of the monk lit up.

Chapter 564: I'll sacrifice myself to save others, here I come!

The voice of the western monk was thunderous and gave a scare to the thief that was putting a lock on the vehicle.

Who is this bastard that scared me to death? The thief hatefully turned his head around.

In the next moment, he saw the bear-like build of the monk, as well as his bald and shining head. Was that a human-shaped tyrannosaurus?

The thief immediately swallowed a mouthful of saliva.

But his complexion immediately changed as he revealed a threatening expression, trying to scare off the monk. "Baldy, you better not concern yourself with matters that aren't your business! Otherwise, don't blame me if you get stabbed somewhere!"

People that were in this line of work needed to be ruthless nowadays. If you were ruthless, others would fear you!

However, this move didn't work all the time...

"Benefactor, are you trying to cling to a mistake instead of correcting it?" the western monk said in a grave tone. After that, he revealed the arm hidden in the robe as he was holding an alms bowl with the other.

Then, he raised his arm just like a bodybuilder and revealed the bulging muscles of his right arm, full of blue veins.

The western monk said softly, "Benefactor, this is the trained right arm of a man that has stayed single for 36 years. If you still refuse to correct your behavior, I'm afraid you'll need to have a taste of its power."

The right arm of this monk that had stayed single for 36 years seemed incredibly powerful—to the point that it was as thick as the

thigh of the thief!

The petty thief was sure that he would end up half-dead if the monk were to punch him with his right arm.

Thereupon, he immediately calmed down. After all... if you were ruthless, others would fear you! The western monk acted ruthlessly and indeed scared the thief.

"Remember me well! If I meet you the next time, I'll look for my brothers and cripple you!" The thief talked tough and quickly stood up, running away.

But right at this time, another powerful arm grabbed his collar, lifting his whole body in the air.

"Aaaah~" the thief called out in fear. When he turned his head around and looked at who it was, he discovered that it was the owner of the vehicle, Zhou Li!

That shout of the western monk earlier gave Zhou Li a scare. After he came down to take a look, he actually found a thief. This little rascal was unexpectedly trying to steal even the new electric motorbike he had just bought?!

Goddammit! If I don't beat you until not even your mother recognizes you, I'm not surnamed Zhou!

Zhou Li rushed down from the upper floor at incredible speed. During the past two days, he had constantly been suppressing the anger in his heart!

The thief just now happened to be in the line of fire.

He wanted to punch the thief in the face and let him have a taste of his anger.

"Boy, were you trying to steal my electric motorbike?" Zhou Li sneered, tightly clenching his right fist. If he were to use that fearful fist to pound the face of the thief, he would reduce him to a pulp and send him to the hospital with a cerebral concussion!

The face of the thief immediately became pale. From his look, Zhou Li seemed like a brute. If he were to punch him, he would surely be reduced to a mess and perhaps pass the rest of his life as an idiot!

"Eat my fist!" Zhou Li waved his fist, ready to release all his anger!

"Aaaah~" The thief placed both his hands before his face, and his legs went soft.

"Benefactor, hold on!"

Just as Zhou Li's punch was about to wreck the face of the thief, a strong arm suddenly held in place his fist!

Zhou Li felt an incredibly powerful grip block his arm, making him unable to move!

Thereupon, he angrily turned his head and looked at the owner of the voice—the western monk.

"Great Master?" Zhou Li said in puzzlement. Why did this Great Master stop him?

"Benefactor, don't hit him," the western monk said in a flat tone.

"Why? Great Master, is it possible that you want to protect this thief?" Zhou Li said with indignation.

He really hated good-hearted people that wanted to save and protect everyone. They would try to save the opposite party whether they were good or bad. It was the fault of these idiots that the number of evil people in society was continuously increasing and crime getting more and more rampant!

"No, I don't really intend to protect that thief." The western monk faintly smiled and said, "The problem is that if you punch that weak thief, you will seriously injure him and give him a cerebral concussion!"

"So what if it happens?!" Zhou Li said angrily. Beating that piece

of sh*t until turning him into a retard was precisely what he wanted to do!

"Benefactor, if you do that, you would have to pay a high price. Even if he's a thief, you will be dragged to court if you seriously injure him. If the injury is particularly serious, you might be sentenced to three years in prison. On the other hand, the thief would be held in custody only for around ten days. Is it really worth to spend three years in prison while the thief will be out in mere ten days?" the western monk said calmly. Although his words were not pleasing to hear, they were the truth.

Zhou Li was speechless.

Why is this Great Master so knowledgeable about the law?

"What should I do in this case? Is it possible that I have no other choice but to let this thief go?" Zhou Li clenched his teeth and said.

The eyes of the thief lit up. He had found a sliver of hope in an utterly desperate situation!

The western monk joined his palms together and said, "Benefactor, you can deliver him to the police station!"

The thief wasn't afraid of going to the police station. After all, he would stay there from five to ten days. It wasn't that different from a small vacation!

"But I'm unwilling to let him off so easily!" Zhou Li clenched his teeth and said.

"In that case... leave everything to me, alright?" the western monk said with a benevolent expression on his face, his hands still joined together. "I'm willing to sacrifice myself to help others."

After saying this much, the western monk took the thief from Zhou Li's hands.

Zhou Li said in puzzlement, "Great Master, how are you planning to take care of this thief? Is it possible that you want to lead him to

the right path?"

In the next moment, the western monk raised the thief with one hand and stretched out his other powerful 37 years old virgin arm... no wait, it was 36 years old virgin arm.

"Benefactor, since you can't extinguish the hate in your heart, let this poor monk help you! In this world, there is something called karma. Sooner or later, good is rewarded, and evil is punished. If justice hasn't been done, it is merely that the time has not come yet. Leave the duty to settle karma to me this time!" the western monk continued with his speech with a righteous expression on his face. "If one of us have to go to prison, let this poor monk go! Isn't it just three years in prison? Time will quickly fly by!"

After saying this much, the western monk restored the benevolent look on his face.

Zhou Li blurted out, "What?"

The thief called out, "No!" The western monk seemed to be a madman, and the thief had more or less guessed what he wanted to do!

However... it was too late!

In the next moment, a fearsome punch had already hit the body of the thief.

Getting hit by that punch was like getting hit by a wild bull!

"Crack, crack, crack~" The thief felt that his bones had been smashed to pieces.

It was to the point that even his internal organs were injured. It was without a doubt a very serious injury. Perhaps he would die in a while.

"Aaaaaaah~" the thief called out miserably. His complexion was now deathly pale, and he had broken out in a cold sweat. His body was already thin and weak, and there was no way it could

withstand all that pain.

Fck, the strength of that punch was off the charts!*

At this point, it would have been better if the owner of the vehicle had hit him. The owner might have severely injured him after beating him up, but the western monk seemed bent on killing him directly!

I'm dying! I'm really dying!

After punching the thief, the western monk appraised the state of his injury.

"It's neither too serious nor too light. It just happens to be a second-degree injury!" The western monk nodded his head, satisfied. Then, he took out his phone and dialed 110.

"Aaaaaah~" The pitiful scream of the thief became the background music of the western monk.

The owner of the vehicle, Zhou Li, was currently dumbfounded. He felt his brain didn't have enough RAM to process and understand what he was seeing.

"Hello, 110? I wanted to report something to the police. I've just caught a thief.

Yes, this thief wanted to steal an electric motorbike. I'll have to trouble you to come over and take him away. Right, something unexpected happened while I was catching the thief.

Yeah, yeah. I used too much strength while hitting him and ended up seriously injuring him. It's a second-degree, or slightly higher, injury. According to the law, I might be sentenced to three years in prison!

What? No, I'm not joking! It's all true! You can come over and confirm that everything I've said is the truth. If you want, I can also take a photo of the thief and send it to you. It's a second-degree injury, and the guy is still in my hands, sweating like a pig.

Quickly send someone here to arrest the thief and me, alright?

No, I'm not joking! Everything I said just now is the truth! I'm a monk, and I have a certain understanding of the various degrees of injuries. Therefore, I can judge with full assurance that his injury is of the second degree. Eh? I'm really a buddhist monk, and buddhist monks don't tell lies! Listen here. The thief is still screaming at this time, listen carefully!"

"..."

After a short moment, the western monk forced a smile and hung up. "It seems the 110 operators didn't believe me. They thought it was a prank call and warned me not to do it again. If I dare to bother them again, I'll get a 200 RMB fine."

Zhou Li was speechless.

"Regardless of what happened, save me, save me! Aaaaaah~" the thief said in pain.

Leaving everything else aside, can you bring me to the hospital first?

The thief felt that his internal organs were bleeding. If there was any delay, he might really die!

"Seriously... it seems there is no other way." The western monk picked up the thief and turned his head toward Zhou Li, asking, "Benefactor, in which direction is the nearest police station?"

The dumbfounded Zhou Li pointed in one direction.

"Thank you, Benefactor. In that case, I'll bring the thief to the police station and turn myself in. After all, hitting someone and seriously injuring them is against the law. It doesn't matter if the opposite party is a thief or not. Benefactor, you should also firmly keep in mind this point. From today onwards, don't be impulsive!" The western monk joined his palms together and carried the thief on his shoulders, disappearing in the distance.

Zhou Li was speechless.

Just in this fashion, the western monk carried the thief away, getting more and more distant.

"Bring me to the hospital first! Aaaaaah~ So painful, I'm dying!" the thief on the shoulder of the monk called out in despair.

"No, I can't do that. After all, I seriously injured you. We have to go to the police station first and register an oral confession," the western monk said gently.

"There is no need to register any confession! It's all good as long as you bring me to the hospital!" The thief started to cry, looking extremely aggrieved.

"No way. You were trying to steal an electric motorbike. You have to be detained for ten days first," the western monk said earnestly.

The thief was in despair. The monk was a complete idiot!

He was willing to stay in prison for three years for the sake of having him detained for only ten days?

The brain of this guy has several problems!

This fuking idiot is mentally ill!*

Eh? Wait a moment?

The thief suddenly thought of a fearsome matter.

He is a mentally ill person...?

Fck! I don't think a mentally ill will even go to jail after killing someone?*

At this time, the thief was scared for real.

If he were to die halfway through the road to the hospital, the idiotic monk wouldn't even be sentenced to serve in prison. He would be at most sent to a mental hospital!

In the air, Song Shuhang's ghost spirit silently looked at the

unfolding scene.

The 'light of virtue' shrouding the body of the western monk had become a little stronger...

Chapter 565: The unexpected appearance of ghost cultivators

Song Shuhang's ghost spirit quietly watched the western monk from above.

It seemed that using the ‹Ksitigarbha's Soul Ferrying Scripture› to lead to the right path the souls of the dead wasn't the only method to accumulate light of virtue. From the looks of it, using strange methods to settle karma like the western monk did just now was also effective when it came to gathering light of virtue...

It seems my understanding in regards to the light of virtue is still too low...

Moreover, the western monk had such a thick light of virtue shrouding his body. It seemed he had a lot of experience in this matter.

Earlier, the ghost spirit was just preparing to get onto the train headed toward the Jiangnan area. But right in that instant, it saw the western monk step out of the train.

It had been such a lucky coincidence, hadn't it? Originally, the ghost spirit was planning to go to Jiangnan and look for the western monk there. But who would have thought that the target would appear in front of it on its own? Thereupon, it started to quietly follow the western monk.

"In that case, I'll wait until he gets out of the police station to meet him," the ghost spirit muttered to itself. After all, the main body wanted to learn from the western monk the ‹Ksitigarbha's Soul Ferrying Scripture›, as well as get advice on how to gather 'light of virtue'.

But after seeing the western monk bring into full play his stupidity, the ghost spirit was somewhat disturbed and felt uneasy.

If it were to suddenly appear in front of him, wouldn't the

western monk mistake it for a resentful ghost and try to purify it with all his might?

After witnessing the actions of the western monk, the ghost spirit was sure that there was a probability of the 90% or above that the western monk would try to do exactly that.

After thinking up to this point, the ghost spirit got a headache... and the wounds on its back had also started to hurt faintly.



But there was someone else that had an even worse headache... the police officers at the police station.

When they saw a western monk with a strong build enter the police station while carrying on his shoulders a weeping thief, their hearts skipped a beat, and they fell into confusion as well.

"Comrades, I've come here to turn myself in. This guy is a thief that was trying to steal an electric motorbike and was caught in the act by me. I even recorded him while he was trying to steal the vehicle. Here is the proof." After saying this much, the western monk took out his mobile phone with a smug expression on his face. "According to the law, you can detain this thief."

"Thank you... comrade. But why are you turning yourself in?" one of the police officers took the initiative to ask. After gazing at the bear-like build of the western monk, the police officer felt a certain pressure.

"I'm turning myself in because I lost control due to the anger and couldn't control my strength... no, wait, I'm turning myself in because I intentionally gave the thief a second-degree injury. After a careful look, I determined that the injury just happened to be of the second degree! Therefore, according to the law, I should be sentenced to serve three years in prison. That's why I came here to turn myself in." The western monk threw the thief to one side and joined his palms together; his face full of awe-inspiring

righteousness.

The thief trembled and groaned in pain, "Hospital... deliver me to the hospital... aaaah~"

The police officer was speechless.

What should I do right now? What kind of face should I make while replying to this foreign friend? Should I really arrest him and put him in prison for three years? But why do I feel that there is something wrong with this whole situation?

After a while, the police officer took a deep breath and asked the thief, "Can you confirm that it was this Great Master that seriously injured you?"

He decided to follow the normal procedure and listen to what the two parties had to say. If the thief confirmed that the Great Master hit him... he would send the western monk to a mental hospital!

"It wasn't him. It wasn't the doing of the Great Master. I was careless and tripped, injuring myself in the process. Sob, sob, sob~ You can do whatever you want, and you can even detain me for ten days, sob, sob, sob~, but bring me to the hospital first! Sob, sob, sob~" The thief cried continually.

He didn't want to have any relationship with this madman and thus denied everything the monk said earlier.

The most important thing right now was not to give the mad monk the chance to speak! He didn't want him to talk about that 'three years' and 'ten days' nonsense again... he just wanted to be delivered to the hospital as soon as possible!

I only want to go to the hospital! God, please, send this damnable western monk away from me!

If possible, don't let me meet him ever again in this lifetime!



It was unknown what happened inside the police station after

that.

But the western monk was sent out for some reason... and the thief was ultimately delivered to the hospital.

The western monk was still unwilling to accept the sentence. "Comrades, you can't listen to the one-sided story of the thief. I'm not lying, I'm the one that gave him a second-degree injury! You have to believe me! Buddhist monks don't tell lies!"

The police officers rubbed their temples. They had a headache at this time.

"Comrades, should I punch the thief again, giving him an even more serious injury? Even if I have to stay in prison for a few more years, I'm fine with it!" the western monk said loudly.

The complexion of the thief was pale. Madmen were truly scary!

"Please, contain yourself!" the police officers shouted.

In the end, the western monk was chased out of the police station under the sympathetic gaze of the police officers. They were concerned about the mentally unstable monk.



The western monk faintly sighed and said, "Buddhist monks really don't tell lies!"

He also knew that passing three years in prison wasn't something to be proud of. However, he wasn't afraid of staying in there. Instead, he was rather happy. In addition, he could basically come out whenever he wanted.

What upset him was that he wasn't lying. Moreover, he was someone that attached a lot of importance to karma. Since he beat up someone, it was only right for him to go in prison. The laws of most countries had a similar sentence for this behavior.

Unfortunately, the police officers completely ruined his plan.

"From the looks of it, I'll have to restrain myself and look for a

quiet place to shut myself in for the next three years. It seems the only way to settle this karma," the western monk muttered to himself.

In that case, I should look for a place where I can properly lock myself up!

Then, I'll stay locked in there for three years.

Just as this thought crossed his mind, the western monk headed toward Wenzhou City's Baijing Street, direction Mountain Niuding.

He decided to visit that famous director he admired.

After that, he would look for a quiet place on Mountain Niuding and silently act as a cool monk!

If it was possible to get a small role in the upcoming movie of the famous director, even better!



Thereupon, the western monk headed toward Baijing Street, direction Mountain Niuding.

He was planning to go there on foot. After all, walking all the way there was another type of training.

The ghost spirit in the sky was speechless.

Whatever. The western monk seems to have come out of the police station. Such being the case, should I go down to meet him?

Thereupon, the ghost spirit decided to descend and meet the western monk.

But right at this time, several unexpected visitors made their appearance and decided to meet up with the western monk before the ghost spirit could make its move.

Four men wearing black suits and sunglasses suddenly appeared.

Weren't they afraid of getting heat rash by wearing those clothes

in such hot weather?

"You have finally decided to come out of prison, huh? You goddam monk." The four men in suits surrounded the western monk.

The western monk gazed dumbfounded at the unexpected visitors and said, "Do we know each other?"

The four men in black suits sneered and didn't waste time. In the next moment, black mist appeared behind their backs.

The desolate cries of ghosts were transmitted from within the black mist.

At the same time, sharp claws also drilled out of the strange mist.

"Ghost cultivators?" The ghost spirit in the sky quietly looked at the people that had suddenly appeared.

It could already guess the reason the ghost cultivators were looking for the western monk... it had to be because the western monk probably purified a bunch of resentful ghosts while he was passing by a certain place, right...?

Chapter 566: Would a cultivator of the Second Stage die after getting thrown down from a 35-story building? (2 in 1)

The four ghost cultivators were well-aware of the strength of the western monk. Although the guy was a foreigner, the 'light of virtue' surrounding his body was thicker than that of many virtuous monks in the world of cultivators!

Such a thick light of virtue implied that the western monk had led a virtuous life and did innumerable good deeds. With the light of virtue protecting his body, no evil could harm him!

Only after leading to the right path 1000 souls could one call themselves virtuous.

Only after leading to the right path 10,000 souls would the light of virtue start to protect one's body.

But given how thick the light of virtue shrouding the western monk was... it had already undergone a qualitative change! The western monk had absolutely led to the right path at least 100,000 souls!

An ordinary ghost soldier of the First Stage wouldn't even be able to break through the layer of the 'light of virtue' if it decided to attack the western monk.

But now that the western monk had reached the Second Stage, his ability to control the light of virtue had reached a completely new level. If a ghost soldier of the First Stage tried to attack him, the light of virtue would reduce it to ashes directly!

If the western monk were to silently chant scriptures, even a ghost general of the Second Stage would get scorched and seriously injured after touching the light of virtue.

The western monk had already transformed into the natural

enemy of ghost cultivators of the same rank!

Such being the case, the four ghost cultivators thoroughly investigated the western monk before coming over to retaliate against him.

At first, they were planning to kill him immediately after he had come out of Jiangnan's prison. But since Jiangnan's prison was within the sphere of influence of an important person in the world of cultivators, they decided to refrain from causing problems within the territory of that important person. Therefore, they patiently endured and waited until after the western monk was released from custody after serving his sentence and had gotten away from the prison.

What they hadn't expected was that the western monk would suddenly break through to the Second Stage Realm before getting out of prison.

Such being the case, the four ghost cultivators had no choice but to change their plan and prepare a few extra things.

Their plan had been delayed for this reason.

However, they looked for him again today and were finally ready to take revenge!



After suddenly appearing, the four ghost cultivators didn't waste time with useless chit-chat. The four of them controlled the ghosts behind them and simultaneously stretched out their hands, throwing out red-colored bloody sand. They had already surrounded the western monk when they made their appearance. Such being the case, the western monk had no chance of avoiding the bloody sand they cast toward him.

The bloody sand had been created by refining the foulest things in the world and had the special property of suppressing the light of virtue. Just as they threw out the bloody sand, the light of virtue

was bound to be suppressed regardless of its strength.

Now that the western monk had been deprived of his light of virtue, he was like a turtle without its shell in the eyes of the four ghost cultivators!

As soon as the bloody sand fell on the body of the western monk, the light of virtue shrouding his body became dimmer. The light of virtue had been temporarily sealed, and the monk would need at least five minutes to restore it to its original state.

"Evildoers!" the western monk roared, and a fierce expression appeared on his face. After that, he tore off the prayer beads in his hand and hurled them away.

The prayer beads emanated a golden light and shot toward the four ghost cultivators. It was one of the special skills that the western monk had to deal with ghosts and similar things.

Unfortunately, the power of the prayer beads wasn't enough, and the four ghost cultivators managed to ward it off with the black mist they had released.

The western monk was somewhat unwilling to accept it and roared inwardly, Shiet! There is no way they would have blocked the attack so easily if the original prayer beads hadn't lost their energy in the subway several months ago!

The prayer beads he threw out just now were something he manufactured during his stay in prison. Their strength was a bit low for this reason.

Still, the attack with the prayer beads was enough to allow the western monk to gain one breath's worth of time.

In the next moment, his wide monk's robe shook, and a vajra scepter fell into his hands.

The western monk wielded the vajra scepter and suddenly rushed toward the ghost cultivator on the right-front.

Since several enemies surrounded him, he had to break the encirclement and defeat them one by one!

"Hehehe..." The four ghost cultivators strangely laughed at the same time.

In the next moment, the black mist they had released started to merge with the four ghosts behind their back. After that, the ghosts started to merge with their bodies.

In the blink of an eye, they had created a great battle formation composed of resentful ghosts.

The four ghost cultivators were all of the Second Stage, and the resentful ghosts behind their back were also of the Second Stage. It had suddenly turned into an 8 versus 1 fight.

The great battle formation of resentful ghosts changed. Regardless which ghost cultivator in the formation the western monk was attacking, it was the same as attacking the combination of the four ghost cultivators and the four resentful ghosts!

"Clang!"

A black saber kept off the vajra scepter of the western monk.

"Bang!"

Next, the black mist warded off his blow full of power. The black mist had instantly solidified and was even harder than steel, and the rebounding strength let him see the stars.

The opposite party had come prepared. There was no way they would easily let him escape...



One of the ghost cultivators clenched his teeth and said, "You won't be able to escape! The best quality resentful ghost seeds that my clan had been cultivating for years, and could perhaps reach the Fourth Stage and become ghost kings, were stealthily purified by you! This enmity and hate are simply irreconcilable!"

The two sabers he was holding madly chopped at the western monk, looking like a meat grinder.

The western monk used his vajra scepter to ward off the lethal attack of the two sabers while having a dumbfounded look on his face. He had no idea when he had led to the right path those 'best quality resentful ghost seeds'. After all, the resentful ghosts he had purified during the course of his life were simply too many. It was normal that he didn't remember all of them.

If a person spent several decades killing tens of thousands of ants in a frenzy, there was no way they would remember which one of the several tens of thousands of ants they had killed had whatever special characteristic. If they could even remember which ant had a larger abdomen or longer legs... that wouldn't be too normal!

"I'll hold him back... you guys contaminate him! Get rid of his buddhist cultivation technique!" the ghost cultivator wielding the two sabers said coldly.

Aside from the bloody sand that could seal the light of virtue, the ghost cultivators had prepared several others gadgets specifically for the western monk.

Buddhist cultivators were very strong against ghost cultivators. Such being the case, ghost cultivators studied and developed several methods to tamper with buddhist cultivation techniques!

They developed all kinds of filthy items and poisons to deal with buddhist cultivators.

"Spurt!" The four ghost generals opened their mouth and spat out a green-colored liquid.

The western monk was currently stranded in the formation and had no way of dodging the liquid. The green liquid covered his whole body.

"This is the Buddha Extinguishing Water. It's a deadly poison that ghost cultivators developed in order to destroy the internal

energy accumulated after practicing buddhist cultivation techniques. Once you get soaked, it will seep into your body and completely devour the buddhist-type true qi inside your body within three breaths! Ahahaha!" The four ghost cultivators laughed madly.

The ghost cultivator wielding the two sabers kept attacking the western monk, waiting for the Buddha Extinguishing Water to take effect.

Another two ghost cultivators made use of every opportunity and attacked the western monk like poisonous snakes whenever the latter made a slip-up, leaving a wound on his body.

As for the last ghost cultivator, he didn't take action. He was operating the great formation and preventing the western monk from escaping.

At this time, the ghost cultivator that was operating the formation started to count. "One, two, three!"

At this 'three', the four ghost cultivators and the four ghost generals pounced upward.

After that, a series of classical martial skills belonging to ghost cultivators such as the 'Soulless Ghost Kick', 'Extinguishing Fist', 'Eight Deadly Moves', and the 'Blade of Regret' were displayed by them one after another.

On the other hand, the four ghost soldiers grew out ghost claws, ghost tails, and ghost weapons and pounced down.

They wanted to take down the western monk as the Buddha Extinguishing Water was starting to take effect.

* * *

"Shiet! What's the deal with this green liquid? It stuck to my whole body! Are they trying to make me feel nauseated? Now I'm truly angry. This monk will show you a real secret technique at this time!" the western monk bellowed.

In the next moment, he grabbed the extremity of the vajra scepter and pulled with all his strength. Immediately after, the sharp blade of a sword was pulled out of the vajra scepter.

The vajra scepter was a modified magical treasure, and there was a flexible sword concealed within.

"Have a taste of my sword. <Celestial Wonder Sword>!" the western monk shouted as the sword lit up in his hands.

A magical multi-colored air accompanied each slash of the sword.

The <Celestial Wonder Sword> was the real martial skill the western monk practiced. After he advanced to the Second Stage Realm and opened his Sea of Qi Dantian, he could finally display the true power of this wondrous sword technique.

Each gust of the rainbow air was extremely beautiful and dangerous at the same time! The rainbow air was highly compressed sword qi and would cause severe injuries upon contact!

It was the signature sword technique of a powerful sect.

"How is it possible? Why wasn't he suppressed by the Buddha Extinguishing Water?!"

"The Buddha Extinguishing Water didn't have the slightest effect?"

"Is it possible that we bought a counterfeit article?"

"No, impossible. I bought it from a senior ghost cultivator that had a '5 Star Diamond' reputation! The opposite party is from an established brand that had been doing business for 500 years. There is no way they would sell a counterfeit!"

"Clang, clang, clang!"

The western monk alone managed to block the eight enemies. The <Celestial Wonder Sword> had managed to ward off the techniques of the ghost cultivators all at once! After all, the rank of the <Celestial Wonder Sword> was much higher compared to the

rank of the techniques the ghost cultivators practiced.

That wasn't all. The ghost cultivators that attacked the western monk with their fists and legs were injured by the sword qi concealed within the rainbow air. Sword wounds appeared on their fists and feet, and their black suits were dyed with blood.

Touching the sword qi was enough to get injured. In addition, if the injuries weren't properly treated, the sword qi of the ‹Celestial Wonder Sword› would leave behind life-long internal injuries.

The ghost cultivators would have never guessed that the western monk before their eyes that had led to the right path 100,000 souls and gathered such a powerful light of virtue was a monk only on the outside. What he really practiced were daoist techniques that had absolutely nothing to do with buddhist techniques!

Such being the case, the Buddha Extinguishing Water that was specially made for people practicing buddhist techniques had almost no effect on the western monk.

The ghost cultivator on the right clenched his teeth and said, "What kind of joke is this! Dammit, even if the Buddha Extinguishing Water didn't work, do you mean we can't take down this stupid monk with the four of us and four ghost generals? Let's attack him all together and take him down!"

The four ghost cultivators and the four ghost generals increased the frequency of their attacks.

The time at their disposal wasn't much. Five minutes later, the opposite party would restore their light of virtue that had been suppressed thanks to the bloody sand. If that abnormal light of virtue was added to the equation, taking down the western monk would become much more difficult.

The attacks of the ghost cultivators rained down like a rain of bullets.

The western monk could only grit his teeth and use the ‹Celestial

Wonder Sword》again and again to ward the attacks off and resist!

Five breaths later, the western monk was gasping for breath.

His current condition wasn't too good... the power of the 《Celestial Wonder Sword》 was enormous, enough to let him fight against eight enemies and not fall in a disadvantageous position.

However, the consumption of energy necessary to use the technique was equally large.

Each gust of rainbow air of the 《Celestial Wonder Sword》 was after all compressed sword qi! It was beautiful and lethal, and the energy it consumed was also enormous.

The western monk had just broken through the Second Stage Realm, and the amount of true qi inside his Sea of Qi Dantian wasn't that high.

At this time, he was doing his best to resist...

But if the true qi inside his body was exhausted before he could break through the encirclement, he was bound to fall here today together with his 150+ kilograms!

The attacks of the four ghost cultivators and ghost generals before his eyes became even swifter and more violent.

Moreover, they were still inside the formation, and their attack and defense were synchronized, making the western monk unable to get out of the formation.

Will I really die today? the western monk thought to himself.

The magical clothes he was wearing could resist at most an all-out attack of a cultivator of the Second Stage once. Even relying on the defense of the clothes, he would be still unable to run away.

He had just reached the Second Stage, and he didn't have much experience fighting other cultivators of the same rank.

If I had known earlier, I would have obediently returned to my teacher's place. As expected, one always has to be filial. Otherwise,

who knows what might happen!

Teacher, if there is really a next life, I would like to become your disciple again.

But even in the next life, you have to allow me to shave my head and become a monk!

The imagination of the western monk started to run wild; the hand he was using to hold the sword was shivering due to the continuous attacks of the four ghost cultivators and four ghost generals.

I'm reaching the limit... the western monk thought as he clenched his teeth.

At the same time, cold light flashed through his eyes. If he was going down, he would try to kill one of the enemies in the process!

"Be careful. He is probably preparing to counterattack with all his strength." The four ghost cultivators were very experienced. As soon as they discovered what the western monk was going to do, they increased the frequency of their attacks.

However, they changed the pattern of their attacks and would immediately retreat after attacking, not giving the western monk the opportunity to counterattack.

The world was full of clever people.

In the air, Song Shuhang's ghost spirit was calmly watching the scene.

The battle below allowed it to gain a lot of precious knowledge.

"There are foul items that can restrain the light of virtue. It's something to keep in mind."

"Anyway, the sword technique of the western monk is incredibly powerful! Dammit, isn't he supposed to be a monk? How can he use such a cool sword technique? On the other hand, 'we' are stuck with barbaric saber techniques!"

"The formation of the ghost cultivators is quite powerful too. I must pay attention to it. I can't carelessly enter inside the formation as the western monk did, ending up fighting like a cornered beast."

The western monk seems to be reaching the limit. It's time for me to make my move.

In the air, the ghost spirit slightly paused.

Afterward, it used the 〈Virtuous Man's Ten Thousand Mile Walk〉 footwork and descended toward the ground.

From a certain point of view, the ghost spirit could be regarded as Song Shuhang's clone.

If Song Shuhang knew something, the ghost spirit also knew it. If Song Shuhang gained some new knowledge, the ghost spirit would immediately gain that piece of knowledge. Of course, some skills that were related to the physical body were impossible for the ghost spirit to use even if it knew the theory behind them.

While it was descending to the ground, the ghost spirit joined its palms together and displayed its two innate skills.

A small golden shield appeared in its left hand and a small golden sword in the right one.

A shield in the left hand and a sword in the right one.

〈Holy Light Sword Technique〉— Evil Slashing Holy Light Sword!" The ghost spirit decided to display this peculiar sword technique.

If Song Shuhang's main body had been here, the best way to deal with these guys would have been the 'Lightning Palm'. As long as the attack landed, it would be possible to get rid of one of the ghost generals of the opposite party.

Unfortunately, the ghost spirit couldn't make use of the 'Lightning Palm' Venerable White taught Shuhang due to its

special type of constitution.

Therefore, it could only settle for the second-best choice, choosing another skill that could suppress resentful ghosts like buddhist cultivation techniques, the <Holy Light Sword Technique>.

Under the boost of the <Virtuous Man's Ten Thousand Mile Walk>, the speed of the ghost spirit had basically reached that of a cultivator of the Fourth Stage riding a flying sword.

In the blink of an eye, it had appeared behind the Ghost Cultivator No. 1 and his ghost general!

At the same time, the ghost spirit opened its mouth, and its lips started to move up and down.

No sound came out, because the ghost spirit was silently chanting the chant of the sword technique: Holy light, that wicked one seems worth fighting!

This sword technique that had been adapted from its western counterpart was rather peculiar. Although it was possible to use the sword technique even without the chant, its strength would increase by 20% if one were to read the chant aloud!

Senior Sister Ye made two hypotheses about the matter while she was instructing Song Shuhang. According to the first hypothesis, it might be something like the incantation of a magical technique. After the incantation was read aloud, the power of the 'magical technique' was added to the sword technique, increasing the overall strength.

According to the second hypothesis, it was a sort of self-hypnosis that could allow the user to burst forth with their latent capacity.

In short, as long as one had little to no shame and could read aloud the strange incantation of the sword technique, the power of the <Holy Light Sword Technique> would increase by quite a bit!

The <Holy Light Sword Technique> ruthlessly slashed at the back

of the ghost general.

The speed of the attack was simply too fast. Although the ghost general and the Ghost Cultivator No. 1 noticed that someone was attacking them from behind, they didn't even have the time to turn around that the attack had already hit the back of the ghost general.

"Aaaaaaah~" the ghost general cried out in pain. It was mean and despicable to backstab it like that!

Since it didn't have the time to defend itself, a one-meter long wound was left on the body of the ghost general, almost cleaving it into two halves.

As if that wasn't enough, the blade of the sword had those damnable holy flames attached to it.

The ghost cultivators were also aware of its properties. Just like buddhist cultivation techniques, this western technique could also cause augmented harm to ghosts and similar creatures.

Although it wasn't as effective as buddhist cultivation techniques, the holy flames would be enough to end the life of the ghost general if they didn't quickly get rid of those sticky flames that could burn everything.

They were sticky to the point of being almost unbelievable!

When the surrounded western monk saw that someone had come to help him, his spirit was invigorated, and he went all-out without sparing any effort.

After the first successful attack, the ghost spirit furrowed its brows. It was somewhat disgruntled that its surprise attack hadn't directly killed the ghost general of the opposite party.

Well... whatever. It was fine even if the ghost general hadn't died. As long as its injury was serious enough and it couldn't

defend itself, it wasn't a problem to devour it.

In the next moment, the ghost spirit opened its mouth.

《Whale Swallowing Technique》!

The 《Whale Swallowing Technique》 that was used to eat spirit beast crystal was rather fearsome in the hands of the ghost spirit.

It literally swallowed down everything like a whale. The ghost spirit opened its mouth and breathed in. Immediately after, the burning holy flames and the screaming ghost general were carried over by a powerful force. Finally, the huge ghost general was entirely swallowed down by the ghost spirit.

It was such an unsettling scene... the ghost spirit had opened its mouth and devoured the ghost general that was more than twice its size.

After devouring the ghost general, the ghost spirit continuously retreated and returned high in the sky by relying on its speed that was comparable to that of a cultivator of the Fourth Stage riding a flying sword.

The four ghost cultivators on the ground could only powerlessly stare at it from below.

Sometimes, it was nearly impossible to deal with someone that could fly.

Although the ghost cultivators could order their ghost generals to fly up in the sky, their speed was simply too slow compared to the ghost spirit—to the point that they wouldn't even be able to bite the dust if they were to chase after it.



After losing one of the ghost generals, the formation that the ghost cultivators had arranged was no longer perfect. The pressure on the western monk had slightly decreased, and the intensity of his resistance had increased by two points.

In the sky.

"Burp~" The ghost spirit burped satisfied and spat out the residues of the holy flames.

Along with the usage of the <Whale Swallowing Technique>, the digestive capacity of the ghost spirit also strengthened. As you might have guessed, Song Shuhang's ghost spirit had its own special digestive system.

And its digestive system could be likewise strengthened with the <Whale Swallowing Technique>.

Three breaths later, the ghost general of the Second Stage was completely absorbed without leaving anything behind.

"Burp~" The ghost spirit burped again.

At the same time, the two unhealable wounds on its back recovered a little!

The eyes of the ghost spirit lit up as it stared at the three ghost generals on the ground, greedily looking at them and licking its lips.

In the next moment, it held the shield in the left hand and the sword in the right, using the <Virtuous Man's Ten Thousand Mile Walk> footwork to dive down again.

The ghost spirit was the same as a falcon looking for its prey.

The ghost cultivators on the ground had been paying attention to the ghost spirit all along.

"That damnable ghastly creature still dared to come down! This time, we'll kill it for sure!" the Ghost Cultivator No. 2 bellowed. The ghost general behind his back stretched out its ghastly claws.

The dim ghastly flames burning on its claws started to burn up and shot toward the ghost spirit in the sky.

The ghost spirit used the small golden shield in its left hand to block the attack, completely warding off the ghastly flames.

Meanwhile, the small golden sword in its right hand changed shape. The blade of the sword slightly bent, turning into a golden saber.

The ability to change the shape of the items materialized with its innate skills was something that the ghost spirit had learned to do recently.

The ghost spirit tightly held the golden saber, and the saber qi exploded... <Inverted Scale Saber Technique>—<Dragon Dance Style>!

The saber transformed into a lifelike true dragon and enwrapped the ghost spirit.

With the true dragon made of true qi protecting it, the ghost spirit barged into the formation of the four ghost cultivators, directly arriving above the head of the western monk.

The dragon of true qi curled up, protecting the western monk as well.

"Dammit! It wants to save the monk!" the four ghost cultivators shouted and increased the strength of their attacks, going all-out.

In addition, one of the ghost generals behind their back took out a talisman. It was unknown of what rank the attack engraved on the talisman was!

However, it seemed that the technique engraved on the talisman was extremely fearsome.

"Clang, clang, clang!" The attacks of the ghost cultivators bumped into the body of the true dragon made of true qi, but none of their attacks was able to break through the defenses of the technique.

Although it had no attack power, the defensive properties of the <Inverted Scale Saber Technique> were unrivaled!

A smile appeared on the face of the ghost spirit. Then, it

stretched out its hand and grabbed the western monk, whizzing high up in the sky.

The four ghost cultivators were completely unable to keep up with the speed of the ghost spirit and could only helplessly watch the ghost spirit as it was bringing the western monk away.

The ghost spirit shot a glance downward, a bit reluctant to leave. Although it really wanted to kill and devour the remaining three ghost generals, the talisman in the hands of the opposite party made it feel somewhat uneasy.

It was better not to take the risk this time.

After all, its objective was to rescue the western monk. Now that it had reached its goal, it decided to take the western monk and run away.

The four ghost cultivators roared, unwilling to accept the scene unfolding before their eyes.



I'm saved! The western monk heaved a sigh of relief. It had been quite dangerous this time, and he had almost died.

Next, he raised his head and looked at the kind person that had saved him, saying, "Senior, thank you for saving my life... eh? A ghost?"

The western monk was dumbstruck.

But in the next moment, he looked at the 'face' of the ghost.

"Benefactor!" The western monk was amazed once again.

Wasn't this benefactor the same person that had saved him from that fearsome ghost cultivator known as 'Altar Master' back in the subway?

Why did that benefactor turn into a ghost?

Is it possible... that the benefactor died?

The eyes of the western monk became slightly red, and an emotional expression appeared on his face as he said, "[Benefactor... did you poop?](#)" The Chinese of the western monk was somewhat unclear in certain points, and it was difficult to make out what he was trying to say.

Poop (shi) and die (si) have similar pronunciation in Chinese.

The ghost spirit was speechless.

At this time, it had already carried the western monk to an altitude of 100 meters, the same height as a 35-story building.

Question: Would a cultivator of the Second Stage that was unable to fly die after falling from such a height?

Chapter 567: ?Diary of the Ascetic Senior Monk?

Song Shuhang's ghost spirit had already recovered and returned to being a middle-rank ghost spirit. In addition, there was a runic core inside its body, something that only high-rank ghost spirits could possess. Thanks to the runic core, there was a small chance that Song Shuhang's ghost spirit could also evolve until finally becoming a high-rank ghost spirit in the future.

Middle-rank ghost spirits had already a pretty good intelligence. On the other hand, high-rank ghost spirits had a level of intelligence that wasn't inferior to that of a human being. The speed of their cultivation was faster than ordinary cultivators', and they could also learn certain ghost-type magical techniques.

After Song Shuhang completed the synchronization with the ghost spirit, the latter slowly started to transform into a high-rank ghost spirit.

Although its current rank was still that of a middle-rank ghost spirit, it already had an incredibly high level of intelligence.



The western monk had yet to understand that his life was currently in danger and thus kept asking, "Benefactor, do you have any unsettled business?"

Since a powerful cultivator like the benefactor turned into a ghost, he must have some unfulfilled wish or enmity to take care of, right?

If his benefactor had some unfulfilled wish, the western monk felt that he had to complete it in his stead!

He had saved his life, and he had to absolutely repay him! As if that wasn't enough, he had saved him twice now!

The ghost spirit was speechless.

After a short while, the western monk saw that the 'benefactor' still had yet to reply. Therefore, he asked in puzzlement, "Benefactor, if you have any unfulfilled wish, you can tell it to me. I will try to fulfill it in your stead!"

The ghost spirit was speechless.

"Benefactor, please, speak!" the western monk said. Then, he was suddenly enlightened. Was it possible that his benefactor didn't have any unfulfilled wish but was just waiting for someone to ferry his soul to heaven?

Actually, it was a rather common thing. It was very easy for the souls of powerful cultivators to turn into ghosts after their accidental death due to the large amount of mental energy they possessed, fluttering all around the world.

The soul of the benefactor traveled thousands of miles just to look for me... is it possible that he wants me to ferry his soul to a better place?

"Benefactor, I finally understand. I will hold the most solemn ceremony possible for you and successfully ferry your soul to the afterworld! I will silently recite 300 buddhist scriptures all at once as a warm-up. Afterward, we can descend to a quiet place and carry out the soul ferrying ritual!" the western monk said earnestly.

After saying this much, he started to silently recite from memory buddhist scriptures. It was unknown what type of buddhist scriptures he was carrying with him since there were several sentences of English and Sanskrit mixed within.

At this time, the ghost spirit really got the impulse to throw down the western monk.

It wasn't that it didn't want to speak... it simply couldn't!

Very soon, the western monk finished reciting from memory the buddhist scriptures once. Then, after reciting the 300 buddhist

scriptures, he prepared to hold the ceremony to ferry the ghost spirit to the afterworld.

The corner of the ghost spirit's mouth twitched. Next, it flung its hand and threw the western monk high up in the sky.

"Eh? Benefactor!" the western monk called out. He was hovering midair at an altitude of hundreds of meters without any support!

He didn't have a flying magical treasure and had no means to fly. Whether true qi was protecting their body or not, even a cultivator of the Second Stage would turn into meat sauce after falling from such a height!

In the air, the western monk said in panic, "Benefactor, did I say something inappropriate?! Aaaaah!"

At this time, the ghost spirit flew behind him and stretched out its hand, catching him.

"Benefactor!" The face of the western monk was full of tears.

But in the next moment, the ghost spirit flung him away once again. The aim was to reach the roof of a nearby 30-story building.

The ghost spirit wasn't trying to intentionally retaliate against the western monk. The problem was that it was difficult for it to fly in the sky while carrying the cumbersome western monk along.

The physical strength of a ghost spirit of the Second Stage was limited.

After grabbing the western monk and flying in the sky with the speed of a cultivator of the Fourth Stage for so long, it had basically reached its limit.

If they couldn't land in time, the western monk would fall and turn into meat sauce.



"Bang!"

The western monk finally landed and broke out in a cold sweat due to the fright.

The ghost spirit fluttered and arrived in front of the western monk and offered him its hand.

The western monk looked in puzzlement at the hand of the ghost spirit. Afterward, it stretched out his own hand toward the ghost spirit.

Ultimately, the hands of the western monk and the ghost spirit touched.

In the next moment, a sound reverberated in the head of the western monk. My main body hasn't died yet! I'm just a ghost spirit!

The western monk immediately felt awkward.

It was actually a ghost spirit!

Although he hadn't seen a ghost spirit before, the western monk had heard about them. They were cheat-like existences that all cultivators dreamt of because even a low-rank ghost spirit could allow the cultivator to double their cultivation speed! Having a ghost spirit was similar to having an extra portable charger, and one didn't have to worry about being out of energy during protracted battles.

As if that wasn't enough, the ghost spirit of his benefactor was very intelligent and didn't seem to be any different than a human being in that field. Such being the case, it was at the very least a ghost spirit of the middle-rank.

"Ahahah... I see, it was actually a ghost spirit! Speaking of which, it totally makes sense. There is no way my benefactor would have pooped so easily given his strength! Ahahaha..." The western monk foolishly laughed to hide his embarrassment.

Then, he quickly shifted the topic of conversation. "Benefactor, do you need something from me since you were looking for me?"

The ghost spirit sat down and transmitted the following thought: 'I came here to ask you for advice on how to ferry the souls of the dead.'

"How to ferry the souls of the dead? Benefactor, are you also interested in this kind of matter?" The eyes of the western monk lit up. Then, he took out an old book with yellow pages from his monk's robe.

Although the method to ferry the souls of the dead was very valuable, it was nothing compared to the kindness the benefactor had shown to him by saving his life twice.

The western monk cautiously handed the old book with yellow pages to the ghost spirit, saying, "Benefactor, here is the method to ferry the souls of the dead in my possession. I learned everything I know from this book. Now, I will entrust this secret method to you. Oh, right. There is also this."

After saying this much, the western monk took out the <Ksitigarbha's Soul Ferrying Scripture> and said, "If you combine these two manuals together, you can ferry all kinds of souls!"

The ghost spirit silently nodded. Then, it stretched out its hand and opened <Ksitigarbha's Soul Ferrying Scripture>.

On the first page, the western monk had written down the following remarks: 'I will not become a Buddha until I reach enlightenment and all living things are saved, with hell being emptied.'

The ghost spirit flipped through <Ksitigarbha's Soul Ferrying Scripture>. It seemed it was a religious text that some buddhist sect had handed down; its content was incredibly difficult to understand. Reading the text was enough to cause the spiritual energy of the world to fluctuate.

It was unknown how the western monk had gotten his hands on it.

Thereupon, the ghost spirit flipped through the book from start to end and firmly memorized the contents. Its guts were telling it that <Ksitigarbha's Soul Ferrying Scripture> could come in handy one day in the future.

After putting down <Ksitigarbha's Soul Ferrying Scripture>, the ghost spirit opened the old book with yellow pages the western monk had given it earlier.

Although it was called 'book', it looked more like a very ordinary notebook.

After opening it, the ghost spirit noticed a few small characters written above it.

<Diary of the Ascetic Senior Monk>.

The ghost spirit was speechless.

Then, it raised its head and looked at the western monk. Had that guy really learned the method to ferry the souls of the dead thanks to this 'book'?

The ghost spirit flipped through the diary with a doubtful expression on its face.

It wasn't the ascetic senior monk that had written the diary. It seemed a bystander had recorded down the ascetic journey of a certain senior monk.

The senior monk in the diary was bald, wearing thin burlap clothes on his body and going around barefooted. Although his body was skinny, his eyes were bright and full of energy.

The diary was full of trivial details. Moreover, the description of the ascetic journey of the senior monk spanned across various chapters.

For example, the senior monk once traversed a land full of snow and ice, refusing to eat or drink for several days. This content covered five or six chapters.

For example, the senior monk was once traversing a forest with sharp rocks within barefooted, enduring the hardships of the arduous journey. This content likewise covered five chapters.

There was a passage about the senior monk meeting a monster beast and fighting against it. However, these interesting parts were just mentioned briefly in passing.

The author of the diary repeatedly described the hardships of the senior monk, describing his hunger, pain, thirst, and so on...

The ghost spirit was unsure whether it was just its misconception... but after reading it, it felt as though the author of the diary was rather happy while describing the whole process.

Fck. The author of this diary must be a full-blown sadist. He seems very happy while describing the suffering of the senior monk.*

Page after page, the ghost spirit had already flipped through half of the diary.

In the diary, the senior monk entered a fearsome forest. The forest was full of poisonous insects. After the first day in the forest, the senior monk had been poisoned and was almost on the verge of death.

The diary was using all types of fancy terms to describe in details the poisoned senior monk. His lips turned purple, his face blue, he gasped for breath and groaned in pain, desperately using his finger to hold onto the ground below.

As expected, the author of the diary was really happy to see the senior monk suffer.

Is this even a diary? The ghost spirit had already started to doubt whether he was really reading a diary.

It had started to wonder whether it was something similar to an ancient novel, with the author trying to satisfy the dark desires in their heart after describing in detail the suffering of the senior

monk.

In addition, how exactly had the western monk learned the method to ferry the souls of the dead through this book?

The ghost spirit raised its head once more and looked at the western monk, only to see him looking at itself with an expectant look on his face.

Moreover, whenever the western monk was looking at the old diary, it felt as though he was looking at a priceless treasure, afraid that the ghost spirit would use too much strength and rip the yellow pages of the diary while flipping them.

The ghost spirit was speechless.

Thereupon, it tried to endure and kept flipping through the diary.

In the diary, after he was poisoned, the senior monk's chances of survival were slim. But by relying on his incredible willpower, he managed to overcome the poison and return between the living once again.

...Overcome your sister! Since when can you overcome something like poison through willpower? Was it too difficult to write about the detoxifying process?

The speed at which the ghost spirit was flipping the pages increased.

During his ascetic journey, the senior monk crossed mountains, swamps, deserts, and the seas. He endured storms, survived lightning, crossed sea of fire and was buried alive by sandstorms.

In other words, he went through all kinds and types of experiences!

After continuously flipping through the diary and almost reaching the end, the ghost spirit was somewhat moved.

It suddenly thought of the <Virtuous Man's Ten Thousand Mile

Walk》footwork.

Although it was reluctant to admit it, the ascetic journey of the senior monk described in the diary somewhat reminded it of the 《Virtuous Man's Ten Thousand Mile Walk》 footwork the main body practiced.

One was a buddhist method that consisted in an ascetic journey, the other a scholarly method used to travel thousands of miles. There was indeed something common between the two.

Perhaps the main body should also go on a similar journey during his free time...

Crossing mountains and fording rivers with food and water just like the ascetic monk in the diary and enduring the hardships of the arduous journey... crossing hills, deserts, swamps, seas, and experiencing the storm, lightning, sandstorms, and tsunamis...

Then, after finishing the long journey, his whole body would strengthen just like that of the ascetic monk. It was a pretty good way to train, wasn't it?

After thinking up to this point, the ghost spirit flipped through the last page of the 《Diary of the Ascetic Senior Monk》.

The last page of the diary was very short.

In the end, he died...

Even his bones decomposed and merged with the earth.

He used his own life and treated it as the end of his ascetic journey.

Although his body perished, his soul managed to reach a completely new level! It was the most incredible ascetic journey that had ever taken place!

The ghost spirit was speechless.

At this time, it got the urge to tear the book to pieces.

What the fck did it mean with 'In the end, he died...'?*

The monk actually died!

How could one not get depressed after such an ending?

But aside from that... how had the western monk learned the method to ferry the souls of the dead from this diary?!

The corner of the ghost spirit's mouth twitched as it closed the <Diary of the Ascetic Senior Monk>, returning it to the western monk.

The western monk cautiously put away the <Diary of the Ascetic Senior Monk> and asked expectantly, "Benefactor, what were your gains after reading the book?"

The ghost spirit went right to the point and asked, "...How did you exactly manage to learn the method to ferry the souls of the dead from this diary?"

"Eh? Benefactor, weren't you moved after you finished reading the diary?" the western monk asked in amazement. "Benefactor, don't you feel that that senior monk that went through all those hardships is someone worthy of respect? As soon as I saw the final part, I felt like giving my best wishes to the ascetic senior monk.

Afterward, as this thought crossed my mind, the whole life of the ascetic senior monk played in my head like a movie. Then, I finally managed to learn the method to ferry the souls of the dead through the life experiences of the ascetic senior monk," the western monk replied earnestly.

What the western monk said wasn't that different from saying: 'Today, I was moved while I was solving problems of mathematics. Afterward, the Pythagorean Theorem flashed through my mind, and as I applied it to a triangle, I suddenly learned the legendary 'Triangular Godly Fist' technique'.

The ghost spirit faintly sighed.

From the looks of it, it was unlikely that it would be able to grasp the method to ferry the souls of the dead from the <Diary of the Ascetic Senior Monk>.

It could only try to find another, possibly different, method.

Or perhaps it could make a trip back home and ask the seniors of the Nine Provinces Number One Group about it. Amongst the seniors, there must be someone that knew about the method to ferry the souls of the dead.

After thinking up to this point, the ghost spirit decided to say goodbye to the western monk. It was preparing to make a trip back home and contact Yu Jiaojiao while it was at it.



In the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion, inside the Time City.

Song Shuhang had been unconscious since the day the ghost spirit had left the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion up until now.

Five days had already passed in the Time City since Song Shuhang had fainted.

Just as the ghost spirit was reading the <Diary of the Ascetic Senior Monk>, ten wounds split open on the back of the unconscious Song Shuhang.

Fresh blood spurted out and dyed red his new clothes. Senior Sister Ye had changed his clothes while he was unconscious, giving him a new set.

The unconscious Song Shuhang opened his eyes and runes flashed out. In the next moment, the runes suddenly disappeared into the void.

After a short amount of time, they finally returned from the void to Song Shuhang's eyes.

***The <Diary of the Ascetic Senior Monk>. It's a diary describing the ascetic journey of a senior monk, introducing the 'Soul

Ferrying Technique' of the World Saving Buddhist Sect. As long as someone with a compassionate heart reads the <Diary of the Ascetic Senior Monk>, they can grasp the essence of the 'Soul Ferrying Technique'. If someone with a compassionate heart reads aloud the <Diary of the Ascetic Senior Monk>, they would have unexpected gains.***

Chapter 568: Fellow Daoist White, don't move!

"Is he losing blood again? However, I don't think he appraised anything this time?" Senior Sister Ye said, worried. She stretched out her hand, and the radiance of the healing technique fell on Song Shuhang's back. "Randomly getting wounded isn't going to become a new hobby of his, right?"

"How can randomly getting wounded become a new hobby!" Song Shuhang opened his eyes and said weakly, "Good morning, Senior Sister Ye."

"If we consider the time, it's already evening. Therefore, you should say 'good evening' Shuhang." Senior Sister Ye skillfully changed Shuhang's bloodstained clothes.

Song Shuhang said, "Good evening, Senior Sister Ye."

"Are you hungry? It seems you consumed all your physical strength and energy while you were unconscious," Senior Sister Ye said.

Song Shuhang felt his belly and said, "A little bit."

"Here, take it. The fasting pill Miss Chu Chu provided this time is fruit-flavored." Senior Sister Ye passed a fasting pill to Song Shuhang.

Song Shuhang thought about something and said, "Eh? From what I remember, Chu Chu said that she had found a kitchen room with ingredients inside, right?"

Senior Sister Ye said indifferently, "Yes, but it was five days ago."

"?" Song Shuhang.

"The ingredients inside the room were all consumed. After all, it's been five days already," Senior Sister Ye said with a smile.

"..." Song Shuhang.

"Let's not talk about this sad topic. Otherwise, I might start crying. Although the room was full of ingredients, we finished them in only three days." Senior Sister Ye eye sockets had started to become red as she said, "Right, did you use the appraisal technique just now? Blood spurted out of your body a moment ago."

Song Shuhang forced a smile and said, "Yes, I used it. However, I wasn't the one triggering it, it was the ghost spirit this time." Then, he looked at the gloves of the Swordsman Wooden Ox he wore on his hands.

Although he managed to find a method to stop the secret appraisal technique from automatically activating, he didn't expect that the secret technique would find other ways to activate.

From the looks of it, the ghost spirit could also activate the secret appraisal technique the main body possessed after it had satisfied certain conditions, causing Shuhang to spurt out blood from all over the body.

What a headache!

It seemed it was better not to let the ghost spirit wander off before he had completely grasped the secret appraisal technique so as to avoid the latter touching something too powerful and making him bleed to death in the process.

Just the thought was enough to scare Song Shuhang.

Afterward, he recalled the information the appraisal technique transmitted to his mind.

***The <Diary of the Ascetic Senior Monk>. It's a diary describing the ascetic journey of a senior monk, introducing the 'Soul Ferrying Technique' of the World Saving Buddhist Sect. As long as someone with a compassionate heart reads the <Diary of the Ascetic Senior Monk>, they can grasp the essence of the 'Soul

Ferrying Technique'. If someone with a compassionate heart reads aloud the <Diary of the Ascetic Senior Monk>, they would have unexpected gains.***

Someone with a compassionate heart should read this 'diary'?

Song Shuhang had already completed the synchronization with the ghost spirit. As long as he wished to, he could experience everything the ghost spirit had experienced.

Since the ghost spirit had already read and recorded down the <Diary of the Ascetic Senior Monk> in its entirety, Shuhang could flip through its memories of the <Diary of the Ascetic Senior Monk> as though he was flipping through a real book.

"Apparently, someone with a compassionate heart has to read the diary aloud..." Song Shuhang rubbed his temples.

Is this the way to uncover the secret concealed within the <Diary of the Ascetic Senior Monk>?

"What are you thinking about?" Senior Sister Ye asked.

Song Shuhang smiled and said, "I'm wondering how I should read a book aloud while maintaining a compassionate heart."

As soon as she heard the word 'book', Senior Sister Ye's eyes lit up. "Which book?"

Song Shuhang replied, "The <Diary of the Ascetic Senior Monk>."

"Where is this book? Can you give it to me so that I can read it?" Senior Sister Ye said happily.

Song Shuhang scratched his head and said, "Senior Sister, even if you want to read it, I have no way of taking it out. Everything related to the book is in my memories."

"Is the content long?" Senior Sister Ye asked.

"It's not that long. It's pretty short, actually," Song Shuhang replied.

"Can you write it down in that case?" Senior Sister Ye said happily. Given the hand speed of cultivators, it wasn't a problem to write tens of thousands of words in one hour using paper and pen.

If Song Shuhang were to write the book down, they could read it together!

Then, after Senior Sister Ye's strong demand, Song Shuhang started to write down the 《Diary of the Ascetic Senior Monk》.

Just as Song Shuhang would finish writing a page, Senior Sister Ye would immediately read it.

Senior Sister Ye was reading the pages and commenting at the same time, "Is the author of the diary holding a grudge against the senior monk?"

"I also got the same feeling," Song Shuhang nodded and said, "Anyway, that's the outward content. According to what the appraisal technique told me, if someone with a compassionate heart reads the book, they would have unexpected gains."

"In that case, let's try to read the book together while maintaining a compassionate heart, alright?" Senior Sister Ye said sweetly as she put in order the handwritten pages of the 《Diary of the Ascetic Senior Monk》, turning into a proper book.



Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion, at the entrance of the 'Celestial Pavilion'.

"Is there someone around?! Please, can you set me free?" Li Yinzhu felt like crying at this moment. She had been hanging in front of the entrance like the '大' character for a few days already, but the master of the pavilion didn't seem to intend to set her free yet.

For how long would she have to dangle in front of the entrance?

Her current posture made her feel a lot of shame.

Moreover, after been hanging there for quite a few days, she felt like peeing...



At this time, in the peripheral area of the solar system.

After leaving the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion, the luminous jellyfish arrived here in this place.

In here was a very old lair of hers that was concealed in another dimension. Since it was hidden very well, no one had been able to discover it within the last 3000 years.

From another point of view, it had been lucky for the adventurers that they didn't manage to find this place belonging to another dimension because tens of thousands of them would have died while trying to barge in there.

After returning to her lair, the luminous jellyfish started to study the 'Dark Night Time Ring' that Slow-Witted Song had left behind.

While she was inside the Time City during the past several years, the jellyfish was together with the fluorescent black sphere for a long time. Although she studied the 'Dark Night Time Ring' up until now, she was unable to discover anything useful.

This treasure used to pass down legacies that contained the laws of time was nothing but an ordinary fluorescent sphere before its activation.

But after Song Shuhang activated the 'Dark Night Time Ring', cracks started to appear on its surface.

After she studied it day and night during the past few days, the luminous jellyfish finally made some progress.

But the progress didn't make her happy.

As soon as she started making progress, the luminous jellyfish immediately stopped all her actions. Then, she placed layer upon layer of seals on the fluorescent black sphere, putting more than

200 seals on it in one go!

Just as she was trying to uncover the secrets of the Dark Night Time Ring, a hard to describe feeling of restlessness welled up in her heart; she hadn't had such a feeling for more than 5000 years.

"Were my preparations not ample enough? Or is it not the right time to open the Dark Night Time Ring?" the luminous jellyfish muttered to herself.

After all, it was a treasure related to 'time', and it was normal for it to be strange.

After thinking up to this point, she placed the sealed 'Dark Night Time Ring' inside a treasure chest.

But just as she put the fluorescent black sphere in the treasure chest, her tentacles seemed to have bumped into another object through the 'Dark Night Time Ring'. Soon after, a silhouette full of hatred and killing intent appeared in her mind.

The sphere can directly influence my mind?

What fearsome thing is hiding within the Dark Night Time Ring?

"Perhaps I should look for some of my old friends and have them give me a hand..." the luminous jellyfish said softly. Then, she raised her head and looked in the direction of the Earth.

After that huge calamity caused by the new Wielder of the Will superseding the old one, were her old friends still safe and sound?



Earth, amidst some ancient ruins on the bottom of the sea.

Venerable White's exploration team was cautiously advancing, taking one step at a time.

After the disastrous first exploration, Venerable White's team decided to take things seriously and not look down upon the ancient ruins.

"There is a trap here. It's better to note it down immediately. With that, the fellow daoists of our group that come here the next time can avoid it," Venerable White said.

The nearby True Monarch Fallout was holding a drawing board in one hand and used the other one to quickly draw the map of the ruins on the board. True Monarch Fallout had accurately noted down all the traps they had encountered after entering the ancient ruins.

After Venerable White's initial investigation, Venerable Spirit Butterfly would check things up again just in case. The two Venerables worked together, and everything progressed smoothly for the past few days.

During the exploration, all the members of the team managed to get their hands on quite a few treasures. All the items that maintained the formations or traps inside the ancient ruins were treasures themselves. Therefore, they managed to obtain several treasures after disabling the traps and the formations.

At this time, Venerable White, who was leading the way, suddenly stopped.

The nearby Venerable Spirit Butterfly asked, "Fellow Daoist White, is there a trap ahead?"

Venerable White shook his head and said, "How much time has passed since we entered the ancient ruins?"

Soft Feather quickly replied, "The second time we entered the ancient ruins was on July 30th. Today is August 4th, late at night. So it's almost the 5th. Therefore, it has been six, soon seven, days since we entered the ancient ruins. After midnight, my dao name would change to Rain Mirror, but you still have to call me Fairy Bright Star for today."

The nearby True Monarch Fallout, Cave Lord Snow Wolf, True Monarch White Crane, and Great Master Profound Principle all

silently looked at Venerable Spirit Butterfly.

Venerable Spirit Butterfly silently turned his head away and sighed while giving the back to his daughter.

"In other words, it has been around six days since we came here..." Venerable White furrowed his brows.

Cave Lord Snow Wolf asked in puzzlement, "Senior White, is something the matter?"

Venerable White frowned and said, "The 'Ten Thousand Mile Flying Escape Technique' rune I have to Song Shuhang automatically activated after the time limit of 30 days was reached."

In addition, all the news related to the outside world would take from one to two days to reach them now that they were inside the ancient ruins.

In other words, the rune of the Ten Thousand Mile Flying Escape Technique Song Shuhang had with him activated one or two days ago after it reached the 30 days time limit...

True Monarch White Crane was astonished. "30 days time limit? Is it possible that 30 days have passed in the outside world?"

Was it possible that they had entered the immortal cave of a powerful ancient 'Immortal' that was related to time?

Venerable White blinked his eyes and fell into contemplation.

At this time, after giving his daughter the back and sighing, Venerable Spirit Butterfly finally turned his head around.

But in the next moment, Venerable Spirit Butterfly said in shock, "Eh? Hold on! Fellow Daoist White, don't move!"

"Hmm?" Venerable White turned his head around in puzzlement.

Eh? How come the distance between me and the ground is constantly reducing?

"Boom~"

Chapter 569: Little White, when your hair reaches— aaah!

"Boom~"

Even with Venerable Spirit Butterfly speed, it was impossible to stop the tragedy from happening.

A huge hole was created beneath the feet of Venerable White's exploration team. In the next moment, the ground unexpectedly gave way, and a bottomless pit appeared underneath them!

Since they were caught off guard, they all fell into the bottomless pit.

"Aaaaah! Is our team going to get wiped out a second time?" the miss whose dao name was temporary 'Fairy Bright Star' called out.

Cave Lord Snow Wolf shouted, "What a horrible feeling!"

"..." Great Master Profound Principle.

True Monarch Fallout tried to use a flying sword to decrease his speed, but it was all useless. "I can't fly... it seems there are flight restricting runes in this place. Fellow Daoist White Crane, can you assume your true form and flap your wings to see if you can fly?"

True Monarch White Crane forced a smile and said, "I've already tried... but I wasn't even able to assume my true form!"

From the looks of it, it was a targeted trap!

Right at this time, Venerable White said suddenly, "Everyone, don't worry. The entity below doesn't seem to have evil intentions. Let's just allow things to take their natural course and reach the bottom of the pit."

"The entity below? There is someone below?" Venerable Spirit Butterfly asked in puzzlement. Why hadn't he felt anything? After all, his senses weren't inferior to that of Venerable White's!

"Bang, bang, bang~"

The members of the exploration team fell down as though they were stuffed dumplings and reached the bottom of the pit one after another.

Soon after, Venerable White calmly crawled out of the hole. He patted his clothes and used something akin to the 'clothes cleansing technique', restoring his clean and tidy appearance.

Then, he made a hand seal and activated the 'Ground Leveling Spell', filling and leveling up the hole he had created.

Venerable Spirit Butterfly came out of the hole while embracing Soft Feather. Soft Feather was the weakest person on the scene, and without Venerable Spirit Butterfly's help, she would get surely injured if she were to fall from such a height.

Next, Great Master Profound Principle, True Monarch Fallout, True Monarch White Crane, True Monarch Tyrant Flood Dragon, and Cave Lord Snow Wolf also came out of the holes they had created.

Cave Lord Snow Wolf asked, "What is this place?"

At this time, Venerable White suddenly gestured them not to speak. Venerable White was carefully looking ahead, trying to scrutinize something.

Venerable Spirit Butterfly and the others looked in the same direction as Venerable White, but they didn't see anything besides a stretch of charred black earth.

Venerable Spirit Butterfly said via secret sound transmission, "Fellow Daoist White, is there something ahead?"

Venerable White turned his head around and asked out of curiosity, "There is the picture of a powerful ancient cultivator holding a speech. It should be something akin to a video recording that this stretch of land recorded down. Can you really not see it?"

All the members of the group shook their heads.

In their hearts, they were clear about what was going on. It was likely something related to fate.

If there was fate, they would be able to see the scene. If there was none, they wouldn't be able to see anything no matter how close they were.

All the fellow daoists were really curious about the content of the scene. After all, it was the scene of a powerful ancient cultivator holding a speech! Although it was just a small scene that this stretch of land had recorded down, it was still something extremely valuable.

It was such a great opportunity to gain new knowledge, but the fact that they couldn't see anything even if they were close made them feel uncomfortable.



Venerable White pondered for a while and said, "So that's how it was. I understand now. Perhaps I can solve this problem."

Then, he turned his head around and added, "I ask all fellow daoists not to resist. I'm going to use a short-range 'illusory reality'."

After he had said this much, a thin dimensional layer started to spread out from Venerable White's body.

Venerable Spirit Butterfly thought to himself, I didn't think I would be able to witness Fellow Daoist White's desert world in this place.

The other fellow daoists were also very curious about it. They already knew that the shape of Venerable White's illusory reality was that of a desert.

The powerhouses of the True Monarch rank were even more curious about the 'illusory reality' skill.

The 'illusory reality' was the signature skill of Seventh Stage Venerables, and experiencing the illusory reality firsthand would be of great help to them while breaking through the Seventh Stage Venerable Realm in the future.

The thin dimensional layer kept spreading, but the so-called 'desert world' didn't appear.

"?" All the fellow daoists were confused. They could clearly feel that they had entered the illusory reality, but why hadn't their surroundings changed?

"Is it possible that it's a 'transparent' illusory world?" Venerable Spirit Butterfly was very experienced and immediately guessed what was going on.

I didn't expect Fellow Daoist White to have such a deep understanding of the illusory reality already. It seems that the illusory reality he can summon is no longer restricted to the 'desert world' only...

However, what's the deal with this transparent world?

The illusory reality was a skill that could change the surrounding area and create an illusory version of real-world objects. But the transparent world hadn't changed anything about the surrounding area... in that case, what was its purpose?

Just as everyone was in deep thoughts, a figure slowly emerged from the group of people, sitting cross-legged.

The figure had gentle-looking features and seemed like a kindhearted person. If they wanted to play the role of a villain, they could only play the role of a gentle-looking black-hearted villain.

"Senior Song!" Fairy Bright Star (Soft Feather) called out in amazement.

How had little friend Shuhang suddenly appeared within Venerable White's illusory reality?

At this time, just after appearing, Song Shuhang revealed a bitter smile and said, "Hello, Senior True Monarch White. I'm right beside you!"

"?" Soft Feather.

"?" True Monarch White Crane.

"?" Cave Lord Snow Wolf.

"..." Great Master Profound Principle.

Venerable Spirit Butterfly, True Monarch Fallout, and True Monarch Tyrant Flood Dragon had, on the other hand, a pensive look on their faces.

"..." Venerable White.

Venerable White was also at a loss right now. He had just tried to summon his illusory reality, but contrary to his expectations, the desert world didn't appear. Instead, another completely different illusory world made its appearance.

Moreover, what was the deal with Song Shuhang suddenly making his appearance in this place?

Anyway, just as Song Shuhang said 'Senior True Monarch White' earlier... the scene felt rather familiar for some reason.

Right at this time, Song Shuhang's expression turned into one of shock as he screamed, "The brakes, quickly press the brake! ...Senior, this is not what I meant! There is a cliff ahead!!"

After hearing these words, Venerable White's expression turned awkward. He remembered this scene. It should be from that time he drove a car for the first time and fell from a cliff together with Song Shuhang.

But why had this scene suddenly appeared in the 'illusory reality'?

When the other fellow daoists saw Song Shuhang's panic-stricken face, they couldn't help but feel guilty... it seemed that

little friend Shuhang suffered a lot when he was taking care of Senior White back then!

Then, around twenty seconds later, Song Shuhang's expression suddenly became blank as he said, "Memories such as... Little White, when your—"

"Bang!"

Blood spurted out!

Senior White had b*tch-slapped away this 'little friend Shuhang' born from the illusory reality, with fresh blood spurting all over.

All the fellow daoists were dumbfounded and had yet to react to what was happening.

But right at this time, the slapped little friend Shuhang tenaciously crawled up and continued his sentence, "Little White, when your hair reaches—"

But before he could finish the sentence...

Venerable White's body flickered and immediately appeared next to 'little friend Shuhang'. Then, he gently patted his body and said calmly, "Turn into sand."

"Aaaah~" little friend Shuhang screamed in pain and turned into golden sand.

The golden sand quietly fell to the ground.

It was such a fearsome scene... Senior White had just silenced a witness! Although this little friend Shuhang was only an illusion, the gentle Senior White had unexpectedly killed him to prevent him from speaking.

The volume of information transmitted to the brains of the people here present was simply too much to process!

All the fellow daoists felt their hearts tremble. They felt as though they had inadvertently witnessed something terrifying.

But what was little friend Shuhang trying to say in the end?

Something related to hair apparently...

'When your hair reaches'... reaches what?

It was simply impossible to make out the full contents of the sentence!

They were all really curious as to what little friend Shuhang would have said if he hadn't been mercilessly murdered!

Sometimes, curiosity got the best of people. They clearly knew that little friend Shuhang might have revealed a shocking secret if he hadn't been stopped in time—a secret so shocking that Senior White might have to kill them too or beat them until they had forgotten everything!

But the more dangerous the secret, the more people felt like uncovering it.

After all, the more dangerous it was to obtain a fruit, the sweeter it would taste!

Unfortunately, little friend Shuhang was killed so fast that he was unable to spill the beans.



Just as the various fellow daoists were in deep thoughts and 'Little friend Shuhang No. 1' was turned into sand, another little friend Shuhang suddenly appeared within the illusory reality.

After appearing on stage, 'Little friend Shuhang No. 2' revealed a bitter smile and said, "Hello, Senior True Monarch White. I'm right beside you!"

Venerable White was speechless. ...It's not over yet?

The eyes of the various fellow daoists immediately lit up. It wasn't over yet!

The corner of Venerable White's mouth twitched. Immediately

after, he stretched out his finger and pointed at 'Little friend Shuhang No. 2', saying, "Silence!"

At this time, they were inside Venerable White's illusory reality.

Therefore, Senior White could control everything there. When he told the newly spawned 'Little friend Shuhang No. 2' to shut up, the latter immediately shut his mouth and didn't dare to speak.

At the same time, a regretful expression appeared on the faces of the various fellow daoists.



Venerable White clapped his hands and attracted the attention of the various fellow daoists.

Then, he pointed his finger toward a distant place and said, "Try to look in that direction again."

The other fellow daoists raised their heads and watched in the direction Senior White pointed.

Soon after, their eyes lit up. The originally charred black earth had now been replaced by an ancient forest with towering trees that were tall enough to reach the sky, green grass, small streams, and a huge place reserved for ceremonies and discussions.

After the illusory reality covered the whole area, they were unexpectedly able to see the scene of the ancient cultivator holding a speech through Venerable White?

An illusory reality could be used in such a way? Even Venerable Spirit Butterfly felt that he had learned something new today.

The fellow daoists had temporarily forgotten about the matter related to Song Shuhang's unfinished sentence. Their attention was now concentrated on the scene before their eyes.

Above the ceremonial place was the partly visible silhouette of a powerful ancient cultivator. They were wearing the same cap daoist priests used to wear in ancient times, as well as a daoist robe

with golden patterns. The cultivator was currently sitting cross-legged on a jade white lotus throne.

Above the head of the ancient cultivator was a full moon-shaped halo that concealed their appearance, making the onlookers unable to see their face clearly.

When the various fellow daoists saw the full moon-shaped halo on the head of the figure, several sudden realizations welled up in their hearts.

The radiant full moon-shaped halo implied the person they were seeing was an 'Immortal' that had found their own 'way' to immortality.

The halo was like a mirror, and regardless of the level of the cultivator looking at it, they would come to different realizations after the radiance stemming from the 'way' shone onto their body.

At this time, the ancient cultivator made a seal with one hand and used the other one to gently sway the fly-whisk. All of this while discussing a very famous religious text—the Daoist Canon.

This religious text was circulating in the world of cultivators even up to this day, and even a buddhist such as Great Master Profound Principle had some understanding of the Daoist Canon.

Chapter 570: The head of the Immortal exploded (2 in 1)

All the members of Venerable White's team had some understanding about the Daoist Canon. Each person had studied this religious text at some time in the past.

But as soon as the ancient cultivator started to explain the content of the Daoist Canon, the members of the group realized that it was incredibly mysterious. When the text of the Daoist Canon was explained, the ancient cultivator used just a bunch of words that turned into the sound of the 'Great Way' itself.

Each word was a gem, and every sentence of the ancient cultivator was creating a resonance with the principles of the universe.

Strange phenomena appeared, magical clouds blossomed, and golden lotus flowers continuously bloomed and withered in the air...

The members of Venerable White's team all had different levels of strength, but every one of them was entranced with the speech. As each person heard the content of the speech, they came to different types of realizations that were suitable for themselves.

The speech the ancient cultivator was holding had yet to come to an end that Venerable Spirit Butterfly already felt the urge to immediately close up and start training. Just a few sentences from the ancient cultivator allowed him to faintly grasp the secret behind the 'Eighth Stage Profound Sage Realm'. This trip to the ancient ruins had turned out to be extremely fruitful for Venerable Spirit Butterfly just by hearing these few sentences that carried the sound of the 'Great Way' itself.

Venerable White also obtained great benefits. At this time, he had his eyes closed and was contemplating. The spiritual energy

around his body was getting continuously compressed, undergoing some kind of transformation.

Likewise, Soft Feather, True Monarch Tyrant Flood Dragon, True Monarch Fallout, Cave Lord Snow Wolf, Great Master Profound Principle, and True Monarch White Crane were either contemplating or were engrossed in the speech. All of them obtained some kind of benefit.

After the group of people had safely gotten out of these ancient ruins, it wouldn't be impossible to break through a small or big realm as long as they went into secluded meditation.

The fact that they had chanced upon the speech of this powerful ancient cultivator was a lucky stroke that one could only dream of! It was the fate of a powerful being!

Not to mention that the ancient cultivator before their eyes wasn't an ordinary Ninth Stage Tribulation Transcender but an 'Immortal'.

After they reached the Ninth Stage Tribulation Transcender Realm while there was already another Wielder of the Will in charge, the extremely talented geniuses that had what it took to carry the Will of the Heavens went one step further and found their own ways to immortality, increasing their realm by half a step and becoming 'Immortals'.

During ancient times, each of those geniuses that managed to find their own way to immortality was a dazzling talent during their time.

The Heavenly Emperor that built the ancient Heavenly City used the city itself as a foundation for his majestic way to immortality. His way to immortality wasn't just limited to himself; the members of the ancient Heavenly City could also benefit from the effects of the immortality. As long as the Heavenly City wasn't destroyed, all the people inside had the chance to become Immortals and came in contact with the secret of immortality ahead of time.

Aside from that, the founding puppeteer of the ancient Jet-Black Sect also used a very unconventional method and transformed his body into a puppet, creating his own puppet-style way to immortality.

The ancient cultivator holding a speech in front of them was also an 'Immortal' and had thus come up with their own way to immortality. But the question was, what kind of way had they come up with?

Just as Venerable White's team was in deep thought, the ancient cultivator slowly stopped talking. The explanation of the first chapter of the Daoist Canon had come to an end!

Soon after, the full moon-shaped halo on the head of the cultivator became even more dazzling.

The jade white lotus throne beneath their body changed into starry dust, completely disappearing.

Then, a huge lotus flower started to 'grow' on their body, wrapping them up entirely.

Venerable White immediately understood what was going on and said, "That 'Immortal' is about to reveal their way to immortality!"

The Immortal displayed to all those present the principle behind their way to immortality.

Just as the Immortal demonstrated their way to immortality, the onlookers perceived an incomplete set of principles. The feeling this set of principles gave them was similar to either 'being reborn amidst death' or 'getting a new lease on life'.

A new life was suddenly born within the body of the ancient cultivator. At this time, the new life was on the verge of coming to the world. The new, soon-to-be-born, life was her child... but also she herself!

Yes, the ancient cultivator was a woman.

Just as the lotus flower grew on the body of the ancient cultivator and enveloped them, a fine and slender figure became visible through the lotus flower. It was the body of a woman.

All the present came to a sudden realization... it seemed this was the method the ancient cultivator had used to create their own way to immortality—giving birth to a new life.

The process was similar to giving birth to a baby. Their body would give birth to a new 'life', and the new 'life' in question was the cultivator itself.

After the 'new self' was born, it would inherit all the characteristics of the previous body, including knowledge, soul, cultivation level, and understandings. It was a perfectly identical copy.

In addition, the cultivator would become stronger after each rebirth.

It was a very peculiar and unique way to reach immortality.



But right at this time, Venerable White and the others got somewhat curious. Why had this powerful ancient cultivator left behind this 'video recording' in this world?

When she was discussing the Daoist Canon earlier, who was she explaining it to?

However, the members of Venerable White's team didn't have the time to ponder about these matters. At this time, their eyes were fixated on the ancient cultivator that was about to give birth to a new life. The process of the 'Immortal' demonstrating their own way to immortality was hundreds—no, thousands—of times more incredible than the speech earlier.

Even if they could comprehend the tiniest bit of the process, it would be an incredible gain.

Before their eyes, the lotus flower enwrapping the ancient cultivator finally opened, revealing a jade body of unsurpassed perfection inside. The jade body was simply perfect and didn't have a single flaw!

It was precisely her newborn self!

As for her old body, it had already merged with the huge lotus flower, disappearing.

The 'newborn self' stood up while inside the lotus. The leaves of the lotus turned into a daoist robe that wrapped around her body.

On the other hand, the seeds of the lotus turned into a daoist cap.

The lotus flower shrank, turning once again into a jade white lotus throne that floated beneath her feet, supporting her body.

"Today, I had another easy childbirth and managed to successfully give birth to myself. This time, I tried to give birth to myself a bit ahead of time. It was a great success, and the effects were even better than what I had thought," the newborn 'Immortal' said with a smile while facing the void.

She had a very strong accent, but just as her speech back then, her words were automatically translated through the power of this world, allowing all the people that were listening to her to understand the meaning of her words.

When they saw the scene playing before their eyes, several members of Venerable White's team got a rather 'familiar' feeling from it. Was the new self of the Immortal shooting a video of herself?

They weren't wrong because she was really shooting a video of herself. When she was facing the void and talking, it felt as though she was talking to an imaginary audience.

From the looks of it, this ancient cultivator was shooting a video of herself since there was no such thing as a live streaming feature back in ancient times.

Such being the case, it was very likely that the whole scene they were seeing at this time had been recorded by her back then and left here.

"My current state is very good... perhaps the current me can deal with the upcoming battle?" The Immortal looked at the 'camera' and laughed.

Although she was laughing, one could easily tell from the video that even an 'Immortal' like her didn't have much confidence when it came to deal with the upcoming battle.

"I've escaped him for 300 years. But in the end, he still managed to find me. That man is truly persistent... well, it's not like I dislike persistent men, but if the opposite party is obsessed with chasing after you and killing you, I have a good reason to be worried!" she said.

"Aside from this... I'll try to record everything down before my death. After all, my job is precisely to record everything before my eyes... to record the 'real' history. If I really die one day, I'll record the scene of my death as well. After all, it's all a part of history." The Immortal patted her daoist robe and straightened her slightly slanted daoist cap.

After that, the scene in the video became silent.

Thirty breaths later—but it should have passed more time in the video—the originally bright scenery started to dim.

"He is here," the female Immortal said softly.

The space in front of her was torn apart by two jet-black hands.

Black-colored demonic qi covered his whole hands, pairs of blood-red eyes faintly visible amidst the demonic qi.

"I've finally found you, Cheng Lin." The voice of the owner of the two black hands was full of hatred.

"Yes, it's me!" the Immortal called Cheng Lin replied softly. Her

tone was very calm and not nervous in the least.

"Tell me, Cheng Lin. Why did you leak the information about the Heavenly City! Why did you betray us?" the owner of the two black hands said after suppressing his anger. He was like a volcano, ready to explode at any time.

"So that's how it was! You discovered that I leaked the information about the Heavenly City and thus decided to chase after me and kill me! And here I thought no one would discover me, hehe," Immortal Cheng Lin said with a smile, looking incredibly charming.

The owner of the black hands came out of the crack in the space and said, "How can you be this calm? It's precisely because you leaked that information that the Heavenly City was destroyed overnight! You are a traitor that has committed an unforgivable crime."

"Hehe, I obviously knew that the Heavenly City would be destroyed as a consequence. That's the very reason I leaked that information," Immortal Cheng Lin said with a smile.

Just as she finished speaking, the owner of the two black hands instantly appeared next to Cheng Lin and used his strong arm to grab her throat.

Above the head of the owner of the two black hands was also a full moon-shaped halo. The halo was full with the principles of death and destruction—the opposite party was also an Immortal.

His build was very big, and after grabbing Cheng Lin's neck, he lifted her in midair. Still, Immortal Cheng Lin didn't revolt in the slightest.

The owner of the black hands clenched his teeth and said, "Tell me. I want to know why you betrayed us!" His voice was like that of a wild beast roaring in a low voice.

"That's a secret!" Immortal Cheng Lin smiled sweetly. Then, she

blinked her beautiful eyes while facing the owner of the black hands and said, "In addition, the Heavenly City has already been destroyed. What's the point in telling you the reason? Do you want me to tell you the reason of my betrayal so that your pained heart can feel a little better?"

"You b*tch, just die!" The owner of the black hands lost his patience and tightly grabbed Cheng Lin's throat with one hand while using the other to grip her head, squeezing it with force.

In the next moment, just like something fragile getting squeezed with too much strength and breaking, the head of Immortal Cheng Lin exploded.

During the whole process, Immortal Cheng Lin didn't revolt in the slightest.

Although she was talking about dealing with the upcoming battle earlier, she didn't try to resist the owner of the black hands in the slightest when the time came. In the end, she was also an Immortal—an existence that surpassed Ninth Stage Tribulation Transcenders—and it was impossible that she didn't have the strength to oppose the opposite party even a little bit.

Just as the head of Immortal Cheng Lin exploded, the video before their eyes also came to a stop.

After that, everything returned to normality.



Cave Lord Snow Wolf didn't dare to believe what he had just seen. "An Immortal died just like that?" It was an entity that had surpassed Ninth Stage Tribulation Transcenders and stood on the peak of the world of cultivators. Did she really die just like that? Or was she just shooting a movie?

Venerable Spirit Butterfly said calmly, "It might not be the case. In the end, only her head was smashed to pieces. Let alone an Immortal, even I have several methods to recover from such a

wound."

"This matter was related to the destruction of the ancient Heavenly City. The ancient Heavenly City was turned into ashes overnight, and from the video we saw just now, that Immortal Cheng Lin played a not very honorable role in the destruction of the city." True Monarch Fallout slightly lowered his eyes. Inside his family, there was an ancestor that might know a few things about the matters related to the ancient Heavenly City.

The ancestor in question was the fifth master of the 'Nine Virtues Phoenix Saber', Fifth Cultivator of True Virtue. The Seven Cultivators of True Virtue had their name passed down from generation to generation. Therefore, the First and Second Cultivator of True Virtue surely experienced the matter related to the destruction of the Heavenly City, and the related information was likely passed down to the next generations.

True Monarch White Crane said, "I'm more curious about that Immortal with black hands that was covered with eyes. Who was he? He couldn't possibly be the Heavenly Emperor himself, right?"

Venerable White shook his head and said, "He wasn't the Heavenly Emperor. Back in those days, the Heavenly Emperor was regarded as one of the strongest Immortals, and amongst the fellow daoists that helped him build the ancient Heavenly City, there were several whose talent wasn't inferior to that of the Heavenly Emperor himself. Afterward, it is said that several of his companions found their own way to immortality and became Immortals. The owner of the black hands was probably one of those Immortals, and it's possible that Immortal Cheng Lin was also one of the companions of the Heavenly Emperor."

The nearby Great Master Profound Principle joined his palms together and heaved a sigh.

Buddhists were rather fussy about karma.

Each action cultivators performed was possibly the 'cause' that

would lead to a certain 'effect'.

Now that they had seen this video, the lot of them were without a doubt deeply involved with the karma related to the ancient Heavenly City.

"This matter related to the ancient Heavenly City is simply too distant from us. Therefore, you guys don't need to worry and can be at ease. You just have to take one step at a time and keep practicing. If you think too much about this matter, you might give rise to an Inner Demon," Venerable Spirit Butterfly said with a smile.

Venerable White nodded and said, "Everyone should rest for a while. Then, we'll wait for the 'video' to start again. Before explaining the Daoist Canon, Immortal Cheng Lin explained other religious texts as well. After the rebroadcast starts, we'll watch the whole thing one more time."

The members of the group nodded one after another. After all, they missed some of the content of the video before Venerable White used his illusory reality. If they could watch the video in its entirety, it would be perfect.

Venerable Spirit Butterfly and the others sat down within Venerable White's illusory reality. They were waiting for the rebroadcast of the video while pondering about the explanation Immortal Cheng Lin had given earlier.

Venerable White silently gazed that distant charred black earth.

Immortal Cheng Lin... the Immortal with black arms covered with eyes... and the Heavenly Emperor that disappeared as the Heavenly City was destroyed...

"It's a very interesting matter," Venerable White said softly.

The effects of this video where an Immortal was giving a speech were extremely helpful. It was better to note down this place, and if the other members of the Nine Provinces Number One Group

were interested, he could bring them here so that they could hear the content of the speech and understand a few things.

At that time, he might as well ask for a certain amount of spirit stones as 'admission fee'. For example, when Great Master Profound Principle discovered that there was a 'heart tempering' ancient well inside the Jingang Immortal Cave, he created the 'Jingang token of authority' and started to collect an 'admission fee' before allowing people in.

Such being the case, the person that had taken over the ancient ruins—Venerable White—could also ask for a certain amount of spirit stones as admission fee. It was the general rule in the Nine Provinces Number One Group. If one wanted something, they would have to pay for it!

However, if people wanted to come down here to comprehend profound principles, Venerable White had to accompany them and use his 'illusory reality'... from the looks of it, the cost was going to be rather high, wasn't it?

After thinking up to this point, Venerable White turned his head around and happened to see 'Little friend Shuhang No. 2', who was currently sitting down.

Oh, right. I almost forgot about little friend Shuhang. The 'Ten Thousand Mile Flying Escape Technique' rune he had with him seems to have activated. Such being the case, he should be on his way back to Earth, right? If there is enough time, I might bring him here in the ancient ruins as a reward after shooting the movie.

Of course, the movie has to be of my liking if Shuhang wants the reward, Venerable White thought to himself.



In front of the entrance of the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion.

The Sobbing Old Man was observing the gate of the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion with a serious expression on his face. He wouldn't

leave the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion until the gate was opened!

Speaking of which, he saw something fly out of the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion yesterday. If he wasn't mistaken, the thing that flew out of the pavilion was a ghost spirit.

However, the Sobbing Old Man didn't chase after the ghost spirit. At this time, the most important thing for him was to obtain the complete version of the <Tome of Never-Ending Tears>. The current him didn't have any interest in something like a ghost spirit.

Therefore, the Sobbing Old Man decided to keep observing the entrance.

He wanted to use his firm will to move the hearts of the people inside the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion. If they wanted him to become a disciple of the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion, he was fine with it. After all, he was nothing but a loose cultivator!

Whether I have to wait for ten days, one month, one year, or ten years... I'll wait! the Sobbing Old Man thought to himself. He refused to believe that the people of the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion would refuse to open the gate for whole ten years!

"Sob, sob, sob~ Even if I have to die, I'll die in front of the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion! Sob, sob, sob~ feel my will!" the Sobbing Old Man said while crying.



Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion, Time City.

"Sob, sob, sob~ when I read aloud the <Diary of the Ascetic Senior Monk> with a compassionate heart, I suddenly realized how incredible this senior monk was. Sob, sob, sob~ Although he suffered so much, he didn't bat an eye... especially that part where he was poisoned. In the end, the senior monk relied on his incredible willpower to overcome the poison. It was such a moving scene. Sob, sob, sob~" Senior Sister Ye said while crying, her tears

endlessly falling.

Song Shuhang gently comforted her while wiping away her tears. Now then, Senior Sister. Although one has to read the <Diary of the Ascetic Senior Monk> with a compassionate heart, it's not like you have to abandon your intellect as well!

The scene of him overcoming the poison with his willpower was simply nonsense! Although his willpower was strong, that deadly poison almost claimed his life! Did he really survive without medicines...?

If someone had such incredible willpower, wouldn't doctors become useless?

Anyway, returning to the original topic... Senior Sister Ye cried so much. Her heart should be compassionate enough, right?

Other than a compassionate heart, she added the benevolent heart property as well.

Just as he was in deep thoughts, Senior Sister Ye flipped the pages of the <Diary of the Ascetic Senior Monk> until arriving at the last place.

"Sob, sob, sob~ It was truly touching. In the end, he died... and even his bones decomposed and merged with the earth. It's such a romantic principle. It was indeed the best resting place for the senior monk! Sob, sob, sob~" Senior Sister Ye cried, looking very aggrieved.

Song Shuhang kept gently wiping her tears away. Now then, what is the romantic part about 'even his bones decomposed and merged with the earth'?! Moreover, didn't the senior monk had incredible willpower? He was even capable of overcoming the poison, couldn't he overcome his random death as well?! He died out of the blue! It's just too strange!

Anyway, Song Shuhang had already realized that it wasn't only due to the 'compassionate heart' that Senior Sister Ye was so

aggrieved. It was also due to the <Tome of Never-Ending Tears>.

For this reason, she was rather sensitive at this time and was crying as soon as she was moved a bit, with tears endlessly falling.

But, on the other hand, Senior Sister Ye was rather amusing while in this state.

Of course, if she was a little less emotional, it would be even better.

"Ye Si, did you realize something?" Song Shuhang asked gently. According to the appraisal technique, if someone with a compassionate heart read aloud the <Diary of the Ascetic Senior Monk>, they would have unexpected gains...

Senior Sister Ye had already finished reading the diary, had she realized or comprehended something?

Fairy Ye Si rubbed her eyes and was sobbing from time to time.

Then, she pondered for a short moment.

"When I read it aloud, I felt as though a 'miraculous glow' had flashed through my mind," Senior Sister Ye Si said softly.

Song Shuhang's eyes immediately lit up as he said, "That should be it. That miraculous glow should be the method to ferry the souls of the dead!"

Senior Sister Ye lowered her head, somewhat embarrassed, and said, "But later, I wasn't able to firmly remember the content of the miraculous glow since I was too heartbroken and started crying."

"..." Song Shuhang.

"Anyway, it's not a big deal, we can just try another time! This time, we'll succeed for sure!" Senior Sister Ye said while sobbing. Although she had already memorized the content of the whole diary after reading it once, she felt that reading it again would have better results.

"Alright. There seems to be no other choice." Song Shuhang

flipped back the <Diary of the Ascetic Senior Monk> once again.

A compassionate heart, a compassionate heart!

"Shuhang, can you read the <Diary of the Ascetic Senior Monk> aloud for me?" Senior Sister Ye suddenly asked.

"?" Song Shuhang.

Senior Sister Ye said softly, "Since I cried too much, my eyes are all red. Therefore, can you read it aloud for me? I want to hear you read aloud this book."

Although she could just use the healing technique to restore her eyes to their previous state, Senior Sister Ye felt that using this method could improve the relationship between Song Shuhang and her.

Song Shuhang nodded his head and said, "...Alright."

Thereupon, he opened the first page of the <Diary of the Ascetic Senior Monk> and started to read aloud.

A compassionate heart, a compassionate heart!

Song Shuhang's voice slowly echoed in the library room. He was neither fast nor slow while reading the book aloud.

The plot of the diary reverberated in his own ears.

The senior monk in the diary was bald, wearing thin burlap clothes on his body and going around barefooted.

Although his body was skinny, his eyes were bright and full of energy. The senior monk once traversed a land full of snow and ice, refusing to eat or drink for several days.

The senior monk was cold and hungry.

Senior Sister Ye sat with her arms around her knees and closed her eyes, listening to Song Shuhang reading the book aloud.

As before, Song Shuhang's voice was neither fast nor slow while reading aloud.

Then, just as he was reading the text, Song Shuhang's body suddenly trembled.

He felt cold and hungry, and the pain caused by the frosting was transmitted from the soles of his feet. His whole body was frozen stiff!

Chapter 571: Heartless soul... come, die once!

He hadn't entered the 'dreamland', and it wasn't a hallucination, either.

Just as he was reading the ⟨Diary of the Ascetic Senior Monk⟩, his body started to feel firsthand the pain the senior monk felt during his ascetic journey.

Traveling barefooted through a land full of snow and ice while wearing thin clothes, both cold and hungry... the ability to resist cold that cultivators were so proud of didn't have any effect at this time.

The pain the senior monk felt during his ascetic journey was directly transferred onto Song Shuhang's body, completely ignoring all his magical defenses and protective items.

Song Shuhang's face froze and turned blue while his lips became purple. At the same time, he felt as though the soles of his feet were going to crack as a result of the cold.

"Shuhang?" Senior Sister Ye saw Song Shuhang's abnormal state and immediately used the healing technique on his body.

Unfortunately, the healing technique didn't have any effect since Song Shuhang's body hadn't been injured in the first place.

As expected, there was something fishy about the ⟨Diary of the Ascetic Senior Monk⟩ and something strange happened as soon as Shuhang started reading it aloud.

Song Shuhang immediately stopped reading the diary. If he couldn't deal with the problem, he could just run away from it! He just had to stop reading the diary!

However... something strange happened at this time.

As soon as Song Shuhang stopped reading the diary, another

voice reverberated in the void and kept reading the content of the diary aloud.

The voice was identical to that of Song Shuhang's.

Song Shuhang quickly used one hand to block his mouth... Fck, just what is happening? My mouth isn't even moving!*

Where is this voice coming from then? From my nostrils? Or from my butt?

Senior Sister Ye pondered for a moment and said, "The 'Automatic Reciting Skill', one of the reciting incantations amidst ancient witchcraft... Shuhang, I don't think you mastered this profound skill, right?"

Song Shuhang shook his head.

Anyway, 'Automatic Reciting Skill'...? In other words, if I start reading aloud the <Diary of the Ascetic Senior Monk>, the whole diary would be automatically read aloud until the end with this skill?

Song Shuhang felt very sad at this moment.

He had been scammed pretty hard this time. After all, wasn't it the same as forcing him to endure all the pains that senior monk in the book went through?

Senior Sister Ye furrowed her brows and said, "From the looks of it, the Automatic Reciting Skill was secretly concealed within the <Diary of the Ascetic Senior Monk>. Shuhang, I'm afraid that your true qi unwittingly activated the reciting incantation while you were reading the diary aloud. How do you feel now? Is there something wrong with your body?"

Actually, there was something that Senior Sister Ye forgot to mention earlier. The Automatic Reciting Skill was a skill similar to magical techniques. Now that Song Shuhang had experienced it firsthand, he could perhaps try to learn a magical technique similar to this skill if his luck was good enough. However, such

skills weren't of much use to cultivators. After all, cultivators were different than ancient witches, and there weren't many magical techniques that had super long incantations.

Song Shuhang forced a smile and said, "I felt very cold. Then, it felt as though I was traversing barefooted a land full of ice and snow just like the senior monk in the diary."

"It's really troublesome." Senior Sister Ye started to get worried. She remembered that the ascetic journey of that senior monk described within the *Diary of the Ascetic Senior Monk* ended with his death.

After thinking up to his point, Senior Sister Ye used her sword as a pen and started to quickly draw something on the ground. She had to immediately stop the Automatic Reciting Skill reverberating in the room. Otherwise, Song Shuhang's life might be in danger.

After seeing Senior Sister Ye anxious face, Song Shuhang sighed. He had also thought about the end of the journey of the senior monk, which ended with his death.

Was it possible that he was also going to die?

Just as he was in deep thoughts, the extreme cold he was feeling completely disappeared, replaced by a scorching heat. He felt as though he was walking in the middle of a desert. The extremely cold feeling transmitting from the soles of his feet had changed into a boiling hot one.

At this time, Shuhang felt like a small duck getting prepared according to the 'Roasted Duck Soles' method, one of the ten forbidden Chinese dishes—the alive duck would be placed on a slightly heated iron plate. Afterward, seasoning would be added to the heated up plate. The alive duck would start walking back and forth on the plate due to the increasing heat and ultimately jump around. After the feet of the duck were thoroughly roasted, they would be cut off while the duck was still alive and served on the

table. As for the rest of the duck, it would be used for other stuff.

The soles of Song Shuhang's feet were very hot at this time and felt as though they were on fire. In a few minutes, would his feet also be cut off and served on someone's plate? Disgusting!

"Has the scene switched to the desert now?"

Is it so fun to torment others?

The author of the *Diary of the Ascetic Senior Monk* was surely a sadist.

Song Shuhang had yet to get used to the scorching heat transmitting from his soles when he felt another type of extreme pain, just as though he had started walking on sharp blades—it was the forest with sharp rocks within.

He was feeling heart-rending waves of pain one after another!

Dammit, from where did the 'ascetic monk' get this hobby of walking barefooted? This practicing method where one had to walk barefooted is absolutely diabolic!

Song Shuhang clenched his teeth and recalled the content of the book. After the forest with sharp rocks was the poison, right?

Dammit, I suddenly feel very sad.

It's coming, I can feel it.

This feeling of being poisoned was like a mixture between eating by mistake a poisonous substance and getting bitten by a poisonous insect.

It was very painful, and it was getting difficult to breathe. In addition, he felt as though he had a fever of 40 °C or above! He felt as if the air he was breathing in had sand mixed within, making his whole respiratory tract ache.

Song Shuhang screamed in pain.

"I'm sorry, I'm sorry... it's all my fault!" The nearby Senior Sister

Ye had tried all sorts of methods to stop the Automatic Reciting Skill, but they had all turned out to be useless.

The Automatic Reciting Skill was a skill that ancient witches were proud of. The skill would guarantee that the incantation would continue even if the witch was forcefully interrupted. Therefore, it was very difficult to stop it within a short period of time.

When she saw Song Shuhang's face turning blue and foam coming out of his mouth, Senior Sister Ye couldn't help but start crying. "Sob, sob, sob~"

Song Shuhang opened his mouth and tried to comfort her, but not even his words of comfort came out.

After the poison, Song Shuhang experienced billowing waves, was buried alive by sandstorms, was struck by lightning, and went through other several types of tragedies.

Then... the final part eventually arrived.

In the last chapter... was death.

At this time, a deep gender-neutral voice echoed in Song Shuhang's ears.

Heartless soul that indulged in sins... come, die once!

Song Shuhang finally understood what was going on. From the looks of it, his heart wasn't compassionate enough when he read the diary aloud. Therefore, he activated some sort of trap hidden within.

You bastaaaaard!!!

The plot development of your diary feels like shiet! It's so goddamn obvious that the author of the diary is enjoying the whole suffering of the senior monk from the way he writes. How can I even read this thing with a compassionate heart?!

It's the same as forcing someone to do something they don't want

to and ask them to enjoy it!

In addition, Song Shuhang felt that he had discovered the trick to read the 《Diary of the Ascetic Senior Monk》 with a compassionate heart when he was reading it aloud earlier.

If he was given another opportunity, he was sure that he would be able to read the diary with a compassionate heart. Too bad that he didn't have one.

But right at this time, it didn't matter whether Song Shuhang was depressed or angry.

Because the feeling of death was approaching...

He felt as though he had been locked into a small black room.

He felt as if his bones had been buried in the earth and had started to decompose.

In the end, he died...

Even his bones decomposed and merged with the earth.

He used his own life and treated it as the end of his ascetic journey.

Although his body perished, his soul managed to reach a completely new level!

Finally, everything before Song Shuhang's eyes became black, and he lost control of his body.

Was this the feeling of death?

Chapter 572: She loves taking selfies and living her life to the fullest!

It was very strange, but in the instant Song Shuhang lost control over his body, he felt as though he had been 'liberated'.

He felt as if he had been freed of all his binds and wasn't restrained anymore.

This strange feeling scared Song Shuhang a bit.

Before losing consciousness, Shuhang faintly heard Senior Sister Ye's cry. "Sob, sob, sob~"



Around ten minutes later.

Song Shuhang finally regained consciousness. The only problem was that his consciousness was still inside a dark place.

Losing consciousness for those ten or so minutes felt longer than a century from Song Shuhang's perspective. It was a type of indescribable torture.

However, the long torture eventually became a valuable experience for Song Shuhang.

His will was strengthened even further after experiencing 'death' this time around.

The mindset of a person that had experienced death was completely different than the mindset of a person that hadn't ever had such an experience.

It seems I have yet to recover from this death-like state, right? Will I have to wait until I naturally regain consciousness? Song Shuhang thought to himself.

Perhaps I need to use some special method to get out of this dark world and death-like state?

After thinking up to this point, Song Shuhang started to recall all the cultivation techniques, magical techniques, as well as the content of the books he had read together with Senior Sister Ye within this period of time.

At the same time, the enlightenment stone in his bosom started to release its power.

At this time, Lady Onion had grown another small green onion sprout. There were now blood-red veins visible on the green onion sprout, making the little deep green onion look even more beautiful.

Just as the enlightenment stone released its energy, the content of a religious text flashed through Song Shuhang's mind.

It was the <Ksitigarbha's Soul Ferrying Scripture> that Song Shuhang had obtained through the shared memories of the ghost spirit.

It was unknown to which buddhist sect it belonged, but it was surely a very precious scripture.

'I will not become a Buddha until I reach enlightenment and all living things are saved, with hell being emptied.' The footnote that the western monk had left on the first page of the text resurfaced in Song Shuhang's mind.

Soon after, the content of <Ksitigarbha's Soul Ferrying Scripture> slowly unfurled within Song Shuhang's consciousness like a long scroll.

The enlightenment stone continuously strengthened Song Shuhang's comprehension skills, and just as the content of <Ksitigarbha's Soul Ferrying Scripture> appeared before his eyes, a miraculous glow flashed through Song Shuhang's mind.

He had finally discovered the secret of the 'Soul Ferrying Technique'.



"So that's how it was. This is the Soul Ferrying Technique..." Song Shuhang had been enlightened.

After experiencing 'death' and looking at <Ksitigarbha's Soul Ferrying Scripture> from the point of view of a dead person, he managed to comprehend the secret of the Soul Ferrying Technique.

Such being the case, I've already decided the first target of the Soul Ferrying Technique...

...It's going to be you!

Song Shuhang silently started to recite the content of <Ksitigarbha's Soul Ferrying Scripture>.

Along with the sound of the chant getting louder and louder, the scroll of the scripture that had materialized in Song Shuhang's consciousness started to emit a golden radiance. At last, the golden radiance illuminated the whole black space.

The black space changed into a radiant golden space. At the same time, Song Shuhang opened his eyes and ultimately regained consciousness.

"Shuhang, you finally woke up." The nearby Senior Sister Ye was sitting on her knees, and her eye sockets were slightly red. At this time, she was carefully wiping the cold sweat from Song Shuhang's forehead.

It seemed that Shuhang experienced something terrifying while he was unconscious and kept sweating continuously.

Song Shuhang smiled and asked, "Yeah, I finally regained consciousness. Although it was a rather strange experience, it was also very valuable. Ye Si, for how long was I asleep?"

"Around 13 minutes. Are you fine now?" Senior Sister Ye asked, somewhat worried.

"Yes, I'm fine. My current state is pretty good." Song Shuhang got

up from the ground and said, "In addition, I got my hands on something very good."

If Song Shuhang were to use the 〈True Self Meditation Scripture〉 at this time to take a look at his 'true self', he would notice that his 'true self' had also undergone some changes.

The current state of the 'true self' was radically the same as Song Shuhang.

Song Shuhang could be at ease since the 'true self' wasn't wearing a kasaya or anything of the sort. He was still wearing shorts, and his head hadn't become bald, either. He still had an intellectual look on his face and a muscular build.

At this time, his expression had changed more compassionate, and a religious text had appeared in his hands.

〈Ksitigarbha's Soul Ferrying Scripture〉 had directly left a mark on the body of the 'true self'. It was Song Shuhang's first time coming in contact with a religious text that could directly influence his 'true self'.

There was a big chance that the 〈True Self Meditation Scripture〉 and 〈Ksitigarbha's Soul Ferrying Scripture〉 had the same origin! Perhaps they were both products of the ancient Jingang Sect.

Anyway, just as the scripture appeared in the hands of the true self, the latter helped to share part of the pressure the mental energy applied onto Song Shuhang's body.

Then, if he could strengthen the 'light of virtue' and reach a level similar to that of the western monk—making the light of virtue undergo a qualitative change—he would find an additional pillar to withstand part of the pressure the mental energy applied onto his body.

At that time, Song Shuhang would have no need to worry about that large amount of mental energy giving him a headache.

Senior Sister Ye asked out of curiosity, "You got your hands on

something good? Did you comprehend the Soul Ferrying Technique?"

"Yes." Song Shuhang nodded.

Soon after, he silently recited ‹Ksitigarbha's Soul Ferrying Scripture› and gently pointed with his finger toward the void.

In the next moment, a black resentful soul appeared in the void, emitting crackling noises while hovering above Song Shuhang's finger.

It was Altar Master's curse!

Back then, when he discovered that it was over for him, Altar Master sacrificed the last bit of his life force and applied a vicious curse to Song Shuhang's body.

Inside the curse was also a small part of Altar Master's fragmented soul.

Unfortunately, the curse also had a very tragic life.

Although it tried to injure Song Shuhang several times, it failed each time. Actually, not only did it fail, but it also ended up becoming the food of the ghost spirit. On one occasion, the curse was forcefully activated by Venerable White and transformed into a small black ball that was later fed to Song Shuhang's ghost spirit.

Excluding the times it had already activated, Altar Master's curse had the possibility to activate three or four more times.

The curse leaned on Altar Master's fragmented resentful soul and saved up its energy little by little, waiting to retaliate against Song Shuhang.

However, Song Shuhang's cultivation speed was simply too fast. Within just a few months, his realm had increased from the First to the Second Stage!

With its current strength, Altar Master's curse didn't have an opportunity to break out and injure him. It could only wait in

ambush and quietly save up its energy.

As a consequence, it didn't cause any trouble lately and stayed hidden up until now.

Right at this time, Song Shuhang poked the black mass of resentment with his finger.

Song Shuhang's fingers were currently covered with a type of power that could ferry souls to the afterworld.

Under the effects of ‹Ksitigarbha's Soul Ferrying Scripture›, Altar Master's fragmented soul turned into golden particles of light, slowly dispersing.

At the same time, Song Shuhang felt that the hatred and anger transmitted from Altar Master's fragmented soul was slowly reducing and disappearing.

Senior Sister Ye held her chin and blinked her eyes, looking at Song Shuhang ferrying Altar Master's fragmented soul.

The scene of Altar Master's fragmented soul getting transformed into particles of light was reflected in her eyes.

In the final moments, it felt as though the small golden particles had put down all their resentment, heading toward the salvation.

After witnessing the scene, Ye Si couldn't help but sigh.

Actually, she herself was unaware why she was sighing!

After that, she did something that caught both herself and Song Shuhang by surprise.

She arrived next to Song Shuhang's body and stretched out her long and slender fingers, gently touching Shuhang's fingers—which were currently poking Altar Master's fragmented resentful soul, ferrying it to the afterworld.

As soon as Song Shuhang and Senior Sister Ye's fingers touched, they received an electric shock that made both of them tremble. The electric current that was generated from their fingers

transmitted to each part of their bodies.

"Whoosh~" Right at this time, Altar Master's fragmented soul thoroughly disappeared.

Song Shuhang and Senior Sister Ye looked at each other.

"Hehehe." Senior Sister Ye happily laughed all of a sudden. The electric shock she received when she touched Song Shuhang's fingers made her feel as though the two of them were even more intimate now. She didn't dislike the feeling.

Song Shuhang also laughed and gently rubbed his fingers. As soon as their fingers touched, he felt if he and Senior Sister Ye were connected together.

After touching her fingers, he felt her happiness. He could feel that she was very happy at this time.

Time passed by, and a new day started in the Time City.

It had been 48 days since Song Shuhang and Chu Chu entered the Time City.

At the same time, a new day was likewise beginning in the outside world.

August 5th, Monday. Shuhang's dao name was now Virtuous Buddhist Sabersman.



China, Fairy Lychee's immortal cave.

Fairy Lychee received a gift today. Immortal Master Copper Trigram, who was currently lying on the hospital bed, had ordered a gift for her on a website specially reserved for cultivators. It was this year's limited edition dress for female cultivators from the Beauty Palace. Moreover, it was something tailor-made for Fairy Lychee.

It didn't have any special feature. It was just beautiful and pleasing to the eye.

It was something Immortal Master Copper Trigram gifted Fairy Lychee as an apology. To buy this dress, he had spent almost half of his monthly income.

Last month, Fairy Lychee quietly waited in ambush in front of Medicine Master's place for Copper Trigram. Then, as soon as Immortal Master Copper Trigram appeared, she seized the opportunity and gave him a good beating along with a series of 'Yiya!'. After that, Immortal Master Copper Trigram made up his mind and decided to make a formal apology.

When Fairy Lychee opened the gift, she saw the beautiful robe inside.

Robes such as this were limited in number. Although their price wasn't that high, sometimes, female cultivators that loved beautiful clothes couldn't buy them even if they had enough spirit stones.

She hadn't expected that Immortal Master Copper Trigram had special connections and could unexpectedly get his hands on these limited edition robes.

It seems that all the fellow daoists in the Nine Provinces Number One Group are hiding their real abilities, Fairy Lychee thought to herself.

Of course, Immortal Master Copper Trigram had no intention of telling Fairy Lychee that he was a super VIP customer of the Beauty Palace.

Immortal Master Copper Trigram had ordered all types of robes from the Beauty Palace, both for males and females. He needed a lot of money to make full use of his 'disguising technique'.

Fairy Lychee wore the beautiful dress. The dress was similar to a long skirt with black garters. When she wore it, it made her tall and slender figure stand out.

"I think I got a little fatter recently," Fairy Lychee said softly.

Then, she took out her mobile phone and made a hand seal. Soon after, the mobile phone hovered midair and found the perfect angle to take the photo.

"Click, click!" An invisible hand pressed on the button to take photos and stored Fairy Lychee's beautiful pictures on the phone.

Before gadgets such as selfie sticks made their appearance, Fairy Lychee had already grinded her selfie taking skill to the maximum level.

She really liked taking selfies. From what she remembered, she had liked it since the day she was born. But it wasn't only selfies; she also liked to record herself and the things around her. It was a hobby of her.

Afterward, she chose the selfies with the best angles and sent them in the group space of the Nine Provinces Number One Group...

Chapter 573: Brother Medicine Master, book me a hospital bed for another half a month!

Whenever Fairy Lychee sent her selfies in the Nine Provinces Number One Group, it was a blessing for all the members. There were many beautiful fairy maidens in the world of cultivators, but it was very rare to see a fairy maiden as beautiful as Fairy Lychee that liked to send her selfies to others.

Today, the blessing came during the early hours of the morning.

At this time, in True Monarch Yellow Mountain's immortal cave.

A pekingese had locked himself inside a small black room. It had already been more than half a month since he had locked himself in there.

Doudou was shrinking in the corner of the small black room with a tablet in his hands, silently taking a look at what was going on in the Nine Provinces Number One Group.

At this time, he was unable to write anything in the group since True Monarch Yellow Mountain had silenced him for 30 days.

At the same time, he was unable to speak in real life as well since True Monarch Yellow Mountain had silenced him for a whole year.

This time around, stupid Yellow Mountain was truly angry.

Fairy Lychee sent a selfie in the group. Stupid Yellow Mountain's mood should improve after seeing her pictures, right?

Anyway, that Shuhang has no loyalty at all! He didn't get online for such a long time... and when he was online a few days ago, he didn't even look for me! Truly no loyalty! Doesn't he know that I'm currently facing the biggest crisis of my dog life?! Woof, woof!

Doudou was very depressed at this time. Although he had locked himself inside a small black room, he still had a way to obtain information from the outside world. Otherwise, if he didn't have a

few tricks up his sleeve, how could he frequently get out of True Monarch Yellow Mountain's immortal cave and run away from home?

According to the information Doudou obtained, True Monarch Yellow Mountain was planning to meet with several fellow daoists. At the same time, he was completing the preparations for his wedding ceremony.

Anyway, the wedding itself wasn't the problem. After all, he was a monster dog of the Fourth Stage that would soon condense a Monster Core, reaching the Fifth Stage Realm. He was supernova amongst monsters, and it was right about time for him to look for a female dog and father a litter of puppies.

The real problem was whom he was going to marry during the wedding!

He was simply unable to imagine the scene of himself wearing feminine attire and getting married.

What is stupid Yellow Mountain planning to do in the end? Is he planning to castrate me? Or does he have a method to turn me into a female dog?

Aside from these two options, there was another option that made Doudou feel even more uneasy... what if he was a female monster dog from the very beginning! Perhaps his 'little Doudou' was just something fake that stupid Yellow Mountain had attached there with a mysterious magical technique?

Is it possible that I was a female dog from the very beginning?

For the past few days, Doudou had been continuously thinking about this terrifying scenario.

After he brought him back to the immortal cave, True Monarch Yellow Mountain didn't come to meet Doudou again. He had been busy preparing his wedding ceremony.

Yellow Mountain's natural and nonchalant actions had started to

make Doudou question his dog life and gender.

No, I can't sit and wait for death. I have to get out of this situation. Whether he wants to castrate me, turn me into a female dog, or even if I'm a female dog to begin with... this is not the dog life I want! Actually, I don't want to live the life of a dog in the first place. But if I have to choose, I would choose the life of a dog god!

Doudou switched off the tablet with his paws and prepared to run away from home another time. In addition, he wasn't planning to stay on Earth this time.

He decided to head toward the boundless space just like Song Shuhang!

If even a rookie of the Second Stage like Song Shuhang could survive in space, what problem could a pekingese of the Fourth Stage like him have? He couldn't possibly starve to death, right?

Oh, right. Better get a few fasting pills before leaving home.

At this time, in the Nine Provinces Number One Group.

Even if it was early morning, there were many fellow daoists online. After all, powerful cultivators didn't need to sleep too long.

Copper Trigram, who was currently lying on the hospital bed, tried to curry favor. "Fairy Lychee, you look truly beautiful. Was the dress of your liking?"

Fairy Lychee: "I have forgiven you!"

Thereupon, Copper Trigram happily reverted his 'Hospitalized Copper Trigram' ID to Immortal Master Copper Trigram. Then, he got up from the hospital bed. There was no need to pretend to be injured anymore.

But right at this time, Northern River's Loose Cultivator sent a sneering (😏) emoji in the group.

Northern River's Loose Cultivator: "Copper Trigram, I have

something to ask you."

"Don't bother, useless Northern River. I won't reply to your question!" Immortal Master Copper Trigram quickly replied.

"..." Northern River's Loose Cultivator.

Then, Immortal Master Copper Trigram also added, "Of course, if you politely call me 'Your Excellency Copper Trigram', I might consider replying to your question, but only IF my mood is good."

Northern River's Loose Cultivator gritted his teeth and said, "Damned shady fortune teller! I'll make sure to kill you on the summit of the forbidden city on September 1st!"

Immortal Master Copper Trigram laughed loudly and said, "I'll return the same sentence to you! You'll be the one to die, useless Northern River! Ahahaha!"

Since Fairy Lychee had finally forgiven him, his current mood was pretty good. In addition, his wounds and that of his disciple, Immortal Fortune Teller Iron Trigram, were changing for the better. As such, Copper Trigram got the feeling that the world was truly a wonderful place.

"..." Northern River's Loose Cultivator.

Su Clan's Seven popped out and asked out of curiosity, "Northern River, what did you want to ask Copper Trigram?"

"Brother Seven, this question of yours is really good," Northern River's Loose Cultivator said with a smile. "I was wondering about the fact that this shady fortune teller assumed Fairy Lychee's appearance to perform his shady divinations once. In that case, I wanted to ask him... except for Fairy Lychee, did he assume the appearance of other fellow daoists from the Nine Provinces Number One Group to perform his terrible divinations?"

As soon as he saw this question, Immortal Master Copper Trigram had a bad premonition.

"F*ck!" Thrice Reckless Mad Saber popped out and sent a voice message.

The possibility that Copper Trigram had done such matters was very high, and everyone couldn't help but become vigilant.

Su Clan's Seven: " ***@Immortal Master Copper Trigram,*** I would also like to hear the answer to this question!"

Fairy Lychee: "Hehehe."

Young Master Phoenix Slayer: " ***@Immortal Master Copper Trigram,*** I would also like to hear the answer to this question!"

Afterward, other fellow daoists also popped out and started to flood the Nine Provinces Number One Group.

Immortal Master Copper Trigram: "Ahahaha, the weather is pretty good today, isn't it? Anyway, you guys can keep chatting. I remembered that I have something to do and will leave first, bye."

What good weather! It was just early morning in China, and it was completely dark outside!

After seeing Immortal Master Copper Trigram's message, Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman was unable to keep his composure and said, "Fellow Daoist Copper Trigram, wait a moment! Does that mean that you assumed my appearance as well while performing your shady divinations?"

No wonder several seniors of his sect were strangely looking at him five years ago. He had always felt that there had been some kind of misunderstanding during that period of time. Such being the case, was it possible that this shady fortune teller had assumed his appearance and caused trouble outside, finally shifting the blame onto him?

"Hehe, I suddenly remembered a certain matter. A hundred years ago, some fellow daoists asked me if I had practiced divination techniques. I was rather confused back then. So... Fellow Daoist Copper Trigram, did you really assume my appearance back then

to perform some of your shady divinations? 😏" Su Clan's Seven said and sent a sneering emoji.

It seemed that Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman wasn't the only one that had had a similar problem.

At this time, Immortal Master Copper Trigram felt that the hand he was using to hold the phone wasn't too steady anymore.

"You don't want to reply, huh? Fellow Daoist Copper Trigram, my blade is already itching for some action!" Su Clan's Seven said. After all, he was Seven the battle maniac, and fighting with others was one of the things he liked the most.

Young Master Phoenix Slayer: "My treasured sword is also itching for some action!"

Sun Splitting Halberd Guo Da: [Picture of a cute puppy].

Sun Splitting Halberd Guo Da: [Picture of the head of a dog being furiously rubbed].

Sun Splitting Halberd Guo Da: "Now that I'm done making fun of myself, my halberd is also itching for some action!"

Dharma King Creation: "My singing voice is also itching for some action!"

"Wait a moment, Brother Dharma King. There is no need to mutually wound each other. I, Thrice Reckless Mad Saber, will take on your itching as well. My saber is already doubly itching for some action!" Thrice Reckless Mad Saber said hastily.

"What Fellow Daoist Thrice Reckless said is reasonable," True Monarch Ancient Lake Temple said calmly. Dharma King Creation's voice was as bad as nuclear pollution and didn't distinguish between friends and foes...

When the bright moon appears: "Fellow Daoist Copper Trigram shouldn't have assumed my appearance, right?"

Fairy Lychee: "Fellow Daoist Scholar Sober Eye, Immortal Master

Copper Trigram probably didn't even remember about you."

"Thank you, Fairy Lychee 🙄." When the bright moon appears sent a 'sighing' emoji and continued, "But my name is Scholar Drunken Moon. If you can't remember it, you can use the 'set footnote' feature!"

"I'm sorry, I'm sorry," Fairy Lychee continuously apologized. But for some unknown reason, she didn't feel like using the 'set footnote' feature in Scholar Drunken XXX's case.

At this time, Northern River's Loose Cultivator added an extra blade to the ones dangling over Immortal Master Copper Trigram's head. "Hehe, Fellow Daoist Copper Trigram, you are still at Medicine Master's place, right? I just checked your IP."

Dammit, my IP was exposed!

Immortal Master Copper Trigram quietly put down his mobile phone and took a deep breath.

Then, he grabbed his turtle shell, preparing to perform a self-divination. Although fortune tellers didn't perform self-divinations in normal times, Immortal Master Copper Trigram's current situation was rather special.

The copper coins in the turtle shell flung out and fell to the ground, forming a very beautiful picture.

It was a good draw that represented good luck and prosperity.

Immortal Master Copper Trigram's eyes immediately started to tear up.

In the next moment, he said heroically to the distant Medicine Master, "Brother Medicine Master~ can you book me a VIP hospital bed for another ten days? No, wait. Book it directly until September 1st!"

Medicine Master quietly put his phone down and nodded, saying, "Sure, no problem. Fellow Daoist Copper Trigram, you can recover

from your wounds in peace in here."

Of course, Medicine Master had been lurking in the group all along and already knew what was happening.

Immortal Master Copper Trigram said, "Brother Medicine Master is truly considerate."

"A doctor is like a parent for his patients. No matter how bad your injuries are, I'll make sure to patch you up," Medicine Master said.

Immortal Master Copper Trigram was moved and on the verge of tears.

At this time, Medicine Master also asked, "Anyway, I have a question. Fellow Daoist Copper Trigram, did you assume my appearance too in order to perform your shady divinations?"

Immortal Master Copper Trigram's whole body stiffened. Then, after a while, he forced a smile and said, "About that... I shouldn't have done it, I guess?"

"From your reaction, you probably did it." Medicine Master quietly nodded his head.

Immortal Master Copper Trigram's legs went soft. Wasn't the fact that he had offended the doctor in charge of curing him even more scary than the fact that he was going to be beaten to death very soon?

Earth was getting too dangerous nowadays. Should he consider fleeing to space?



At this time, inside a luxurious villa in the Jiangnan area.

The palm-sized Yu Jiaojiao was lying on the bed. She had a happy expression on her face while fiddling with the phone with her small claws. She was looking at the recently produced content from a certain author she locked into a small black room.

Although it was just early morning, her mood was especially good.

"Ten chapters per day with each chapter being 3000 characters long. It truly makes me happy to read 30,000 characters' worth of content each day." Yu Jiaojiao had a satisfied expression on her face.

Chapter 574: The soul ferrying ceremony

"As expected, the combined effects of the Eye-Opening Pill + Spirit Green Tea + Energizing Medicinal Liquid are truly great. With all these gadgets, he can stay full of energy 24 hours a day and write without breaks! Just as I predicted, it wasn't impossible to reach the 30,000 characters goal," Yu Jiaojiao said happily with a smile.

"Miss is truly wise." Next to Yu Jiaojiao was a girl wearing the classic dress of a maid. She pampered Jiaojiao and gave her cakes and pastries.

"Since he was so diligent today, give him a midnight snack as well." Yu Jiaojiao nodded and said, "Right, put a little bit of body tempering liquid inside the snacks. I want to see if his body can withstand it or not."

Jiaojiao had found with much difficulty an author that wrote books to her liking. Was it possible that she wanted to train him and turn him into a cultivator? With that, he could go on writing books for several hundred years!

Actually, powerful cultivators had done similar matters in the past already.

According to rumors, a powerful cultivator once carried off several authors that wrote good historical and romance novels, taking them in as disciples.

What was told to the poor souls: I just noticed that your talent is first-class and you are very suited for cultivation. You might as well follow me and cultivate in order to become an immortal.

What really happened: After they were carried away, the disciples had to suffer and write novels with all their might.

Oh, right. Still according to rumors, that powerful cultivator was also very rich and capricious. Although none of the 'disciples' had

any talent for cultivation, the powerful cultivator used a huge number of natural resources to increase the level of their cultivation and searched for many medicinal pills and natural treasures that could increase their lifespan.

As you might have noticed, it was very important to grasp a good skill that could allow one to make a living back in the days!

Now then, perhaps Yu Jiaojiao also wanted to follow in the footsteps of that powerful cultivator?

"Miss is truly benevolent." The maidservant covered her mouth and laughed. "Right, that Mister mentioned a certain matter today. He wanted to call his girlfriend."

"Tell him that he isn't allowed to call her... because I already prepared a surprise for him and invited his girlfriend over as a guest. His girlfriend is already on her way here!" Yu Jiaojiao said complacently.

"Sure, I'll give him this reply," the maidservant said with a gentle smile.

Yu Jiaojiao started to happily roll about in the bed.

"If I had known earlier that locking an author inside a black room could produce such an incredible increase in the number of chapters, I would have done this matter a long time ago! In addition, there are several other authors and mangakas that I'm following, should I kidnap them as well?" Yu Jiaojiao muttered to herself.

"Oh, right. I can't forget about proper business!" Yu Jiaojiao managed to stop her imagination with great difficulty and sent Song Shuhang a message.

"Shuhang, what kind of plot do you want for the movie? Magical realism? Wuxia? Xianxia? Science fiction?"

Whether the setting of the movie was wuxia, xianxia, sci-fi, or xuanhuan, Yu Jiaojiao was sure that the outcome would be

excellent!

After all, special effects were going to be 100% real. Scary, wasn't it?

There was such a huge variety of magical techniques, absolutely plenty to choose from!

Moreover, they could shoot the movie both in the sky and underground, no need for special effects!

Whether the setting was in outer space, at the bottom of the sea, inside a volcano, in the desert... it was all achievable!

In addition, each of the participating actors, male or female, was going to be beautiful and handsome. Each and every one of them could be compared to those internationally famous superstars! Incredible, right?

Beyond that, they could have all kinds of mythological beasts and cute animals make a small appearance in the movie as well.

After Yu Jiaojiao sent the message, Song Shuhang didn't reply.

He was currently inside the Time City, and his mobile phone didn't have any signal.



August 5th, Monday. Dao name: Virtuous Buddhist Sabersman.

Song Shuhang's ghost spirit changed its itinerary.

At first, it was planning to meet Yu Jiaojiao. But now, it changed its plans and decided to go together with the western monk somewhere to ferry the souls of the dead.

Song Shuhang's main body had experienced the life of the 'ascetic monk' and learned the Soul Ferrying Technique.

If Song Shuhang had comprehended the technique, it meant that the ghost spirit had comprehended it too.

Then, the western monk suddenly received a call; there was some

work for him. An elderly person had passed away, and the family called the western monk so that he could arrange a ceremony to lead the soul of the dead to the afterworld.

The family had requested the western monk to perform ceremonies for them in the past as well. Although the western monk was a foreigner, they felt that he was still a skilled monk that acted in accordance with justice and morality. After the ceremonies were over, even ordinary people could feel and sense the incredible effects!

Such being the case, they especially called for the western monk to perform the soul ferrying ceremony now that the elder in their house had passed away.

The western monk immediately agreed. After all, ferrying souls was one of his hobbies.

Since it had learned the Soul Ferrying Technique, Song Shuhang's ghost spirit was also very interested in this matter. Therefore, it asked the western monk to head toward the family together and see if there was an opportunity to make use of the Soul Ferrying Technique it had just learned.

Since the ghost spirit had just saved his life, the western monk readily agreed to its request to team up and head toward the family together.

Thereupon, a western monk and a ghost spirit decided to commence their journey to the west to seek and bring the legendary buddhist scripture back— no, wait, they headed toward the bus that would bring them to their destination!



Time City, inside the Lower City.

Song Shuhang adjusted his state and used the 〈Whale Swallowing Technique〉 to eat a donkey-type spirit beast crystal. This spirit beast crystal was also from the batch that the stallion

spirit had delivered him as compensation and was likewise a spirit beast crystal of the Second Stage.

Before eating the spirit beast crystal, Song Shuhang steeled himself and used the secret appraisal technique to appraise it.

It's a donkey-type spirit beast crystal of the Second Stage rank. It can be eaten through the <Whale Swallowing Technique> and can slightly strengthen the constitution, increase the quantity of true qi, and further develop the 'pseudo-innate true qi'. After eating it with the <Whale Swallowing Technique>, the quickest way to absorb it is to run in circles for 5000 meters while carrying something heavy on the back, just like a donkey turning the millstone.

The price for the appraisal was a small wound, and the pain was also within the range Song Shuhang could withstand. Speaking of which, Song Shuhang felt that there was something wrong with his sense of pain.

His ability to endure pain had skyrocketed. Although the pain of the small wound Song Shuhang received was amplified by ten or so times, it didn't have much of an effect on the current him.

From the looks of it, Song Shuhang wouldn't have to be afraid of any type of pain in the future if he kept using the secret appraisal technique and spurting blood as he did up until now. At that time, having his body pierced by weapons wouldn't be any different than drinking a cup of water!

Just the thought of this Song Shuhang that didn't fear any injury was enough to scare people.

Anyway, let's return to the current scene first.

After eating the donkey-type spirit beast crystal, the pseudo-innate true qi inside Song Shuhang's body became even more complete.

Afterward, Song Shuhang stood up.

Senior Sister Ye smiled and jumped on his back. Earlier, Song Shuhang asked her if there was something heavy around there he could use for his practice. When she heard the question, Senior Sister Ye pointed at herself.

"I'm probably the heaviest thing in here. My ⟨Tome of Never-Ending Tears⟩ is a cultivation technique with a dual-element affinity, water and earth. I have already practiced the 'Weighty Fall Technique' and 'weight increasing magical technique' to the maximum level. Although I look slim, I can increase my weight up to 10 tons if I use the 'Weighty Fall Technique' and 'weight increasing magical technique' at the same time!" Senior Sister Ye replied.

...It seemed that he simply couldn't allow Senior Sister Ye to use the cowgirl position in bed!

Of course, Song Shuhang didn't need to carry something like 10 tons on his back. A weight of 500 kilograms was more than enough.

Then, after eating the donkey-type spirit beast crystal, he carried Senior Sister Ye on his back and started to run in circles around a pillar in the library room.

"Hehehe~ Shuhang, faster, a little bit faster!" Senior Sister Ye was very happy. It seemed that her mood improved a lot after receiving that electric shock while touching Song Shuhang's fingers earlier. Although it had been quite a while, she had yet to cry.

"Sure. I'll increase my speed then," Song Shuhang said. Immediately after, he used the ⟨Virtuous Man's Ten Thousand Mile Walk⟩ footwork. Thanks to the extra knowledge he gained the last time when he dashed about madly on his four limbs, his usage of the ⟨Virtuous Man's Ten Thousand Mile Walk⟩ had become smoother.

"Hehehe~" Senior Sister Ye's delightful laughter reverberated in the whole room.

At this time, Chu Chu quietly returned to the library room. After the experience from last time, she decided not to rashly barge into the room and disturb the life of the couple.

After all, there was a chance that the two of them were doing some rather embarrassing matter right at that time.

Thereupon, Miss Chu Chu quietly approached the library room and moved her head closer to the entrance, peeking inside.

Immediately after, the scene of Song Shuhang carrying Senior Sister Ye on her back and running in circles around a pillar of the room appeared before her eyes.

Senior Sister Ye was laughing sweetly. "Shuhang, faster, faster!"

Song Shuhang said vigorously, "Sure, sit tight!"

Next, he started to run at high speed around the pillar, just like a small tornado.

The scene was so beautiful that Miss Chu Chu couldn't bear to look at it anymore.

"Youngsters surely like to have fun nowadays!" Chu Chu silently nodded and quietly retreated... two meters!

Then, she took out her mobile phone and activated the video recording feature, silently recording the scene.

If Shuhang and Senior Sister Ye managed to become husband and wife in the future, they would have to give her a big gift!

After all, she was trying her best to allow the two people to have some time together. It was precisely for that reason that their relationship was advancing at such a high speed.



Time quickly flew by in the Time City.

The next day.

Song Shuhang used the <Whale Swallowing Technique> to eat a

camel-type spirit beast crystal. Like the others, it was a spirit beast crystal of the Second Stage rank the stallion spirit provided.

Senior Sister Ye said, "Shuhang, are you hungry? Do you want to eat something? In the end, we have only fasting pills."

"No, I don't want to eat anything," Song Shuhang said softly. He had to follow the footsteps of camels today and couldn't touch a single drop of water for the whole day.

"Eh? You consumed a lot of energy during the past few days of practice. Are you sure you don't want to eat anything?" Senior Sister Ye asked out of curiosity.

"Yes, I won't eat anything today," Song Shuhang said resolutely.

The nearby Chu Chu had a pensive look on her face... had the two of them gotten into a fight?



After another day.

Song Shuhang was holding a deer-type spirit beast crystal in his hands.

He had obtained this spirit beast crystal when he went to the cultivator's street market with Venerable White back then. It was spirit beast crystal of the Fourth Stage.

The rank of this spirit beast crystal was too high; it was equivalent to a spirit stone of the Fourth Stage. If Song Shuhang were to use the <Whale Swallowing Technique> to eat it forcefully, he would surely end up having too much true qi, which might cause his body to explode.

"It's better not to eat this spirit beast crystal for the time being," Song Shuhang muttered to himself.

Afterward, he shifted his attention to the ghost spirit.

According to the information he received through their shared senses, the ghost spirit was currently with the western monk and

getting ready to participate in a soul ferrying ceremony.

Song Shuhang had learned the Soul Ferrying Technique and managed to ferry the soul inside Altar Master's curse. However, the soul inside the curse was only a fragment and not a complete one.

Therefore, Song Shuhang was really curious to see what kind of change would take place on his body if the ghost spirit were to use the Soul Ferrying Technique on a complete soul...

Chapter 575: Leaving the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion for a stroll!

The western monk was a man that knew that favors should be returned. Although he was a soul ferrying madman whose hobby was to ferry souls, he clenched his teeth and didn't refuse when the ghost spirit asked him if it could try to ferry the soul of the dead this time.

After arriving at the destination, the western monk didn't immediately head toward the house where they had to perform the ceremony to ferry the soul of the elder to the afterworld. He first bought some equipment for Song Shuhang's ghost spirit. It was equipment that buddhist monks used to prepare the ground for the ceremony.

Then, the western monk finally headed to the house of that family where the elderly person had passed away.

After a simple exchange, the western monk started to make his arrangements.

As first thing, he arranged the altar to ferry the soul and properly prepared the ceremonial ground. Of course, all these preparations were just for the sake of ordinary people. If he wanted to ferry the soul of an ordinary person, the western monk needed but a thought to activate <Ksitigarbha's Soul Ferrying Scripture> and stretch out his hand, ferrying the soul to the afterworld.

But if the preparations weren't meticulous enough, the 'client' might not feel relieved.

To tell the truth, along with science and technology developing further and further, most of the 'clients' that requested monks to come over to ferry the souls of their dead relatives to the afterworld didn't do so for religious beliefs but to show their extravagance! The vast majority of the people thought that they

could show how much they cared for their loved ones only through a grand and extravagant ceremony, turning the death of their family members into a great spectacle.

As such, if the preparations weren't meticulous and the scene extravagant enough, the western monk might not get other opportunities to ferry souls.

In order to leave a good impression and receive as many requests of this type as possible, the western monk had to spend a lot of time and effort to prepare the altar and the ceremonial ground.

He really had no choice in this matter.

What made things even more difficult for him was that the sect he belonged to was a daoist one. Therefore, he had to spend a lot of time to figure out how buddhist monks arranged the ceremonial ground in the first place!

After the preparations had reached a sufficient degree of extravagance, the western monk wore the kasaya and started to silently read the religious text he had brought along. Just he was beating the wooden drum in his hands with a stick and silently chanting the text, the religious text in front of his body started to glow faintly.

This religious text was something the western monk had written down from memory while he was in prison. It was something akin to a talisman, and it was possible to rip it apart to release its power to attack while dealing with ghost-like creatures.

This was one of the reasons the western monk was better than ordinary monks when it came to showing extravagance. His skills were real, and each of his stage props could emit holy light. In addition, whenever he was reading his religious texts, the mood of the nearby ordinary people would calm down. Moreover, he looked incredibly solemn and holy while beating the wooden drum with a stick.

When he started to chant the religious text, the weeping family members that were kneeling on the edge of the coffin immediately settled down, and the sorrow in their heart for the loss of their loved one was instantly wiped out.

At this time, no one dared to look down on the western monk.

To tell the truth, when they saw that the western monk had come over all alone and hadn't brought with him other monks, most of the family members were somewhat disgruntled. The reason was that the scene wasn't extravagant enough with only one monk there.

Although the western monk was good at reading religious texts, he was just one person. Could he really be compared to a whole group of local buddhist monks?

But after witnessing the scene unfolding before their eyes, no one dared to look down on him anymore, because the western monk was undoubtedly a true 'senior monk' with an incredibly profound and deep knowledge!

Right at this time, Song Shuhang's ghost spirit started to take action.

It gently floated and arrived above the coffin.

Each place had its own customs. In here, it was customary to arrange a mourning hall for two or three days after a relative had passed away. Afterward, the body would be cremated.

When Shuhang's ghost spirit fluttered until the coffin, it noticed that a pale ball of light had appeared above the coffin. It was precisely the soul of the deceased person.

It was a very ordinary soul that had the shape of a pale ball of light. It was lingering above the coffin, seemingly reluctant to part with its body.

This soul hadn't committed any wrongdoings during the course of its life and had put more emphasis on doing good deeds and

leading a peaceful life. For this reason, although it was somewhat reluctant to part with its body, it wasn't showing any sign of transforming into a resentful ghost.

As soon as it sensed the arrival of the ghost spirit, the ball of light was terrified and retreated a few steps. It almost felt as though it had met its natural enemy.

Actually, Song Shuhang's ghost spirit was indeed the natural enemy of ordinary souls and resentful ghosts.

After all, its menu consisted mainly of resentful ghosts. Since it could eat resentful ghosts, it could obviously eat ordinary souls as well. However, Song Shuhang's ghost spirit did nothing of the sort.

It stretched out its finger and mentally read the text of <Ksitigarbha's Soul Ferrying Scripture>, poking the soul.

The ghost spirit had no idea if it could use the Soul Ferrying Technique. After all, although Song Shuhang knew magical techniques such as the 'Lightning Palm' and the 'fire controlling art'—even though it knew the theory behind them, the ghost spirit was unable to use them due to the limitations of its body.

Luckily, the Soul Ferrying Technique was different than the Lightning Palm and such magical techniques.

As soon as the ghost spirit poked the ordinary soul with its finger, the soul was astonished. Soon after, the feeling of surprise turned into one of joy.

Then, just in this fashion, the soul started to transform into particles of light and disappear.

The soul had been successfully ferried.

The power of virtue between heaven and earth condensed and fell onto the body of Song Shuhang's ghost spirit.

The power of virtue split into three portions. The first portion changed into a thin layer of 'light of virtue' that shrouded the body

of the ghost spirit. This layer of 'light of virtue' was very thin. One had to ferry something like a thousand souls to make it visible, and it would undergo a qualitative change only after ferrying 100,000 souls.

Another portion fused with the mind of the ghost spirit, strengthening its mental energy. Such an increase of mental energy was almost negligible for a ghost spirit of the Second Stage rank.

The last portion fused with the body of the ghost spirit, enhancing its constitution. As before, the increase was negligible.

After ferrying the soul of the deceased person, the ghost spirit hovered midair, carefully savoring the feeling of the light of virtue fusing with its body. At the same time, it transmitted the feeling to Song Shuhang through their shared senses.

The western monk, who was currently reading aloud religious texts, joined his palms together and shouted, "A great service was rendered!"

The ghost spirit looked at the western monk and slightly nodded. Then, it said goodbye to the western monk, "Fellow Daoist, let us meet again."

The western monk silently nodded.

Then, he kept reading the religious text and beating the wooden drum with the stick just for show. The ceremonial ground had already been prepared. Such being the case, he couldn't casually leave after reading scriptures for just a few minutes, right?

He should read the religious text at least ten times before leaving.

Otherwise, the scene wouldn't be extravagant enough, and the client wouldn't be satisfied!

This damned society where outward appearance was all that mattered had made others, and himself, go through a lot of trouble!



The ghost spirit set out and flew high in the sky.

Before getting too far, it also shot a glance at the surrounding area. It was really unfortunate, but those ghost cultivators that were chasing after the western monk didn't come over to this place.

Those ghost generals were really delicious. Anyway, since they hadn't come over, it could only leave it at that. They were lucky and had survived a calamity.

Next, it shot a glance at the western monk, who was sitting straight and beating the wooden drum. Although the monk looked somewhat simple-minded, the ghost spirit knew that he was no fool. The only problem was that his thinking mode was rather abnormal and different from that of ordinary people.

Since those ghost cultivators were chasing after him, the western monk would naturally not stay in the same place for too long. From the looks of it, he would hurry over to his sect once the ceremony was over.

Such being the case, there was no need for the ghost spirit to worry about the western monk.

The ghost spirit set out and finally headed toward Song Shuhang's house.

At the same time, it also transmitted this thought to the main body: ***I get the feeling that the Soul Ferrying Technique can be very useful to me.***

Perhaps it will be the key that will allow me to become a high-rank ghost spirit!

When the power of virtue between heaven and earth split into three portions and fell onto its body, the ghost spirit got the feeling that it would eventually have the chance to break through and become a high-rank ghost spirit if it kept using the Soul Ferrying

Technique to accumulate power of virtue!

It was a realm that was worth pursuing!

❄ ❄ ❄

Time City, in the Lower City.

After concluding his daily practice, Song Shuhang received the message of the ghost spirit. "The Soul Ferrying Technique can actually help the ghost spirit to advance in rank?"

Song Shuhang knew that there was a difference between middle-rank ghost spirits and high-rank ones. The difference was that the strength of a middle-rank ghost spirit was capped, and it could reach the Sixth Stage realm at most.

On the other hand, a high-rank ghost spirit could be compared to a very talented cultivator and could likewise practice until the Ninth Stage Tribulation Transcender Realm. In addition, it could also learn extraordinary ghost-type magical techniques. In short, it was a very loyal super clone.

If the ghost spirit could break through and become a high-rank one, Song Shuhang could do nothing and still reach the Fifth Stage Realm just by relying on the push the ghost spirit was giving him. Of course, it was only if he could survive the heavenly tribulation.

This was the difference between a normal cheat and a super cheat!

Such being the case, Song Shuhang issued the following thought to the ghost spirit: ***Meet with Yu Jiaojiao and see if she needs help with anything. Afterward, the matter about ferrying souls takes priority! You can act freely before I return to Earth!***

After replying to the ghost spirit, Song Shuhang shot a glance at his hands... there wasn't any change to Song Shuhang's main body after the ghost spirit ferried that ordinary soul.

From the looks of it, the 'light of virtue' of the ghost spirit was

something independent that belonged to the ghost spirit alone... or perhaps the light of virtue shrouding the body of the ghost spirit would merge with Song Shuhang as soon as the former returned to his body?

"What are you thinking about?" At this time, Senior Sister Ye had finished giving pointers to Chu Chu, returning to Song Shuhang's side. Then, after seeing his pensive look, she asked this question.

"I'm thinking about something related to the light of virtue," Song Shuhang replied with a smile. Next, he told Senior Sister Ye about the ghost spirit testing the Soul Ferrying Technique.

After telling her the whole story, Song Shuhang also asked, "Senior Sister Ye, are there any souls waiting to be ferried to the afterworld in the proximity of the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion?"

The Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion was placed amidst the vast space. However, the starry sky was also a place where cultivators fought amongst themselves. Such being the case, there were perhaps some souls to ferry in the surroundings of the pavilion?

"In the proximity of the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion? I never paid attention to this." Senior Sister Ye pondered for a moment and suddenly clapped her hands, saying, "In that case, I can just bring you along for a stroll outside the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion. We have stayed underground for such a long time. It's time get out and breathe some fresh air!"

For some unknown reasons, she hadn't set foot out of the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion for a very long period of time.

She was already a Fifth Stage Spiritual Emperor and had long ago met the conditions to leave the sect. She could leave the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion at any time to take a stroll outside if she wanted to. However, she had never even considered the thought of leaving the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion during the past few years.

It was a rather strange matter.

Anyway, since Song Shuhang had brought up this matter today, she decided to seize the opportunity and take a stroll outside!

Chapter 576: A Seventh Stage Venerable?

As such, Senior Sister Ye happily brought Song Shuhang along and left the 'Lower City' of the Time City.

Chu Chu didn't go with them. Although she was very curious as to what point Song Shuhang and Senior Sister Ye's relationship had developed to, she didn't want to act as a third wheel and ruin the atmosphere.

In addition, before leaving with Song Shuhang, Senior Sister Ye taught Chu Chu a very mysterious sword technique.

'Shadow Sword Technique, a sword within a sword'. Whenever the sword slashed out, there would be a stream of sword qi concealed within the slash that was very difficult to detect during the battle.

Thereupon, Chu Chu had started to happily practice this mysterious sword technique.

Miss Chu Chu was a girl that was rather easy to satisfy.



Around five minutes later.

Senior Sister Ye and Song Shuhang left the 'Lower City' of the Time City.

Right at that time, Song Shuhang felt his body becoming blazing hot. It felt as though he had suddenly left his cool room with the air conditioner and stepped beneath the scorching summer sun.

"This is the balancing power of the world. As soon as you came out of the Time City, your lifespan was affected. However, the balancing power shouldn't affect you too much. You would lose 1-2 minutes of lifespan at most," Senior Sister Ye said with a smile.

Song Shuhang nodded. It was completely worth it to give up 1-2 minutes of his lifespan to train inside the Lower City of the Time

City where the difference in time was 1 to 12.

Senior Sister Ye shot a glance at Song Shuhang and said with a smile, "But don't misunderstand. After spending twelve days inside the Lower City, you are already twelve days older and not only one, which is the amount of time that passed in the outside world."

Song Shuhang was slightly disappointed. It seemed that the 'room of time' wasn't as amazing as he had thought.

Senior Sister Ye laughed and said, "Let's go! We'll quietly leave from the back door of the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion."

"We aren't going out from the front door?" Song Shuhang asked. Moreover, why were they going to leave 'quietly'?

"If you want to be surrounded and scrutinized by the disciples of the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion, we can also leave from the front door," Senior Sister Ye said with a gentle smile. At this time, the whole Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion knew that she had found a partner, the type you would have sex with.

Currently, more than half of the disciples of the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion should be rather curious about Song Shuhang. Although they wouldn't be too excessive for her sake, it was inevitable that a huge crowd would gather around them.

Thereupon, Song Shuhang quietly followed Senior Sister Ye and headed toward the back entrance, planning to leave the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion from there.



At the (front) entrance of the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion, the Sobbing Old Man was still firmly sitting in front of the main gate. He was currently sitting in meditation, and due to the <Tome of Never-Ending Tears>, there would be the scene of someone loudly weeping in front of the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion from time to time.

Although the days passed, the main gate of the Crystal-Clear

Water Pavilion was still shut tightly.

The Sobbing Old Man clenched his teeth and said, "It doesn't matter. I've already made up my mind. Even if I have to wait for several years, I'll wait!" After all, it was his only opportunity to obtain the remaining part of the <Tome of Never-Ending Tears>. His future was at stake, and he couldn't give up so easily.

The Sobbing Old Man was unaware that he had just missed the possibility to encounter Senior Sister Ye and Song Shuhang.

If he were to discover that Senior Sister Ye had used the back door to get out of the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion, he would surely cry himself to sleep in front of the door of the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion.



Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion, Celestial Pavilion.

Li Yinzhu was still dangling in midair.

"Please, let me go! You can lock me up somewhere else if you want, but don't leave me dangling here in front of the entrance, ok?" Li Yinzhu felt like crying at this moment. In addition, the cold inside her body was getting stronger and stronger, and her disease could flare up at any time.

What would she do if her disease were to flare up, sealing her within the ice, and she were to wet herself in the process?

Moreover, that wasn't even the worse-case scenario. At this time, her urge to pee was getting stronger and stronger, and if she were to pee later when the ice seal melted, it would be even more embarrassing!

At that time, she would really be too ashamed to face anyone.

Who was the master of the pavilion before her eyes? Why did they tie her up and made her dangle in midair, neither releasing nor locking her up? Were they a pervert?



In the meantime.

In a place around 500 kilometers away from the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion.

A large flying boat was shuttling back and forth amidst the vast space.

A woman with golden hair was sitting in the front section of the flying boat. She was wearing a light green skirt that was slit until the thighs, showing a big patch of white skin; it was both sexy and elegant. The woman had long golden hair that resembled a mass of golden threads, shining to the point of the being dazzling. Additionally, she was wearing a black eyeshade that covered most of her face.

She was currently sitting on the edge of the autopilot seat, taking a nap.

Next to her was a jade white lion licking its claws, its expression one of boredom.

In the rear of the immortal boat were thirteen Golden Core Spiritual Emperors that were tied up with a magical technique, golden hair still pricking their vital points.

These guys were precisely those Golden Core Spiritual Emperors that had barged into the 'Residence of Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue' uninvited and later got captured.

Amongst them were: Loose Cultivator Qian Yan, Loose Cultivator Xiong Gui, Yan Wuhuan, the human-shaped monster Mo Ran, as well as Peak Leader Bao Ping and the other seven Peak Leaders of the Limitless Demon Sect.

Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue (Phoenix Saber Jasmine) and Fourth Cultivator of True Virtue (the jade white lion) were escorting the immortal boat with the Golden Core Spiritual Emperors onboard to the far-off spirit stone mining area.

While at it, they would bring back those guys that had extracted spirit stones for the past quarter of the year.



Then, not too far away in front of the flying boat was a group of people lying in ambush.

These people lying in ambush were the Hall Leader of the Nine-eyed Kama Hall and his various Peak Leader-level subordinates.

After all, eight of their Golden Core Spiritual Emperors had been captured! Even for a large sect such as the Limitless Demon Sect, it was a great fighting force that couldn't be ignored.

Even if it meant offending the people from the 'Residence of Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue', the Hall Leader of the Nine-eyed Kama Hall had no choice but to act.

The Hall Leader planned to ambush the flying boat and quickly save his subordinates, running away at the speed of light.

Before coming over here, he had given to each subordinate a special rune that would allow them to flee for their life.

He wanted to use the blitzkrieg tactic and get this matter over and done with as soon as possible.



In the meantime.

In an even further place in space, another figure was looking for the flying boat of Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue.

This figure was Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue's friend, the ancient witch Elise.

She had just received an important piece of information, and according to the info, the members of the Limitless Demon Sect wanted to attack and rob Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue's flying boat. Therefore, she quickly came over in the hope of giving Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue's a hand and return the

favor she owed him.

However, the thinking mode of the ancient witch Elise was a bit... abnormal.

No one could guess what kind of method she would use to help Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue save his flying boat.



Around ten minutes later.

Song Shuhang and Senior Sister Ye arrived at the back door of the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion.

"Let's go. By passing through this gate, we'll leave the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion without attracting the attention of too many people," Senior Sister Ye said with a smile.

The back door of the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion had no guards.

Let alone the back door, even the front door didn't have any disciple guarding it!

If Song Shuhang had carefully looked at his surroundings, he would have noticed that there wasn't any defense in the whole Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion. Even back then, the male and female attendants had arrived to receive Song Shuhang's group personally, and they hadn't met any guards along the way.

From the looks of it, security was something superfluous for the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion?

Anyway, Senior Sister Ye and Song Shuhang didn't meet any disciple on their way to the back entrance.

After the back door was opened, the vast space appeared before Senior Sister Ye and Song Shuhang's eyes. In a distant place were also some meteors and small aerolites that were attracted over by the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion.

Song Shuhang took out the cumbersome spacesuit from his size-reducing purse and wore it.

He was just a cultivator of the Second Stage rank, and even if he could solve the breathing problem with the Turtle Breathing Technique, it was still very dangerous to expose his bare body in space. Therefore, it was better to wear the spacesuit for extra protection.

Senior Sister Ye smiled and stretched out her hand, summoning a thick and big book.

It was her flying magical treasure.

The book opened and up to a hundred golden runes appeared above it, surrounding and revolving around it. The flying speed of the book wasn't that much inferior to that of a flying sword of the same rank.

"Jump on the book. I'll carry you," Senior Sister Ye said.

Thereupon, Song Shuhang climbed on the big book. If he wanted to move around in space, he could only rely on the 'driving force formation' attached to the spacesuit. However, the speed was atrociously slow.

Such being the case, he could only rely on Senior Sister Ye to swiftly moved around.

"Sit tight!" Senior Sister Ye performed a hand seal, and the book below their feet moved, leaving the range of the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion.

Soon, the two of them would leave the defensive barrier of the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion.

But right at this time, Senior Sister Ye suddenly paused, and the thick flying book also stopped in midair.

Afterward, tears started to endlessly stream down her cheeks.

This time, she didn't cry, but her tears were continuously streaming down.

"What made you cry this time?" Song Shuhang said with a faint

smile. Then, he stretched out his hand and wiped away the tears from the corners of her eyes.

He felt that it was different from the previous times. This time, he didn't hear that cute 'sob, sob, sob~' sound.

Ye Si didn't open her mouth, but her tears were incessantly falling.

This time, Senior Sister Ye looked truly 'heartbroken'.

"Eh? I'm crying?" Senior Sister Ye rubbed her eyes in surprise. "What? I'm really crying? Strange, why are tears falling from my eyes? This time, nothing moved me, and I'm not sad, either."

Just as she was speaking, a ray of light flew out of the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion and fell onto Senior Sister Ye's body.

"What's happening? Senior Sister Ye, is it possible that you are not allowed to leave the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion?" Song Shuhang anxiously asked after recalling Senior Sister Ye's appearance while quietly leaving from the back door. Was it possible that Senior Sister Ye had committed some crime in the past and was thus confined within the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion? And would get punished if she were to suddenly leave?

Therefore, was the radiance just now the light of punishment?

"No, I'm allowed to leave! As far as I remember, I've left the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion several times in the past! And I haven't been confined within the pavilion, either!" Senior Sister Ye said in puzzlement.

What was the deal with the light just now? She, too, had gotten a scare. However, she couldn't dodge in time. In addition, she didn't feel as though the light wanted to hurt her; it seemed very kind.

After a short moment, tears stopped falling from Senior Sister Ye's eyes.

"Nothing happened. Shuhang, you don't need to worry about

me," Senior Sister Ye comforted Song Shuhang.

She was always like this. Although she was crying with all her might, she wouldn't forget about comforting Song Shuhang.

Song Shuhang gently nodded and stretched out his hand, wiping Senior Sister Ye's tears again.

But just as the ray of light fell onto Senior Sister Ye's body, he got a rather peculiar feeling from her body. He had felt a similar feeling when he had faced Venerable White in the past.

A Seventh Stage Venerable?!

Chapter 577: Nine Virtues Phoenix Saber, the Saber of Destruction!

Since he was wearing a very cumbersome spacesuit, Song Shuhang's actions looked rather clumsy while he was wiping Ye Si's tears. For this reason, the movement of his fingers was even more cautious and gentle.

But right at that time, he felt a rather peculiar feeling coming from Senior Sister Ye's body. It was the aura of a Seventh Stage Venerable. No, perhaps it was even stronger than that of a Venerable.

Although the feeling lingered only for an instant, Song Shuhang had lived together with Venerable White for quite some time already and was thus very familiar with this kind of oppressive aura that was of the Venerable or above rank.

There is no mistake...

But why was the aura of a Venerable or above rank coming from Senior Sister Ye's body?

After seeing Senior Sister Ye's face, which was full of tears, Song Shuhang decided to let go of his curiosity for now.

"Thank you, Shuhang." Senior Sister Ye gently grabbed the hand Song Shuhang was using to wipe her tears. Then, she said gently while sobbing, "I'm not sure why, but when I left the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion and turned my head back to look at it, my tears started to fall incessantly. That's the only bad thing about the <Tome of Never-Ending Tears>. Even if it's a cultivation technique of the water and earth-type, I don't want to turn into a weeping Niobe!"

"Are you fine now?" Song Shuhang asked with a smile.

"Yes, I'm fine. There are no problems." Senior Sister Ye smiled. Then, she let go of Song Shuhang's hand and rubbed her eyes.

When she used her fingers to wipe away the remaining tears, two extra light purple eyeshadows were left in the area around her eyes.

These two light purple eyeshadows made Senior Sister Ye look even more elegant.

The originally naive and well-read girl had now the charm of a mature woman. Moreover, her body was currently permeated with an outworldly aura.

Senior Sister Ye blinked her eyes and asked Song Shuhang, "Is it pretty?" But the fact that she sobbed a few times while asking the question kind of ruined her elegance.

"Yes, it's very pretty," Song Shuhang replied honestly. There was no need to use refined and showy adjectives, saying that it was 'pretty' was more than enough to make Senior Sister Ye happy.

"Let's go stroll in the proximity of the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion and see whether there are some souls to ferry." Senior Sister Ye stretched out her hand and supported Shuhang's arm.

Soon after leaving the defensive formation of the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion, Song Shuhang would start floating due to the nonexistent gravity. Therefore, she grabbed his arm so as to avoid him fluttering away.

The runes surrounding the huge book fluttered, carrying Song Shuhang and Senior Sister Ye away at high speed.

The defensive formation of the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion didn't stop the duo. On the contrary, it opened on its own, creating a small hole that allowed Shuhang and Senior Sister Ye Si to pass through it.

After leaving the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion, that outworldly feeling coming from Senior Sister Ye's body became even more apparent.

Senior Sister Ye said, "In which direction should we go first?"

"It's up to you. I don't see any difference between up and down or left and right," Song Shuhang said with a smile. After all, there was only the vast starry sky in front of them.

"In that case, I'll casually choose one direction!" Senior Sister Ye said with a smile. Then, she closed her eyes and spread her mental energy, trying to sense the things in the surrounding area.

After three breaths, Senior Sister Ye opened her eyes, which immediately lit up. "Let's go in that direction! Something interesting is about to happen down there!"

The place she pointed her finger at was the current position of the flying boat from the Residence of Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue.



On the flying boat.

A silhouette wearing a light green skirt was standing above the flying boat. Their golden hair was scattered all over and moving on their own.

The mass of golden threads-like hair was both long and dense.

At this time, the golden hair had formed a big net that was covering the whole flying boat, protecting it.

There were currently several marks left by magical techniques on the net.

There were traces of ice, fire, sword qi, saber qi, and so on left behind. However, even all these magical techniques and attacks had failed to break through the net made of golden hair.

Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue stretched out her hand and grabbed the eyeshade covering her face, revealing her murderous golden eyes. "Just as Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue predicted, some trash has come to save their companions. Hehe, I've been waiting for you guys for a long time."

In front of her was that group of people from the Limitless Demon Sect led by the Hall Leader of the Nine-eyed Kama Hall.

The leader of the Nine-eyed Kama Hall had his hands behind the back at this time. He could see that the golden-haired woman in front of him was also a Sixth Stage True Monarch.

Since their surprise attack had failed, they had no choice but to fight head-on. He was likewise a Sixth Stage True Monarch and had reached the peak of the Sixth Stage Realm. Therefore, he wasn't afraid of the opposite party.

In addition, there were several cultivators of the Fifth Stage behind him that could provide support. There was a large probability that their plan would succeed.



Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue swept with her eyes the rescue team of the Limitless Demon Sect, paying special attention to the several female cultivators.

"Tsk... not even one that has fine legs?" Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue said with disdain.

From Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue's point of view, the legs of those female cultivators of the Limitless Demon Sect weren't even comparable to Shuhang's. While Song Shuhang was in the grave of Venerable Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue, she said that the shape of his legs was 'pretty good'.

The Hall Leader of the Nine-eyed Kama Hall was speechless.

What relation was there between having a good pair of legs and the upcoming battle?

"Since none of you have good-looking legs, I won't show you any mercy or have compassion for the fairer sex." Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue crossed her arms over her chest, which emphasized even more her large breasts.

Miss Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue's taunting skills were top-notch.

The words 'I won't show you any mercy or have compassion for the fairer sex' made the faces of each Peak Leader twist in anger.

"You should seize the opportunity and attack before I make my move. You have only one opportunity, after all. Because if I make my move, none of you would be left standing!" There was still a small mass of hair on Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue's head that was pointing in the direction of the people of the Limitless Demon Sect just as though it was alive.

"In that case, we'll have to ask you to give us some pointers." The Hall Leader of the Nine-eyed Kama Hall had a calm expression on his face. He was a powerhouse of the Sixth Stage True Monarch Realm and had experienced several storms. There was no way he would lose his mind over a few words.

Just as he was speaking, the hands of the Hall Leader shook, and a huge projection of a demon appeared before his back. The demon seemed to be ready to rend the heavens and destroy the earth. It used its gigantic palm to attack the flying boat.

If the palm were to hit it, the immortal boat would surely get smashed to pieces.

The opening move was precisely its strongest attack!

"Tsk, although your legs are short, you unexpectedly have some tricks up your sleeve!" Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue's golden eyes shone. If they had to meet head-on the move of the opposite party, they could only rely on her since she was likewise a Sixth Stage True Monarch.

Thereupon, Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue stretched out her hand and made a grabbing motion.

Blazing flames started to burn on her right hand. Soon after, Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue extracted from the void a saber

shrouded in flames.

The flames covered the whole blade of the saber, making it impossible to see its shape clearly. One could only faintly see the picture of a phoenix made of flames within.

It was the Nine Virtues Phoenix Saber!

At this time, the 'primordial treasure' had reached the seventh transformation and thus the Venerable rank.

After grabbing the saber, Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue welcomed the Hall Leader of the Nine-eyed Kama Hall with a saber slash.

In the blink of an eye, the world before the eyes of the members of the Limitless Demon Sect was filled with fire!

The Nine Virtues Phoenix Saber was the Saber of Destruction. The raging flames of this slash had the power to destroy everything in their path and wouldn't stop until their target had disappeared. The flames of this saber were somewhat similar to the flames of tribulation.

Chapter 578: Ferrying the soul of a Fifth Stage Spiritual Emperor

After only one slash, victory and defeat were already determined.

The Hall Leader of the Nine-eyed Kama Hall suffered a crushing defeat while facing the attack.

The projection he had summoned through his demonic technique to ward off the attack in front of him was instantly destroyed by the saber slash.

In the next moment, the omnipresent phoenix fire surrounded his body, burning away his defenses within two breaths of time. Then, one breath later, it reduced his robe to ashes. Another three breaths later, it broke through the remaining defenses his magical treasures provided and finally entwined his body, crazily burning without any sign of stopping.

"Aaaah~" the Hall Leader of the Nine-eyed Kama Hall called out in pain again and again.

It wasn't only him, all the Peak Leaders of the Fifth Stage behind him also suffered the effects of the phoenix flame and were injured by it, calling out in pain continuously.

"Let's run away!" the Hall Leader of the Nine-eyed Kama Hall said resolutely.

In the next moment, a layer of light appeared on the body of every Peak Leader.

They changed into all sorts of forms and used the blood or shadow escaping techniques, as well as extremely fast flying techniques, to flee for their life. But the phoenix fire was glued to their bodies even though they were fleeing.

As such, they were screaming in pain even while flying away.

Whether they could survive or not, it was up to their luck.

The Hall Leader of the Nine-eyed Kama Hall also activated his special escape technique and fled for his life.

He hadn't thought that things would go this way.

He had indeed considered that their ambush might end up in failure. After all, the other party came from the 'Residence of Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue', an influence related to Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue.

But he would have never expected that they would suffer such a crushing defeat.

Their whole plan to ambush the immortal boat had been ridiculous.

In front of absolute power, they got steamrolled so hard. The enemy relied on a godly weapon that increased their attack value by 99,999 points to destroy them.

Luckily, he provided an escape technique for each of his subordinates. As long as they could get back to the Limitless Demon Sect alive, they had the means to get rid of these strange flames.



Just as Senior Sister Ye Si and Song Shuhang were flying at high speed toward the flying boat, a ball of fire suddenly appeared before their eyes.

Inside the ball of fire was a black-clothed cultivator, who was continuously calling out in pain. He had a treasure with him that had created a circular barrier around him, helping him block the phoenix fire for the time being.

But his situation wasn't good. The circular barrier was on the verge of breaking, and the flames had penetrated inside, already burning through the defenses of his magical robe.

His only hope was to get away with his life with the escaping

technique.

His objective was to find a place distant from the battlefield and put out the flames there.

"A cultivator of the Limitless Demon Sect." Thanks to the black clothes they were wearing, Song Shuhang needed but a glance to determine the status of the opposite party.

"Do you know him?" Senior Sister Ye asked.

Song Shuhang nodded and said, "I've had a few contacts with the members of their sect."

It seemed there was a certain fate between him and the Limitless Demon Sect. No matter where he went, he would always end up meeting them.

Senior Sister Ye said, "Is it a friend?"

"No, more likely an enemy," Song Shuhang replied resolutely. At the same time, he took the treasured saber Broken Tyrant from his size-reducing purse. Since he had met a disciple of the Limitless Demon Sect that was in trouble, he wouldn't mind hitting him while he was down.

Senior Sister Ye nodded.

Then, she joined her palms together and clapped her hands three times, saying, "My tears are never-ending. Activate, Tome of Never-Ending Tears!"

The enemy cultivator, who was currently madly dashing about, felt a sad feeling well up in his heart.

"Sob, sob, sob~" Immediately after, he started to cry loudly, looking extremely aggrieved.

His tears fell incessantly.

Just as his tears fell, his body got heavier and heavier. The weight of his body was doubling with each tear.

After all, the <Tome of Never-Ending Tears> was a special cultivation technique of the water and earth attribute.

It was a fearsome cultivation technique, the type that would make one cry in front of everyone with just a thought! Its ability to cause mental damage was even stronger than its ability to cause physical damage!

In addition, this cultivation technique wasn't limited to attack only. If thousands of people were gathered together and one were to use the <Tome of Never-Ending Tears>, wouldn't the resulting scene with thousands of people crying be rather amusing?

"Sob, sob, sob~" The cultivator started to get impatient. But the more impatient he was getting, the more aggrievedly he was crying.

And the more aggrievedly he was crying, the heavier his body was getting.

The scariest thing was that his 'spiritual energy' was also flowing out along with his tears. In other words, he was continuously consuming his spiritual energy as his tears were falling.

Dammit, what's happening?

His vision was blurry due to the tears, and he couldn't properly see in front of him. He used several magical techniques with the capacity to remove weird statuses, as well as purifying talismans, but each and every one of them turned out to be useless.

Just what was the deal with this cultivation technique?

After thinking up to this point, he remembered that it was the same cultivation technique the Sobbing Old Man practiced!

That damned Sobbing Old Man! He was just a little loose cultivator and had dared to ambush the people of the Limitless Demon Sect. After returning to the sect, he would surely look for him to settle accounts!

...Unfortunately, he wouldn't have the chance.

By the time he arrived in front of Song Shuhang and Senior Sister Ye, the phoenix fire had already devoured the body of the cultivator.

Once it lost the protection of the barrier and magical robe, a powerhouse of the Fifth Stage Spiritual Emperor rank was burned to ashes within just five breaths.

In the void, a dim mass of phoenix fire was still burning.



Song Shuhang gazed at the phoenix fire, and he immediately felt a 'familiar' feeling coming from it.

The mass of phoenix fire also seemed to have detected Song Shuhang's presence. In the next moment, it automatically moved toward him.

After seeing how terrifying the flames were, Senior Sister Ye immediately operated her flying magical treasure and tried to dodge the incoming flames.

But right at this time, Song Shuhang stretched out the treasured saber Broken Tyrant on his own.

Then, just as the phoenix fire came in contact with Song Shuhang's treasured saber, it merged with it.

The treasured saber Broken Tyrant was a one-meter long saber forged from heavy metals inside a thunder pond; it was an extremely solid and sharp blade that surpassed other treasured sabers of similar rank in hardness and could cut even the body of a cultivator of the Fourth Stage. In addition, it had experienced the flames of tribulation and now had the innate ability to absorb and store flames.

After the phoenix fire merged with the treasured saber, blazing red veins appeared on the originally blackened saber.

Senior Sister Ye asked, "Have you already come in contact with these strange flames?"

"No, it's my first time seeing them," Song Shuhang replied. "However, I know what this flame is... it's phoenix fire, the fire produced by the Nine Virtues Phoenix Saber."

"Nine Virtues Phoenix Saber?" It seemed that Senior Sister Ye hadn't heard about this saber.

"Yes. It's a mysterious godly weapon, and I've established a contract with it. Perhaps it's the reason the flames didn't try to hurt me," Song Shuhang said.

After all, he had signed a contract with Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue to become a magical girl— ugh! ...To have the opportunity to become the Eighth Cultivator of True Virtue in the future.

Senior Sister Ye blinked and said with a smile, "I feel that fate surrounding you is truly strange."

Next, she pointed toward a place not too far away from them and said, "Shuhang, quickly look there. There is a soul down there. In addition, it's the soul of a cultivator of the Fifth Stage Realm! Since it received a special type of attack before its death, its intelligence was completely wiped out, turning it into a powerful but empty soul. Isn't this precisely the type of soul you were looking for?"

The soul of a cultivator of the Fifth Stage was something hard to come by!

After all, whenever cultivators of the Fifth Stage died, they would die both in body and mind, leaving nothing behind.

As for cultivators of the Fifth Stage whose lifespan came to an end naturally, they would choose to merge with the Great Way, dissolving their soul and entering the cycle of transmigration. Such being the case, there was no need to 'ferry' their soul.

But even if a cultivator of the Fifth Stage decided not to merge with the Great Way, their soul would still have powerful mental

energy, and it was no easy task to forcefully 'ferry' them! At the very least, a cultivator of the Second Stage like Song Shuhang wouldn't be able to 'ferry' a soul of the Fifth Stage!

But the 'empty' soul before their eyes was a completely different matter.

The phoenix fire was extremely overbearing and almost completely incinerated that cultivator of the Fifth Stage. Their body, magical treasures, spirit stones, and mental energy were destroyed.

Anyway, although the Nine Virtues Phoenix Saber embodied the power of destruction, it embodied the power of nirvanic rebirth as well. The empty soul before their eyes symbolized that slim chance of survival that one had amidst destruction.

As such, a powerful but empty soul was left behind after the cultivator of the Fifth Stage was thoroughly burned by the flames; even the memories the soul had had been wiped out.

Although ferrying an empty soul such as this couldn't be compared to ferrying the complete soul of a cultivator of the Fifth Stage, it was still quite the gain!

"The soul of a cultivator of the Fifth Stage... even if it's empty, it should get me quite a bit of power of virtue if I manage to ferry it," Song Shuhang muttered to himself.

"I'll keep a watch for you. Go and quickly ferry it," Senior Sister Ye said and suddenly covered her eyes, bursting into tears.

"Were you moved again?" Song Shuhang asked.

Senior Sister Ye sobbed and explained, "No. Sometimes, I just feel like crying after using the <Tome of Never-Ending Tears>. You don't have to worry. It will pass quickly."

The troubles related to the <Tome of Never-Ending Tears> were nothing but ordinary!

Song Shuhang fluttered until arriving next to the soul of the cultivator of the Fifth Stage.

How much power of virtue would he obtain after ferrying this soul to the afterworld?

Song Shuhang started to silently operate the Soul Ferrying Technique and chant ‹Ksitigarbha's Soul Ferrying Scripture›, pointing his finger toward the soul of the Fifth Stage rank.

The ferrying process had started.

The empty soul of the Fifth Stage rank didn't put up any resistance and was slowly ferried, turning into pure particles of light.

When Song Shuhang ferried the soul, he didn't feel anything from it. No sadness, no anger, no remorse.

The phoenix fire had burned all of it.

This time, the ferry process was rather long.

Then, just as the ferrying process was about to end, a grateful feeling was eventually transmitted from the soul.

In the next moment, the power of virtue condensed and fell onto Song Shuhang's body.

The power of virtue divided into three portions.

The first portion strengthened Song Shuhang's mental energy... the mental boost Song Shuhang received after ferrying this soul of the Fifth Stage rank only increased his mental energy by a bit.

Another portion strengthened his constitution. As before, the boost wasn't much.

The last portion transformed into light of virtue and shrouded his body. In addition, the light of virtue was partly visible!

The fact that the light of virtue was partly visible meant that one had ferried to the afterworld 1000 souls!

Only after leading to the right path 1000 souls could one call themselves virtuous.

Only after leading to the right path 10,000 souls would the light of virtue start to protect one's body.

Only after leading to the right path 100,000 souls would the light of virtue shrouding one's body undergo a qualitative change!

The weakened and empty soul of the Fifth Stage Spiritual Emperor was comparable to a thousand ordinary souls! It was easy to imagine how big the amount of light of virtue would have been if it had been a complete soul of the Fifth Stage rank!

"Just ferrying one soul was comparable to doing a thousand good deeds. In that case, would the light of virtue start to protect my body if I were to ferry ten of them?" Song Shuhang couldn't help but sigh with emotion.

Chapter 579: Hopefully, it won't scare him too much

Oh, I shouldn't be too greedy! I was lucky enough that I managed to ferry that empty soul of a Fifth Stage Spiritual Emperor today. Wishing to ferry ten such souls at once is simply too much. Moreover, it's very difficult for such a coincidence to take place again.

After thinking up to this point, Song Shuhang prepared to take back his finger.

But right at this time, Senior Sister Ye had unwittingly arrived next to his body. Then, just like the previous time, she cutely stretched out her fingers and touched Song Shuhang's hand.

The remaining power of the Soul Ferrying Technique was still lingering on Shuhang's fingers.

When Senior Sister Ye's fingers touched Shuhang's, the two of them received an electric shock once more, and their bodies trembled.

In addition, the electric shock they received this time was even stronger than the previous one. Shuhang felt his whole body numb.

Shuhang didn't know whether to laugh or cry as he exclaimed, "Ye Si."

"I'm here!" Senior Sister Ye quickly replied and looked at Shuhang, blinking her eyes.

At the same time, Song Shuhang sensed her mood through that contact with her fingers—at this time, she was both happy and hopeful.

"Nevermind. It's fine as long as you are happy," Song Shuhang said softly.

"Hehe." Senior Sister Ye smiled.



Meanwhile.

In the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion, Celestial Pavilion.

Li Yinzhu had been finally saved!

Earlier, the pair of male and female attendants searched through the whole Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion but was still unable to find Li Yinzhu. Finally, the male attendant thought of the 'forbidden area', the Celestial Pavilion.

As expected, he and the female attendant found Li Yinzhu dangling in front of the entrance of the Celestial Pavilion in a rather embarrassing position as soon as they got there.

The duo hastily used a special method to contact Pavilion Master Chu.

In the end, Pavilion Master Chu managed to reply to the pair of male and female attendants with much difficulty.

After getting tossed and turned for a while, Li Yinzhu was finally released.

In the next moment, Li Yinzhu's tears couldn't help but flow out of her eyes.

"Excuse me, can you tell me where is the bathroom?" Li Yinzhu said in a trembling voice.



After the pair of male and female attendants brought Li Yinzhu away, in the Celestial Pavilion, Pavilion Master Chu rubbed her eyes and sat up.

"So~ tired~ aah~" Pavilion Master Chu stretched herself. Her long hair seemed to have grown even longer. However, she had no plan to cut it and allowed it to spread all over the floor.

"I would really like to sleep some more," Pavilion Master Chu said lazily.

After sitting on the bed in a daze for a while, Pavilion Master Chu apparently noticed something. She activated the surveillance system and looked at the recordings, discovering the message the luminous jellyfish had left for her.

In the message, the luminous jellyfish said that her duty was over. Therefore, she conveniently carried off her reward and described some matters that happened during the past few years.

Finally, the luminous jellyfish on the screen said softly, "In that case... let us meet again, Chu."

"Indeed. Let's us meet again, my friend. I hope you'll be able to find your path to immortality," Pavilion Master Chu replied softly. She was aware that the luminous jellyfish had only around 3000 years of lifespan left. Although it was a very long period of time for the average man, it was nothing to speak of for a Ninth Stage Tribulation Transcender.

If the luminous jellyfish couldn't find her own way to immortality, her lifespan would come to an end, putting an end to her life.



Afterward, Pavilion Master Chu started to doze.

She felt very sleepy.

But after a short moment, she suddenly opened her eyes and rubbed her eyebrows, saying, "Ah! I now remember what I had forgotten... I forgot to pick that kid called Shuhang and that other girl from the 'Lower City' of the Time City!"

According to what her jellyfish friend said, that boy named Shuhang had managed to comprehend the technique Slow-Witted Song had left inside the Dark Night Time Ring!

That kid is likewise surnamed 'Song'... just what is the relationship between him and Slow-Witted Song?

They weren't the same person, and he wasn't his reincarnation, either. However, there was surely a relationship between the two. Otherwise, had it just been a big coincidence that Song Shuhang had managed to get his hands on Slow-Witted Song's inheritance?

"Forget it. I should seize the opportunity and get that Song boy and that girl out of the Time City before I forget about it again." Pavilion Master Chu stood up and dragged her long hair along, preparing to take Song Shuhang out of the Time City.

But just as she took two steps, several memories were transmitted to her mind. In the memory, Ye Si and Song Shuhang met and decided to become partners. After that was the memory of Ye Si bringing Song Shuhang outside to take a stroll in the proximity of the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion.

"..." Pavilion Master Chu.

I just slept for a few days, and so many things happened inside the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion? Not only did that boy called Shuhang got his hands on the inheritance inside the Dark Night Time Ring, but he even met Ye Si, becoming her partner?

Pavilion Master Chu sighed faintly.

Then, she gently touched her chest. It was the position of the Heart Aperture, and there was a contract rune in there.

Pavilion Master Chu lowered her and muttered to herself, "A partner of one's liking..."

Speaking of which, she had also considered the idea of a partner once. While she was in despair, and the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion on the verge of destruction, she fantasized about a man appearing before her eyes and saving the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion from its fate.

Unfortunately, the final outcome was very different from her

fantasy...

The people in this world believed that Fairy Chu, the only survivor of the ancient Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion, had been living inside the dreamland she had created since after the event.

According to them, the beautiful Fairy Chu had recreated the 'Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion' based on her wishes, unwilling to wake up from this beautiful dream until the end of time.

But in reality, Fairy Chu had woken up long ago from the dreamland she had created. After dreaming for a long, long time, she suddenly started crying and woke up from the dream.

Even if the people created with the illusory reality had corporeal temperature and aura just like real people did, they were nothing but illusions in the end.

After bitterly weeping, Fairy Chu finally woke up.

However, she decided not to put an end to the illusion of the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion.

The illusory reality used to recreate the 'Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion' had already become her path, the path she would use to reach the Immortal Realm.

"One day, I'll certainly resurrect all the disciples of the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion, allowing them to live in this world once again."

She didn't know if the Immortal Realm could allow her to realize this dream of hers.

But it didn't really matter... because if the Immortal Realm wasn't enough, she would try to find a way to become the embodiment of the Will of the Heavens, the all-powerful and all-knowing Wielder of the Will.

The whole Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion was a dreamland that Fairy Chu had created through her illusory reality. As such, all the

disciples of the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion were unable to leave the range of Fairy Chu's illusory reality.



"But if that boy surnamed Song wants to take Ye Si away from the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion, there are a few things I need to tell him first." Pavilion Master Chu raised her head and looked at the bronze sphere next to her body. The sphere had the shape of the Earth. Pavilion Master Chu vision ultimately fell on one part of China. It was the original location of the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion.

"Hopefully, it won't scare him too much. However, his scared appearance should be rather amusing, right? Ahaha." Pavilion Master Chu suddenly started laughing.

Then, she touched her chest once again, and the faint radiance the rune in her Heart Aperture was emitting disappeared without traces.

After laughing, Pavilion Master Chu's vision swept the whole Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion and fell onto the body of the Sobbing Old Man, who was still in front of the entrance.

"The <Tome of Never-Ending Tears>... what an interesting turn of events..." Soon after, Pavilion Master Chu looked away and let the Sobbing Old Man wait in front of the entrance.

What the Sobbing Old Man practiced was the <Tome of Never-Ending Tears>. Such being the case, there was some fate between him and Ye Si. Pavilion Master Chu decided not to interfere and just wait for Song Shuhang and Ye Si to return and meet the Sobbing Old Man.

Finally, her vision swept another portion of the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion and fell on Li Yinzhu's body, who was currently rushing toward the bathroom.

It was quite scary, wasn't it? Not even the tiniest detail could

escape Pavilion Master Chu's eyes while they were inside the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion!

Anyway, from the looks of it, it was the same girl she had hung at the entrance for a few days.

After glancing at Li Yinzhu's body, she discovered the cause of her disease. She had been affected by an extremely cold qi while she was in her mother's womb. Afterward, her condition worsened since the disease wasn't treated properly. The fact that Li Yinzhu was still alive was already a miracle.

Pavilion Master Chu wasn't skilled in ice-type cultivation technique and had no means to cure the disease.

But from what she saw, the cold inside the body of the girl had already reached the critical point. Although she relied on valuable raw materials to maintain her life earlier, it would be no longer possible to do so.

If her illness wasn't cured, in one year at most, the girl would face a crisis that would endanger her life. If she were to make it through, she could live for some more time.

But if she were to fail, she would be forever sealed in the ice, never to wake up again.

Is that boy called Song Shuhang aware of this matter?

I should remind him when the time comes.

After thinking up to this point, Pavilion Master Chu started to get sleepy.

Then, she quickly started to doze.



In the meantime.

Just as Song Shuhang and Senior Sister Ye were preparing to head in the direction of the flying boat of the 'Residence of Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue', a wave of wailing balls of fire advanced

toward them from a distant place.

There were twelve in total.

"They are all Fifth Stage Spiritual Emperors." Senior Sister Ye Si swept the twelve balls of fire with her gaze and determined their strength.

"They are all members of the Limitless Demon Sect." Song Shuhang opened his eyes wide.

Earlier, I just spoke carelessly. I didn't think that a wave of Fifth Stage Spiritual Emperors would really come over while burning and screaming...

It seems my luck is especially good today.

Is it possible that Senior White thought about me while exploring the ancient ruins today and gave me his blessings?

Anyway, twelve burning Fifth Stage Spiritual Emperors were coming over! If they could take them down, they would have twelve empty souls of the Fifth Stage rank to ferry!

One of those souls was comparable to 1000 ordinary souls. If he could ferry them, he would condense enough light of virtue that it would start to protect his body!

"Ye Si, is it possible for you to intercept those balls of fire?" Song Shuhang asked.

"Sure. As I said before, my ‹Tome of Never-Ending Tears› is incredibly powerful!" Senior Sister Ye said full of confidence.

"In that case, let's intercept them!" Song Shuhang said.

Once the light of virtue had condensed to the point of protecting his body, it would also be time for him to return to Earth.

After losing that bet with Senior White, he agreed to spend 30 days in space. If we count the time he passed inside the 'Lower City' of the Time City, he had stayed in space for way more than 30 days.

Thereupon, the conditions Senior White set should have been satisfied already.

After returning to Earth, he would need to learn how to perform in a movie.

Oh, right. Regardless of the type of movie they were going to shoot, he had to show off those vehicle certificates in one of the scenes. Although the scene would look rather stupid, he had to include it for Papa Song's sake.

"Shuhang, be careful. Don't get distracted!" Senior Sister Ye called out.

A layer of light wrapped in fire headed toward Song Shuhang. Shuhang unconsciously stretched out his hand to keep off the incoming object.

But right at that time, the secret appraisal technique activated.

It activated even though he was wearing a pair of gloves.

Seventy or so wounds opened on Song Shuhang's body at once, with blood crazily spurting out!

Chapter 580: Ghost spirit: I'm dying, I'm dying, I'm dying!

What the hell is happening? Why has the secret appraisal technique activated on its own?! Song Shuhang was unable to understand what was going on.

At this time, he was wearing the gloves of passion of Swordsman Wooden Ox, as well as a thick spacesuit! But more importantly, his hands didn't touch anything!

Although he unconsciously raised his hands to ward off the layer of light wrapped in flames coming toward him, he had yet to touch it!

In addition, even if he had initially raised his hands, his second reaction was to move to one side to dodge the incoming object!

Not to mention that Senior Sister Ye was still next to him, and she surely wouldn't let the layer of light wrapped in flames bump into Song Shuhang!

As such, there was still some distance between Song Shuhang and the ball of fire heading toward him! And more importantly, even if Song Shuhang couldn't dodge the attack, Senior Sister Ye would block it for him!

But regardless of what was going on, Song Shuhang's secret appraisal technique still decided to activate.

What a low blow!

Seventy or so wounds opened on his body, and blood crazily spurted out. As if that wasn't enough, the wounds were particularly deep this time, and the pain made Song Shuhang shrink into a small ball.

He immediately activated the healing technique on his ancient bronze ring. The radiance of the healing technique fell onto his

body and lessened the stabbing pain he was feeling.

Senior Sister Ye, who was currently trying to intercept the twelve balls of fire, noticed that Song Shuhang had curled up into a small ball. "Shuhang, did your appraisal technique activate again?

Song Shuhang forced a smile and said via secret sound transmission, "Yes! It activated without any reason. It seems that not even these gloves can thoroughly stop the appraisal technique from activating!"

"Try to endure. I'll take care of these twelve balls and heal your wounds," Senior Sister Ye said.

Her 〈Tome of Never-Ending Tears〉 was a rather eccentric technique. With that, she managed to stop the twelve Fifth Stage Spiritual Emperors of the Limitless Demon Sect that were fleeing with an 'escape technique' all alone!

The 'escape technique' that the Hall Leader of the Nine-eyed Kama Hall had provided for the Peak Leaders under his commands was enough to let them escape from a Sixth Stage True Monarch! These 'escape techniques' could either increase their speed, making them reach the same speed as a Sixth Stage True Monarch riding a flying sword, allow them to gain strange properties as the Blood Evasion Technique, or allow them to temporarily make their body disappear as the Ying Yang Escape Technique.

However, the twelve Peak Leaders of the Limitless Demon Sect were intercepted even though they were using all sorts of escape techniques. The Peak Leaders started to cry, and tears streamed down their faces. Their bodies became heavier and heavier, and they started to lose their spiritual energy as well.

At the same time, Senior Sister Ye placed her two fingers in the place between her eyebrows and swept the twelve Peak Leaders with her eyes which had purple eyeshadow around them.

In the next moment, a strange technique was released from

Senior Sister Ye's eyes.

It wasn't a magical technique, but a type of innate skill!

In an instant, the twelve Peak Leaders felt that their consciousness had been overtaken. Their minds became blank, and two eyes with purple eyeshadow around them were coldly staring at them.

When the two eyes with purple eyeshadow stared at them, they felt as though they were frogs being stared at by a snake, completely unable to move.

They stood in their original position, and the phoenix fire gobbled up their bodies.



At this time, runes gushed out of Song Shuhang's eyes like running water, falling onto that layer of light wrapped in flames before his body.

Soon after, the runes formed the picture of a clock that turned counterclockwise.

After a short while, the runes returned to Shuhang's eyes.

It's the phoenix fire produced with the slash of the primordial treasure 'Nine Virtues Phoenix Saber'. It's one of the prototype versions of the flames of tribulation. It's the embodiment of destruction and will burn the enemy until nothing is left. However, there is also a small chance of survival hidden amidst the destruction.

I paid that huge price because the appraisal technique appraised the 'phoenix fire'?

Apparently, it's one of the prototype versions of the flames of tribulation... in other words, the flames of tribulation are the result of a mixture between the phoenix fire and other types of special flames?

Perhaps this was the very reason the Nine Virtues Phoenix Saber could allow its owner to live even if they had failed to transcend the tribulation. Due to the special properties of the saber, the owner could pay a certain 'price' and conceal themselves from the eyes of the Wielder of the Will after the failure, allowing them to keep living through a special method.

But that wasn't all! They also had the possibility to reverse their condition and return to their previous state!

"Too bad that this information is completely useless to me!" Song Shuhang's eyes had started to tear up.

He paid such a huge price just to get this piece of information. Seventy deep wounds had now opened on his body. Just what was the origin of the Nine Virtues Phoenix Saber?

After Song Shuhang thought up to this point, a strange feeling welled up in this heart.

The strange appraisal technique seemed to have triggered again, going one step further. After appraising the 'phoenix fire', it followed the trails and reached the root, the Nine Virtues Phoenix Saber.

"Shiet! What kind of joke is this! Stop immediately! I'll die!" Song Shuhang got a scare.

However, it was too late!

Another piece of information appeared in his mind.

It's the primordial treasure 'Nine Virtues Phoenix Saber, something the third Wielder of the Will left behind before going missing.

It was a very simple piece of information.

But the content was anything but simple.

After all, it was related to the Wielder of the Heavens' Will!

The Wielder of the Will was supposed to be eternal and

everlasting. But since the ancient times up until now, the person in charge of the Will of the Heavens had changed several times.

The Wielder of the Will was eternal and everlasting, and after they had carried the Will of the Heavens, there was no one that could injure them. In addition, there was no one that could kill them unless they themselves wished to die.

It was unknown to which era the third Wielder of the Will belonged to, but they intentionally left behind the Nine Virtues Phoenix Saber before going missing. There was surely a big secret hidden within that was possibly related to the reason the Wielder of the Will had gone missing.

What kind of price would he have to pay for this huge secret?

Song Shuhang had a very bad premonition at this time.

Was he going to die?

He gritted his teeth and got ready to withstand the incoming wave of pain.

But even after a while... no wounds appeared on Song Shuhang's body.

He unexpectedly didn't pay any additional price for this appraisal?

Since when had the secret appraisal technique become so merciful?



Just as he was in deep thoughts, he heard Senior Sister Ye's gentle voice. "Shuhang, are you alright?"

"Yes, I'm fine." Song Shuhang nodded. The wounds on his body had recovered, and he was just feeling a little bit of pain right now.

"That's a relief." Senior Sister Ye heaved a sigh of relief. "Shuhang, come and ferry those souls."

The twelve Golden Core Spiritual Emperors of the Limitless Demon Sect in front of her body had already changed into empty souls under the effect of the phoenix fire.

Senior Sister Ye just intercepted them and didn't do anything else. The phoenix fire burning on their bodies did all the work, finished them off.

Senior Sister Ye was very curious to see what kind of change would Song Shuhang's light of virtue undergo after ferrying to the afterworld these souls.

Song Shuhang took a deep breath. There were twelve empty souls of the Golden Core Spiritual Emperor rank in front of him. If he could ferry all of them, his light of virtue would directly reach the point where it would start protecting his body!

As such, he immediately started to chant <Ksitigarbha's Soul Ferrying Scripture> to ferry the twelve souls!

As each soul of the Golden Core Spiritual Emperor rank was ferried, the power of virtue condensed and fell onto his body. The power of virtue falling on his body was equivalent to the one he would obtain after ferrying 1000 ordinary souls!



In a place not too far away from Song Shuhang and Senior Sister Ye, the Hall Leader of the 'Nine-eyed Kama Hall' was looking at the scene of Song Shuhang ferrying the souls of the Peak Leaders under his command with a furious expression on his face.

He really wished he could go over and immediately kill that little cultivator of the Second Stage!

Unluckily, it was something beyond his capability right now.

He had paid a huge price to use a type of skin shedding technique to get rid of the phoenix fire.

In addition, someone was currently chasing him.

The person chasing him wasn't the golden-haired Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue, but a woman wearing the clothes of the Miao ethnic minority from China.

The woman had a tall and slender build. A line of blood-red paint extended from her nose to her cheeks; it didn't affect her beauty, but made her look even more charming.

This woman was precisely the member of the ancient witch clan that Young Master Hai had lured over there, the ancient witch Elise.

"Hehehe." Elise's laughter reverberated in the void. The laughter directly echoed within one's ears, just like the secret sound transmission technique.

If the Hall Leader of the Nine-eyed Kama Hall and Elise were to fight under normal circumstances, each of them would have a 50-50 chance of winning.

But today, the Hall Leader had been forced to use a powerful lifesaving technique to get rid of the phoenix fire after he received that slash from the Nine Virtues Phoenix Saber, consuming a great deal of energy.

Therefore, the Hall Leader was hellbent on escaping. His medicinal pills, cosmos bag, and so on had been reduced to ashes by the phoenix fire. As such, he couldn't even rely on external objects to recover his spiritual energy.

In the end, he could only look at Song Shuhang with a bitter expression from afar. He noted down his looks and kept fleeing.



Song Shuhang continued to ferry the twelve souls of the Spiritual Emperor rank.

Meanwhile, Senior Sister Ye kept watching over him. Then, she shot a glance at the faraway Hall Leader of the Nine-eyed Kama Hall, sensing the hatred and anger in the eyes of the opposite

party.

Luckily, someone was currently chasing the Hall Leader. Otherwise, if he had come over, Senior Sister Ye and Song Shuhang would have had no choice but to flee for their life.

After all, Senior Sister Ye only had the strength of the Fifth Stage Realm. The fact that she could rely on her tailor-made <Tome of Never-Ending Tears> to escape from the hands of a Sixth Stage True Monarch was already impressive enough.

Next to her, as soon as Song Shuhang ferried the seventh soul, the light of virtue on his body started to change.

Each soul of the Spiritual Emperor rank was comparable to at least 1000 ordinary souls. Some of them, which were a little more powerful, were worth even 1300 or 1400 ordinary souls.

Thereupon, after adding the empty soul that Song Shuhang had ferried earlier to the total, the value of virtue he possessed right now had reached 10,000 points.

After reaching 10,000 points of virtue, the light of virtue would start to protect one's body.

Now, all cultivators would be able to sense the power of virtue emitting from Song Shuhang's body.

If these cultivators had opened their 'Eye Aperture', they would be able to see the bright golden light surrounding his body as well.

Earth, China.

Song Shuhang's ghost spirit had been unjustly implicated once again.

The ghost spirit was planning to return to Wenzhou City, direction Shuhang's house, to contact Yu Jiaojiao. But just as it was on its way back home, it suddenly felt severe pain.

The two wounds on its back opened once more. This time, the

wounds were bigger, deeper, and more painful than the previous time.

The ghost spirit immediately guessed that the main body had triggered by mistake that weird 'secret appraisal technique'. It was unknown what Shuhang had appraised, but the ghost spirit had been unjustly caught in the crossfire.

Thanks to the experience it gained from the previous time, the ghost spirit cut off the sense sharing between Song Shuhang and itself on own initiative.

Then, it quietly sent a message to the main body.

I'm dying, I'm dying, I'm dying!

Chapter 581: Main body, you have five minutes to mend my broken heart

Amidst the atmosphere of Earth, a luminous jellyfish passed through space and appeared.

The jellyfish was a Ninth Stage Tribulation Transcender, and as such, she could control the power of space. She needed but a few breaths to cross the whole solar system, returning to Earth from the edge of the solar system.

At this time, she was holding the treasure chest with the Dark Night Time Ring sealed inside. She intended to look for a few fellow daoists she had gone through thick and thin with to research the Dark Night Time Ring together.

Not too long ago, a murderous aura was transmitted from the Dark Night Time Ring, and the aura was so strong that it affected her mind as well. This turn of events made her feel somewhat uneasy.

"I should first head in the direction of the East China Sea..." the luminous jellyfish said softly. From what she remembered, the immortal cave of one of her friends was located in the East China Sea. She could only hope that her friend hadn't moved to another place in the meantime.

Then, just as the luminous jellyfish entered Earth's atmosphere, that treasure chest covered by layer upon layer of seals started to shake.

Immediately after, a space gate appeared next to the treasure chest, and something tried to come out of the sealed box!

The luminous jellyfish furrowed her tentacles. The thing inside the Dark Night Time Ring was full of anger and hatred. Therefore, she couldn't be careless and let something so dangerous out before making sure of the situation.

"Ah!" the jellyfish shouted softly. In the next moment, her tentacles quickly spread out and literally sewed up the space gate.

However, a space tunnel had appeared on the 'back' of the space gate she had just sewed up.

In the next moment, a figure stepped out of the space tunnel. It was a man dressed up as a scholar. His whole body was giving off a multicolored luster, looking extremely pure and clean. However, his eyes were blood-red, with a wild expression in them.

The space gate had two sides. Other than the front side, there was another one in the back that was very difficult to detect.

The scholar calmly floated in the void.

After seeing the scholar, the luminous jellyfish opened her eyes wide and exclaimed, "Slow-Witted Song!"

This frenzied scholar that was giving off a multicolored luster from all over the body was precisely that Slow-Witted Song that had left behind the Dark Night Time Ring. He was a common friend of the luminous jellyfish and Pavilion Master Chu.

But what was Slow-Witted Song doing inside the Dark Night Time Ring?

Back then, Slow-Witted Song personally gave the Dark Night Time Ring, as well as that treasure related to 'time', to Pavilion Master Chu.

Such being the case, why had he come out of the Dark Night Time Ring at this time?

Was it possible that he sealed himself inside the sphere long before and left the Dark Night Time Ring to Pavilion Master Chu through a clone or something similar?

After hearing the words of the luminous jellyfish, the lustrous scholar turned his head around. Although his eyes were still full of hatred and anger, his face was very calm. It seemed he had

suppressed his killing intent.

"Hello, Fellow Daoist. It's regretful, but I'm not Slow-Witted Song," the lustrous scholar apologetically said while wearing a faint smile on his face. "Many, many years ago, I asked him to give me a hand and seal me inside the Dark Night Time Ring, untying the seal and releasing me at a fixed time."

The lustrous scholar continued with his explanation, "As for my current appearance, it should be the work of that nasty Slow-Witted Song. Fellow Daoist, if you are an acquaintance of Slow-Witted Song, you should be well aware of his wicked nature."

The luminous jellyfish nodded. It was within Slow-Witted Song's character to do something of the sort.

"Fellow Daoist, my time is limited. If there is nothing else you have to ask of me, I'll take my leave. I need to expend a large amount of 'time' to maintain my current self. Each second of my time is extremely precious." The scholar smiled and cupped his hands. "I must see a person before my time is up."

After saying goodbye, the scholar didn't wait for the reply of the luminous jellyfish and merged with space, disappearing without traces.

The luminous jellyfish opened the treasure chest and saw that the Dark Night Time Ring was still intact.

In that case, did that scholar really have Slow-Witted Song seal him inside the Dark Night Time Ring on own initiative? Otherwise, if he had forcefully broken the seal, the Dark Night Time Ring should have also broken into pieces.

After pondering for a short amount of time, the luminous jellyfish clenched her tentacles and decided to chase after the scholar.

She wanted to see what the scholar was planning to do!



The lustrous scholar was likewise an existence of the Ninth Stage Tribulation Transcender Realm. He directly passed through space and eventually arrived next to Song Shuhang's ghost spirit.

"Found you." The lustrous scholar faintly smiled at the ghost spirit lying on the ground.

The ghost spirit was currently in extreme pain. After sending that message to the main body, it directly lay prone on the roof a multistoried building, not moving in the slightest.

Due to the extreme pain it was feeling, the ghost spirit pondered for a moment and sent Shuhang another message.

Main body, I'll give you five minutes to mend my broken heart. Otherwise, I'll activate the sense sharing once again! Why suffer alone when we can happily suffer all together! Sharing is caring!

Just as the ghost spirit send this message, a scholar giving off a multicolored luster from all over the body appeared next to it.

The eyes of the scholar were full of hatred and anger, but his face had a gentle smile hanging on it.

Who is this guy? The ghost spirit didn't recall ever seeing this person.

"Time is running out, and I don't have the leisure to explain things to you," the lustrous scholar said gently, "I want to borrow the body of your ghost spirit and use it to meet someone. After I'm done, I'll safely return the ghost spirit to you along with a reward that you'll surely like!"

The ghost spirit was dumbfounded. This person wanted to borrow its body and use it for his purposes?

Was it something similar to spiritual possession? But it itself was a ghost spirit! How could it be possessed?!

"Don't resist and allow me to enter your body," the scholar said

gently. Although his voice was gentle, he hadn't contemplated a refusal at all.

I refuse! I won't allow a man to get inside me! Song Shuhang's ghost spirit opened its mouth and roared, but it was regrettable that it couldn't speak.

Just in this fashion, that scholar that was giving off a multicolored luster from all over the body entered the body of Shuhang's ghost spirit!

The ghost spirit felt its consciousness becoming heavy, losing the capacity to feel. After losing all feelings, it couldn't feel the severe pain transmitting from the wounds on its back anymore. Was this fortune amidst misfortune?

Two breaths later, the ghost spirit got up from the ground.

Its eyes had become red, full of anger and hatred, but its face was very calm. At the same time, it was now wearing an ancient scholarly robe.

The ghost spirit stood in its original place, not moving in the slightest. However, it had the air of a powerful expert and was currently emitting an awe-inspiring aura.

But after a short while, the calm face of the ghost spirit fiercely twisted.

"Painful, painful, painful! F*ck, I think I'm dying..."

In the meantime, after successfully ferrying to the afterworld all those souls of the Fifth Stage Spiritual Emperor rank, Song Shuhang's value of virtue had reached 17,000 points.

His original goal was to reach a value of virtue of 100,000 points, and within just one day, his goal was already next to 20% complete.

But right at this time, Song Shuhang faintly paused.

He had received a message from the ghost spirit.

I'm dying, I'm dying, I'm dying!

What's the matter with the ghost spirit? Did it meet unexpected danger?

Song Shuhang immediately prepared to contact the ghost spirit to ask for details.

However, another message arrived at this time: ***Main body, I'll give you five minutes to mend my broken heart. Otherwise, I'll activate the sense sharing once again! Why suffer alone when we can happily suffer all together! Sharing is caring!***

"..." Song Shuhang.

He had more or less understood what had happened. No wonder he didn't feel any pain after the secret appraisal technique activated just now. It seemed that the ghost spirit had withstood all the pain in his stead.

The secret appraisal technique was a rather strange technique. Sometimes, he would suffer the consequences if the ghost spirit had appraised something. Other times, it would be the ghost spirit who would suffer the consequence if he had appraised something.

After thinking up to this point, Song Shuhang got ready to contact the ghost spirit and mend its broken heart.

But right at this time, the connection between Song Shuhang and the ghost spirit disappeared.

The connection wasn't broken, but a powerful force managed to block it.

After the cultivator and the ghost spirit had signed the contract and completed the synchronization, it was no longer possible to cut off the connection between the two.

However, a great force was still capable of temporarily blocking the connection between the ghost spirit and its main body.

Before the connection between Song Shuhang and the ghost

spirit was blocked, the last scene the ghost spirit saw was transmitted over to Shuhang.

A scholar giving off a multicolored luster from all over the body had borrowed the body of the ghost spirit.

Song Shuhang: 😳

Is something like borrowing the body of a ghost spirit even possible?

After seeing Song Shuhang in a daze, Senior Sister Ye asked, "Shuhang, did something happen?"

"Someone forcefully borrowed my ghost spirit," Song Shuhang replied.

"Someone forcefully borrowed your ghost spirit?" Senior Sister Ye was temporarily at a loss. It was actually possible to borrow something like a ghost spirit?

"Ye Si, I need to return to Earth," Song Shuhang said after pondering for a moment.

The ghost spirit was simply too important for him. Without it, the speed of his practice would become much slower.

Moreover, the ghost spirit was his other half. Although the opposite party said that he would return the ghost spirit, and reward him as well, how could one feel relieved when their other half had been forcefully taken away?

"Good. Let's return to the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion first. I'll notify my teacher or the pavilion master, and I'll accompany you to Earth," Senior Sister Ye said and comforted Song Shuhang in a gentle voice, "You don't have to worry. It's impossible to cut off the connection between the ghost spirit and the main body. Even if the opposite party forcefully took it away, we can still find it."

Song Shuhang gently nodded and said, "Thank you, Ye Si."

"Sit tight. We are returning to the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion,"

Senior Sister Ye said.

After hearing about the ghost spirit being forcefully taken away, a certain memory resurfaced in Senior Sister Ye's mind. She felt as though she had also experienced something of the sort. However, the memory was very unclear.

Senior Sister Ye operated the flying magical treasure and prepared to return to the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion.

But right at this time, a flying boat quickly approached Shuhang and Ye Si.

A jade white lion flew out of the flying boat. From the looks of it, someone had kicked it out.

"Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue, you savage! Can't you be a little gentler?" the jade white lion Fourth Cultivator of True Virtue angrily said while flying away.

"A puny creature with such short legs unexpectedly wants me to be gentler?" Miss Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue's voice echoed from the flying boat.

"..." Fourth Cultivator of True Virtue.

It was a jade white lion! Was it supposed to grow long legs like that of a giraffe now?!

Fourth Cultivator of True Virtue rolled a few times and arrived in front of Song Shuhang. Then, it calmly said with its body trembling, "We meet again, little friend Shuhang."

"We meet again, Senior Fourth Cultivator of True Virtue," Song Shuhang said. The members of the Limitless Demon Sect had been killed with the Nine Virtues Phoenix Saber. Therefore, he wasn't surprised that Fourth Cultivator of True Virtue and Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue were around.

"Earlier, Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue discovered that someone had absorbed the phoenix fire. So we came here to take a look.

Originally it was you, little friend Shuhang." Fourth Cultivator of True Virtue smiled and gave Shuhang a talisman. "This is the talisman of the 'Sun Chasing Flying Technique' that Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue prepared for you, take it."

Chapter 582: What? Has my Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion perished?

From the looks of it, the talisman of the Sun Chasing Flying Technique was something similar to the Ten Thousand Mile Flying Escape Technique.

The jade white lion Fourth Cultivator of True Virtue continued with its explanation, "Little friend Shuhang, Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue made some progress while examining your Soul Devouring Demonic Gourd. The Sun Chasing Flying Technique is a type of flying technique, and once Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue manages to find that person related to the Soul Devouring Demonic Gourd, it will be possible to notify little friend Shuhang through the Sun Chasing Flying Technique and bring you toward us."

Song Shuhang muttered, "That person related to the Soul Devouring Demonic Gourd?"

The Soul Devouring Demonic Gourd was something he had sent into space through the disposable flying sword Venerable White gave him back then. Afterward, the gourd underwent some strange mutation while it was in space, and Song Shuhang had no idea with whom it had come into contact while it was up there.

"That person is a very special existence, and you can't say his name aloud before finding him. Otherwise, he will discover us and flee to a faraway place. Right, Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue told me to remind you to prepare your spirit stones if there is something you want to buy. Because as long as you have enough spirit stones, you might be able to buy the item you wish for!" Fourth Cultivator of True Virtue reminded.

Regardless of what it is, I might be able to buy it as long as I have enough spirit stones? In that case, should I try buying the 'blood of demodragon'?

Song Shuhang nodded and said, "Thanks for your reminder, Senior Fourth Cultivator of True Virtue."

"In that case, let us meet again, little friend Shuhang." The jade white lion waved its paws and wind surged underneath its feet, bringing it back to the flying boat.

Song Shuhang put away the talisman of the Sun Chasing Flying Technique he had just received.

It would be great if he could buy the 'blood of demodragon'. However, there was one big problem—spirit stones! He would need a large number of them.

How could he obtain a large number of spirit stones within a short period of time?

What was the quickest way to get a large number of spirit stones aside from accidentally finding a meteoroid that was made of top-quality spirit stones while flying about in space?

'The quickest method to obtain spirit stones is to look for a senior and ask them. I can lend them to you if you want.' Venerable White's words reverberated in Song Shuhang's mind.

Should he really borrow them?



After saying goodbye to Fourth Cultivator of True Virtue, Senior Sister Ye and Song Shuhang returned to the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion.

This time, they decided to enter through the front gate.

But just as Shuhang and Ye Si approached the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion, a sobbing sound was transmitted from afar.

"Sob, sob, sob..." The sobbing sound seemed to have a bewitching power and reverberated in their minds even though they were in the middle of space, just like the secret sound transmission technique.

"The <Tome of Never-Ending Tears>?" Song Shuhang was very familiar with this sobbing sound. Each time Senior Sister Ye was moved to tears, her sobbing sound would resemble this one.

However, Senior Sister Ye's sobbing sound was very pleasing to the ear. In addition, a weeping beauty was such a sight to behold.

But the sobbing sound that was transmitted over resembled the hoarse sobbing of a cat in heat. It flooded the minds of the onlookers and made their scalps go numb.

Senior Sister Ye had a confused expression on her face. "It's indeed the <Tome of Never-Ending Tears>! However, I'm the only person in the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion that practices the <Tome of Never-Ending Tears>!"

The <Tome of Never-Ending Tears> was something she and her teacher researched and created together. It was a tailor-made cultivation technique for her exclusive use.

As such, she was the only person in the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion to practice the technique. Ever her teacher didn't practice the <Tome of Never-Ending Tears>.

In that case, who was this person that issued that sobbing generated through the <Tome of Never-Ending Tears>?



Thereupon, Senior Sister Ye accelerated and crossed the defensive formation of the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion along with Song Shuhang, arriving at the main entrance.

The duo looked all around.

Then, they saw an old man sitting in meditation in front of the gate. The old man had white hair but very few wrinkles on his face.

Just by sitting there, he was giving off the aura of an expert. He was a Golden Core Spiritual Emperor, and the number of dragon

patterns on his Golden Core was by no means inferior to four!

Next, the old man, whose eye sockets were already red, said while weeping, "Sob, sob, sob~ If I looked at them from my angle, those six meteoroids in front of me actually form a wavy line. Sob, sob, sob~ It's truly a touching scene. Sob, sob, sob~ I'm getting so emotional. I just can't stop my tears."

"..." Song Shuhang turned his head around and looked at the scene the old man was currently describing... it was nothing but a group of meteoroids randomly floating in the midst of space.

From which angle did the old man look at those meteoroids that he got so sad and started crying?

Senior Sister Ye got curious and also turned her head around to look at the scene. However, Song Shuhang quickly stretched out his hands and covered her eyes. "Don't look."

He had the feeling that Senior Sister Ye would also start crying after seeing those six meteoroids that formed a wavy line.

One crybaby was already troublesome enough. If the two of them were to start a duet, no one would be able to stop them.

"..." Senior Sister Ye.

Then, she and Song Shuhang arrived in front of the old man.

Senior Sister Ye greeted the old man and asked directly, "Fellow Daoist, hello. May I ask who you are?"

The old man had noticed Song Shuhang and Senior Sister Ye long ago. The problem was that he couldn't stop crying within a short period of time. Therefore, he was unable to open his mouth and greet them.

"Sob, sob, sob~ Fellow Daoist, hello. They call me the Sobbing Old Man. I don't belong to any sect or school; I'm a loose cultivator." The old man stood up and returned the courtesy.

Then, he looked at Song Shuhang and said, "Little friend Song,

I've finally found you. Sob, sob, sob~ I searched for you for so long. Sob, sob, sob~ I'm so happy that I finally managed to find you."

In the next moment, due to the combined effects of the six meteoroids forming a wavy line and the sudden discovery of Song Shuhang, the Sobbing Old Man choked with sobs. It felt as though he was going to cry until losing consciousness.

"..." Song Shuhang asked out curiosity, "Senior, you actually know me?"

"Sob, sob, sob~ I've received a mission from Senior White and have been waiting for you in space. Sob, sob, sob~ Additionally, I've prepared a huge training place for you where you can train for a month." After saying this much, the Sobbing Old Man took out his mobile phone and unlocked the screen, searching for that picture of Song Shuhang that Venerable White had sent him.

When Song Shuhang looked at the picture, the corner of his mouth twitched. It was one of the photos Senior White took when they went bungee jumping back then.

In the photo, little friend Shuhang had a forced smile on his face, even uglier than a crying expression.

Still, he hadn't expected that Venerable White would have someone wait for him in space and prepare a trial for him.

Song Shuhang sighed and said, "I'm truly sorry, Senior Sobbing Old Man. When I entered space, a lot of unexpected things happened. Mere words aren't enough to describe them."

The Sobbing Old Man said, "Don't worry. I've also heard about the stuff you went through. Sob, sob, sob~"

Unfortunately, that 'heard about' part managed to move the Sobbing Old Man again, making him cry even more fiercely.

Senior Sister Ye and Song Shuhang looked at each other.

Then, Senior Sister Ye asked, "Fellow Daoist Sobbing Old Man,

do you practice the <Tome of Never-Ending Tears>?"

"That's correct; I practice the <Tome of Never-Ending Tears>. It's an incomplete cultivation technique that I obtained from some ruins related to the ancient Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion," the Sobbing Old Man replied sincerely.

"Ruins of the ancient Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion?" Ye Si furrowed her brows. Ruins?

The Sobbing Old Man replied, "Yes. I found it there. According to what I discovered inside the ruins, the ancient Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion was completely destroyed. I didn't expect that I would find a brand-new version here in space."

What? The Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion was destroyed during ancient times? Senior Sister Ye was completely dumbfounded at this time.

Chapter 583: Did you get smacked in the face by the monkey king?

How is that possible? I've been living in the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion all along. Moreover, the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion has passed down its legacy since the ancient times up until now. When was it destroyed?

Senior Sister Ye immediately thought of denying this fact. But for some reason, she was unable to say the words she wished to. At the same time, she felt her body becoming soft and falling backward.

What's happening? Why have I lost all the strength in my body, becoming soft from head to toe?

The nearby Song Shuhang, who was currently taking off the spacesuit, quickly stretched out his hands and supported Senior Sister Ye. She was very light. At this time, it felt as though Senior Sister Ye had next to no weight.

"Shuhang." Senior Sister Ye raised her head and looked at Song Shuhang with teary eyes.

"Senior Sister Ye, don't panic. Let's hear the whole story before reaching a definite conclusion." Song Shuhang supported Senior Sister Ye's body and comforted her, "Perhaps it's just another sect that just happens to have the same name and was destroyed a long time ago?"

Although Song Shuhang mentioned this possibility, he immediately refuted it in his mind.

Even if the two sects had the same name, what the Sobbing Old Man practiced was the authentic <Tome of Never-Ending Tears>!

The Sobbing Old Man had also stopped crying at this time. However, his heart was currently in turmoil.

Fck, what did I just say? Did I just mention the destruction of the

ancient Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion right in front of the entrance of the new one? I'm truly seeking death with my behavior!*

To make an example, it was as if a guest were to come to the newly repaired Heavenly Palace of Jade Emperor after the monkey king had turned upside down the whole place and asked, 'Jade Emperor! I heard that the monkey king smacked you in the face, is that true?'

It was that type of feeling.

The old man had cried so much that he unconsciously ended up saying something he shouldn't have.

The favorable impression the opposite party had of him must have already plummeted. Perhaps they had already turned hostile.

How can I make up for my mistake? The Sobbing Old Man quickly operated his brain. His next actions would determine whether or not he would obtain the remaining part of the <Tome of Never-Ending Tears>.

But right at this time, Song Shuhang asked, "Senior Sobbing Old Man, can you describe to me the appearance of those ancient ruins related to the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion?"

Song Shuhang tried his best to keep his calm.

If the ancient Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion had been already destroyed, what was the deal with the 'Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion' before his eyes? Was it possible that someone had reconstructed it?

Or perhaps the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion before his eyes was a different type of existence?



The Sobbing Old Man stopped crying and described what he'd seen in there to Song Shuhang. "It looked like a very ordinary immortal cave hidden within the depths of the earth. I entered

there by chance when I was still young.

The immortal cave had been already abandoned when I got there, and perhaps because someone entered before me, most of the things inside had disappeared. The only things left behind were bookshelves. It's possible that those bookshelves were once full of cultivation and magical techniques.

On the wall of the immortal cave was a painting, and what the painting depicted was precisely the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion during its golden age, completely identical to the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion currently before our eyes. On one side, there was a brief introduction to the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion. According to the introduction, back in those days, the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion had flourished under the lead of Pavilion Master Chu. The disciples of the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion stood aloof from worldly strifes, and the entire sect was like a big family.

But due to five powerful influences in the world of cultivators fighting amongst themselves during ancient times, the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion got involved as well and got destroyed overnight; not even a single disciple survived the calamity."

After the Sobbing Old Man said this much, the nearby Senior Sister Ye used all her strength to squeeze Song Shuhang's arm, looking as though she was trying to recall something. But the expression on her face got even more perplexed.

Song Shuhang gently patted Senior Sister Ye and continued asking, "In that case, Senior Sobbing Old Man, did you obtain the <Tome of Never-Ending Tears> inside that immortal cave?"

The <Tome of Never-Ending Tears> was a tailor-made cultivation technique that Senior Sister Ye and her teacher had developed together. In the whole Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion, only she and her teacher had knowledge about the <Tome of Never-Ending Tears>.

Such being the case, was there a relationship between the

immortal cave the Sobbing Old Man discovered and Senior Sister Ye?

"Yes. I obtained the 《Tome of Never-Ending Tears》 inside the immortal cave. Unfortunately, it's an incomplete version, and the cultivation technique stops at the Fifth Stage Spiritual Emperor Realm. For this very reason, I've stayed in the Fifth Stage Realm for a very long period of time, unable to advance further," the Sobbing Old Man said.

Song Shuhang said, "Senior Sobbing Old Man, do you know who the master of that immortal cave was? Were there some clues inside?"

The Sobbing Old Man shook his head. The owner of the immortal cave didn't leave behind their name.

Song Shuhang gazed at Senior Sister Ye.

Senior Sister Ye still had a perplexed look on her face. Soon after, it changed into one of worry. "Shuhang, why am I unable to recall anything at all?"

Since she was unable to recall none of these events, she was very anxious and almost on the verge of tears.

"In that case... it's better to directly ask Pavilion Master Chu," Song Shuhang said gently. "What's the point of staying here and guessing? We can obtain the answer after asking Pavilion Master Chu."

As soon as he heard Pavilion Master Chu's name, the Sobbing Old Man got excited. "This brand-new Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion was built by Pavilion Master Chu? Little friend Song, if you see her, can you ask Pavilion Master Chu if the new Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion is interested in accepting disciples? As long as I can obtain the complete version of the 《Tome of Never-Ending Tears》, I don't have any problem swearing eternal loyalty to the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion!"

He had a clean background and was a loose cultivator that had never joined any sect or school. In addition, he had already practiced until the Fifth Stage Realm and had a Golden Core with five dragon patterns!

If a loose cultivator like him were to sincerely ask a sect to accept him, it was very likely that the sect would accept him into their ranks.

Even if his loyalty couldn't be compared to the elders that had been brought up inside the sect, he was still a powerhouse of the Fifth Stage Realm!

Treating him as a 'non-native elder' or 'hired elder' was also pretty good!

Song Shuhang furrowed his brows. The creator of the ‹Tome of Never-Ending Tears› was standing right beside him.

From the looks of it, the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion is still accepting new disciples. Perhaps Senior Sobbing Old Man still has an opportunity to join the sect.

"In that case, I'll ask this question to Pavilion Master Chu on your behalf, Senior," Song Shuhang replied.



Song Shuhang's voice had yet to fade when the main gate of the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion slowly opened.

Afterward, a small snow-white hand suddenly appeared and grabbed the collar of the Sobbing Old Man, lifting him up.

A powerhouse of the Fifth Stage rank like the Sobbing Old Man couldn't revolt in the slightest in front of the strength of the small hand. He had been lifted upward like a little chick.

"Get out of my way!" Pavilion Master Chu shouted gently.

In the next moment, the Sobbing Old Man was flung away, flying very far away along with a series of shrieks. "Aaaaaah~"

Mentioning the destruction of the ancient Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion right before Pavilion Master Chu's eyes was similar to asking the Jade Emperor if the monkey king had smacked him in the face, a death-seeking behavior in short.

"Aaaaaah~" Then, just as the Sobbing Old Man was screaming, a space gate appeared on the trajectory he was following.

In the next moment, the Sobbing Old Man passed through the space gate, ending up in an unknown place!

It was unexpectedly a space-related delivery method.

Pavilion Master Chu clapped her hands and lazily stretched herself.

Her long hair was scattered all over the ground, resembling a cloak draping over her shoulders.

Then, she lowered her eyes and asked Song Shuhang, "Little friend Song, what did you want to ask me just now?"

Song Shuhang immediately got anxious.

He quietly looked in the direction the Sobbing Old Man had disappeared into and felt that he would follow in his footsteps if he were to ask that question. He was just a small cultivator of the Second Stage; he would die if someone were to fling him away like that!

But right at this time, Senior Sister Ye Si raised her head and looked at Pavilion Master Chu, asking, "Pavilion Master, was our Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion really destroyed in the past?"

Pavilion Master Chu stroked her long black hair and said softly, "Yes, it was destroyed. It was razed to the ground overnight. The painstaking effort of so many years of my life was gone, just like that. Back then, I cried so much that I nearly lost my mind. Afterward, I isolated myself and cut ties with the external world for several millennia."

Ye Si's tears couldn't help but stream down her face.

Pavilion Master Chu placed her in her bosom and comforted her, "Silly child, why are you crying. In ancient times, it was quite normal for sects to flourish and be destroyed. Our Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion was just unlucky that it got involved in a dispute. We didn't make any mistake. If we have to blame someone, we can only blame ourselves for not being strong enough."

If Pavilion Master Chu had had her current strength back then, the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion wouldn't have been destroyed.

Pavilion Master Chu was rather bad at comforting others. After she comforted Ye Si, the latter cried even more aggrievedly.

Their sect had really been destroyed!

Song Shuhang quietly sighed and looked at the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion before his eyes, saying, "In that case, Pavilion Master Chu, is the current Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion something you rebuilt from scratch?"

Pavilion Master Chu looked at Song Shuhang with her eyes half-closed and half-open, saying, "You have already guessed it in your heart. What's the point of asking?"

Song Shuhang forced a smile. Earlier, he indeed made a wild guess—perhaps the whole thing was just an 'illusory reality'; the special ability of a Seventh Stage Venerable!

However, he refused to believe that the guess he had made was the correct one.

People, buildings, rivers, grass, trees... everything inside the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion felt so real. Every disciple in the pavilion looked alive and had their own thoughts and will.

If it was really just an 'illusory reality', what was the difference between it and reality?

Song Shuhang felt a little bit of sympathy for Daoist Priest

Cloudy Mist at this time. 'Do you find this group very lively? Actually, everyone in there is just my alternate account!'

After all, Song Shuhang had currently experienced the real-life edition of it. 'Do you find the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion very lively? Actually, the people that accompanied you during your permanence in the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion were just my alternate accounts!'

Eh? Wait a moment!

There is a big problem in that case!

If the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion is really just an 'illusory reality'...

"Pavilion Master, what about Senior Sister Ye then?" Song Shuhang asked about this problem.

If the whole Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion was just an 'illusory reality'... what about Senior Sister Ye Si?

Senior Sister Ye and Shuhang were currently in a sort of 'girlfriend and boyfriend' relationship. They hadn't stayed together for that much time, and one could say that they were still building up their sentiment.

They were currently very close friends that had similar hobbies; perhaps a bit more than friends. However, they were still very far from truly becoming lovers.

But regardless of all this... Senior Sister Ye was still Song Shuhang's first love!

And the first love experience would sometimes be very sad or harsh.

Song Shuhang was very anxious at this time.

Pavilion Master Chu gently caressed Ye Si's eyes, making her fall asleep.

"Ye Si's situation is a bit special. She is not something I created

with the illusory reality. From a certain point of view, my illusory reality can be considered as a part of myself. If she were part of my illusory reality, she would have never approached you and agreed to become your partner," Pavilion Master Chu replied.

Pavilion Master Chu had no interest in taking a small cultivator such as Shuhang as her husband.

After hearing this much, Song Shuhang felt that there was perhaps still a chance to save his first love!

Chapter 584: Little friend Song, don't you want to sleep together with me?

Since she wasn't an illusion created through the 'illusory reality', did it mean that Senior Sister Ye was one of the disciples that managed to survive back then?

Or perhaps she was a disciple that Pavilion Master Chu took in after setting up her 'illusory reality'? After all, the elders and the masters of the other pavilions were constantly trying to recruit disciples.

That was the reason Song Shuhang was thinking of introducing the Sobbing Old Man into the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion as a disciple earlier. Speaking of which, the fate between the Sobbing Old Man and the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion seemed to have suddenly come to an end.

Anyway, Song Shuhang was sure that Senior Sister Ye wasn't the soul of a deceased person. She had already come in contact with his finger while he was using the Soul Ferrying Technique and there was no sign of her wishing to be ferried.

If Senior Sister Ye was the soul of a deceased person, she would have been ferried to the afterworld already, and even if her strength was too high, making Shuhang unable to ferry her, she would at least produce a resonance.

"Pavilion Master, in that case, is Senior Sister Ye safe and sound?" Song Shuhang asked.

Pavilion Master Chu yawned. She had a sleepy expression on her face and seemed as though she could fall asleep at any time.

"Pavilion Master Chu, wake up! Can you reply to my question before falling asleep?" Song Shuhang was well aware of Pavilion Master Chu's character.

She was already quite sleepy right now, and with her capricious

nature, she could immediately fall asleep if she wished to.

As if that wasn't enough, she would forget about many important matters after falling asleep. For example, she completely forgot about the fact that Song Shuhang and Chu Chu were still in the Time City earlier.

Pavilion Master Chu didn't reply to Song Shuhang's question, and her expression turned sleepier and sleepier. Soon after, she turned her body around, and a space gate appeared right before her.

Then, she carried Ye Si along and stepped into the space gate. On the other side of the space gate was her bedroom, which was located in the Celestial Pavilion.

"..." Song Shuhang.

After seeing that the space gate didn't close even after a long time, Shuhang clenched his teeth and also stepped inside.

In the next moment, he appeared in the middle of the Celestial Pavilion.

In front of him, Pavilion Master Chu lazily stretched herself and headed toward the big bed, with her eyes getting sleepier and sleepier...

"Pavilion Master Chu, at least reply to my question first!" Song Shuhang said anxiously.

Pavilion Master Chu raised her head and looked at Song Shuhang, saying, "Little friend Song, don't you want to sleep together with me?"

"..." Song Shuhang.

Senior, did you eat the wrong medicine today? Or perhaps you actually forgot to take your medicine?

"Oh, you don't want to sleep together? In that case, you can sleep on the floor." Pavilion Master Chu pulled closer the nearby quilt

and used it to cover Ye Si and herself.

"Good night, Little friend Song," Pavilion Master Chu said softly.

"..." Song Shuhang.

You are doing it on purpose, right? Do you really think I won't flip you together with your bed?! You just had to reply 'Yes' or 'No', was it that difficult?! (´`□´)┐┐ (.o.) But just as this thought flashed through his mind, the sound of Pavilion Master Chu's even breathing was transmitted from the bed to his ears.

The sound of every inhalation and exhalation was very stable.

Actually, Pavilion Master Chu didn't really need to breathe given her current level of strength. It was something she was unconsciously doing while sleeping.

Song Shuhang faintly sighed. Was it possible that he would have to follow in the footsteps of the Sobbing Old Man and wait outside Pavilion Master Chu's room until she woke up? But he had no idea for how long would Pavilion Master Chu sleep this time!

Song Shuhang gazed at the gloves of passion of Swordsman Wooden Ox he was currently wearing. Should he clench his teeth and use the appraisal technique on Senior Sister Ye?

The previous time he appraised Senior Sister Ye, the price he had to pay was so high that he fainted directly.

But thanks to those 88,888 voices continuously reverberating in Song Shuhang's mind whenever he was sleeping or resting, his comprehension of the secret appraisal technique had gotten much better.

Now, he could obtain more information through the appraisal technique, and the price to pay had started to lower.

In that case, should he give it a try?

Song Shuhang looked at Senior Sister Ye and Pavilion Master Chu lying on the bed. It was the scene of two beauties sleeping.

Fck. If I go over and lift the quilt to use the appraisal technique, starting to spurt blood from all over the body afterward, it would totally make me look like a pervert.*

Otherwise, I might wait for Senior Sister Ye to wake up before trying?

It was unknown when Pavilion Master Chu would wake up next.

But Senior Sister Ye shouldn't sleep for such a long period of time, right?

While Song Shuhang was thinking all this, Pavilion Master Chu's even breathing kept reverberating beside his ears as though it was a hypnotizing technique.

Without him noticing, Song Shuhang's eyelids had started to get heavier and heavier.

Then, he gently fell to the ground, starting to slumber.



Next, Shuhang felt as though he had entered the dreamland. The feeling of entering the dreamland was different than having a normal dream. He could already tell the difference between the two through some subtle details.

"No, there is something amiss. I didn't enter the dreamland." Song Shuhang discovered that he was currently looking up at the sky from below and hadn't taken anyone's place.

More importantly, the 88,888 voices weren't reverberating in his ears at this time.

Such being the case, who had brought him inside this dream?

From the looks of it, it could be only Pavilion Master Chu's doing...

The things in the dream slowly started to become clear.

Now, a huge sect had appeared under his 'vision'; it was the

Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion.

At this time, the disciples of the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion were anxiously looking at the sky.

In the most conspicuous place of the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion stood Pavilion Master Chu, who was currently wearing a skirt. She was standing straight, and her fists were clenched.

In the picture, Pavilion Master Chu's hair only reached her waist, and she didn't have a lazy expression on her face. Instead of giving off the feeling of a lazy beauty, she gave the impression of an energetic one.

The defenses of the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion were all activated and operating at full strength.

Several disciples occupied their positions and started to pour their spiritual energy into the defensive formation of the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion.

All the spirit stones that the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion had accumulated over time were brought out as well. Pavilion Master Chu used them as fuel for the defensive formation.

Shuhang was unable to spot Ye Si amidst all those disciples. The scene was simply too chaotic. Perhaps she was currently in some place that his vision couldn't reach?



It was very likely that a fight amongst cultivators was currently going on in the sky.

However, Song Shuhang could only see the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion from his point of view and couldn't see the battle in the sky.

He would see ripples forming on the defensive formation of the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion from time to time or the sparks generated by the explosions. It was the aftermath of the magical

techniques the cultivators battling in the sky were using.

Corpses of powerful cultivators were also falling from the sky. When these cultivators fell, they didn't decide to disperse and merge with the Great Way. Instead, they chose to self-detonate their bodies.

Although they failed to harm the opposite party after self-detonating, they continuously consumed the energy of the barrier of the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion.

If I'm not mistaken, this should be the scene where the ancient Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion was destroyed.

They were just innocent people that got involved in someone else's fight.

The ancient Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion spent most of its time standing aloof from worldly strifes and carried out their practice only inside their domain.

However, the place where their sect was located just happened to be close to the place where those five powerful sects of the world of cultivators were battling. As a consequence, they ended up being involved in the fight as well.

Anyway, even if the battle among those five sects is very scary, the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion doesn't seem to be the main battlefield from what I can see. It only suffered some collateral damage from the techniques used in the battle. Does it mean that the collateral damage alone was enough to raze to the ground the whole Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion, leaving Pavilion Master Chu as the sole survivor?

Is it possible that the five battling sects ultimately used something akin to a 'forbidden' magical technique as seen in novels, blowing up everything in the surrounding area?

Or did some drastic changes happen during the course of the battle?

Just as Song Shuhang was in deep thoughts, corpses of cultivators kept falling from the sky like dumplings, hitting the defensive formation of the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion in large quantities!

Additionally, these corpses didn't explode after falling down.

As before, Song Shuhang was unable to see the battle in the sky. However, he noticed that a surprised expression had appeared on Pavilion Master Chu's face. There were also traces of fear.

There was surely something wrong. After all, the frequency at which cultivators were dying had increased by a hundredfold!

Just what's happening? Song Shuhang thought to himself.

Just as this thought crossed his mind, his vision was no longer restricted to the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion. The scene of the battle in the sky also appeared before his 'eyes'.

In the sky, the five sects had divided into two groups.

On one side were two daoist sects with different robes and a buddhist sect allied together.

On the other end were a sect with each member shrouded in demonic mist and another sect full of monsters that had taken human form.

At this time, the members of the two factions were constantly battling each other. However, they weren't dying due to the attacks of the opposite party.

The reason for all those deaths was a third-party that had suddenly appeared on the scene. It was an influence mainly composed of monster hunters, and their numbers surpassed 3000.

The dress the monster hunters wore hadn't undergone any change since ancient times. Song Shuhang needed but a glance to recognize them.

The fighting capacity of the monster hunter faction was

astounding. In addition, the five sects had fought for a long time and were exhausted.

After they joined the battle, the monster hunters started a massacre.

Ancient monster hunters were extremely powerful. They were much stronger than ordinary cultivators.

During ancient times, they had wantonly captured monsters and researched all kinds of methods to deal with them, developing many forbidden techniques.

In addition, each monster hunter had accumulated a lot of experience after fighting monsters. Their combat experience was incredibly rich.

On top of that, they had used the bodies of the monsters to manufacture several different types of powerful magical treasures.

After they joined the fray, the number of deaths skyrocketed.

Amongst the several monster hunters, a youngster was particularly eye-catching.

On his two arms were transplanted the eyes of around ten different types of monsters. When he stretched out his arms, all sorts of fearsome innate skills belonging to ancient monsters shot out. Petrification, illusions, strange ocular rays, true fire, and so on were released in rapid succession.

Whether they were monsters or humans, all the people in his surroundings died one after another.

The members of the five sects activated their escape techniques to flee for their life.

However, 100,000 Monster Binding Chains assembled together in the sky, forming a huge net that tightly enclosed them, cutting off their path of retreat.

They could escape neither through the sky nor through the land.

The group of monster hunters had come prepared. From the very beginning, they had had no intention of letting the members of the five sects leave alive.

Below, Pavilion Master Chu's expression was becoming uglier and uglier.

The monster hunters seemed intent on killing all the people on the scene. Such being the case, would they really let off the people of the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion?

Pavilion Master Chu immediately gave orders and told the people of the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion to get ready for combat.

However, she still had a hesitant look on her face. Should she really have the disciples of the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion participate in the battle?

The people battling in the sky were all cultivators of the Fifth Stage Spiritual Emperor Realm if not stronger. As for the Fifth Stage Spiritual Emperors in the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion, they numbered less than thirty.

The members of the five sects were instantly killed, and not a single one of them survived.

Everything happened so quickly that the disciples of the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion didn't even have the time to react.

In the next moment, more than 3000 monster hunters plunged toward the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion...

Chapter 585: That day, the ghost spirit became pregnant

After seeing the scene, Song Shuhang couldn't help but sigh.

Although he already knew what had happened to the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion after his conversation with Pavilion Master Chu, a feeling of helplessness still welled up in his heart after seeing those 3000 monster hunters rushing toward the pavilion. He already knew the outcome and was unable to change it regardless of his efforts.

Anyway, monster hunters were unexpectedly this reckless during ancient times? Not only did they kill monsters, but they also butchered human cultivators. Is this the reason they disappeared from the world later and went into hiding?

Just as Song Shuhang was in deep thoughts, Pavilion Master Chu's voice reverberated in his ears. "Let's skip this scene. No matter how many times I recall this memory, I always get sad. Therefore, let's just skip it."

As expected, Pavilion Master Chu had deliberately brought him into this dream!

Next, the scene before Song Shuhang's eyes turned black.

"..." Song Shuhang.

With Pavilion Master Chu's sudden intrusion, the sad feeling in his heart had distorted beyond recognition.

The scene finally returned to normal again. At this time, the prosperous Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion had turned into a stretch of ruins. There was blood all over, and the aftermath of the battle was still visible. In addition, there were also the traces of the lightning that had rained down.

In the dream, the gravely injured Pavilion Master Chu was

kneeling down amidst the ruins and crying her heart out.

The sorrowful and gravely injured Pavilion Master Chu looked extremely charming and delicate. At the same time, the lightning of tribulation was continuously raining down from the sky.

The lightning struck Pavilion Master Chu's body incessantly, creating loud explosions.

She was kneeling amidst the ruins without moving in the slightest, allowing the lightning to rain down and strike her body.

This scene made Song Shuhang's heart twitch in pain.

At the same time, Pavilion Master Chu's voice reverberated in Song Shuhang's ears once again. "I looked particularly attractive back then. It gives me a special type of bittersweet feeling. If men with particular tastes were to see this scene where a beautiful woman is kneeling on the ground, weeping and moaning in pain as the lightning strikes her body, they would get rather excited, right?"

"..." Song Shuhang.

Senior Chu, it's better if you don't explain at all!

"Right, did you get excited after seeing the scene?" Pavilion Master Chu asked.

Song Shuhang said out loud, "Of course not!"

"It seems you don't have a good eye for beautiful things," Pavilion Master Chu said.

Song Shuhang replied, "More like I don't have an abnormal mind!"

"What's wrong with being abnormal? Sometimes, one can give their best only through unconventional means. Being a lunatic is sometimes the only way one has to survive," Pavilion Master Chu sneered.

Song Shuhang replied, "Abnormal perverts and lunatics are

definitely not the same thing!"

Pavilion Master Chu was suddenly speechless. Was it possible that she had been confusing lunatics with abnormal perverts all along?

Then, she made up her mind and quickly shifted the topic of conversation. "Did you see the scene below? It was really unfortunate that I couldn't break through a little bit earlier... perhaps the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion would have survived in that case. The lightning of tribulation I attracted back then killed almost half of the enemies. I was ready to die together with them at that time. I deliberately allowed them to get closer to me and started to transcend the tribulation. The lightning of tribulation came down like rain and instantly reduced to ashes all the enemies surrounding me. Then, I chased after the remaining ones while the lightning of tribulation was striking my body, killing almost half of them."

While explaining this part, Pavilion Master Chu spoke somewhat incoherently.

After saying this much, Pavilion Master Chu paused for a moment and continued, "But I didn't expect that I would be able to transcend the tribulation successfully. Perhaps it would have been better if I had died back then..."

The scene of the heavenly tribulation falling down continued for ten days. Pavilion Master Chu was kneeling amidst the ruins and got struck by the lightning of tribulation for whole ten days.

Is Pavilion Master Chu trying to conceal her sorrow? Song Shuhang wondered whether or not he should comfort Pavilion Master Chu.

But right at this time, Pavilion Master Chu said, "Let's skip the scene about the lightning as well. After all, it kept raining down for quite a while. Next is the part that concerns you. After successfully transcending the tribulation, I searched through the Crystal-Clear

Water Pavilion in the hope of finding fellow survivors."

Next is the content that concerns me? Is it about Senior Sister Ye Si?

In the dream, Pavilion Master Chu started to search through the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion. She was looking through the ruins while crying.

"This scene is also rather sad. Skip, skip," Pavilion Master Chu said.

"..." Song Shuhang.

The scene before his eyes turned black once again.

When the scene returned normal, Pavilion Master Chu had arrived at the edge of the broken great formation.

In there, Senior Sister Ye's body softly lay upside down on the edge of the formation. Half of her body was petrified and smashed to pieces.

There wasn't the slightest trace of life aura coming from her body, and there were no traces of her soul as well. Perhaps it had been struck down and destroyed by the heavenly tribulation?

Song Shuhang's heart twitched in pain.

From the looks of it, Senior Sister Ye Si had thoroughly died back then. In that case, wasn't everything over?

"Ahaha, your expression is beautiful. I was really looking forward to seeing you scared out of your wits," Pavilion Master Chu said with a smile.

Song Shuhang's eyes immediately lit up as he said, "Pavilion Master, is it possible that you revived her?"

"No, she thoroughly died, and even her soul dissipated. Let alone back then when I was only a Seventh Stage Venerable, even the current me can't resurrect someone whose soul has dissipated and body petrified, getting smashed to pieces," Pavilion Master Chu

replied.

Fck, my first love!*

"Was it really impossible to rescue her?" Song Shuhang asked.

"No chance at all," Pavilion Master Chu said. "But don't worry, keep looking."

In the scene, just as Pavilion Master Chu arrived next to Senior Sister Ye Si's body, a pale soul drilled out of Ye Si's body.

Senior Sister Ye had died both in body and mind. Such being the case, just where had this new soul come from?

In addition, although the soul had the shape of a woman, its appearance was completely different than Senior Sister Ye Si's!

"A ghost spirit?" Pavilion Master Chu slowly said in the scene.

At the same time, Pavilion Master Chu's explanation reverberated in Song Shuhang's ears. "That's a ghost spirit. However, it wasn't Ye Si's ghost spirit."

"Since it isn't Senior Sister Ye's ghost spirit, is it possible that it's a ghost spirit that someone lent her?" Song Shuhang unconsciously thought about the fact that someone had just 'forcefully borrowed' his ghost spirit.

"You know quite a lot, huh? That's right, you are also a cultivator lucky enough to have a ghost spirit." Pavilion Master Chu continued with her explanation, "Anyway, yes. You can consider that ghost spirit as something that was lent to her. It was the ghost spirit passed down from generation to generation in Ye Si's family. Ye Si's generation was the fifth one to inherit the ghost spirit. I have no idea which powerful expert lent the ghost spirit to Ye Si's family."

Song Shuhang forced a smile and said, "Does it mean that the current Senior Sister Ye Si is that ghost spirit?"

My first love is a ghost spirit?

For some reason, he felt rather sad. If it was just Senior Sister Ye's soul, it would have been much better! At least, the soul would have still been Senior Sister Ye Si 'herself'.

"Hehe, you also have a ghost spirit. Therefore, you should know that the consciousness of the master and the ghost spirit are interlinked. From a certain point of view, it's like having one mind connected to two bodies. Given the situation, do you really think that the ghost spirit would have accompanied you to play love games? Moreover, it's unknown if the real master of the ghost spirit is a man or a woman," Pavilion Master Chu said.

That was also correct!

However, what had truly happened since the current Ye Si wasn't the ghost spirit?

Right at this time, the ghost spirit in the dream had a change.

The belly of the ghost spirit inflated like a balloon.

"That's...?" Song Shuhang was dumbfounded.

"It's exactly as you guessed." Pavilion Master Chu calmly nodded her head.

Fck, the ghost spirit became pregnant?*

It was Song Shuhang's first time hearing that a ghost spirit could become pregnant.

At this time, Song Shuhang had more or less guessed what was going to happen next. "Is it possible that the ghost spirit wants to give birth to Senior Sister Ye?"

"Yes. It's rather shocking, isn't it? When I saw this scene back, I, too, was completely speechless!" Pavilion Master Chu said.

In the dream, a snow-white lotus flower appeared beneath the feet of the ghost spirit, starting to wrap up its body.

Then, it looked expectantly at Pavilion Master Chu, stretching its hand out toward her. The mark of a contract had appeared on its

hand; it needed Pavilion Master Chu's help to get the necessary energy to carry out the operation.

In the dream, Pavilion Master Chu didn't hesitate and stretched out her hand, signing the contract with the ghost spirit.

It wasn't a typical 'ghost spirit contract'. After all, the ghost spirit already had a master.

It was a contract that would provide the ghost spirit with the necessary spiritual energy. For some reason, it seemed that the master of the ghost spirit was unable to give it their energy.

Or perhaps it was the very reason they had 'lent' the ghost spirit to Ye Si's family?

But regardless of the reason, Pavilion Master Chu didn't hesitate to sign the contract with the ghost spirit to provide it with energy for Ye Si's sake.

The rune of the contract eventually sank into Pavilion Master Chu's Heart Aperture.

After the ghost spirit obtained Pavilion Master Chu's energy, the huge lotus flower completely wrapped up its body.

The snow-white lotus flower floated amidst the ruins of the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion, looking incredibly beautiful.

After a long, long time, the huge lotus flower opened.

Aside from the ghost spirit, another figure had appeared inside.

It was Senior Sister Ye Si's figure.

The silhouette wasn't that of an infant. The newborn Senior Sister Ye Si was the same as the original. Inside the body was also a complete soul that belonged to Senior Sister Ye Si.

Ye Si's soul that should have dissipated had been preserved by the strange ghost spirit, which later gave birth to a new Ye Si.

The newborn Senior Sister Ye Si was the same Ye Si they knew.

No wonder Senior Sister Ye's body became soft and weightless when her mood was out of control.



In the dream, after giving birth to Ye Si, the strange ghost spirit said goodbye to Pavilion Master Chu.

In the next moment, it flew high up in the sky.

While midair, a daoist robe appeared on the body of the female ghost spirit, as well as a slanted daoist cap. Just in this fashion, the ghost spirit kept flying until it disappeared from Pavilion Master Chu's sight.

In the dream, Pavilion Master Chu embraced the newborn Ye Si and cried again.

Due to the ghost spirit getting pregnant and giving birth to the new Senior Sister Ye Si, Ye Si was now more similar to a ghost spirit although she was originally human.

But saying that she was a ghost spirit was also somewhat incorrect. After all, she had a complete soul inside her body.

"This is Ye Si true nature..." Pavilion Master Chu said calmly. "The newly born Ye Si remained in a comatose state for whole ten years. During those ten years, I used the illusory reality to restore the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion to its original appearance.

After she regained consciousness, Ye Si had the same memories she had during her previous life. The only difference was that she lacked the memories related to the destruction of the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion."

The ghost spirit had meticulously erased those memories related to the destruction of the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion. Or perhaps, the ghost spirit had inherited them, carrying them away with it.

"..." Song Shuhang.

The fact that my first love isn't a ghost spirit is truly great.

However, it seems she is the daughter of a ghost spirit. What should I do now?

"Unfortunately, you have already contracted a ghost spirit. In addition, it's seemingly evolving into a high-rank one. If not for this fact, I would have liked to have you and Ye Si sign a ghost spirit contract," Pavilion Master Chu said calmly.

Senior Sister Ye can sign a contract just like ghost spirits? Song Shuhang got a scare.

Chapter 586: Quickly let me go! I have to pee!

Song Shuhang said, "Wait a moment! Sign a ghost spirit contract with Senior Sister Ye Si?"

"Yes," Pavilion Master Chu replied. "You don't have to be this surprised. After all, the constitution of the current Ye Si is more similar to that of a ghost spirit than a human."

Song Shuhang panicked.

This was a big problem. Was it possible that Senior Sister Ye was bound to sign a contract with another person one day, just like other ghost spirits did?

Such being the case, what would he do if Ye Si were to sign a contract with someone else while the two of them were in love?

Would they have a third wheel spying on them through the ghost contract each time they went on a date?

If the contractor was a woman, it wouldn't be that bad.

But if the contractor was a man, and he and Senior Sister Ye were to become partners—the type that had sex—would the man that had signed the ghost spirit contract feel as though he was personally doing it with Shuhang?

Just the thought was scary enough.

It was a big no-no! If he and Senior Sister Ye were to become partners, he absolutely couldn't let her sign a contract with someone else! Not even with a woman!

But here came the second problem... it was actually possible to force the target to sign the ghost spirit contract!

If the strength of the opposite party was very high, they could force Senior Sister Ye to sign the ghost spirit contract. Even Song

Shuhang himself had signed the contract with his ghost spirit only after subduing it.

In other words, there was a chance that his first love could be abducted and forced to sign a contract at any time!

The situation was so bad that it made one helpless!

Such being the case, it was simply too dangerous to allow Senior Sister Ye to leave the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion.

Due to the fear, Song Shuhang immediately woke up from the dream.



August 6th, Tuesday.

After waking up, Song Shuhang discovered that he was still lying on the floor of the Celestial Pavilion. Due to his bad posture while lying down, his neck was somewhat sore.

"For how long have I slept?" Shuhang muttered to himself. Due to the time he passed in the 'Lower City' of the Time City, the time displayed on his mobile phone and watch was out of synch.

In addition, there wasn't a clock inside Pavilion Master Chu's room. Therefore, he had no idea for how long he had slept.

Song Shuhang looked at Pavilion Master Chu and Senior Sister Ye who were lying on the bed, gently sighing.

Senior Sister Ye's physique was a big problem!

An ordinary ghost spirit wouldn't attract the attention of a powerful cultivator... but Senior Sister Ye was very special. She was already a Fifth Stage Spiritual Emperor, something even more valuable than a high-rank ghost spirit.

Even a Seventh Stage Spiritual Venerable or Eighth Stage Profound Sage that hadn't a ghost spirit yet wouldn't mind forcing her to sign a ghost spirit contract.

Therefore, he absolutely couldn't take Senior Sister Ye away from the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion before solving this problem.

Was his first love going to turn into a long-distance relationship?

* * *

After a hollow laugh, Song Shuhang quietly withdrew from the Celestial Pavilion. From the looks of it, Senior Sister Ye and Pavilion Master Chu were still going to sleep for a while. Therefore, Song Shuhang felt that it was a bit embarrassing to stay in the Celestial Pavilion and keep looking at the two sleeping beauties.

In that case, where should I go first?

Right, I should look for Li Yinzhu.

After they entered the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion, Li Yinzhu fell into slumber due to her cold disease flaring up, and it was unknown what her current condition was.

After coming out of the ice, the little girl had grown very attached to Song Shuhang and was rather reluctant to part with him. Would she start to panic if she were to discover that Song Shuhang wasn't by her side after waking up?

Thereupon, Song Shuhang quickly left the Celestial Pavilion and arrived at the entrance.

Then, just as Song Shuhang entered the range of the entrance of the Celestial Pavilion, a crystal tower supported by stone columns rose from the ground.

"?" Song Shuhang.

Wait a moment, isn't that the surveillance system?

But why has the defense system of the Celestial Pavilion activated even though I was coming out from *inside** the pavilion!*

Was it possible that the defense system had recognized him as an illegal trespasser of the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion?

Song Shuhang promptly reacted and put his strength in his feet, vigorously jumping backward! Since he was dealing with a defense system, everything should turn out okay as long as he returned inside the Celestial Pavilion, right?

But just as Song Shuhang jumped backward, a gigantic net appeared out of nowhere and wrapped him up.

In the next moment, ten chains shot out of the crystal tower supported by the stone columns and tied Song Shuhang up, making him dangle in front of the entrance of the Celestial Pavilion in a posture similar to the '大' character.

Song Shuhang felt a huge sense of shame by dangling in front of the entrance in that position.

"No!" Song Shuhang called out. Then, he instinctively started to struggle.

But how could a puny cultivator of the Second Stage break free of the defense system that Pavilion Master Chu had arranged personally?

The more he was struggling, the tighter his bindings were getting.

He, who originally had the shape of the 大 character, was pulled with even more force, almost assuming a posture similar to the 土 character. His legs were pulled to the point of reaching a 180-degree angle!

If not for the fact his constitution had strengthened quite a lot recently and become more flexible, he would have almost passed away from this split.

"Painful, painful, painful! My muscles are about to get torn!" Song Shuhang wanted to cry but had no tears. "Pavilion Master Chu, quickly wake up! It's me! I'm not an enemy! Quickly release me!"

But how could he so easily wake up the fast asleep Pavilion

Master Chu?

As if that wasn't enough, the place where he was at this time was the 'forbidden area' of the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion. Unless there was some important matter, the ordinary disciples of the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion wouldn't come to this place.

Therefore, no one could hear his screams.

Shuhang started to get anxious.

❄ ❄ ❄

Right at this time, a cold wind suddenly blew over, making Song Shuhang shiver.

Having his legs pulled in that way was surely painful.

As if that wasn't enough, Song Shuhang felt that his bladder was starting to swell—he had the urge to urinate.

The urge to urinate worked in mysterious ways. Sometimes, if one didn't pay it any mind, they would be able to endure for a long time. But as soon as they remembered about it, the urge would keep getting stronger and stronger and more difficult to resist.

Song Shuhang's face whitened.

The already bad situation had become even worse!

"Save me! Save me~ No matter who it is, please, save me!" Song Shuhang shouted as loudly as he could.

He didn't want dangle in front of the entrance in a ㄣ-like position and wet his pants!

"Pavilion Master Chu, quickly wake up! Senior Sister Ye, Senior Sister Ye, you also wake up quickly!"

"No matter who it is, just save me!"

"If you don't release me, I'll pee in front of the entrance of your pavilion! And I'm someone who keeps his word!"

"Is there anyone around here?!"

"Dammit, Pavilion Master Chu's bedroom couldn't possibly have a soundproof barrier, right?"

After shouting for a while, Song Shuhang got tired, and even his voice had become dispirited.

He had lost hope... he no longer held any hope for this world full of evil.

It's bad. I feel that I'm about to pee.

I have to divert my attention and think about something else quickly.

Right, the main characters in wuxia novels can use their internal energy to drive out the strength of the alcohol whenever they get drunk. In that case, can I drive out the urine?

Perhaps I've really found the solution. I've opened the dantian in my body, several of them actually! The current me should be even stronger than those martial experts in wuxia novels. Therefore, I should be able to...

Be able my as!*

What's the point of driving my urine out? I will directly wet my pants if I do that!

Dammit. I have to divert my attention. I have to divert my attention very quickly.

Right, if I silently chant <Ksitigarbha's Soul Ferrying Scripture> several times, it's possible that my comprehension of the Soul Ferrying Technique might get more profound.

Thereupon, Song Shuhang started to silently chant <Ksitigarbha's Soul Ferrying Scripture> to divert his attention.

It seems that it was actually of some use...

In that case, it's better to chant it a few times.

Hold on! Just diverting my attention seems too passive! I should

try to do something... perhaps I can use the secret appraisal technique and appraise the chains. I might find a way to get rid of them.

After all, my secret appraisal technique is rather awesome in certain aspects. Although I'm currently wearing the gloves of passion of Swordsman Wooden Ox, these puny gloves shouldn't be able to block the appraisal technique.

In that case, I'll give it a try. In the worst case, I'll just lose some blood, and I'm already used to it.

"Go, appraise the chains!" Song Shuhang shouted.

However, the secret appraisal technique didn't activate. Although there was a small possibility that the secret appraisal technique would trigger even though he was wearing the gloves, the possibility was very low.

Dammit.

I got agitated, and the urge to pee became even stronger!

Perhaps I should just pee...? After all, it's not like there is anyone around.

No, no, no, that's wrong!

I have a will of steel. How can I give up so easily?

In the nonsensical <Diary of the Ascetic Senior Monk>, the senior monk relied on his willpower to overcome a deadly poison.

In that case, look at how I overcome this stupid urge to urinate!

Now is the time to test how strong my willpower is!

Then, just as Song Shuhang was using his willpower to overcome the difficult situation he was facing, he felt a cool, comfortable feeling transmit from his spine.

It was the same pleasant feeling one would feel as they

straightened their back after bending over and working for a long time.

At the same time, the rune of the contract of the ghost spirit inside his body shone.

Had something happened to the ghost spirit?

After that powerful expert forcefully borrowed the ghost spirit and used their energy to block the connection between Shuhang and the ghost spirit, Song Shuhang had no way of knowing what the ghost spirit was experiencing.

However, he could still guess what had happened to the ghost spirit through the contract. From the looks of it, the ghost spirit was evolving!

His ghost spirit originally had the opportunity to evolve into a high-rank one. However, the possibility was very low. Perhaps Shuhang wouldn't be able to make the ghost spirit reach that rank during the span of his entire life.

But now, his ghost spirit had actually evolved and became a high-rank one!

No, to be precise, it was on the verge of completing its evolution! The evolution process had already reached the final phase. For this reason, the rune of the contract in his body had a change.

Along with the evolution of the ghost spirit, the true qi inside Song Shuhang's Sea of Qi Dantian, Dragon Tail Dantian, and Dragon Claw Dantian started to churn and overflow.

During this period of time, Song Shuhang had eaten several spirit beast crystal, and the true qi inside his body had become saturated.

Now, without needing Song Shuhang to do anything in particular, the true qi inside his body started to break through the fourth dantian, the Dragon Body Dantian!

A nice feeling spread in his whole body.

"Aaaaah! It's bad! If I feel so comfortable, I'll be unable to resist!" Song Shuhang's eyes had started to tear up.

The worst thing was that Song Shuhang's body couldn't help but tremble as the true qi inside his body was ramming against the checkpoint of the Dragon Body Dantian.

As a consequence of his body trembling, the chains that were binding him got even tighter.

If this kept going, the current split would turn into a U-shaped reverse split!

Chapter 587: The sad Sea King

Blessings never came in pair and misfortunes never came alone.

Just as Song Shuhang was in a terrible situation, another item he had with him started to cause trouble. His size-reducing purse started to shake. In the next moment, the remaining part of the silver bracers flew out of the purse.

The silver glove was something the Sea King worshipped by those sea urchin warriors with pre-prepared lines wanted to obtain.

Back then, Venerable White, Venerable Spirit Butterfly, and Venerable Tornado had joined their forces and managed to snatch away this part of the silver bracers from its hands. In the end, the glove ended up in Young Master Phoenix Slayer's hands, who then forced Song Shuhang to accept it.

Although the silver glove was a valuable treasure, it was still a rather troublesome item. The reason was that the Sea King could surmount space and lock onto the position of the silver glove through that strange sacrificial altar where the blood sacrifices were performed.

Now that the silver glove received this powerful attraction, it drilled out of the size-reducing purse. As one might guess, the Sea King had used the power of the altar to summon the silver glove.

"This is bad!" Song Shuhang had a bad premonition.

The last time, when the hand-guided tractor competition was still going on, the Sea King had directly opened a space gate to take the silver bracers away. Now, he wasn't going to open a space gate right in front of Shuhang, right?

"Buzz, buzz, buzz."

The silver glove started to shake while in midair. Then, the power of space reached over from a faraway place, intent on taking

it away.

However, the power of space was unable to accurately lock on the position of the silver glove, making it impossible to open the space gate.

After all, here was the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion. The whole Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion was part of Pavilion Master Chu's illusory reality. The reason the Sea King couldn't accurately lock on the silver glove and open the space gate to retrieve it was precisely the interference caused by the illusory reality.

Five breaths later, that power of space that had appeared out of nowhere had started to fluctuate. The Sea King was starting to get impatient.

At last, it decided to open the space gate forcefully. The silver glove was close by. In the worst case, it could look for it after opening the gate.

Thereupon, a crack in the space slowly formed in a place a hundred meters away from Song Shuhang.

If the space gate were to open, the dangling and tied up Song Shuhang was going to get f*cked pretty hard.

❄ ❄ ❄

But right at this time, a snow-white hand appeared next to Song Shuhang's body.

The snow-white hand made a gentle grabbing motion in the direction of the 'power of space'.

In the next moment, the power of space was shattered to pieces, and the crack opening in the space also disappeared without traces. The opening of the space gate had failed!

But that wasn't all. The hand also sent a palm attack in the direction the power of space was coming from.

The palm passed through innumerable layers of space and

directly hit the body of the Sea King.

The faint cry of the Sea King was transmitted from the void. The power of the gentle-looking palm was simply shocking.

The Sea King had tried to gain an advantage only to end up worse.

"Senior Chu," Song Shuhang said happily. The owner of the snow-white hand was Pavilion Master Chu.

In the next moment, Pavilion Master Chu rubbed her eyes and stepped out of the void from behind Song Shuhang's body.

The whole Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion was her world. As soon as someone used the power of space to forcefully barge into the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion, the fast asleep Fairy Chu was forced to wake up.

Since she hadn't slept enough, she was a bit angry when she woke up. Therefore, she gave the Sea King a slap to teach it a lesson.



"Good morning, Shuhang," Pavilion Master Chu said listlessly.

Her long black hair scattered in the void as she was flying. Song Shuhang could now finally see the full length of her hair—it was three times longer than her body.

Wouldn't such long hair weight a lot?

Wait, this isn't the main problem right now.

Song Shuhang clenched his teeth and said, "Senior Chu, please, quickly release me!" Although men could endure, there was a limit to it! And he was about to reach that limit!

"Oh, you are dangling too. I'm not sure what happened recently, but people seem to really like to dangle in front of the entrance of my pavilion..." Pavilion Master Chu muttered to herself. Then, she stretched out her hand and waved it. In the next moment, the chains binding Song Shuhang quickly withdrew.

Who the hell would like to dangle in front of the entrance of your pavilion! Song Shuhang ridiculed in his heart. At the same time, he fell from midair and steadily landed with a beautiful somersault.

Just as he landed, the Dragon Body Dantian in his body was forcefully pushed open. Shuhang had successfully opened his fourth dantian, the Dragon Body Dantian!

The strength of Song Shuhang's constitution increased a bit. However, his mental energy likewise increased. The place between his eyebrows was hurting more and more.

Unless he could quickly increase the strength of his constitution and make it reach the Third Stage rank, the pain he felt would keep getting more and more intense.

"The ghost spirit managed to evolve successfully." Song Shuhang was clear as to what had happened. He could infer through the contract that the ghost spirit had successfully completed its evolution.

His ghost spirit had now become a high-rank one. It was an existence comparable to a talented cultivator, whose cultivation speed already surpassed that of an ordinary cultivator. In addition, it could learn powerful ghost-type magical techniques!

It was really something worthy of celebration!

However, this wasn't the important thing right now.

Song Shuhang said anxiously, "Senior, where is the bathroom?"

"The grain reincarnation place? 1 It seems there is a certain affinity between you and that girl named Li Yinzhu," Pavilion Master Chu said with a smile. Then, she snapped her fingers.

"Snap!"

Song Shuhang was instantly delivered to another place.



After sending off Song Shuhang, Pavilion Master Chu bent over

and picked the silver glove up, saying softly, "The Sword Warfare Treasured Armor. Unfortunately, there is only a glove."

If one could collect all the pieces of the treasured armor, they would obtain an immortal treasure of the Ninth Stage Tribulation Transcender Realm. During ancient times, Pavilion Master Chu had heard that the armor had twelve pieces in total, and if one could collect all twelve of them, they would discover the secret to immortality concealed within.

"Although it's only a glove, it should be enough to cover up the ghost spirit aura emanating from Ye Si's body and make her pass off as an ordinary cultivator. But I'll need to combine it with certain materials and draw formations on it as well," Pavilion Master Chu muttered to herself.

Then, she took out a bottle and poured its contents on the silver glove.

The dark-blue liquid inside the bottle was poured on the glove.

The liquid had yet to touch the silver glove when a buzzing sound was heard, causing the appearance of a large amount of mist. It was the mark the Sea King was using to lock on the position of the silver glove, as well as the medium of communication between this piece of the Sword Warfare Treasured Armor and the altar on the bottom of the sea.

Now that Pavilion Master Chu had poured the contents of the bottle on the glove, the mark was thoroughly deleted. From now on, the Sea King would be unable to detect the presence of the silver glove regardless of the number of blood sacrifices it performed.

After doing what she had to, Pavilion Master Chu left her own mark on the silver glove. The mark had the power to lock onto the spatial coordinates of the glove.

By knowing the coordinates, Pavilion Master Chu could appear

next to the glove at any time. "This should be enough."

In that case, I might as well make little friend Song return here. Pavilion Master Chu snapped her fingers once more.

"Snap!"

Song Shuhang, who was currently in a jogging posture, directly appeared in front of her.

"The toilet was very good, right?" Pavilion Master Chu said.

"..." Song Shuhang.

Pavilion Master, is it possible that you didn't pay attention to my condition when you brought me over here? Weren't you afraid that I could sprinkle my pee in front of your pavilion by accident?

Pavilion Master Chu said, "I'll return this silver glove to you."

Song Shuhang received the glove and said gratefully, "Thank you, Senior Chu."

This time, he had been really lucky that Pavilion Master Chu was here with him. If he had been somewhere else and the Sea King managed to open the space gate successfully, it wouldn't have minded conveniently killing an eyesore of the Second Stage like Song Shuhang while taking the silver glove away.

"You're welcome." Pavilion Master Chu smiled and asked, "You want to leave the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion, right?"

"Yes, Senior. I have already satisfied the conditions that Senior White set back then. In addition, something happened to my ghost spirit," Song Shuhang replied.

"Something happened to your ghost spirit?" Pavilion Master Chu asked out of curiosity.

Song Shuhang forced a smile and said, "A few days ago, I sent my ghost spirit back to Earth, and recently, someone forcefully borrowed it."

Therefore, he wanted to return to Earth to look for his ghost spirit.

"So that's how it was. Since you have something you need to take care of, I won't force you to stay." Pavilion Master Chu nodded. Then, she also added, "Right, the condition of that girl named Li Yinzhu you brought here isn't too optimistic."

"Did her disease become more serious?" Song Shuhang furrowed her brows.

There was nothing he could do about Li Yinzhu's disease. Now, his best chance was to pin his hopes on the 'forbidden area' that Li Tiansu had explored before his death. Perhaps there was a cure inside that could help cure Li Yinzhu's disease.

However, he had to wait for Venerable White to be free before exploring the 'forbidden area'. Song Shuhang would be only courting death if he were to enter alone given his strength.

"In one year at most, the cold inside her body will reach a critical point and endanger her life. If she gets past the calamity, she will be able to live for a few more years. But if she fails, she will be forever entrapped in the ice," Pavilion Master Chu replied.

"One year?" Song Shuhang furrowed his brows. One year was just too short a period of time. He had no assurance that he would be able to find the cure to Li Yinzhu's disease within just a year.

Perhaps... he could buy the cure to Li Yinzhu's disease from the 'Almighty Merchant' that Senior Fourth Cultivator of True Virtue had mentioned. However, they didn't have any clue of the whereabouts of the Almighty Merchant for now, and it was unknown whether Senior Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue could find him within one year. Moreover, the number of spirit stones needed was also a big problem!

After seeing Song Shuhang's worried expression, Pavilion Master Chu pondered for a moment and said, "If you have no assurance of

finding the cure within one year, I can delay the moment her disease will break out for around twelve years."

Twelve years? Song Shuhang immediately cheered up. "Senior, please tell me how!"

"However, the price will be high," Pavilion Master Chu said with a smile.

Song Shuhang said, "What is the price?" As long as it was a price he could afford, he would do it even if he had to borrow stuff from others.

He owed Li Yinzhu's father, Daoist Priest Li Tiansu, too much. In addition, there was a deep connection between him and Li Yinzhu since he had experienced Li Tiansu's life in the dreamland.

"You have experienced the power of the Time City personally. In the Lower City of the Time City, twelve days are equivalent to one day in the outside world. Similarly, one day in the Upper City of the Time City is equivalent to twelve days in the outside world. As long as she enters the Time City and stays in the Upper City for one year, twelve years would pass in the outside world. However, one needs to consume a large number of spirit stones to keep the Time City active," Pavilion Master Chu said slowly.

Song Shuhang clenched his teeth and said, "Senior, can you tell me the approximate number of spirit stones needed?" Since it was a place related to the concept of 'time', it was nearly guaranteed that the price would be astronomical.

But regardless of the number of spirit stones, he would try to find a way to collect them.

Pavilion Master Chu blinked her eyes and said, "I don't lack spirit stones right now. Therefore, I want something else in return."

"Senior, do tell," Song Shuhang replied.

Pavilion Master Chu said, "I want that silver glove."

"No problem!" Song Shuhang quickly returned the silver glove in Pavilion Master Chu's hands, appearing especially straightforward.

"I'll remind you of something first. This silver glove is far from being an ordinary item. It's extremely valuable, and even a cultivator of the Eighth Stage Profound Sage Realm would yearn for it. Are you sure you want to use it to carry out the transaction with me?" Pavilion Master Chu said with a smile.

Song Shuhang nodded and said, "I know that it's extremely valuable." Venerable White, Venerable Spirit Butterfly, and Venerable Tornado had to join forces to snatch the silver glove from the hands of the Sea King.

However, it was a good deal to exchange the silver glove to gain additional twelve years for Li Yinzhu.

Although it was indeed very precious, Song Shuhang felt that the trouble the silver glove could bring to him surpassed its value!

"Hehe." Pavilion Master Chu put away the silver glove and asked, "Do you want to carry Ye Si with you while returning to Earth?"

Song Shuhang forced a smile and said, "I would like to. But I feel that it would be dangerous to have her leave the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion." He was unable to protect Senior Sister Ye with his current strength.

If he were to carry her back to Earth and meet a powerhouse of the Venerable or Profound Sage rank that wanted to take Ye Si away, Song Shuhang wouldn't even have the right to cry.

"In that case, I'll explain things to Ye Si. You can be at ease and return to Earth," Pavilion Master Chu said and passed a wooden token of authority to Song Shuhang. "Take this thing with you. It's a wooden token of authority that can allow you to move within the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion freely. In addition, you will always know the position of the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion while you have it with you. Beyond that, it has a strengthened 'thousand mile

sound transmitter' feature. If your luck is good, you can use it to communicate with Ye Si from Earth."

Song Shuhang cautiously put away the wooden token of authority and said, "Thank you, Pavilion Master."

It seems he was really going to have a long-distance relationship with his first love.



In the meantime, in the palace of the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion reserved for the guests.

Li Yinzhu was curling up on the bed and trembling.

Her cold disease could now break out at any time and was getting more and more serious. The whole room was already filled with cold air.

Frost had formed on the quilt she was using to cover her body.

The pair of male and female attendants had placed some runes to increase the temperature inside her room. However, the runes would last for one hour at most before getting destroyed by the cold emanating from Li Yinzhu's body. Even the fire in a brazier they had lit up died out in a very short amount of time.

At this time, Li Yinzhu consciousness was getting more and more blurry.

She forcefully opened her silvery eyes and looked around from time to time, looking for that figure that could make her feel her at ease.

But several days had passed, and that figure had yet to appear.

Just as the cold surged up, Li Yinzhu fiercely trembled and curled up, turning into a ball.

But right at this time, the door of the room opened again.

Li Yinzhu quickly raised her head and looked at the entrance.

However, it was still that pair of male and female attendants. A disappointed expression flashed through Li Yinzhu's eyes.

The male attendant had brought along new runes to increase the temperature to replace the old ones destroyed by the cold.

The female attendant was holding a flaming pearl that was emitting hot air and placed it next to Li Yinzhu's body.

"Thank you," Li Yinzhu said while shivering.

"You're welcome," the pair of male and female attendants said with a smile.

But at this time, another figure appeared out of nowhere at the entrance of the palace.

After a thud, the figure fell to the ground.

It was Song Shuhang, who had been delivered here by Pavilion Master Chu.

Before returning to Earth, Song Shuhang wanted to make proper arrangements for Li Yinzhu. In addition, there was also Chu Chu. It was unknown whether she would stay behind to take care of Li Yinzhu or if she would return to Earth along with him.

Chapter 588: Wherever there is oppression, there will be resistance!

As soon as she curled up Li Yinzhu saw Song Shuhang, her eyes lit up.

The pair of male and female attendants greeted Shuhang.

"Fellow Daoist Song, hello."

"Good morning, Fellow Daoist Song."

Song Shuhang got up from the floor and patted away the dust on his clothes. Then, he greeted the pair of male and female attendants and said, "Fellow Daoists, good morning to you two too. Many thanks for taking care of my daughter— Little Yinzhu."

That was close. Song Shuhang almost blurted out the words 'my daughter' just now. The reason was the strong influence he had received after experiencing Daoist Priest Li Tiansu's life.

Next, he shot a glance at Li Yinzhu, who was curled up on the bed and trembling. After pondering for a moment, he took out his treasured saber Broken Tyrant.

Then, under the puzzled expression of the pair of male and female attendants, Song Shuhang activated the 'Flaming Saber Technique' on the ancient bronze ring and chopped toward Li Yinzhu, sending a half-moon-shaped slash of flaming saber qi in her direction.

"Fellow Daoist Song, what are you doing?" The pair of male and female attendants opened their eyes wide. Song Shuhang's actions had been too sudden; the pair didn't have the time to block him.

Song Shuhang quickly explained, "You don't have to worry. I've already reached a high level of control over the Flaming Saber Technique. If I wish to, I can immediately disperse the attack. Anyway, just keep looking."

Just as he was saying this much, Li Yinzhu quickly got up from the bed and dashed until arriving in the front of the Flaming Saber Technique. Then, she opened her small mouth, her silver hair dancing in the air, and hastily performed several hand seals.

Immediately after, Li Yinzhu breathed in.

In the next moment, the huge flaming saber qi was sucked into Li Yinzhu's mouth as though it was noodles.

In around two seconds, she had completely absorbed the flaming saber qi.

"Burp~" Li Yinzhu burped with a satisfied expression on her face.

After eating the Flaming Saber Technique, her complexion turned ruddy, and the cold inside her body was also suppressed.

Of course, eating the Flaming Saber Technique was a method to relieve the symptoms but not to solve the underlying problem. It could only temporarily suppress the cold inside her body and prevent her from suffering.

Her father, Daoist Priest Li Tiansu, had spent a lot of effort to find this trick.

The nearby pair of male and female attendants opened their eyes wide: (⊙_⊙)

"Do you want some more?" Song Shuhang asked Li Yinzhu.

Li Yinzhu shook her head and jumped down from the bed. Then, she ran toward Song Shuhang on her short legs and used her small hands to grab his clothes.

Song Shuhang stretched out his hands and picked her up. "In that case, I'll bring you to see Chu Chu first. Then, I'll bring you to another good place."

She is so cold. Even if she ate the Flaming Saber Technique, her body temperature is still very low. It will surely feel comfortable to hug her during summer, right? Well, not quite right. If her cold

disease flares up, one will experience the brutality of winter itself.

"Hmm." Li Yinzhu obediently nodded her head.

Next, Song Shuhang waved his hand at the pair of male and female attendants and took his leave.

After that, he headed toward the Lower City of the Time City. Thanks to Pavilion Master Chu's wooden token of authority, he could freely move within the whole Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion.

In addition, not every part of the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion was part of Pavilion Master Chu's illusory reality. For example, Pavilion Master Chu's Celestial Pavilion and the Time City were real buildings built after the destruction of the pavilion.



In the meantime.

After Pavilion Master Chu hurled the Sobbing Old Man to a distant place, he fell into a space gate. It was unknown where he was right now.

Just as he recovered from the teleportation process, the Sobbing Old Man discovered that he was stuffed into something.

"It's very packed in here. Just what is going on? Where did Pavilion Master Chu send me?" the Sobbing Old Man muttered to himself.

He felt as though someone had thrown him to the bottom of a desert, completely immobilizing him. At this time, even his nostrils were stuffed with something.

He had already inspected the state of his body. From the looks of it, there wasn't any foreign object that had entered his body. Perhaps Pavilion Master Chu attached a protective layer to his body while delivering him over there?

"Pavilion Master Chu's disposition wasn't as good as I expected it to be. According to the description on the mural, she was supposed

to be a gentle and kind-hearted person... Now then, is there still hope for me to obtain the remaining part of the <Tome of Never-Ending Tears>?" The Sobbing Old Man was somewhat disappointed.

Forget it. There is no point thinking about it too much. I should get out of this strange place first.

As long as he knew the position of the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion, he wouldn't give up. He would keep persevering and rely on his powerful willpower to move the heart of the opposite party one day!

After thinking up to this point, the spiritual energy in the dantian of the Sobbing Old Man exploded, spreading all around his body.

"Boom~"



China, inside a beautiful forest on a remote mountain.

Several bored youngsters passed through the forest on the mountain and arrived at a certain place. Recently, many youngsters that had already become winners in life were especially bored.

A bald youth swallowed a mouthful of saliva and said, "The last time, my younger brother mentioned that there was a huge rock on the top of the mountain ahead. The shape of the rock was beautiful. It's something that is very hard to come by. "

Another youth that was carrying a bag on their back added, "I've heard about it as well. In addition, I've heard that the crew in charge of shooting the Journey to the West movie this year took a liking to this place. Perhaps they will shoot the scene of the birth of the Monkey King on the top of this mountain."

"In that case, we might as well go there and take a look. After all, we really have nothing to do today," a young girl said. The girl

seemed to be a sportswoman and looked very energetic.

The bald youth said, "Actually, I can faintly see the huge rock from where I'm standing. Little Zi, come over. You can take a look at the rock from here."

The sportswoman was very interested and came closer. As expected, she could faintly see a huge rock on the top of the mountain from that angle. The shape of the rock was unique.

Little Zi smiled and said, "Beautiful. Let's make an effort and take a group photo together with the strange rock while the sky is still clear."

Then, just as the youngsters were chatting amongst themselves, the sound of a thunder-like explosion was suddenly transmitted from a distant place.

The thunder-like sound was similar to that of artillery firing, absolutely ear-splitting.

The several youngsters immediately felt the ground below their feet shake.

"Aaaah~ An explosion!" Little Zi called out.

"Is it an earthquake or a landslide?"

"It's not an earthquake. It should be the work of some nasty fellow that fired artillery?"

"No, it's the strange rock ahead that exploded!" Little Zi called out once more.

Far-off, the beautiful and strangely-shaped rock had detonated. Even if the group was far away, they could still feel the vibrations caused by the explosion.

In the next moment, the group of people saw that a glistening figure came out of the huge rock and soared into the sky, disappearing between the clouds.

Just as the figure rose into the sky, a strange sobbing sound was

also heard.

"F*ck, the birth of the Monkey King!"

"Wukong! It's Sun Wukong!"

"Take a picture! Quickly take a picture!"

"Dammit, I almost got a heart attack! Anyway, we are too far away. The pictures aren't clear!"

"It's too late already. Whatever it was, it already flew far into the sky. We can't take a picture anymore."

"Let's go over and take a look at what happened to the rock!"

Thereupon, the group of people quickly headed toward the place where the explosion had taken place.

It was the genuine scene of the birth of the Monkey King! Although they didn't know what had flown out of the strange rock, what happened was still absolutely incredible!

If they had managed to record it and upload it online, it would have been a huge hit.

Unfortunately, all the pictures they took were very blurry due to the great distance. If they were to upload them online, the other users might think that the lot of them were just playing a prank.

Whatever! They would think about it when they uploaded them online!



In the meantime, on a certain island in the Pacific Ocean.

"In the end, the oath is finally complete." Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman took out a small notebook with a satisfied expression on his face. Then, he crossed out the oath that said: 'In education there should be no distinction, teach people how to read and write Chinese characters'.

After several months, he had finally managed to fulfill this oath

of his.

In addition, he had also gotten the Blood God Crystal from our little friend Song. Therefore, it was time for him to break through to the Fifth Stage Spiritual Emperor Realm!

Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman put away the small notebook and raised his head, looking at the natives on the island outside. Although the natives were a bit stupid, he had somewhat grown attached to them after all the months they had passed together.

From a certain point of view, these several natives could be regarded as Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman's 'students'.

Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman held his chin and muttered to himself, "Forget it. I'll give them a reward before leaving. I'll call the people in the palace and have two immortal chefs come over to prepare a delicious meal for the natives, allowing them to understand what the word 'delicious' truly means. Right, I should give them some medicinal liquid as well. It will keep them in good health and allow them to live up to a hundred years."



The group of natives that was painstakingly practicing the <Times are Calling> every day gathered in there.

"Dammit, that demon is simply too cruel. Today, Old Seven and Old Nineteen were hung on a tree and beaten. They are hanging there even as we speak."

"On the other hand, I was forced to skip two meals. The bark of a tree is enough to make my eyes lit up at this time."

"I had my palms hit very hard. They are still red, and I'm unable to pick up the pen and write even now. As if that wasn't enough, there is still a thousand-character long assignment for today's evening that I have to transcribe five times. I have no idea at which time I'll be able to finish it."

"From what I've heard, not only did that demon force us to study,

he also extended his poisonous hands toward our children! I've heard people say that he wants to create something called 'elementary school' and want us to send our children there to have them beaten and hung on trees each day, as well as their palms hit and meals skipped."

"That's truly scary. We cannot allow for such a thing to happen."

"Just as our teacher, Joseph, said, wherever there is oppression, there will be resistance! We have to unite and rebel!"

"We cannot drag it any longer. We have to make up our mind now!"

"It will be today! We have to gather together and rebel against the demon!"

"If there is oppression, there will be resistance! We don't want to starve, we don't want to be hung up and beaten, we don't want to have our palms hit, and we don't want to have so much homework do to at home!"

"Homework is fine, but not so much! With so much work, we have to keep writing until after midnight and wake up at 6 AM in the morning the next day. I feel like crying."

"I feel that my eyesight has gotten worse recently. It must be because I have to do homework until late every day."

"Don't turn the meeting into a grievance pouring session! Let's take action and rebel against the demon today!"

"Good, we'll make our move today!"

The group of natives finally made up their mind.

"Let's call all our friends and relatives. Tonight, we must march hand in hand with our hearts linked together to get rid of the demon!"

After finished the meeting, the natives finally dispersed. They started to gather their friends and relatives with the intent of

rebellling against the demon that very evening.



Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman, who had been monitoring the entire island all along, was currently speechless.

Chapter 589: The ocean-splitting attack of the master of the island!

Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman put down his mobile phone. At first, he was thinking of calling the people in the palace and having them send over two immortal chefs to allow the natives of the island to enjoy delicious food, as well as to help them increase their lifespan a little.

But now... he would give them a taste of something else!

Look how I scare you tonight!



In the evening.

The natives of the island had all gathered together.

Then, a native with a tall and big build stood up. He was the leader of the rebellion that was about to take place.

He raised his arm and shouted, "Today, we must give our all to revolt against that demon!"

The eyes of the natives below immediately lit up as they replied, "Yes, we must revolt against him! Then, we have to force him to reduce the homework by half. No, wait. He must reduce it by two-thirds or more!"

"Also, we cannot allow him to make us skip two consecutive meals! Make it at most once. Otherwise, I might not be able to endure!"

"There is still one last thing, the hits on our palms. He can at most hit one palm. If he hits both of them, we can no longer do our homework."

The natives there reunited started to voice out their opinions, and their wishes were very honest and simple! They wanted to skip

one meal at most, have only one palm hit, and they didn't forget about their homework!

But right at this time, the tall and big native said gravely, "You are a bunch of good-for-nothings!"

"You guys are simply too useless! What we are going to do this time is to rebel against that demon and overthrow him! Reducing the homework to one-third? How is this enough? We don't want to do homework at all!" the tall and big native said in a grave tone.

The natives below were dumbfounded. The man was right. Why would they want to do homework in the first place?

"No homework! No homework!" the natives started to shout in unison.

The tall and big native continued with his speech. "Likewise, we don't want to starve, we don't want to have our palms hit, and we don't want to be hung up on a tree and beaten!"

"No starving, no hitting palms, no hanging up and beating!" the natives shouted once more.

If there was a world where they didn't have to do homework, have their palms hit, getting hung up on trees and beaten, or starve... that would simply be a paradise!

"Such being the case, we must rebel against him and overthrow him!" the tall and big native shouted. "Let's overthrow the cruel master of the island! Let's overthrow the cruel master of the island!"

All the natives were seething with excitement as they shouted after him, "Let's overthrow the cruel master of the island! Let's overthrow the cruel master of the island!"

The tall and big native tightly clenched his fists and assumed the pose of one of the styles of the <Times are Calling> exercise. "In that case, let's warm up a bit before rebelling against the cruel master of the island! We have to be in our best condition!"

Indeed... the master of the island was very scary. Therefore, the tall and big native decided to practice the peerless martial technique a bit before taking action in order to increase his courage.

Immediately after, all the natives below that had practiced the <Times are Calling> orderly lined up with expressions full of hope on their faces.

"One two three four, five six seven eight. One two three four, five six seven eight..."

Hundreds of natives that knew how to perform the <Times are Calling> exercise danced wildly, their momentum overpowering.

Was this something akin to increasing the morale of the soldiers before the battle? Yes, it was something very similar.

The tall and big native was extremely satisfied after seeing this scene. However, there was also a little bit of regret... Unfortunately, we weren't able to practice for too long, and we are still not at that level Teacher Joseph mentioned, the level where one can create explosions in the air with just their fists. Otherwise, we could have KOed the master of the island in an instant!

It was a pity, but they couldn't wait any longer. The cruelty of the master of the island was too much to withstand, and they couldn't bear it anymore. They had to rebel today since it would be difficult to gather the courage to rebel at a later point. Even if the rebellion failed, they would at least show the master of the island that they had a backbone and aspirations.

The tall and big native leading the rebellion absolutely didn't want to do homework!

Only God knew how troublesome it was for a powerful warrior like him that was used to catch sharks in the past to pick up a pen and start writing with his hands full of calluses. In the time others wrote three characters, he was able to write only one!

Let alone writing characters with a normal pen, whenever he had to learn how to write characters with a brush, his thick and powerful arm would keep trembling, and all the strokes would end up being curved.

He absolutely hated doing homework!

After recalling all this, the will of the big and tall native to rebel against the master of the island became even stronger.



Now then, how would these natives react if they were to discover that Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman had been planning to leave the island the same evening and even prepared a banquet for them?



After completing one session of the <Times are Calling>, the natives felt that their bodies were brimming with energy.

We can do it! We aren't our past selves anymore! We have now grasped an incredible martial technique. We can surely overthrow the cruel master of the island!

"Let's head in the direction of the house of the master of the island!" The tall and big native waved his arm.

Thereupon, under his leadership, a large group of natives surrounded the place where Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman was living.

However, given Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman's awe-inspiring conduct in the past, the natives didn't dare to barge into the house carelessly.

"What do we do now? Should we barge in?"

"No, we can't do that. What if there is a trap inside?"

"If we directly barge in, and the place turns out to be small and narrow, the lot of us won't be able to bring into full play the power

of our superior numbers."

At this time, the tall and big native calmly pondered for a while and suggested, "In that case, we can simply force the master of the island to come out! Come, let's surround this place and start our warming exercises. As for those that don't know how to perform the technique, we can just have them shout loudly. I want to see for how long he can keep hiding!"

All the natives felt that the idea was reasonable.

Thereupon, the natives that knew how to perform the <Times are Calling> formed four square matrices and surrounded the house of the master of the island.

"One two three four, five six seven eight. One two three four, five six seven eight..."

Ultimately, they started to perform their exercises.

They maintained an upright position and raised their left arms while facing the left hand.

Next, they bent the right leg forward, and at the same time, their left arms were lifted towards the inside, facing the right hand!

Thereafter, their right leg went back to its original position, and at the same time, they lifted both arms (palms facing outside) and slightly raised their heads.

They breathed in and out with overpowering momentum.

In the rear, the natives that didn't study the <Times are Calling> shouted loudly, increasing the momentum of their side as well.



Very soon, half of the <Times are Calling> exercise had been completed. However, there wasn't a single trace of any activity coming from the house of the master of the island.

The natives had started to feel somewhat uneasy.

But right at this time, the tall and big native pondered for a short moment and suddenly came to a realization. "The cruel master of the island must be afraid of us! Keep displaying the peerless martial technique and shout out some more! He's afraid of us and is refusing to come out of the house for this reason! We must keep pressuring him until he is forced to come out!"

Just as their morale got boosted thanks to the words of the tall and big native, a happy smile appeared on the faces of the other natives. The speed at which they were performing the exercise also increased.

Their movements were neat and flawless.

Even the cruel master of the island felt scared!

Anyway, since even the master of the island was scared of the peerless martial technique that they had rigorously perfected through training, they excitedly started the second round as soon as they finished the first one.

All the natives slowly sank into their dreamworld... a world where there was no homework or punishments, a perfect world.

Their beautiful future was waiting for them!

"Come on guys, let's do it one more time! This time, we must take it one step further. We have to advance as we display the peerless technique! Let's barge into the house of the master of the island!" the tall and big native shouted.

Although he had performed just three rounds of the <Times are Calling>, his face was already covered with sweat due to the excitement.

After that, the natives started the fourth round of the <Times are Calling>, starting to advance as they were doing the exercise.

Very soon, the row of natives in the front was about to barge into Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman's house.

But right at this time... an ear-splitting explosion was transmitted from a distant place.

"Boom, boom, boom~"

The sound was like that of thunder and echoed continuously.

Soon after came the sound of waves and seething sea.

The natives that were currently displaying the peerless martial technique stopped immediately. The natives in the rear that were shouting were also forced to come to a stop.

"What happened?" the tall and big native asked in a grave tone. Was that the sound of thunder? Impossible! The bright moon was hanging in the sky, and there were even some stars. There weren't any clouds, and there was absolutely no sign of raining!

"The seashore! A more than ten meters tall water column suddenly rose from there!" one of the sharp-eyed natives said.

"Who wants to go over and look at what happened?" the tall and big native said.

Just as he was speaking, a young native ran over from the beach and said, "It's bad! We found the master of the island! He is currently on the seashore!"

The master of the island was on the seashore and not in the house?

All the natives that were performing the <Times are Calling> exercise and thinking that the master of the island was afraid of them felt rather embarrassed at this time.

Since the master of the island was also on the seashore, was there a connection between him and the thunderous sound from before?

The tall and big native clenched his teeth and said, "In that case, let's go to the seashore as well! Remember to preserve our momentum; we can do it! Think about the difficult homework, about the skipped meals, and the beatings... let all these thoughts

strengthen our momentum!"

"Yes, let's maintain the momentum from before!" the natives said resolutely.

Thereupon, the group natives headed toward the seashore with great momentum; their intent was to overthrow the master of the island!



Very soon, the large group of natives arrived at the seashore, their momentum overpowering.

But as soon as they got there, they stiffened.

They saw that the master of the island was standing straight on the edge of the beach. In the past, he had always worn a black windbreaker and a cool expression on his face. But now, he was wearing white gymnastics clothing and a pair of cloth shoes.

From the looks of it, the master of the island was doing exercises.

In the next moment, he jumped high up, and the jump was fifteen meters tall! Could a human even jump that high? What kind of joke was this?

Then, while he was in midair, the master of the island straightened his right leg and kicked several times.

A series of chain kicks while midair?!

In the next moment, something terrifying happened.

Pure and white energy visible with the naked eye was released from the tip of his toes after each kick.

Then, after flying for a while, the white energy transformed into dragons and tigers, thrusting into the sea.

The scene was simply surreal. It wasn't something that a human could possibly do.

Perhaps only a god could do something of the sort!

"Boom, boom, boom~"

"Boom, boom, boom~"

A series of explosions followed as the dragon-shaped energy thrust into the sea, directly creating a whirlpool on the surface of the sea. The whirlpool lasted for five or six breaths before disappearing, the surface of the sea unable to restore its calm for a very long time.

Then, just as the tiger-shaped energy thrust into the sea, the explosion created water columns that were more than twenty meters tall. The water columns solidified and didn't disappear.

It was shocking like the roar of dragons and tigers, but also incredibly cool.

The large group of natives that had come here with awe-inspiring momentum was immediately scared shitless.

If the master of the island were to use that leg to hit their bodies, wouldn't they directly turn into minced meat?

When the master of the island first came to their small island to subjugate the local population, he was unarmed. He disarmed the strongest warriors of the island and KOed them with his fists alone.

However, never would they have expected that he had been this scary!

Mom, I feel that my knees have suddenly become soft!

Chapter 590: Is this retribution?

The natives immediately got anxious.

Back then, the master of the island still could be classified as a human. But the master of the island they saw right now had already transcended the limits of humanity!

In front of this new and scary version of the master of the island, the 'peerless martial technique' the lot of them were secretly practicing was just a joke.

Even if each of them could reach the level where they could create explosions in the air with just their fists, wouldn't they be still hung upside down and beaten in front of the monstrous master of the island?

However, before the natives could recover from the shocking scene they had just witnessed, something even scarier happened.

The master of the island took a talisman paper out of nowhere and threw it toward the sky.

"Divine talisman, I command you to summon the divine lightning!"

The yellow talisman paper flew into the sky and sank into the layer of clouds.

In the next moment, a mass of golden lightning streaked across the horizon and headed toward the master of the island! Every streak of lightning carried great destructive power. Some of the natives that didn't have too much courage squatted down in fear and held their heads with their hands.

Was that lightning? The master of the island could unexpectedly summon lightning as well!

Heavens, was he an immortal?

But what was the master of the island planning to do?

Summoning lightning and striking himself? Wasn't this a bit over the top?

Just as the natives were in confusion, the master of the island raised his hand.

Afterward, he started to move his arms and punch toward the lightning he had summoned, shattering it to pieces and dispersing it.

You heard it right; he literally shattered the lightning to pieces!

Earlier, the natives felt that their knees had gone soft, but after witnessing this scene, they just couldn't bear it anymore and directly knelt on the ground.

After the master of the island shattered to pieces all the streaks of lightning that filled the sky, he turned his head toward the natives and said in a grave tone, "Why are the lot of you gathered here? Have you already finished your homework?"

The natives looked at each other and didn't know how to reply to this question.

But right at this time, the tall and big native had a clever idea and immediately replied, "Master of the island, we heard a huge explosion just now. Therefore, we came over to take a look out of curiosity."

While he was at it, he didn't forget to do some bootlicking as well. "The level the technique of the master of the island has reached is absolutely outstanding, unparalleled in the world!"

"Heh." Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman faintly smiled and said, "Right, earlier, I heard someone shout that they wanted to rebel against a cruel demon. What was that about?"

"Cruel demon? What's that? We don't know anything about this matter," the tall and big native said with a serious expression on his face.

"You guys don't know anything about it? In that case, I must have misheard since there was a lot of noise while I was practicing." Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman calmly nodded his head.

All the natives immediately heaved a huge sigh of relief. It would be absolutely great if they could get away with it without receiving any punishment.

But right at this time, Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman also asked, "Right, I taught you the <Book of Odes> today. Do you remember the content? The <Book of Odes> has quite a number of rare Chinese characters. Therefore, I was wondering whether you guys had some problems while studying it."

The tall and big native patted his chest and said, "Absolutely no problems. None whatsoever. We really liked studying the <Book of Odes>!"

The natives in the rear also said after him, "The sentences in the <Book of Odes> are exquisite. 'Chirp! Chirp! Cry the fish hawks on an islet in the river. A mild-mannered good girl; a fine match for the gentleman.' How exquisite!"

"Today, we discussed this topic all along. We are hoping for the master of the island to teach us more about the <Book of Odes>!"

"Yes, that's it! We like stuff like the <Book of Odes> the most!"

"I really wish I could study the <Book of Odes> all day long!"

The natives talked all at once and patted their chests, expressing their love and appreciation for the <Book of Odes>. They even strongly demanded the master of the island to teach them more about the book.

Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman silently nodded and said, "I didn't think you would like the <Book of Odes> so much!"

After pausing for a moment, he made up his mind and added, "Such being the case, we'll slowly complete the study of the <Book

of Odes》in the next days!"

The natives really wanted to cry tears of blood. However, they still forced themselves to look cheerful.

But right at this time, Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman decided to throw some more salt on their wounds. "Actually, I was preparing to say goodbye to you guys this evening. After all, my original wish was to have you guys become literate and capable of reading and writing. Since my duty was complete, I was planning to stop your lessons after briefly introducing you to the 《Book of Odes》. I had even prepared a sumptuous banquet for our last day together.

But since you guys liked the 《Book of Odes》 so much, I decided to stay until I completely teach you the book! Ladies and gentlemen, let's spend some more happy time together!"

All the natives were dumbfounded.

"Sob, sob, sob~" Next, all the natives started to cry, looking especially aggrieved.

Senior Seven Lives Talisman evilly smiled and said, "Heh, look at how moved you are. Very well, I'll do my best to teach you the 《Book of Odes》 in that case. But you need to mentally prepare yourselves because I'll be even stricter!"

"Sob, sob, sob~" The natives felt like crying until losing consciousness.

If they hadn't come out this evening to seek death, the demon would have quietly left the island on his own...!!!

At this time, they felt like crying their hearts out. They were so sad that their tears flowed down like the Niagara Falls.

Senior Seven Lives Talisman continued, "Good, good. It's late already; you should go back and take a rest. Right, finish your homework a bit earlier and be in the class tomorrow at 5 AM. Since my time is not much, we have to finish studying the 《Book of

Odes》 within half a month. Thereupon... you will come to class a bit earlier, return home a little later, and have a bit more of homework to do at home! We'll finish studying the 《Book of Odes》 in no time!"

"Sob, sob, sob~" Several natives hugged a big tree and cried rivers.

Several others bumped their heads against big trees, wishing they could pass out.

"Life is truly wonderful!" Senior Seven Lives Talisman sighed with emotion. While he was at it, he would use that half a month to grind the Blood God Crystal into blood ink used for talismans.



With great difficulty, the crying and suffering natives dispersed one after another and went to do their homework with faces full of tears.

Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman took off his gymnastics clothing and wore his black windbreaker once more.

"Those guys are too naive. To think they wanted to revolt against me... In the next half a month, I'll let them have a taste of China's currently most popular and hellish cramming method! I'll make you study the 《Book of Odes》 until you get nausea!" Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman said as he coolly put on his sunglasses.

After saying this much, he turned around and prepared to return to his house.

But right at this time, a fissure formed in the space next to him, getting bigger and bigger.

Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman's face froze. Then, he immediately squeezed between his fingers his crystal finger ring while attentively looking at the space fissure.

In the next moment, a man wearing a scholarly robe stepped out

of the crack in the space.

The man looked cultured and elegant. However, both his eyes were red and full of anger and hatred.

"Painful, painful, painful! How come the wound isn't healed yet? It's there even if I advanced until reaching the high-rank with much difficulty!" The face of the scholarly man twitched in pain after he came out of the space fissure.

This was the same powerful expert that had forcefully borrowed Song Shuhang's ghost spirit.

Song Shuhang's secret appraisal technique was the cause of the wounds on his back. They disregarded any form of defense and evasion. In addition, the pain they caused was amplified by 1000%. There was no way to heal them; one could only grit their teeth and endure.

"Little friend Shuhang?" Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman blurted out in surprise as soon as he saw the person that had suddenly appeared.

The scholarly man gritted his teeth and replied, "Heh. I'm sorry, Fellow Daoist, but you must have mistaken me for someone else."

"Excuse me, Senior. It's just that your appearance is very similar to a fellow daoist I know."

"Oh, about that. Perhaps you didn't get the wrong person, then. This time, I forcefully borrowed the ghost spirit of a fellow daoist. Perhaps the ghost spirit I borrowed belongs to that fellow daoist known as 'little friend Shuhang'. Anyway, I'll have to trouble you to tell something to Fellow Daoist Shuhang when you have the time. Although I borrowed his ghost spirit, I'll return it after some time. At that time, I'll also give him a reward that would satisfy him for sure." The scholarly man faced Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman and cupped his hands.

"..." Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman. Is it possible to

forcefully borrow a ghost spirit?

Afterward, the scholarly man took out a map and inquired, "Another thing, Fellow Daoist. Did you see another scholar almost dressed like me in the East China Sea area? And if you saw him, was that guy in a confusional state? According to what I was able to sense, he should be roaming around in the East China Sea."

"I'm sorry, but I didn't see him." Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman shook his head. Then, he kindly reminded, "In addition, we are in the Pacific Ocean here, Senior."

The scholarly man looked at the location of the Pacific Ocean on the map and was somewhat speechless.

"In that case, Fellow Daoist, I'll take my leave. My time is not much, I need to find that guy as soon as possible. Let us bid farewell," the scholarly man said with a forced smile. Then, he stretched out his hand and tore the space apart, disappearing into the crack.

Before leaving, he turned around his head and said to Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman, "Right, remember to tell that fellow daoist that even if I borrow something, I always return it. I'm someone with a good reputation. He doesn't need to worry!"

Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman was speechless.

He had just met a Ninth Stage Tribulation Transcender that could rip even space apart!

Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman gently touched the crystal ring on his finger. Even if he had this crystal ring that could allow him to teleport away, he wasn't sure if he could escape from the hands of a Ninth Stage Tribulation Transcender.

While facing such a powerful existence, he was so scared that he unconsciously broke out in a cold sweat.

After heaving a sigh, Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman tried to calm himself.

But before he could regain his composure, another space fissure opened next to him. This fissure was even bigger than the previous one.

At the same time, several tentacles came out of the space fissure.

Again?!

Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman attentively stared at the space gate.

In the next moment, a huge luminous jellyfish came out of it.

After coming out of the space gate, the jellyfish looked all around and asked Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman, "Oh! Fellow Daoist, hello. Did you see a man dressed up as a scholar just now?"

Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman replied, "If we are talking about the same Senior, he headed toward the East China Sea."

"Thank you." The luminous jellyfish faintly smiled and also added, "Right, do you know a certain Fellow Daoist named Song Shuhang?"

"Yes," Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman said, nodding. Was this person also related to little friend Shuhang?

"No wonder, no wonder. I saw several talismans in his 'size-reducing purse' that had your aura on them. Those talismans were pretty good. You are a talisman master with great creativity," the luminous jellyfish said.

"Thank you for your praise, Senior," Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman said excitedly.

"Anyway, let us say goodbye. I need to chase after that guy." The luminous jellyfish spread her tentacles and tore the space, creating a fissure and sneaking inside.

After she was gone, Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman heaved another huge sigh of relief.

Meeting two legendary Tribulation Transcenders at once made

him feel incredible pressure.

Although the two Tribulation Transcenders had done their best to suppress their aura, Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman still felt as though he was unable to breathe while facing them. After all, both of them were strong enough to kill him with just a finger!

Is this retribution? Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman thought to himself as he forced a smile. He had just finished scaring the natives when two Tribulation Transcenders appeared and scared him in return.

Chapter 591: Seven: I'm going to kill that baboon!

After those two Ninth Stage Tribulation Transcenders left, Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman finally returned to his house.

Then, he prepared to go in the Nine Provinces Number One Group and see whether or not Song Shuhang was online. If he was online, he would tell him about the matter related to those two Tribulation Transcenders. However, little friend Shuhang was currently in space. Did he even have the possibility to get online?

In the Nine Provinces Number One Group, the group chat had been incredibly lively as of late.

All the people in the group had a common topic to chat about. The weapons of many fellow daoists were already itching to get into action and go to Medicine Master's place to have a heart-to-heart conversation with Copper Trigram.

All the fellow daoists wanted to know whom had Copper Trigram disguised as during the past several hundred years with his damnable 'disguising technique' to cheat other people with his divinations.

At this time, Northern River's Loose Cultivator wrote in the group: " ***@Su Clan's Seven,*** Fellow Daoist Seven, I've heard that you are already headed toward Brother Medicine Master's place to meet Fellow Daoist Copper Trigram, is that correct?"

"That's correct. I already wanted to go to Medicine Master's place to get some special raw medicinal materials. Therefore, I decided to conveniently take a look at Fellow Daoist Copper Trigram while I was at it. However, something unexpected happened while I was on my way there. Hehehe... 😏" Su Clan's Seven popped out and sent an evil smile.

Northern River's Loose Cultivator: "What happened?"

"Just as I was on my way there, I saw a baboon trying to pass off as 'Su Clan's Seven' happily loitering around. Hehehe. At this time, I'm chasing after that baboon. If I don't chop that monkey to pieces today, my surname is not Su! Anyway, let's have this discussion later since I'm currently busy. I'll bring that damnable baboon to Fellow Daoist Medicine Master's place and gift it to him." After writing this much, Su Clan's Seven returned in lurking mode.

"..." Northern River's Loose Cultivator.

Dharma King Creation: "Speaking of baboons..."

Young Master Phoenix Slayer: "Yeah, this must be Brother Thrice Reckless' doing!"

Fairy Dongfang Six (kamikaze driver): "Are we talking about the baboon form that Fellow Daoist Thrice Reckless used as a camouflage back then on the Grievance Settling Platform? Did he get addicted to it afterward?"

Northern River's Loose Cultivator: "Given Thrice Reckless' disposition, he probably thought: 'Woah! This baboon form is rather good, and I simply can't stop using it after trying it once'. Then, after turning into a baboon, he must have gone around shouting something like: 'I'm Su Clan's Seven. I ask everyone to keep my looks in mind'."

Young Master Phoenix Slayer: "No wonder Fellow Daoist Seven was so upset. Anyone witnessing such a scene would go mad. Anyway, Little Six, there is an extra part in your nickname. Did you add it there yourself?"

Fairy Dongfang Six (kamikaze driver): "Which extra part?"

Young Master Phoenix Slayer: "Kamikaze driver?"

Fairy Dongfang Six (kamikaze driver): "Ah? I didn't add anything! Dammit, who added that extra part? Come out! Look how I run over your face with my car!"

Northern River's Loose Cultivator: "Aside from the user itself,

only True Monarch Yellow Mountain and the other administrators of the group can change nicknames. However, all the administrators are powerful seniors of noble character and high prestige. They shouldn't be bored to the point of playing silly pranks such as this."

Young Master Phoenix Slayer: "And the founder of the group, True Monarch Yellow Mountain, isn't this bored, either."

Northern River's Loose Cultivator: "Hehe, True Monarch Yellow Mountain surely wouldn't do something of the sort... however, there is Doudou with him. Who knows, perhaps Doudou was able to get his hands on True Monarch Yellow Mountain's account?"

Dharma King Creation: "I dare to bet that it was definitely Doudou's doing."

Fairy Firefly: "Doudou +1"

Treasure Forging Heavenly Mansion's Yang Xian: "Doudou +2."

Island Master Tian Tiankong: "Doudou +3."

Vice-Island Master Tian Tianwei: "Doudou +4."

Fairy Dongfang Six: "Dammit, I'll remember about this!"

At this time, in True Monarch Yellow Mountain's immortal cave.

Doudou, who was preparing to stealthily run away from home, suddenly felt uneasy. He felt as though he could get into a car crash at any time.

"Weird, what did I do recently? Wait a moment, I didn't do anything wrong recently and behaved very well! Whatever, I should run into space first and think about this matter later. It will be over if stupid Yellow Mountain manages to marry me to a man!" Doudou used his paw to rub his nose and quietly continued with his great escape.

He, Doudou, a monster dog of the Fourth Stage, would absolutely not marry a man!



Right at this time, Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman also got online. "Now then, was little friend Shuhang online recently?"

Fairy Lychee: "Didn't Fairy Firefly send little friend Shuhang to space? I heard that he was going to stay in space for one month. Right, from what I remember, Senior Senior Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue said that he wanted to bring little friend Shuhang to explore an ancient grave. ***@Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue***."

However, Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue wasn't online and couldn't reply.

Fairy Lychee: "It seems that Senior Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue is offline. Anyway, Seven Lives Talisman, why are you looking for little friend Shuhang?"

"Nothing important. I just asked thoughtlessly. On the other hand, was there any news of Venerable White's squad after they entered the ancient ruins?" Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman asked.

Northern River's Loose Cultivator: "They are still inside the ruins. This time, they didn't come out due to Senior White suddenly stumbling and wiping out the entire team. They probably reaped many benefits in there."

Fairy Lychee: "I really envy them. Had I known earlier, I would have also participated in the hand-guided tractor competition!"

Northern River's Loose Cultivator: "Fairy Lychee, you don't need to worry. There is still the next session of the hand-guided tractor competition."

Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman: "Ahaha. I've heard that Venerable White will participate as a contestant in the next session. I'm afraid that the competition will be especially... deadly!"

All the fellow daoists immediately thought of a fearsome scene.

During the hand-guided tractor competition, Venerable White's luck allowed him to bump into all the lucky traps, making him advance by leaps and bounds. On the other hand, the other contestants had only bad luck. Meteors falling from the sky, lava erupting from flat land, earth giving way, and so on awaited them. Just the thought was scary enough.

Northern River's Loose Cultivator: "Who will be in charge of preparing the next hand-guided tractor competition? We must remind that Fellow Daoist to get life insurance for all the participants before the start of the competition."

Dharma King Creation sighed with emotion and said, "What Fellow Daoist Northern River said is indeed reasonable."

Just as the various seniors were discussing the next session of the hand-guided tractor competition, little friend Song Shuhang quietly got online.



Late at night.

Inside a remote mountain forest in China.

Song Shuhang's form suddenly materialized midair and fell into the forest.

"Ugh, what the hell happened? Teleporting to a different place can actually make one feel dizzy and nauseous?" Song Shuhang used a tree as support and started to retch.

After a long time, he raised his head and looked at the forest. From the looks of it, it seemed like a tropical rainforest.

This time, he returned to Earth alone. Li Yinzhu and Chu Chu didn't come back with him.

Li Yinzhu had to stay in the Upper City of the Time City so that he could gain as much time as possible before her disease flared up again. Song Shuhang had to spend a lot of time to convince her to

stay there.

As for Chu Chu, she decided to stay in the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion to take care of Li Yinzhu.

Finally, Pavilion Master Chu personally sent Song Shuhang back to Earth. However, Shuhang hadn't expected that Pavilion Master Chu's long-distance teleporting technique would make him feel as though he was going to die.

After he was done retching, Shuhang took a deep breath.

In the next moment, his body felt incredibly relaxed. The reason was that the gravity in the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion was around three times higher than on Earth.

"Now then, where am I right now?" Song Shuhang looked all around. He hadn't been teleported to a foreign country, right?

Well, whatever. He was already lucky enough to have managed to return to Earth.

He took out his mobile phone and swiped on the screen.

Now that he was back on Earth, the mobile phone that Venerable White had magically modified back then could finally connect to the Internet.

In the next moment, the phone automatically updated date and time.

August 6th, 2019. 10:25 PM, Tuesday.

Next, he opened the map and looked at his current position.

China, Southern China area.

Luckily, he had been sent back to China. In addition, he didn't end up in a desert or a similar place.

The only problem was that there was some distance between his current position and Wenzhou City.

Shuhang wasn't willing to use the flying dragon puppet.

Although the puppet was very fast, the number of spirit stones it consumed was also very high.

I should try to find a way to get in contact with the ghost spirit.

However, Song Shuhang didn't have the slightest clue as to how to look for the ghost spirit.

That powerful expert had blocked the connection between him and the ghost spirit. Therefore, he couldn't get any information aside from the few ones through the contract.

"Should I look for Senior Copper Trigram and ask him to perform a divination for me?" Song Shuhang muttered to himself.

Although he was known as a shady fortune teller, Senior Copper Trigram was a rather incredible fortune teller from a certain point of view. One just had to take into consideration the opposite of the outcome of his divination to get a highly accurate result.

Just as Song Shuhang was in deep thoughts, he got a notification from the Nine Provinces Number One Group. Someone in the group had mentioned him.

Thereupon, Song Shuhang got into the group and discovered that Senior Seven Lives Talisman was looking for him.

" ***@Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman,*** Senior, were you looking for me?" Song Shuhang asked.

In the Nine Provinces Number One Group.

Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman: "Eh? Little friend Song Shuhang managed to get online?"

"I'm already back on Earth 😊," Song Shuhang replied.

As soon as Song Shuhang sent this message, Fairy Firefly quickly popped out and asked, "What? You have already returned to Earth? But you stayed there only for a few days, and there is still a long way to go to before reaching the 30 days limit! Does it mean

that I wasn't able to properly send you up there?"

"That's not the case, Fairy Firefly. I returned on my own initiative," Song Shuhang explained.

Fairy Firefly: "That won't do. Where are you now? I'll immediately send you back to space!"

"..." Song Shuhang.

"Wait for me. I've locked your position. Don't get too far, alright?" Fairy Firefly also added.

"You don't need to worry!" Song Shuhang quickly said. "Fairy, have mercy. Actually, I've already fulfilled the conditions Senior White set back then. I've already stayed in space for more than 30 days, and the rune of the 'Ten Thousand Mile Flying Escape Technique' that Senior White gave him also activated!"

Fairy Firefly was confused. "What?"

After reading up to this point, Northern River's Loose Cultivator's eyes lit up. "Shuhang, is it possible that you chanced upon a secret realm related to 'time'?"

It was truly fortunate! If a cultivator could come in contact with powers such as 'time' and 'space' ahead of time, it would be really helpful for them in the future.

"Senior Northern River is really amazing. You immediately guessed the correct answer," Song Shuhang exclaimed in amazement.

Fairy Firefly sent a pondering (🤔) emoji.

But after a short time, she wrote, "That won't do, either. I find all of this rather inappropriate. I promised Senior White that I would send you to space for one month, and that month has to be calculated with normal time. Counting the time passed in the secret realm is no different than cheating! Such being the case... wait for me. I'll send you to space one more time to make up for

the days that are still left!"

Chapter 592: Yu Jiaojiao: Shuhang, I've caught the author

"No, Fairy Firefly, stop! I still have many important things to take care of. Moreover, I've stayed in space for more than 30 days already. How is that considered cheating? Otherwise, you can contact Senior White and ask him if the days I've passed in space count or not!" Song Shuhang didn't have the time to type and directly sent a voice message.

However, before Song Shuhang could even send the message in the group, Fairy Firefly's profile picture grayed out. She had gone offline. From the looks of it, she had locked onto Song Shuhang's approximate position through his IP address and was heading in his direction at high speed.

Song Shuhang's eyes immediately started to tear up.

The Fairy Firefly I knew wasn't such an unreasonable person!

After all, he found that the red-skirted Fairy Firefly was someone very easy to chat with the first time they met. Back then, she even asked Shuhang at which time he would like to go to space.

Then, she even provided a place where Song Shuhang could temporarily keep his spirit rice. In Song Shuhang's mind, Fairy Firefly was a sincere and generous beautiful woman in a red skirt.

But he hadn't expected that Fairy Firefly was the scary type of person that would spend a lot of unnecessary energy on trivial matters!

Thereupon, Song Shuhang took out the silver dragon puppet and left the place as soon as possible. Hopefully, he would be already far away by the time Fairy Firefly arrived there.

At the same time, he set his profile invisible and started lurking silently.



The silver dragon puppet danced in the air.

Song Shuhang used the private message feature and contacted Senior Seven Lives Talisman. "Senior, were you looking for me earlier?"

Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman: "Shuhang, did something happen to your ghost spirit?"

"Eh? Senior, how do you know?" Song Shuhang was surprised. Then, he also wrote: "Yes, my ghost spirit... was forcefully borrowed by another person."

"As expected, it was your ghost spirit 😊!" Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman forced a smile and wrote: "Earlier, I got to meet that powerful expert that borrowed your ghost spirit."

Song Shuhang's eyes immediately lit up as he said, "Senior, can you tell me where you saw him?"

"I met him on that small island in the Pacific Ocean where the natives live. However, that powerful expert headed toward the East China Sea next... or so he said!" Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman said. He felt that that senior was someone with no sense of direction. He actually ended up in the Pacific Ocean while looking for the East China Sea. Therefore, would he really be able to successfully reach the East China Sea now that he was headed there?

"Thank you, Senior Seven Lives Talisman," Song Shuhang said gratefully.

Again the East China Sea...

The last time he was in the East China Sea, he chanced upon the mysterious island and lost a good chunk of his memories. Then, he somehow recovered bits and pieces, but even up until now, he had yet to recover his memories completely.

Aside from him, Senior Northern River, Senior Thrice Reckless, and Senior Ancient Lake Temple suffered the same fate. Actually, the lot of them were in an even worse condition. Up until now, they showed no sign of recovering their memories. Senior Medicine Master was still trying to research a method to allow them to recover their memories with all his might.

Song Shuhang rubbed his temples.

"The East China Sea is so big... how can I exactly find the person that borrowed my ghost spirit! It's literally like fishing for a needle in the ocean!"

No, I mustn't be so pessimistic!

If he were to look at things from another perspective, he had obtained some info about the ghost spirit and successfully narrowed down the search area to the East China Sea. He didn't need to look for the ghost spirit all over the world.

Song Shuhang had greatly benefitted from this trip to space. Amongst the benefits he obtained was his new capacity to look at things from a different perspective, which was of great aid.

At this time, Senior Seven Lives Talisman sent another message: "Shuhang, do you also know a senior that has the appearance of a luminous jellyfish?"

"A luminous jellyfish?" Song Shuhang's complexion immediately became white. "Perhaps I've seen her. But we don't know each other well."

Whenever Song Shuhang recalled the scene of the luminous jellyfish hanging him upside down and beating him, he couldn't help but feel awful.

Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman: "The luminous jellyfish-like senior was apparently chasing after your ghost spirit."

Eh? The luminous jellyfish left the Time City of the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion?

"Thank you, Senior Seven Lives Talisman. This information you provided was really useful," Song Shuhang said gratefully. It was an important clue that he could use to find his ghost spirit!

"In addition, that powerful expert that borrowed your ghost spirit said that he would return it and give you a reward as well. I've heard that he is someone with a good reputation and high prestige," Senior Seven Lives Talisman said.

Can boarding the bus without a ticket and buying one only after getting caught be regarded as prestigious...?

"Little friend Shuhang, I wonder if you want to go to the East China Sea to look for the person that 'borrowed' your ghost spirit?" Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman asked at this time.

Song Shuhang replied, "Yes, Senior. At the very least, I would like to know what that expert wants to do after borrowing my ghost spirit. Of course, I won't overexert myself. If there is any danger, I'll immediately get out of there."

"In that case, you can try to contact Fellow Daoist True Monarch Tyrant Flood Dragon's family. The East China Sea is under the control of his family, and if there is the slightest sign of trouble in the East China Sea, they would immediately get wind of it."

Song Shuhang's eyes immediately lit up. Yu Jiaojiao was a member of True Monarch Tyrant Flood Dragon's family!

Thereupon, he happily said, "Thanks for the reminder, Senior Seven Lives Talisman. Such being the case, I'll contact Yu Jiaojiao."

After finishing his conversation with Senior Seven Lives Talisman, Song Shuhang quickly looked for Yu Jiaojiao's account and sent her a private message.

Tyrannical Saber Song One: "Jiaojiao, where are you right now?"



China, Jiangnan area. Inside a luxurious villa.

At this time, the palm-sized Yu Jiaojiao was lying in bed and fiddling with the tablet with her small claws.

Today, she had managed to squeeze 20,000 characters out of the author named Gao Moumou and was happily reading the content he had produced.

She had been particularly happy for the past several days. Therefore, she was planning to be merciful and allow that 'Holy Paladin' guy to get out of the small black room for half a day.

Just as she was in deep thoughts, she received a notification from the instant messaging program. It was a message from Song Shuhang.

"Eh? Shuhang, are you back from space?" Yu Jiaojiao quickly wrote. "Right, did you look at the message I sent you the last time?"

"It's a long story, and yes, I just returned to Earth. Anyway, which message did you send me?" Song Shuhang looked at the chat logs and didn't see any message from Yu Jiaojiao.

Thereupon, Yu Jiaojiao sent Song Shuhang the same message from the day before yesterday. "Shuhang, what kind of plot do you want for the movie? Magical realism? Wuxia? Xianxia? Science fiction?"

Then, she also added, "Shuhang, there is another good news. I managed to find that author that writes interesting stories. I've kidnapped him and closed him inside a small black room, making him write 20,000 or 30,000 characters every day. Reading so much content makes me truly happy. Recently, I've been thinking of kidnapping my favorite mangaka as well, closing them inside a small black to make them draw faster."

"..." Song Shuhang.

The poor author was kidnapped and closed inside a small black room, forced to write from 20,000 to 30,000 characters every day.

This kind of experience was surely going to toughen him up, as well as move him to tears.

Song Shuhang could only observe a five-second silence for this anonymous author. Once he was done writing the plot of the movie, he would quietly give the author some money to compensate him.

After all, I can only do this much for that poor soul.

In the next moment, Song Shuhang wrote: "As for the genre of the story... since it has to be broadcast on New Year, it's better to choose a happy plot. However, we cannot waste the talent of our actors, either. After all, many seniors of the Nine Provinces Number One Group want to participate in the movie. Since all the seniors are powerful experts, if we shoot a fighting scene, it's bound to be amazing! In that case, I think it's better to go with a xianxia or fantasy genre."

"What you said seems reasonable," Yu Jiaojiao replied.

"Right, I also need to show those vehicle registration certificates somewhere. Therefore, it's better to use either modern or futuristic setting," Song Shuhang said.

After all, the main reason he had to shoot this movie was that set of vehicle registration certificates. Therefore, he had to make use of them somewhere in the story in order to satisfy Papa Song.

"Modern setting seems boring. Let's use a futuristic one. Science fiction + xianxia or science fiction + fantasy... they both seem rather exciting," Yu Jiaojiao said happily.

"It doesn't really matter whether it's exciting or not. The only objective is to have fun. Ah, yes. There will be several characters making their appearance in the movie. There will be the seniors of the Nine Provinces Number One Group, as well as their friends. We have to satisfy everyone's requests as far as possible," Song Shuhang said.

"If there are so many characters appearing, the movie will go downhill!" Yu Jiaojiao said. Of course, it wouldn't be the case if the characters died as soon as they appeared or as soon as their profile was shown.

"It's fine. After all, we don't want to show it to others. We want to shoot the movie to amuse ourselves, and we can shoot it the way we like. Then, after we are done with the shooting, we can play it at home. It should be rather interesting 😊," Song Shuhang said with a smile.

Yu Jiaojiao nodded and wrote, "What you said is reasonable."

"Right, Senior White must be the main character! Senior White is really looking forward to this movie." Then, Song Shuhang also added, "This point is very important. If Senior White isn't happy, the consequences might be unimaginable!"

"Sure," Yu Jiaojiao said. Afterward, she wrote another sentence: "Male protagonist or female protagonist?"

"Obviously male protagonist! If Senior White ends up with a female role, I'll be killed on the spot!" Song Shuhang immediately said.

However, the last time, when he and Soft Feather were seeking death together and took pictures of Venerable White with all different kinds of twin-tails, the resulting pictures were truly outstanding, to the point that they triggered an avatar-changing storm in the Nine Provinces Number One Group.

Actually, given Senior White's looks, it wouldn't be a problem if he were to perform the role of the female protagonist...

Bad, bad, bad! Song Shuhang quickly got these scary thoughts of his head.

As the saying went: If you didn't seek death, you wouldn't die!

Just a moment ago, he saw in the Nine Provinces Number One Group that Senior Seven was chasing after the baboon-version

Thrice Reckless to kill him.

He, Song Shuhang, didn't want to become the third death-seeking baboon of the group!

"I understand. Senior White will be the male protagonist of the movie." Yu Jiaojiao noted it down. "However, I feel that it's truly regrettable to let Senior White perform the role of the male protagonist. Perhaps we can make it so that the male protagonist has the hobby to wear female clothing?"

"Don't seek death! Jiaojiao, you had joined the group only a few days ago. You have to try your best not to catch the Thrice Reckless Disease," Song Shuhang quickly said.

Yu Jiaojiao asked, "The Thrice Reckless Disease? What's that?"

"The full name of the disease is: Senior Thrice Reckless Mad Saber's 'If you don't seek death, you won't die' Disease. You should be clear of its meaning," Song Shuhang said.

"..." Yu Jiaojiao.

Tyrannical Saber Song One: "Hold on. We have been chatting for a while, and I almost forgot about an important matter. Yu Jiaojiao, where are you now? I need to meet you."

Chapter 593: Gao Moumou: Good brothers should share joys and sorrows

Since he was too absorbed in chatting with Yu Jiaojiao about the movie, Song Shuhang almost forgot about an important matter. He was looking for Jiaojiao because he needed her help to gather info about matters that had recently happened in the East China Sea. It was his only hope of finding the traces of that powerful expert that had borrowed his ghost spirit.

Yu Jiaojiao replied, "I'm in the Jiangnan area."

"I'll immediately head toward your position!" Song Shuhang typed swiftly. Afterward, he tightly hugged the neck of the silver dragon puppet, firmly attaching himself to its back.

"Head toward the Jiangnan area at maximum speed!"

The silver dragon flapped its wings and flew high up, sprinting forward with all its might. The spirit stones inside its body were also quickly consumed.

Song Shuhang's complexion turned somewhat pale. Although he had just returned from a space trip, his acrophobia wasn't showing any sign of improving.

Now then, should he actually add a railing to the silver dragon puppet? With that, he would feel much more secure.

Wait a moment, I forgot to ask Yu Jiaojiao her exact address!

From the looks of it, he would have to wait until arriving in the Jiangnan area before asking. It was rather troublesome to send a message now that the silver dragon puppet was going at full speed.



At this time, in a luxurious villa in the Jiangnan area. To be more precise, inside the 'small black room' that Yu Jiaojiao mentioned some time ago.

Although it was called 'small black room', the room was very big, and one could adjust the brightness inside as they pleased.

In the corner of the room was a huge desk with a high-quality, adjustable office chair.

Gao Moumou was currently leaning against the huge chair. The chair had a 'body massage' feature that made him feel very comfortable as he was shaking all over.

Next to him was a magnificent double bed. At this time, his girlfriend Yayi was lying there and soundly sleeping.

Yu Jiaojiao was surely all-resourceful. That day, just as he was thinking of having a long lovey-dovey call with Yayi to talk about their matters between lovers, Yayi was suddenly brought over in the evening.

Likewise, Yayi's parents were also happily waving their hands at her while she was brought away, just as though they had been brainwashed.

Afterward, Yayi accompanied Gao Moumou and settled down in the small black room. But unlike Gao Moumou, she wasn't restricted in any way. She could stroll in the whole villa and leave at any time.

"Another chapter is finished. However, I still have to edit it... at this point, I'll consider it part of tomorrow's batch. Anyway, It's going to be midnight soon..." Gao Moumou muttered to himself. He had already written 23,000 characters today.

During the past several days, he had written from 20,000 to 30,000 every single day. He was writing at a speed that the old Gao Moumou wouldn't even have dared to dream about.

Earlier, he could write 10,000 characters in one day at most, and he could write that many characters only if he were to hole himself up in the house for the whole day during holidays. In addition, his brain would feel like exploding if he were to try to write again after

finishing his 10,000 characters, making him unable to think of a good plot.

But now, he felt as though his mind was fresh all the time, and even after writing 30,000 characters, he felt rather energetic!

At first, he was terrified. He thought that the girl named 'Yu Jiaojiao', whom he had only seen through pictures or contacted through voice messages—and never seen in person up until now—had put a performance-enhancing drug in his meals. After all, only something like a performance-enhancing drug would make him feel full of energy even after writing characters for the whole day.

But later, he discovered that there wasn't any side effect even though he was feeling energetic and clear-headed all day.

What made him feel even more shocked was the state of his body. During the past several days, he had stayed in the small black room to write characters all day. Under normal circumstances, the condition of his body should have quickly deteriorated.

But contrary to his expectations, the condition of his body had been absolutely perfect for the past days.

Due to university courses, he didn't have the opportunity to exercise too much as of late. Therefore, his abs had slowly disappeared. But now, their outline was becoming clearer as the day passed. In addition, he felt his arms full of strength as well.

Beyond that, he felt that harmful substances were expelled from his body every day, improving his condition even further to the point that even some of his internal injuries had disappeared.

For example, his right shoulder would hurt from time to time due to him playing too many video games and writing chapters late at night during his high school days.

After writing characters for a long time, his shoulder would inevitably start hurting.

But when he woke up yesterday, Gao Moumou discovered that

his aching right shoulder wasn't aching anymore!

Therefore, Gao Moumou was sure that there was something wrong with the daily meals that Yu Jiaojiao was giving him to eat. The problem was that he didn't know if the stuff she was putting in his meals had only good effects or bad ones too.

Gao Moumou saved the chapter he had just written.

Then, after pondering for a moment, he pressed the button on his desk that could allow him to contact Yu Jiaojiao.

Once he pressed the button, the lovely voice of a girl directly echoed beside his ears. "Mister Gao, did you finish writing another chapter?"

Although there wasn't any acoustic equipment in the surroundings, the voice of the opposite party was directly echoing in his ears.

Of course, Gao Moumou would never be able to guess that it was simply the 'secret sound transmission technique'.

Gao Moumou shook his head and said, "It has yet to be edited. I'll count it as part of tomorrow's batch."

"Sure, no problem. I've already read enough today. I'm very satisfied," Yu Jiaojiao said with a smile. "In that case, did you need something from me?"

"Yes. I need to ask you something," Gao Moumou said. One would find it hard to believe that this girl with a lovely voice was a cruel and brutal reader that had gone as far as kidnapping him and locking him in a small black room...

It was truly a scary and fixated fan. This fact alone was enough to give him a lot of pressure.

Yu Jiaojiao smiled and said, "Go ahead. You can speak without holding back."

Gao Moumou said, "Question 1: For how long do you want to keep

me closed in this place?"

"Heh, if possible, I would like to keep you here for a lifetime," Yu Jiaojiao replied cutely.

"I refuse!" Gao Moumou said vehemently. He would rather die than stay in this room for his whole life.

"I was just joking! Mister Gao, the main reason I brought you here is that I wanted you to write a story for us, an interesting one! After that, we will use the story to shoot a movie," Yu Jiaojiao said.

"..." Gao Moumou.

Fck. To put it plainly, you just wanted me to write the plot of a movie?*

If it was just this, you could have just made me sign a contract, and everything would have been fine! After all, it's not strange for webnovels to be adapted into movies or TV series nowadays. Was it really necessary to kidnap me and lock me into a small black room, making him write chapters all day?

"But then, I thought: since I already have to bring him here to write the plot of the movie, why not conveniently force him to write chapters as well? I really like your novels. The only problem is that your release rate is simply too slow, and I can't get enough chapters that way. Now that you can write from 20,000 to 30,000 characters every day, you can reluctantly satisfy me. Actually, if you could write from 50,000 to 60,000 characters, it would be even better. It's really regrettable that you are not that fast..." Yu Jiaojiao also added.

Gao Moumou's eyes started to tear up. In the end, bringing him here to write the plot of the movie was just an excuse. Her real objective was to kidnap him and lock him inside this small black room to make him write chapters!

"Mister Gao, do you have anything else to ask me?" Yu Jiaojiao said gently.

"Question 2: Did you add something to the food you give me to eat every day?" Gao Moumou asked.

This question was of great importance. Although what they fed him didn't cause him any problem at the moment—and even healed his internal injuries—what if the bad effects showed up only after a long time? Wouldn't that be even more fearsome?

"You finally noticed this point. To be honest, I thought you would notice it earlier." Yu Jiaojiao seemed very interested in this topic and quickly started to explain. "Anyway, it's nothing important or worth mentioning. What I added to your daily meals are the 'Eye-Opening Pill' and the 'Energizing Medicinal Liquid'. These two things are powerful restoratives that can strengthen your hearing and eyesight, as well as allow you to stay in high spirits and full of vitality. These two medicinal prescriptions have been passed down since ancient times, and the raw materials used to produce them are very valuable. Therefore, you can be at ease; there won't be any aftereffect. In addition, I recently added to the stinky tofu you love eating a little bit of 'body tempering liquid'. Fortunately, what you like to eat the most is that stinky tofu. Otherwise, it would have been difficult to conceal the smell of the body tempering liquid. Anyway, the body tempering liquid is a medicinal liquid that we cul— martial arts experts take when practicing. It can strengthen the constitution and remove certain internal injuries that have stayed behind after practice. Just like the other two, the body tempering liquid doesn't have any aftereffects, either. However, since your constitution was rather weak, I had to dilute several times the body tempering liquid I gave you."

"Is there really no aftereffect?" Gao Moumou asked, still worried.

"Absolutely none. You can completely believe me on this," Yu Jiaojiao said. Her voice seemed to contain a type of persuasive power. There was a strange power concealed inside her pleasant voice.

It was a power belonging to monster fishes that Jiaojiao had inherited from her mother.

After all, the singing of a mermaid had the power to bewitch others.

When she spoke earlier and assured Gao Moumou, Yu Jiaojiao's voice had a certain 'charming' power concealed within. She herself was unaware of this matter.

Gao Moumou nodded and said, "I understand."

For some reason, he immediately believed Yu Jiaojiao's words when she made her pledge.

Afterward, Gao Moumou also asked, "Did you add those things in Yayi's food too?"

"Yes. I've done it to give Mister Gao face. It can be considered a health-improving gift," Yu Jiaojiao said with a smile. This type of health-improving gift was difficult to obtain even with a large sum of money!

"Should I thank you in that case?" Then, Gao Moumou also said, "Anyway, I have one last question."

Yu Jiaojiao replied, "Mister Gao, please, say."

"I wanted to ask you if I could make a few calls. I wanted to call over some friends so that they could accompany me and get locked inside the small black room together with me," Gao Moumou said resolutely.

Good brothers were meant to stick together through thick and thin, as well as to share joys and sorrows.

Now that he had suddenly chanced upon these mysterious and excellent medicine, he decided to share them with his brothers. Tubo, Yangde, and Shuhang should also seize the opportunity to get a taste of these restoratives.

Then, after they had gotten these good things, it should be fine

for them to join him inside the small black room, right? It was only right to share difficulties too!

Yu Jiaojiao nodded and said, "Fine. I'll allow you to contact your friends."

* * *

Soon after, two girls dressed up as maids entered the room and installed a fixed phone on Gao Moumou's desk.

After installing the phone, the two maidservants smiled and said goodbye to Gao Moumou, withdrawing from the room.

Gao Moumou heaved a sigh and took out his mobile phone, looking for Song Shuhang's number.

Reminder: his mobile phone had no signal while inside the small black room.

Such being the case, he could neither go online nor make calls with his phone.

It wasn't that Yu Jiaojiao was afraid that Gao Moumou would get in contact with the outside world. It was to prevent Gao Moumou from getting distracted due to surfing the Internet too much.

Gao Moumou grabbed the fixed phone and dialed Song Shuhang's number.

Soon after, Song Shuhang's voice was transmitted from the other end. "Hello, who is it?"

"Shuhang, it's me, Gao Moumou!" Gao Moumou said warmly.

"Ahaha, it's you, Moumou. Shouldn't you be on holidays with your girlfriend at this time? Did you need something since you called me?" Song Shuhang said.

Gao Moumou heard the sound of strong wind coming from the other end. What was Song Shuhang doing at this time?

"Shuhang, are you free right now? If you are free, we can have a

get-together with our other friends," Gao Moumou said.

"Sure, no problem! However, I have an important matter I need to take care right now, but I should be able to get done with it quickly. When are we meeting, and at which place? I'll come over as soon as I can," Song Shuhang said straightforwardly.

"I've already decided the place... I'll send you a message with the address later. If you have the time, you should directly go there after you are done taking care of that important matter. This time, our get-together will last for a few days. My girlfriend Yayi is also there," Gao Moumou quickly replied. The reason he didn't give Song Shuhang the address yet was that he had never gotten out of the small black room since after he was kidnapped.

Therefore, he had no idea of the address of the villa.

Thereupon, Gao Moumou pressed once more the button on his desk.

The two maidservants that had installed the phone on his desk just now entered the room and asked, "Mister Gao, do you need something?"

Gao Moumou replied, "What's the full address of this villa?"

"Jiangnan area, Honghe Town, Jiangnan Street, Number 105," one of the two maidservants replied.

"Very well, I've noted it down. Right, can you send a message for me? I would like to send the address of this place to my friend." After saying this much, Gao Moumou gave Song Shuhang's phone number to the two maidservants.

"Sure, Mister Gao. We'll immediately send the message." The two maidservants noted down Song Shuhang's phone number and withdrew from the small black room.

Now then, what's the family background of this Miss Yu Jiaojiao? She has maidservants even in this age and time, Gao Moumou thought to himself.

Afterward, he dialed Tubo's number and started a new round of hoodwinking.

Even if he had to expose the fact that he was a webnovel author, he would still drag his three roommates in the small black room together with him!

* * *

In the meantime, Song Shuhang quickly arrived in the airspace of the Jiangnan area.

The speed of the silver dragon puppet decreased and Song Shuhang took out his mobile phone, sending a message to Yu Jiaojiao: "Jiaojiao, what is the address of your current location?"

Yu Jiaojiao quickly replied: "Jiangnan area, Honghe Town, Jiangnan Street, Number 105. Come quickly. I'll introduce you to that author."

Then, not even two seconds after Yu Jiaojiao finished sending her message, Song Shuhang received another message.

Address: Jiangnan area, Honghe Town, Jiangnan Street, Number 105.

"Jiaojiao is really careful. She especially sent the message a second time!" Song Shuhang said with a faint smile.

Thereupon, Song Shuhang opened the navigator on his phone and inserted the address 'Jiangnan area, Honghe Town, Jiangnan Street, Number 105' in the search bar.

The silver dragon puppet flapped its wings and quickly headed toward Yu Jiaojiao's villa.

* * *

Around two minutes later.

The silver dragon puppet descended in the courtyard of Yu Jiaojiao's villa while it remained invisible, preventing ordinary people from seeing it.

Yu Jiaojiao had been waiting there for a long time already.

As soon as Song Shuhang landed, she lightly jumped and fell on his shoulder, saying, "Let's go. I'll bring you to meet that author. Right, why were you looking for me? You can tell me while we head there."

Chapter 594: F*ck, isn't that my good friend Gao Moumou?!

Just as she jumped on Song Shuhang's shoulder, Yu Jiaojiao noticed that there was a pale layer of golden light covering his whole body, protecting him.

Yu Jiaojiao blinked and said, "Heavens, the light of virtue is protecting your body?"

Yu Jiaojiao was a half-flood dragon and half-monster existence. Therefore, she was very sensitive toward something like the light of virtue. After all, when the light of virtue protected one's body, demons and monsters couldn't approach them.

However, Yu Jiaojiao didn't have any evil intention toward Song Shuhang. As such, the light of virtue didn't try to repel her when she jumped on his shoulder.

"Ahaha, about that... it's a long story, but recently, I learned the 'Soul Ferrying Technique' and coincidentally chanced upon several empty and pure souls of the Fifth Stage Spiritual Emperor rank. After I ferried them to the afterworld, the light of virtue condensed and reached the level where it started to protect my body," Song Shuhang said.

"You chanced upon several souls of the Fifth Stage Spiritual Emperor rank? And after you ferried them to the afterworld, the light of virtue directly started protecting your body? Isn't your luck a little bit too absurd?" Yu Jiaojiao gave him a supercilious look and said, "Shuhang, tell me honestly, are you Venerable White in disguise?"

"Perhaps Venerable White thought of me that day and gave me his long-distance blessings?" Song Shuhang replied. In addition, he didn't believe that his luck was that good recently.

Actually, he felt that he had been rather miserable as of late.

Whenever he carelessly triggered the secret appraisal technique, blood would spurt out of his body.

When he was trying to learn the Soul Ferrying Technique, he experienced what death looked like.

As if that wasn't enough, someone forcefully borrowed his ghost spirit.

Right, his first love died a long time ago, and she was later reborn as the offspring of a ghost spirit. Whenever Shuhang thought about the last part, his eyes would start tearing up... because other people could now forcefully sign a contract with his first love!

Yu Jiaojiao was in deep thoughts. Could Venerable White's blessings be really that effective? Should she beg him to give her a protective talisman or something of the sort?



Under Yu Jiaojiao's supervision, Shuhang headed toward the small black room where the author was locked.

On the way there, Shuhang told Yu Jiaojiao about that powerful expert that forcefully borrowed his ghost spirit, as well as that the powerful expert was now headed toward the East China Sea.

Yu Jiaojiao said, "A ghost spirit can actually be 'borrowed'? I've never heard of something like this happening."

Once the ghost spirit had signed a contract with someone, it would become an extension of their body.

Borrowing a 'ghost spirit' was something akin to borrowing Song Shuhang's arm without cutting it off. Was something of the sort even possible?

Song Shuhang forced a smile. Nevertheless, he obtained some benefits after the ghost spirit was borrowed. For example, his ghost spirit was now a rare 'high-rank ghost spirit'. Once it was back, it would be a treasure that even a Seventh Stage Venerable

would find very valuable.

"I understand. I'll pay attention to the news coming from the East China Sea. As long as something strange happens, I'll immediately notify you," Yu Jiaojiao said as she patted her chest with her small claw. It was nothing but a slight effort for her.

"Thank you, Jiaojiao," Song Shuhang said.

The East China Sea was very big, and it was impossible for him alone to keep an eye on it. Now, he only had to wait for Yu Jiaojiao's message. Hopefully, he would be able to find clues about his ghost spirit.

"You don't need to worry. From your description, that senior doesn't seem to have bad intentions. Moreover, given his strength, he doesn't need to lie about this matter. Since he promised to return your ghost spirit, he would surely return it," Yu Jiaojiao comforted.

"Let's hope so," Song Shuhang said.

"Let's put aside this worrisome matter for now and meet that author to ask him to write an interesting story for us," Yu Jiaojiao said happily.



On the way there, Song Shuhang asked thoughtlessly, "Jiaojiao, where is that author from?"

Yu Jiaojiao said with a smile, "Precisely here, in the Jiangnan area. Therefore, I decided to arrange the small black room in the same area."

Song Shuhang nodded. However, he couldn't help but unconsciously think about his friend Gao Moumou. Gao Moumou also lived in the Jiangnan area.

Song Shuhang's three roommates—Gao Moumou, Turbo, and Yangde—all lived close to the Jiangnan area. For this reason, they

were half-day students. They would live in the dorm from Monday to Friday and return home during the weekend.

As soon as he thought of Gao Moumou, Song Shuhang remembered that Moumou was very excited and wanted to introduce him to an online friend named 'Yu Jiaojiao'.

Wait a moment. How come the more I think about it, the more I feel that there is something wrong with this situation?

"Jiaojiao, how did you find the author?" Song Shuhang asked once again.

Yu Jiaojiao smiled and said, "It's a long story. A few days ago, I registered a new chat account and looked for the account of the author. It didn't take him long to add me."

This turn of events sounded somewhat familiar! Song Shuhang asked again, "Jiaojiao, what is the ID of your new account?"

"It's precisely my real name, Yu Jiaojiao! I felt that my name was rather pleasant to hear," Yu Jiaojiao said.

"..." Song Shuhang.

At this time, he had a bad premonition in his heart.

Since the matter was brought up, Yu Jiaojiao enthusiastically continued with her explanation, "Back then, I played the part of a charming and bashful girl and covertly obtained the address of the author after a short conversation. Right, while we were chatting, something interesting happened. The author told me he wanted to see my picture."

"..." Song Shuhang.

The bad premonition he was having had gotten stronger... because this part seemed even more familiar!

Song Shuhang asked, "Then, whose picture did you send to the author?" Yu Jiaojiao surely couldn't have sent her own picture. After reaching the Fifth Stage, she would definitely turn into a

beauty, but for now, she had the appearance of a half-fish and half-human!

"Of course, I sent him my own picture! He is an author I like, and I couldn't deceive him by sending him someone else's picture," Yu Jiaojiao said with a smile. "But what I sent him was a picture I took with my mother when I was a toddler. Back then, I still had the appearance of a small axolotl, and my mother was holding me in her hand. Actually, my mother is quite a beauty. Therefore, the author didn't suffer a loss."

"..." Song Shuhang.

Shuhang had started to panic.

Could there really be such a big coincidence?

By the way... Jiaojiao, does your father—True Monarch Tyrant Flood Dragon—know that you are sending pictures of your mother to complete strangers online?



When Song Shuhang landed in the courtyard earlier, it was already 11:58 PM.

Now, while he was chatting with Yu Jiaojiao, a new day had begun.

August 7th, Wednesday, right after midnight.

"We've arrived. The author is in that room ahead," Yu Jiaojiao said while pointing at the 'small black room'.

The two maidservants standing at the entrance faintly glanced at Song Shuhang and stretched out their hands to push the door of the room open.

"Wait! Don't be in such a hurry to open the door!" Song Shuhang called out.

At this time, he was suspecting that the author inside the small black room was exactly his good friend Gao Moumou. If that was

the case, how was he supposed to face his friend?

Therefore, he had to prepare himself mentally!

The best thing to do would be to glance inside the room from the crack in the door to see who the author was.

However, Song Shuhang's voice was one step too late.

The two maidservants were half-monsters of the Second Stage Realm, and the gentle strength they created as they stretched out their hands was enough to open the door—their hands didn't even touch it.

The door was slowly pushed open.

"..." Song Shuhang.

Please, let it not be Gao Moumou! Please, let it not be Gao Moumou! Please, anyone but Gao Moumou!!!

"Shuhang, what are you doing?" Yu Jiaojiao asked Song Shuhang in puzzlement. She felt that he was acting somewhat strange.

But right at this time, the author sitting on the office chair in the small black room—and enjoying the chair massage—appeared before their eyes.

After noticing that the door had been pushed open, the author raised his head.

Song Shuhang's eyes met with the author's.

Song Shuhang was dumbfounded: 🤖!

The bright light illuminated the face of the author, whom Song Shuhang found very familiar.

The author was somewhat handsome and wore a new pair of trendy eyeglasses. When he raised his head, his lenses refracted a weird light. It was guaranteed that these eyeglasses were of the same brand as the ones Young Master Phoenix Slayer was wearing.

There was no mistake. It was precisely his good friend Gao

Moumou!

But didn't fool deny that he was a webnovel author earlier? Such being the case, why the hell was he kidnapped by Yu Jiaojiao and locked inside a small black room?!

However, this wasn't the main problem right now. The main problem was... how should he face Gao Moumou?

Song Shuhang operated his brain at full speed.

He could immediately apologize: 'Ah? Gao Moumou, this situation is super embarrassing. Actually, the whole thing is a big and wonderful misunderstanding. Yu Jiaojiao is my friend, and since I wanted to shoot a movie, she decided to look for an author that could write an interesting plot. As a consequence, she kidnapped you and brought you here.' Then, he could add a 300-character long small essay as an apology.

Alternatively, he could overawe him with a sudden show of force: 'F*ck. Gao Moumou, you idiot, what are you doing here?!'

He could feign ignorance: 'Eh? Gao Moumou? Are you also here as a guest? What a coincidence! I also just arrived here as a guest!'

In the room, Gao Moumou likewise looked at the face of the guest that had come to visit him.

Gao Moumou was also dumbfounded.

Wasn't that his good friend Song Shuhang?

Fck, how come Shuhang arrived here so quickly?*

He told the two maidservants to send Shuhang the address of this place just a few minutes ago, and unexpectedly, Shuhang was already here?

Did it mean that Shuhang just happened to be close by?

The atmosphere became weird.



"Old Gao." Song Shuhang braced himself and waved his hand at Gao Moumou.

"Heavens. Shuhang, you actually came here so quickly. I just told someone to send you the address of this place, and after a few minutes, you are already here?" Gao Moumou sat up on the chair and beckoned with his hand. "Shuhang, did you happen to be close to this place?"

He just told someone to send me the address of this place?

Does it mean that the message I received while I was riding the silver dragon puppet was sent on Gao Moumou's behalf?

Song Shuhang made a hollow laugh.

What kind of absurd coincidence was this?

"Don't stand there in the entrance, quickly come in. Right, let's speak in a low voice. Yayi just went to sleep, and it's better not to wake her up," Gao Moumou said.

After the reminder, Song Shuhang noticed the petite Yayi lying on the nearby beautiful double bed, soundly sleeping.

"..." Song Shuhang.

Shuhang felt that he had a sarcastic remark stuck in his throat but didn't know how to spit it out.

At this time, Yu Jiaojiao, who was sitting on Song Shuhang's shoulder: 🙄!

Song Shuhang and the author actually knew each other?

Chapter 595: That day, I suddenly thought of shooting a movie

Yu Jiaojiao said via secret sound transmission, "Shuhang, do you know the author?"

"Gao Moumou is a friend of mine, and also my roommate," Song Shuhang replied via secret sound transmission, not knowing whether to laugh or cry.

"..." Yu Jiaojiao.

Could there really be such a coincidence?! There were more than 8 billion people in the whole world in 2019... and the webnovel author she casually decided to kidnap just happened to be Song Shuhang's roommate and friend? Then, would the mangaka she was planning to kidnap next be Song Shuhang's great-aunt or something?!

Song Shuhang braced himself and entered the small black room. He casually pulled a chair and sat down in front of Gao Moumou. Then, he shot a glance at the extravagant office chair Gao Moumou was sitting on. From the looks of it, Gao Moumou seemed to be rather enjoying his life here?

The two maidservants in the rear gently smiled and closed the door of the room.

Gao Moumou poured Song Shuhang a drink and asked, "Shuhang, you said you had an important matter to take care of on the phone. Have you already taken care of it?"

"I've found a way to solve the problem. Now, I just have to patiently wait for it to be solved. I don't have to worry about it anymore," Song Shuhang said with a smile. At the same time, his vision fell on Gao Moumou and the computer in front of him.

He was looking for an opportunity to explain to Gao Moumou what was going on. After all, they were close friends, and he would

feel bad if he were to keep deceiving him, especially since he was the main reason Yu Jiaojiao had kidnapped him locked him inside a small black room.

"Since you came here so quickly, did you happen to be close by?" Gao Moumou asked about this matter.

Song Shuhang forced a smile and said, "Yes, you can say this was the case."

Gao Moumou looked at Shuhang strangely. He felt that the way Shuhang was acting today was somewhat different than usual. In addition, within this half a month they hadn't seen each other, Shuhang seemed to have gotten taller and stronger...?

Gao Moumou also added, "Earlier, I called Tubo and Yangde as well. Tubo said that he was at his grandfather's place and would come here only tomorrow at noon. As for Yangde, he said he wanted to spend the whole night finishing a small program. He will come here after he wakes up tomorrow afternoon. Tomorrow, the four of us will be able to have a get-together and happily drink together."

Song Shuhang nodded and said, "Good."

He held the cup with the drink with both hands and took a sip.

How should he explain the situation to Gao Moumou?

If he were too direct, he might ruin their friendship! But if he were to speak in a roundabout way, he might cause an even bigger misunderstanding if he wasn't clear enough.

Gao Moumou sat on the office chair and gently pushed his glasses up.

As expected, there was something wrong with Shuhang. Since he had entered the room and seen him, he had been in a daze. In addition, was he really not curious as to why he was inside this villa?

Under normal circumstances, Shuhang would have given him a warm hug right after entering the room. Then, he would have immediately asked him why he had held the meeting inside this villa.

Gao Moumou crossed his arms and propped his chin up, looking at Song Shuhang through his lenses. For some reason, he felt as though Song Shuhang already knew everything... as though he already knew the reason he was inside the villa...

After pondering for a moment, Gao Moumou said, "Shuhang, I need to tell you a secret."

Song Shuhang raised his head and asked, "What secret?"

"Actually... I concealed the truth from you the last time we were chatting. I'm a webnovel author, and I've been writing webnovels for many years now," Gao Moumou said.

When he decided to call over Song Shuhang, Tubo, and Yangde as guests, he was clear that he couldn't keep this secret anymore. After all, from now on, he would have to write from 20,000 to 30,000 characters every day to please Yu Jiaojiao. Therefore, it was better to tell them about this matter directly.

"I see." Song Shuhang slightly nodded. The topic of the conversation was finally going in that direction!

Gao Moumou still had his arms crossed and was propping his chin up... weirdly enough, Song Shuhang wasn't surprised in the slightest after hearing his secret!

"Then... a few days ago, I told you that a very good-looking female reader added me, right? You should still remember her. After all, that Yu Jiaojiao was an incredible beauty, and I even sent you her picture, planning to introduce her to you guys who were still single," Gao Moumou continued.

"Yes, I remember." Song Shuhang nodded silently. He had a deep impression of this scene.

Yu Jiaojiao, who was sitting on Shuhang's shoulder, covered her face with her small claws. The current development was simply too bizarre. In particular, when she heard Gao Moumou narrate this matter, her embarrassment cancer suddenly flared up.

Deeply aggrieved, Gao Moumou said, "Afterward, that reader called Yu Jiaojiao used some unknown method to convince my parents and dragged me here to this place, locking me up in a small black room and forcing me to incessantly write every day. I was told to write at least from 20,000 to 30,000 characters every day. Otherwise, I wouldn't receive any meals!"

"..." Song Shuhang.

At this time, his whole face was frozen. He had no idea what kind of expression to face Gao Moumou with.

"But on the other hand, the meals here aren't bad. During each meal, I can easily eat three big bowls of rice; that rice tastes really good. Even without garnishing, I can eat two big bowls of it," Gao Moumou continued with his explanation.

Of course, it was because that was spirit rice!

Then, Gao Moumou said with a mysterious air, "In addition, something very special was added to the dishes. I've eaten these dishes for several days, and I've felt full of energy since then. Beyond that, some internal injuries I had also disappeared. And from what I'm told, the raw materials used won't cause any complications in the future. I plan to wait until it's time to leave to ask Yu Jiaojiao to give me the materials of the 'energizing medicinal liquid', 'body tempering liquid', and so on. Once I'm back, I'll have my family members try them as well."

Due to Yu Jiaojiao's words from earlier carrying a powerful 'persuasive' power, Gao Moumou now firmly believed in the efficacy of the energizing medicinal liquid and body tempering liquid.

Gao Moumou continued narrating his story.

The nearby Song Shuhang could only keep nodding.

After Gao Moumou finished his story, Song Shuhang faintly sighed and asked, "Old Gao, didn't you consider... running away from this place?"

You were kidnapped and brought here to write chapters, right?

You got locked inside a small black room, and as if that wasn't enough, you won't get to eat a meal unless you finish writing the required number of chapters first!

Why did you have a happy expression on your face just now?! And how can you eat three big bowls of rice during each meal given the situation you are in?!

The way Gao Moumou was acting was completely different than the usual him! One had to remember that Gao Moumou was the most mature member in the dormitory and was usually the one to take care of Song Shuhang and the others.

"Running away from this place?" Gao Moumou, who still had his arms crossed, propping his chin up, was dumbfounded. Fck. What he said makes sense. Why didn't I try to run away from this place?*

It was rather strange, but since he was kidnapped and locked inside the small black room, he had somehow accepted his fate, starting to write chapters in exchange for meals—even if Yu Jiaojiao never tried to starve him.

Anyway, why hadn't he considered running away from there?

Even after he got the address of the place from the maidservant, he never considered running away; neither did he think of secretly using the address, telling Song Shuhang and the others to call for help and save him.

Is it due to those delicious meals I'm getting every day?

But I'm not a foodie!

Gao Moumou was in a dilemma.

But right at this time, Yu Jiaojiao gave Song Shuhang a supercilious look and said via secret sound transmission, "It's due to a mental suggestion."

Since she had kidnapped Gao Moumou and locked him inside a small black room, she had taken precautions and would not allow him to run away that easily!

If she were to lock Gao Moumou inside a real iron cage, it would put a lot of pressure on his mind. How could he happily write novels under such circumstances? Perhaps the only novel he would write at that time would be one about his tragic life inside the small black room.

Such being the case, Yu Jiaojiao used the mental suggestion trick. Since she was a half-mermaid, Yu Jiaojiao was extremely skilled in such techniques.

Since she used the mental suggestion, the thought of running away from this place never crossed Gao Moumou's mind. He would happily eat, write chapters, sleep, and hand them over to Yu Jiaojiao.

"..." Song Shuhang.

As expected, having people such as immortals, superhumans, and aliens as readers was the scariest thing for an author... after all, one would have no idea as to the type of unreasonable trickery they would resort to to speed up the release rate.

Luckily, I'm not interested in writing novels or anything of the sort, Song Shuhang thought to himself.

Then, after being in a dilemma for quite some time, Gao Moumou clenched his teeth and said, "Shuhang, we'll come up with a plan to escape from this place tomorrow when Tubo and Yangde are also here."

"..." Song Shuhang.

Shuhang shot a glance at Yu Jiaojiao, who was sitting on his shoulder. Perhaps it wasn't such a good idea to discuss the plan to escape right in front of the kidnapper?

"No, no, no, wait. We can't escape immediately. I still wanted to let you guys have a taste of the meals here. Their effects are truly excellent. I've eaten here just for a few days and almost got a six-pack again. You don't even need to exercise to have a perfectly fit body. It's simply a dream!" Gao Moumou sighed with emotion.

"..." Song Shuhang.

It seemed that Gao Moumou had written so many chapters that he had gone crazy!

"But even if the meals here are pretty good, I still want to get out of this place. Therefore, Shuhang, I'll have to ask you to take a stroll around the villa tomorrow and see if you can find a good escape route. I'm sure that Miss Yu Jiaojiao won't limit your movements in any way. You can exploit this point."

Song Shuhang faintly sighed.

If things kept going on like this, and he didn't tell Gao Moumou the truth immediately, the misunderstanding would keep getting bigger and bigger, just like a snowball rolling downward. If he were to tell him the truth too late, he might really ruin their friendship.

Thereupon, Song Shuhang said, "Old Gao, I also have a secret I need to tell you."

"Let's hear it." Gao Moumou crossed his arms and propped chin up, saying, "Since the moment you came here, it looked as though you were suffering from constipation. You surely had something on your mind. I've been waiting for a long time to hear this sentence of yours."

"In that case, let me say this first. Don't get angry after you hear what I have to say, alright?" Song Shuhang promptly warned Gao

Moumou.

Gao Moumou smiled and said in an exaggerated manner, "Shuhang, we are good friends! Don't worry, I'm pretty sure that our friendship can get through any storm!"

"I see. In that case, I'll start!" Song Shuhang cleared his throat. "Now then, from where should I begin... alright, I'll start from when summer vacation just started. That day, I suddenly thought of shooting a movie."

Although he wanted to tell Gao Moumou that he was the main reason Yu Jiaojiao had kidnapped him and locked him inside a small black room, one needed to be skillful while confessing.

If he were to go to the point directly, he would give the opposite party too much pressure. Therefore, he had to slowly explain everything that had happened.

"Shooting a movie?" The corner of Gao Moumou's mouth twitched.

"Yes. Of course, it's not that type of movie you might be thinking of. It was just a movie we wanted to shoot to have fun. Then, we would happily play it during New Year's celebrations," Song Shuhang continued. "Afterward, a friend of mine said that we would need a script as well if we wanted to shoot a movie. After all, the movie would still need to have a basic plot, right?"

Chapter 596: Copper Trigram: Fairy maiden, you sent into space the wrong person! (2 in 1)

Song Shuhang continued with his explanation in a gentle tone. "My initial plan was to shoot a small movie, and there wasn't really the need for a script. We could have shot it the way we preferred, and that was it... but after my friend brought up that matter about the plot, I felt that what she said was indeed reasonable. Afterward, that friend of mine offered herself to help me look for an author that could write the script for the movie, guaranteeing that she would find one that wrote very interesting stories. As a result, I agreed to her plan."

After hearing up to this point, Gao Moumou touched his face. The corner of his mouth had started to twitch already.

"Then, a few days ago, I had to go to a very distant place due to personal reasons. Thereupon, I left the task to look for that author that wrote interesting stories to my trusted friend. I left everything in her hands and didn't pay attention to the matter anymore," Song Shuhang said.

"..." Gao Moumou felt that his whole face had started to twist.

"Ahaha, judging from your expression, you must have guessed it already, right? Anyway, your guess is correct. The name of my trusted friend is precisely Yu Jiaojiao (Reminder: Jiaojiao means cute and lovely.) , and from a certain point of view, she is indeed a very lovely and cute girl," Song Shuhang said and gave Gao Moumou the thumbs up. Yu Jiaojiao's mother was a beautiful woman, and after Jiaojiao advanced to the Fifth Stage Realm and became capable of assuming human form, she wouldn't be inferior to her mother. If one looked at things from a 'future' perspective, Jiaojiao was indeed a beautiful and lovely girl!

Gao Moumou felt that he had gotten a sudden stomach ache as he said, "Then, is it possible that the super unlucky author that Miss Yu Jiaojiao kidnapped and locked inside a small black room, ultimately forcing him to write from 20,000 to 30,000 characters every day—and possibly starving him if he were to fail to reach that number—is called Gao Moumou?!"

"Absolutely correct. You aren't a webnovel author for nothing! Your insight is excellent." Song Shuhang tried to flatter Gao Moumou a bit.

Unfortunately, the flattery didn't work that well.

"In other words, the reason I was locked inside this small black room, unable to sleep all night because I had to write chapters, is the movie you—Song Shuhang—decided to shoot on a whim?" Gao Moumou said as he massaged his chest in the hope of calming his pulsating heart.

Song Shuhang didn't deny and said, "You are correct. It's precisely like this."

Gao Moumou clenched his teeth and said, "Shuhang!"

"Yes?" Song Shuhang then reminded, "Moumou, we reached an agreement earlier, didn't we? Everything that happened was such a big coincidence. It's probably the god of fate playing tricks on us. I explained everything to you in details, without hiding anything. Therefore, you can't get angry, alright?"

"Don't worry, Shuhang! The boat representing our friendship can withstand great storms and won't overturn after a simple quarrel!" Gao Moumou clenched his teeth and said, "But now, come over here!"

"What do you want to do?" Song Shuhang asked.

"Come over here, I promise that I won't beat you too much!" Gao Moumou said as he clenched his fists. At this time, he had only one thing in mind—making Song Shuhang have a taste of the brutal

iron fist of friendship! And he would make sure to make Shuhang feel a lot of pain!

"Don't even think about it." Song Shuhang smiled and said, "In addition, the current you isn't my match."

"Don't think too highly of yourself just because you grew a little taller! Quickly come over and allow me to give you a taste of the iron fist of friendship!" Gao Moumou growled.

"I didn't just grow taller, heh!" Song Shuhang said as he revealed a smile. Then, he lifted his clothes and revealed his sculpted body.

Each and every muscle was well-defined. Although his muscles weren't as big as bodybuilders', they were full of explosive power. As long as Song Shuhang slightly made an effort, all the muscles of his body would move accordingly, filled with incredible strength.

"F*ck." Gao Moumou opened his eyes wide. Just what the hell was going on? Some time ago before the start of summer vacation, Song Shuhang still had a slight potbelly. But now, three months later, all the muscles of his body were well-defined and dazzling to the eye?

Even if he had taken steroids, he wouldn't have been able to develop such muscles!

"Hehehe." Song Shuhang posed like a bodybuilder and said, "Did you see? As you can see from my muscles, my body is in top condition right now. The current you is unable to beat me up."

Gao Moumou clenched his teeth and said, "Tsk! It doesn't matter. You aren't allowed to hit back. Let me beat you up a bit to release my anger."

"Not even in your dreams!" Song Shuhang smiled and said, "I'm not a masochist."

"Tsk! In that case, I'll have to leave a hole with your silhouette on the wall myself. Look at this move of mine. Shuhang, get rekt!" Gao Moumou placed his hand on the desk and propped himself up,

jumping high up and using a scissor kick against Song Shuhang. One had to remember that Gao Moumou had trained before!

But just when he was halfway through his jump, one of his legs ended up hitting the edge of the desk... after all, the desk and the office chair were part of one set and were both very big!

Gao Moumou lost his balance and fell to the ground with a loud thud.

"..." Song Shuhang.

That must have hurt a lot.

He squatted next to Gao Moumou and asked, "Are you alright?"

"Do you think I'm alright?" Gao Moumou raised his head while covering his nose and bitterly said with teary eyes, "At first, I was just thinking of calling my dear friend here so that you could keep me company in this small black room. But you were the goddamn mastermind that made me end up in the small black room in the first place! Our friendship is over!"

Song Shuhang said with a smile, "Do you want to end our friendship just like that? Didn't you just say that the small boat representing our friendship could withstand big storms and whatnot?"

"Can it really be alright if water is continuously leaking in? It will eventually sink if the water keeps leaking in!" Gao Moumou gave him a supercilious look.

"Fine. Let it sink in that case," Song Shuhang said as he stretched out his hand, picking up Gao Moumou from the ground.

Gao Moumou felt as though a burst of incredible strength that he had no way of revolting against had picked him up from the ground. The difference in strength between the two was just too much, to the point of being comparable to the difference between an infant and a grown-up adult!

Gao Moumou clenched his teeth and said, "What the hell. Shuhang, what did you eat lately that you became so strong?"

Song Shuhang said gently, "I've indeed experienced a lot of things lately. It's a long story."

"An opportunity, eat my move!" Just as he was speaking, Gao Moumou suddenly attacked Song Shuhang with his leg from a tricky angle, trying to hit his calf. Gao Moumou had practiced martial arts when he was a child. Although he had neglected his studies for several years now, he still remembered the basics.

"Clang!"

In the next moment, Gao Moumou's eyes almost fell out of his eye sockets. Just now, he felt as though his leg had hit a pillar made of iron, bouncing back and making him feel extreme pain.

"Damnable Shuhang, did you actually hide an iron plate below your pants?! Our friendship is truly over now!" Gao Moumou clenched his teeth due to the pain. He even had to lower his voice and endure the pain so as to avoid waking up Yayi, suffering in silence.

"..." Song Shuhang.

Shuhang quietly pulled his pants up and revealed the well-defined muscles of his calf. Afterward, he said with a smug expression on his face, "As you can see, I don't have any iron plate below my pants. Those are just the powerful muscles of my leg."

"Bastard, did you practice the golden-bell cover technique or something?!" Gao Moumou said as he rubbed his leg. The kick he had thrown just now wasn't a serious one and was more of a joke. Therefore, he didn't put too much strength in it. However, the pain he felt was still very hard to bear!

Song Shuhang blinked his eyes and said, "Anyway... do you still want to kick me a few more times to vent your anger? I feel like I don't really need to dodge."

If anyone hit you in the right leg, turn to them the other leg also. This way, you would have even more fun~

"Kick your sister!" Gao Moumou gave him a supercilious look.

Then, he crawled until the office chair and pondered for a moment, lightly laughing.

Sometimes, such incredible coincidences could actually take place in the world. After several small coincidences combined with each other, they would give birth to matters that would go beyond one's expectations.

Song Shuhang sat in front of Gao Moumou and said again, "I'm sorry about what happened. But it was really an accident. I totally didn't expect that the author Yu Jiaojiao would catch would be you. In addition, I even asked you if wrote webnovels earlier, and you said you didn't. Therefore, I'm not the only one at fault here."

Gao Moumou gave him a supercilious look. The fact that he was writing webnovels was his little personal secret. He couldn't casually tell it to his acquaintances!

"Anyway, I'll tell Yu Jiaojiao to get you out of this small black room. After that, you can have fun in here for the next days," Song Shuhang continued.

Yu Jiaojiao, who was sitting on Shuhang's shoulder, raised her claws in protest. If Gao Moumou were to get out of the small black room, she wouldn't get to read those updates of 20,000-30,000 characters anymore!

Gao Moumou rolled his eyes. If Song Shuhang still wanted to keep him inside the small black room, they would truly become mortal enemies!

"Anyway, Moumou, are you interested in writing the script for the movie?" Song Shuhang asked. If Gao Moumou was unwilling, they would have to find another person.

"Why not? I might as well earn some money for the vacation I'm

planning to go on with Yayi," Gao Moumou said bitterly. Earlier, Yu Jiaojiao reached an agreement with him about the payment he would receive for writing the plot of the movie, and the sum of money was quite high.

Afterward, Gao Moumou also added, "However, I have a request as well."

Song Shuhang said heroically, "What kind of request? Do tell."

Gao Moumou said earnestly, "I want to play a role in the movie as well."

Song Shuhang nodded and said, "It's not a problem. Tubo and Yangde can be added to the cast as well." The higher the number of actors, the more bustling the scene would be! However, he would have to tell the seniors to weaken their strength in the parts Gao Moumou and the others were acting so as to avoid scaring them.

"It's settled then. What theme do you want for the story? I'll try my best to come up with an interesting story," Gao Moumou said.

"How about science fiction + xianxia in a futuristic setting?" Song Shuhang probed.

"..." Gao Moumou.

Science fiction? Even a layman like Gao Moumou knew that a science fiction movie would require computer-generated imagery. Was Song Shuhang planning to shoot a small science fiction movie with his 50 cents budget?

In addition, he wanted it to be xianxia as well, which similarly required a lot of special effects.

Song Shuhang asked in a low voice, "Is there a problem?"

Gao Moumou clenched his teeth and said, "It's fine. Isn't it just science fiction + xianxia... I'll write it and let you have a look."

"Right, Old Gao. Remember that the main character has to be very handsome and immortal-like," Song Shuhang also added.

After all, it was Senior White who was going to be the main character of the story!

"Sure, no problem." Gao Moumou smiled evilly.

...Look at how I will torture the main character at the appointed time!

Gao Moumou wanted to participate in the movie so that he could become the eternal rival of the main character and make him suffer time and time again! It was his way to retaliate against Song Shuhang.

Gao Moumou firmly believed that Song Shuhang would be the main character of the movie.

* * *

Meanwhile, somewhere else.

In the airspace of Jiangnan area.

A youngster with a gentle-looking face was standing on top of a tall building in the Jiangnan area, enjoying the evening wind blowing against his face.

The youngster had short black hair and looked full of energy.

If Song Shuhang were to see this youngster, he would surely be surprised, because this gentle-looking youngster had the same appearance as him.

It wasn't just his appearance, even the aura his body was giving off and his manner was the same as Song Shuhang!

However, this person wasn't Song Shuhang's ghost spirit.

"I managed to shake off Brother Medicine Master in the end. He was truly troublesome to deal with... he quietly placed several different types of medicinal powders to keep track of me on my body. If it was someone else, they would have been defeated by Brother Medicine Master's method had they been careless. Unfortunately, the opposite party was me!" 'Song Shuhang' said

complacently.

"Where should I head next? Earth is just too dangerous as of late. Perhaps it's better if I go in space and hide there," 'Song Shuhang' muttered to himself.

Right, I should take a look at my 'enemies' first. After thinking up to this point, the man took out a strange mobile phone and swiped on the screen.

In the Nine Provinces Number One Group.

Su Clan's Seven: "Brother Medicine Master, what is your current location? I'm carrying over a baboon to your place... we'll eat monkey brain this evening!"

Thrice Reckless Mad Saber: "...About that! Fellow Daoist Seven, eating the brain of a monkey is a very evil thing to do! Monkeys should be treasured!"

Su Clan's Seven: "Tsk! The monkey should just be obedient and let me cut off its head. There is no need for all this useless talk."

Thrice Reckless Mad Saber: "..."

Around a minute later, Medicine Master popped out and wrote: "I'll send you my coordinates. Moreover, Copper Trigram escaped."

Su Clan's Seven: "He was really quick with his escape."

Palace Master Seven Lives Talisman: "Since so many fellow daoists wanted to have a heart-to-heart talk with him, Fellow Daoist Copper Trigram must have decided to run away as fast as possible. Fellow Daoist Medicine Master, didn't you leave something on his body to keep track of him?"

"I did, a lot of things actually. But he got rid of them." Medicine Master sent a short message.

Young Master Phoenix Slayer: "When did Copper Trigram run away? How long has it been?"

Medicine Master wrote in reply: "Four hours ago, and he got rid

of the medicinal powder on his body one hour ago. The place where he was last seen is the coastal area."

Young Master Phoenix Slayer: "Since it's been so long, he must have already run to some foreign country."

Sun Splitting Halberd Guo Da: "[Picture of a cute puppy]."

Sun Splitting Halberd Guo Da: "[Picture of the head of a dog being furiously rubbed]."

Sun Splitting Halberd Guo Da: "Knowing Fellow Daoist Copper Trigram, it's going to be very difficult to find him now that he has run away. Once he changes his appearance and blends amongst humans, it's going to be nearly impossible to find him."

Regretful expressions appeared on the faces of several fellow daoists that were hoping to have a heart-to-heart talk with Copper Trigram.

But right at this time, Medicine Master also wrote: "However, it should be just about time for a particular type of medicine that I've left inside his body to activate. Once it activates, it will severely weaken Fellow Daoist Copper Trigram for a short period of time. Perhaps we can take advantage of that opportunity to catch him."

The corner of 'Song Shuhang's' mouth rose and turned into a complacent smile. He had used the coastal area as bait to throw them off.

Hmph, you can catch me only in your dreams!

Even if I'm weakened, the effects of my 'disguising technique' won't decrease in the slightest!

At this time, I'm just little friend Song Shuhang. No one can see through my disguise!

As you might have guessed, this 'Song Shuhang' was nothing but Immortal Master Copper Trigram under disguise!

But right at this time, Northern River's Loose Cultivator got

online and said, "I guarantee you that Copper Trigram won't be able to run away! Right, is there any fellow daoist that is currently in space? You should get in contact with me. I'll give everyone several coordinates. According to my guess, that shady fortune teller is very likely to run into space. Compared to Earth, space is bigger and safer. My several coordinates consist of a list of places that he is very likely to be while in space."

Young Master Phoenix Slayer: "Fellow Daoist Northern River, if you say this in the group, won't Fellow Daoist Copper Trigram also be able to read it?"

"It doesn't matter. Actually, I want him to read it. I'm pretty sure he's headed toward space as we speak. If he gets into space, I'll have a 50% chance of catching him. At that time... hmph! 😏" Northern River's Loose Cultivator sent an evil emoji.

It was even better if Copper Trigram could read this message.

It would be excellent if the opposite party decided to stay on Earth after reading this message. Space was simply too big, and it was almost impossible to find him if he were to escape there. On the other hand, there was always an opportunity to find him if he were to stay on Earth.

And if Copper Trigram still decided to go to space, Northern River's message would at least give him a scare, making that shady fortune teller fearful and apprehensive!

Just as Northern River's Loose Cultivator sent this message in the group, several fellow daoists popped up and expressed their intention of making a trip to space.

Afterward, Northern River's Loose Cultivator started to send messages privately.



On that tall building in the Jiangnan area, the corner of 'Song Shuhang's mouth twitched.

He couldn't expect less from his old enemy, Northern River's Loose Cultivator! After all, the person that understood one the most was their enemy. These words were just too correct.

Just as he was planning to escape to space, his actions were correctly guessed by the opposite party. Northern River was simply like a bug hidden in his stomach!

Immortal Master Copper Trigram silently sighed and touched his turtle shell, preparing to perform another self-divination. If the result of the divination was a positive one, he wouldn't go to space and would instead find a place on Earth and hide there.

If the result of the divination was a negative one, he would happily go to space.

Sigh~ there was no other way. After all, he was a shady fortune teller!

The fact that he knew about being a shady fortune teller made it even more tragic.

The copper coins fell out of the turtle shell. Immortal Master Copper Trigram looked at the picture, starting to count on his fingers.

According to the result of the divination, he would have great luck!

Well, that was very bad news. From the looks of it, his trip to space would be dogged by bad luck.

Perhaps Northern River had really prepared a huge encirclement for him and was just waiting for him to fall into the trap.

"Hmph, the world is so big, is it really possible that I won't be able to find a place where I can hide? In the worst case, I can change my appearance again and hide amongst humans. The world has a population of over 8 billion individuals. How can they find me so easily?" Immortal Master Copper Trigram sneered. If necessary, he could even disguise as a small animal!

However, he would remember about that Northern River's Loose Cultivator and give him a good lesson on the battle on the summit of the forbidden city!

After thinking up to this point, Immortal Master Copper Trigram put the turtle shell away and gently jumped, starting to jump from building to building.

"Whizz!"

But right at this time, a sword light quickly headed toward his position from a faraway place.

A fairy maiden wearing a red skirt was standing on the sword light. The fairy maiden had a serious expression on her face and her eyes were closed. It seemed she was trying to sense something.

Very soon, the fairy maiden noticed Immortal Master Copper Trigram that was now disguised as Song Shuhang.

"I've finally found you, little friend Shuhang!" The fairy maiden revealed a smile and whizzed toward him, landing in front of 'Song Shuhang'.

Immortal Master Copper Trigram bitterly smiled to himself. The thing one feared the most would surely happen. Just as he was thinking of evading the members of the Nine Provinces Number One Group, he just happened to meet one.

The person of the Nine Provinces Number One Group that had come here was Fairy Firefly. She practiced a cultivation technique that was related to 'attraction' and 'repulsion'. She was a fairy maiden with a good temperament and was usually very open to persuasion.

But sometimes, she would spend a lot of effort on absolutely trivial problems. Whenever that happened, she would become very stubborn and difficult to persuade.

Immortal Master Copper Trigram squeezed out a smile and, using the same tone as Song Shuhang, said, "Fairy maiden, good

evening."

"Little friend Shuhang, I rushed over here just for now. Therefore, let's get to the point directly," Fairy Firefly said as she stretched out her hand, untying something hanging around her waist.

What she had untied was a silk handkerchief tied around the waist as a decoration.

Then, under Immortal Master Copper Trigram's confused gaze, Fairy Firefly tied that silk handkerchief around 'Song Shuhang's' waist.

Immortal Master Copper Trigram had simply no idea as to what Fairy Firefly was doing!

"Do you have fasting pills with you?" Fairy Firefly said in a weak voice.

Immortal Master Copper Trigram copied Song Shuhang and bashfully nodded his head, saying, "Yes, I have a few."

Fairy Firefly explained, "That's good. Let me explain. This silk handkerchief is part of my magical clothing and can protect you just like a spacesuit, allowing you to stay safe in space."

Spacesuit? Allowing you to stay safe in space? Just what is happening? Why do I have a bad premonition?!

Earlier, Immortal Master Copper Trigram was too busy getting away from Medicine Master. Therefore, he didn't see the message in the Nine Provinces Number One Group in which Fairy Firefly stated she would send Song Shuhang back to space once again.

He discovered that little friend Song Shuhang had come back from space only through the chat logs that came after that.

Thereupon, he decided to disguise as Song Shuhang and run toward the Jiangnan area.

"Such being the case, have a nice trip, little friend Shuhang. We'll

see each after one full month," Fairy Firefly said and placed several seals on Immortal Master Copper Trigram's body.

Since she didn't have the time to prepare a 'space capsule' this time, Fairy Firefly imbued her silk handkerchief with enough spiritual energy. The layer of spiritual energy would later form a defensive barrier and protect little friend Shuhang, allowing him to pass through the atmosphere without getting injured.

Immortal Master Copper Trigram was dumbfounded. Is she really thinking of sending me to space? No, this is too cruel!

"GO!" Fairy Firefly said in a grave tone.

In the next moment, Immortal Master Copper Trigram soared the skies like a rocket and disappeared in the clouds!

"Aaaaaah~" Immortal Master Copper Trigram called out pitifully.

Fairy Firefly was really going to send him to space!

Immortal Master Copper Trigram felt really sad at this moment. As if that wasn't enough, Medicine Master's poison had already started to take effect. Therefore, he was going to be in a weakened state for a short period of time and wouldn't have enough strength to break free from Fairy Firefly's power of repulsion for the time being.

He could only helplessly look as he was going to space, slowly disappearing on the horizon.

Dammit, why the hell did I decide to disguise as little friend Shuhang today?!

"I don't want to go to space!" Immortal Master Copper Trigram called out pitifully, with his voice reverberating at the horizon. Was this the result of that 'lucky' divination from before?



Below, Fairy Firefly placed her delicate hand on her forehead and looked at little friend Song Shuhang getting more and more

distant.

"Hmm. As expected, sending little friend Shuhang back to space was the right decision. I feel much better now," Fairy Firefly said. Aside from spending a lot of energy on trivial matters, Fairy Firefly suffered from a slight obsessive-compulsive disorder as well.

Whenever she thought about the fact that Song Shuhang's 30-day trip to space still lacked more than 20 days to be complete, Fairy Firefly would feel very uncomfortable.

But now, everything was fine.

Fairy Firefly got in the Nine Provinces Number One Group and sent a message: "I sent little friend Song Shuhang back to space once again. In addition, I left a magical seal on his body. After one full month, some fellow daoist that is in space can conveniently bring him back. Otherwise, I can pull him back myself."

Northern River's Loose Cultivator: "Fairy maiden had it rough." Little friend Shuhang even more.

Fairy Firefly: "I promised to Venerable White. I just did what I had to do."

But right at this time, Song Shuhang, who was currently chatting with Gao Moumou, took out his mobile phone and read the message, getting dumbfounded as a result.

I was sent back to space? When did that happen?

If I was sent back to space, who is the person sitting in front of Gao Moumou and chatting with him?

Chapter 597: The new daoist robe of the western monk

Of course, little friend Shuhang had no intention of reminding Fairy Firefly that he was still on Earth.

Although he had no idea as to what had happened, since 'little friend Song Shuhang' had been sent to space, he would quietly let the 'him' that had gone up there stay there for full 30 days.

Thereupon, Song Shuhang quietly switched off his mobile phone. Sometimes, silence was golden!

This matter was something worthy of celebration, truly a joyous occasion.

Right at this time, Yu Jiaojiao, who was sitting on Song Shuhang's shoulder, also put away her small tailor-made mobile phone and said to Song Shuhang via secret sound transmission, "Shuhang, I've contacted my subordinates in the East China Sea. They will immediately relay to me any important news related to the East China Sea."

Although Yu Jiaojiao's sphere of influence in the East China Sea consisted of only a small area, her father, True Monarch Tyrant Flood Dragon, was one of the overlords of the East China Sea.

True Monarch Tyrant Flood Dragon was part of the dragon race. For this reason, his fighting capacity was ranked amidst the highest ones amongst Sixth Stage True Monarchs. In case he decided to burn his 'origin flood dragon true blood', he could even escape from a Seventh Stage Venerable. Thereupon, he was able to occupy a very large area in the East China Sea and give fractions of it to his children.

Such being the case, Yu Jiaojiao could rely on her father's influence to get ahold of the latest news in the East China Sea.

In addition, the sea monsters in the East China Sea had their own channels of communication. Thanks to the Internet spreading, people could now read news about things happening all over the world while conveniently sitting at home. The situation in the East China Sea was similar. If something big happened, sea monsters would be able to get the information through their network.

"Thank you," Song Shuhang said gratefully. With Yu Jiaojiao's help, he didn't need to grope blindly for an answer.

"You're welcome. Ah, yes. As long as you can convince your friend to write from 20,000 to 30,000 characters every day, I'll be very happy," Yu Jiaojiao replied.

"..." Song Shuhang. From the looks of it, Yu Jiaojiao hadn't given up on making Gao Moumou work like a slave.

At this time, Gao Moumou stretched out his hands and started to type on the keyboard, asking while editing the content of yesterday's chapters, "Shuhang, since you want to shoot a movie, from where are you going to get the equipment necessary for the shooting?"

He was very curious as to how Song Shuhang wanted to shoot the movie. He wasn't really planning to hold the video camera and start recording the movie by himself, right? That would be simply horrible.

Although Gao Moumou knew that Song Shuhang's family's economic situation wasn't bad, it was rather unrealistic that Shuhang alone could put forth enough money to fund the shooting of a movie.

It would be only possible if he and his friends decided to make a joint effort and fund the shooting of the movie together...

Speaking of Song Shuhang's friends... there was the owner of this villa, Yu Jiaojiao, as well as that mysterious rich guy on the island where the natives lived. When had Song Shuhang become friends

with these people?

"As for the equipment necessary to shoot the movie, I'll contact a few friends that have contacts with moviemaking and publishing companies. I can just ask for their help if needed. If we are lucky, they will make arrangements for the director and production crew as well," Song Shuhang said.

"Friends that have contacts with moviemaking companies?" Gao Moumou nodded and said, "That's perfect."

Such being the case, even if it was a movie they were shooting solely to amuse themselves, it should be somewhat decent.

Song Shuhang shot a glance at the time. It was already past midnight. Thereupon, he stretched himself and said, "It's already late. Moumou, you should also go to sleep."

Gao Moumou looked at Song Shuhang with a bitter expression on his face. After receiving Miss Yu Jiaojiao's blessing, he was full of energy and just couldn't fall asleep!



In the far away Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion.

Chu Chu accompanied Li Yinzhu and entered the Time City so that she could take care of her. There wasn't any other disciple of the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion in the Time City. Chu Chu and Li Yinzhu were the only ones in there. It was a rather good place where one could practice in secluded meditation.

After Chu Chu and Li Yinzhu entered the Time City, the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion outside was frozen in time once again.

The whole Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion had come to a stop.

But Pavilion Master Chu wasn't sleeping at this time. She was holding the silver glove as she appeared next to Ye Si's body.

Ye Si was still slumbering right now.

Actually, every time the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion was frozen

in time, Ye Si would also fall asleep. It was something that Pavilion Master Chu had arranged especially for her.

This was the main reason Ye Si hadn't discovered anything strange about the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion while inside the illusory reality.

After appearing next to Ye Si's body, Pavilion Master Chu put the modified silver glove on Ye Si's hand.

In the next moment, the silver glove underwent a mutation. The originally metallic structure of the glove started to ripple like running water, eventually transforming into a silver glove as thin as the wings of a cicada.

"As long as she wears this glove, not even other Ninth Stage Tribulation Transcenders will be able to discern Ye Si's true nature," Pavilion Master Chu said gently.

In addition, her seal with the spatial coordinates was already engraved on the glove. If Ye Si was in trouble, she could directly tear space apart and appear next to her.

"Once you manage to adapt to the glove, you can go and give little friend Shuhang a surprise," Pavilion Master Chu said in a gentle tone.

The Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion was part of an illusory reality, and no matter how realistic it looked, in the end, it was nothing but an illusion. Ye Si had stayed in there for a very long time. It was finally time for her to leave.

"Unfortunately, little friend Song already has a high-rank ghost spirit. Otherwise, I would have probably made him and Ye Si sign a contract. With that, I wouldn't have to worry about someone forcefully making Ye Si sign one," Pavilion Master Chu muttered to herself.

Theoretically speaking, there wasn't a limit to the number of ghost spirit a cultivator could contract.

As long as one could control them, even two or three weren't a problem. Of course, the higher the rank of the ghost spirit, the higher would be the difficulty in signing the contract.

For example, when Song Shuhang and Soft Feather discovered two ghost spirits in the Ghost Lamp Temple back then, Altar Master thought of contracting the two ghost spirits in one go. He was planning to forcefully break through the Second Stage Realm by relying on the power of the two ghost spirits and reach the Third Stage Realm.

However, Ye Si was different than an ordinary ghost spirit. Although she had most of the properties ghost spirits possessed, she still had a human soul beneath her ghost spirit outer shell. Unlike other ghost spirits, her ghost spirit body wasn't her soul but something akin to a human body.

After signing a contract, she wouldn't become a 'clone' of the cultivator like ordinary ghost spirits but would keep her free will.

Due to these strange circumstances, if one wanted to sign a contract with Ye Si, they couldn't contract ordinary ghost spirits.

Likewise, if one had already signed a contract with another ghost spirit, they wouldn't be able to sign a contract with Ye Si. The two just couldn't co-exist.

After seeing Ye Si and the silver glove complete their fusion, Pavilion Master Chu nodded her head.

"I'm exhausted." Pavilion Master Chu stretched herself and sent Ye Si into her own house.

Afterward, she headed toward the Celestial Pavilion and crawled up on her bed, quickly falling asleep.

As soon as Pavilion Master Chu entered a partial state of sleep, the whole Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion started moving again.



In the meantime, the Sobbing Old Man wiped away his tears.

He had decided to make another trip to space. He wanted to look for the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion again.

He couldn't give up! He had to try his best!

Although he wasn't sure if he could succeed even after trying his best, he would surely fail if he were to give up!

The 〈Tome of Never-Ending Tears〉 was his only hope of advancing to the Sixth Stage True Monarch Realm. Thereupon, he had to persevere and move Pavilion Master Chu's heart, becoming a disciple of the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion and obtaining the remaining part of the 〈Tome of Never-Ending Tears〉.

If he could meet little friend Song Shuhang again, it would be even better. After all, he seemed rather familiar with Pavilion Master Chu, and it would be perfect if he could put in a good word for him.



At the same time, in a place close to Earth, a fight between powerhouses of the True Monarch rank broke out.

The two fighters were the Hall Leader of the Nine-eyed Kama Hall and the ancient witch Elise.

At this time, the Hall Leader was completely exhausted from warding off the incoming attacks and didn't even have the strength to fight back.

The Hall Leader clenched his teeth and roared, "Crazy b*tch, what are you planning to do?!"

"Hehehe." The laughter of the ancient witch Elise echoed. Then she pounced forward while holding a string of light and powder in her hands.

She had poisonous items, insects, curses, and witchcraft at her disposal.

The ancient witch clan was very prosperous back in the days. Their attacks were the same as their thinking mode, extremely bizarre. No one could predict what kind of attack they would use in the next moment.

After a wave of attacks, the ancient witch Elise stopped.

The ancient witch Elise laughed and said, "Actually, I chased after you for so long because I wanted to tell you something."

The Hall Leader of the Nine-eyed Kama Hall was speechless.

"Listen carefully. I'll say it only once and won't repeat myself," the ancient witch Elise said with a serious expression on her face. Then, just as she was speaking, she blushed a little.

A moment ago, the two Sixth Stage True Monarchs were brutally fighting, and now, in the blink of an eye, it seemed someone was going to make a love confession...?

The Hall Leader was speechless.

"The reason I appeared in space and was able to intercept you guys while you were trying to plunder Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue's flying boat is..." The ancient witch Elise held her cheeks with both hands and said shyly, "...the reason is that someone intentionally lured me there and brought me to your location. In addition, the information I obtained was very accurate. What a coincidence, don't you think? The person that guided me here is someone closely related to your Limitless Demon Sect."

The Hall Leader of the Nine-eyed Kama Hall secretly clenched his fists, but the expression on his face was still calm. One was unable to make out the changes happening in his heart.

He wouldn't completely believe the words of the ancient witch Elise. However, he was certain of one thing... someone secretly sold them out.

"Well then, now that I've said what I wanted to say, it's time for us to say goodbye. Let us meet again." The ancient witch Elise

waved her hand at the Hall Leader and left the place...

She left for real, without playing any trick...

The Hall Leader of the Nine-eyed Kama Hall was completely exhausted at this time. Had they kept fighting, he would have had no other choice but to self-detonate the 'Spirit Lake' inside his body and give his all to fight against her. But little did he expect that the ancient witch would leave just like that.

Ancient witches were simply too abnormal, and it was simply impossible to guess what was going on in their head.

After surviving the calamity, the Hall Leader forced a smile and laughed. Then, after determining that the ancient witch had indeed left, he didn't think of pursuing her and catching her by surprise but decided to ride a sword light and return to the Limitless Demon Sect instead.

This time, his Nine-eyed Kama Hall had suffered a great loss. Not only did they fail to rescue their several Spiritual Emperors, they lost more than ten cultivators of the Fifth Stage Realm in the process.

As if that wasn't enough, he even saw that small cultivator of the Second Stage wearing a spacesuit ferrying the souls of his subordinates to the afterworld. The scene almost made his liver explode due to the anger.

Anyway, he had noted down the aura of that cultivator of the Second Stage.

If they met again, he would make sure to give him a good lesson.

Were that small cultivator fall in his hands, he would torment him to the point of making him wish he were dead.



China, Wenzhou City, next to Baijing Street's Mountain Niuding.

The western monk was currently wearing an additional outer

garment above his kasaya, as well as a big hat on his head. He had concealed his aura and was quietly heading toward Mountain Niuding.

He had successfully shaken off the ghost cultivators pursuing him and had now finally reached his destination, Mountain Niuding.

There, his favorite director was currently shooting a movie. The western monk was still thinking of asking him to let himself play a small part in the movie if possible.

However, the western monk met someone he absolutely didn't want to meet on his way there... it was his teacher, Daoist Priest Wu Yinzi.

Although it had been only three years, Daoist Priest Wu Yinzi looked older than before.

The western monk forced a smile and went forward to greet his teacher. "Teacher, how come you are here?"

"I was waiting for you." Wu Yinzi sighed. After seeing his disciple becoming more and more like a buddhist monk, he felt pain in his heart.

He really wished he could give a good beating to the Chinese moviemakers that shot movies stating that all martial arts had originated from the Shaolin Temple! Did they have nothing better to do than putting strange thoughts in the head of foreigners?!

"Teacher, if you needed something, you could have just given me a call. I would have hurried to your place immediately. It's rather embarrassing that you had come all the way here for your disciple," the western monk said hurriedly.

"Nonsense. Had I given you a call and told you to come over to see me, you would have escaped to Europe the very next day." Wu Yinzi rolled his eyes.

"I already know that you have reached the Second Stage Realm.

During the next few days, you'll follow me and learn the following part of the <Celestial Wonder Sword>. Then, your daoist robe also needs to be changed." Daoist Priest Wu Yinzi looked at that daoist robe with a layer of 'kasaya' attached to it. His stomach slightly convulsed as a result.

He felt that his lifespan had been reduced a lot after receiving this guy as a disciple!

After saying this much, Daoist Priest Wu Yinzi took out a green daoist robe from his backpack.

"This is a daoist robe of the Second Stage that I received back then when I was young and taking risks outside. It's weaved with the spider silk of the 'golden spider'. It's very light, and after wearing it, sword and sabers won't be able to injure you. Even without activating its defensive formation, you can ward off bullets from small firearms. Then, if you activate its defensive formation, you can easily walk through a rain of bullets without receiving any injury. In addition, there is a 'Turtle Breathing Formation' attached to it as well. Once you activate it, you won't be affected by poisonous air anymore. It's a hard-to-come-by treasure amongst items of the Second Stage," Wu Yinzi gave a thorough description of the daoist robe.

Actually, the reason he took his time to accurately explain the properties of the daoist robe was to prevent his disciple from attaching a layer of kasaya to this daoist robe as well.

"Thank you, teacher." The western monk happily took off the 'kasaya' on his body and returned it to Wu Yinzi. Then, he took his new daoist robe from Wu Yinzi hands and wore it.

GodBrandy GodBrandy Vote for the mass release! (´_`」∠)

Chapter 598: The sealed package of a cultivator from 130 years ago

Although the western monk would have loved to attach a layer of kasaya to his new daoist robe, he tried his best to resist the urge.

The current him wasn't as 'straightforward' as the him in the past. It was better to wait until his teacher had left to attach the kasaya to the daoist robe. There was no need to do it in front of his teacher and make him angry.

At the same time, he could make his teacher happy by wearing the daoist robe in front of him.

As expected, a faint smile appeared on Wu Yinzi's old face as he saw his disciple wearing the daoist robe.

Wu Yinzi said, "Let's go. I'll teach you the following part of the <Celestial Wonder Sword>, as well as some other supplementary cultivation techniques."

The western monk obediently followed behind his teacher.

While leading the way, Wu Yinzi heaved a sigh and said, "In addition, make a trip back to the sect two months later. Now that you have reached the Second Stage Realm, it's possible to ignite your 'life lamp'. As long as your life lamp is burning, I can be at ease even if you are wandering outside."

The western monk paused a moment and said respectfully, "I understand, teacher. I'll make a trip back to the sect then."

Such being the case, he would have to wait a little more before attaching the kasaya to the daoist robe...

At least I won't make my teacher feel stifled after returning to the sect this time, the western monk thought to himself.

Now then, where had the ghost spirit of his 'benefactor' gone? If he could meet his benefactor again, he would surely try to repay

him for saving his life twice.



Around 2 AM in the morning, Song Shuhang finally left Gao Moumou's small black room. He hadn't thought that Gao Moumou would be such a chatterbox.

The energetic Gao Moumou chatted with Song Shuhang from midnight up until now, and he was still reluctant to part with him...

Afterward, Yu Jiaojiao arranged a room for Song Shuhang so that he could rest.

After entering his room, Song Shuhang didn't sleep immediately.

He practiced the <Basic Buddhist Fist Technique> one time and the <Immovable Body of the Buddha> immediately after. Then, he practiced the <Steel Hands Technique> he obtained from Senior Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue.

After he was done with his training session, the strength of his constitution increased slightly.

Unfortunately, its strength was still far from being enough! Song Shuhang gently rubbed the place between his eyebrows. This bronze mental energy of the Third Stage rank was still causing him a faint pain.

He had to solve this problem as quickly as possible.

He should try to find a way to increase his power of virtue as well while trying to strengthen his constitution.

He was planning to go out at dawn and see whether or not he could find a few souls to ferry. To make the light of virtue protecting his body undergo a qualitative change, he needed to ferry other 80,000+ souls!

But where could he find more than 80,000 souls to ferry...?

"What are you thinking about?" Right at this time, a voice came

from behind Shuhang.

Song Shuhang got a scare. He turned around his head and saw the palm-sized Yu Jiaojiao lying face-down on the windowsill, bathing in the moonlight.

Hadn't Yu Jiaojiao returned to her room? What is she doing here?

"I'm here for your enlightenment stone!" Yu Jiaojiao replied lazily. She needed but a glance to guess what Shuhang was thinking.

She had obtained the moonstone inside the grave of Venerable Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue. As long as she carried the stone with her, her training speed would increase, just as though she was constantly practicing beneath the light of the moon. If one were to add the effects of Song Shuhang's enlightenment stone to the mix, her practicing speed would be enhanced even further.

So she came here to freeload the enlightenment stone...

"I was thinking where I could find the souls of deceased people," Song Shuhang replied to Yu Jiaojiao's question.

"You might try to look for a ghost cultivator. As long as you manage to find the immortal cave of a ghost cultivator, even if it's just a ghost cultivator of the Second Stage, they should have thousands of souls in their hands, as well as ghost soldiers and ghost generals," Yu Jiaojiao replied.

Song Shuhang immediately thought of Altar Master. Unfortunately, Altar Master's place had been already cleaned up. All the ghost soldiers and ghost generals inside were taken away by Great Master Profound Principle's disciple, Senior Brother Three Realms, to practice a secret technique.

However, ghost cultivators weren't that common, either. It wasn't so easy to find them.

Wait! I know some ghost cultivators! Song Shuhang thought of

the ghost cultivators that were chasing after the western monk. Perhaps he could look for the western monk to get more info?

Song Shuhang kept this point firmly in mind and continued asking, "Aside from the immortal cave of a ghost cultivator, is there another place where I can find the souls of the deceased?"

"If you go to wartorn countries, you might find a lot of them. But with science and technology continuously developing, the power of weapons is also getting bigger and bigger. You are now a cultivator of the Second Stage Realm, and with your emerald-green kasaya, you won't have to worry about ordinary firearms. Therefore, as long as you are careful and don't get struck by firearms with high destructive power, you should be able to ferry several souls within a short period of time," Yu Jiaojiao replied.

After hearing this much, Song Shuhang got a little excited.

"You seem rather excited, don't you?" Yu Jiaojiao rolled her eyes and added, "If you really want to go to a wartorn country, I suggest you to team up with a powerful senior in order to guarantee your safety."

"It was just a random thought. Moreover, gains and danger aren't well proportioned in wartorn countries." Song Shuhang laughed and said, "Whatever, there is no need to think too much about it. Jiaojiao, I'm going to sleep, good night."

"Good night." Yu Jiaojiao kept lying on the windowsill, breathing in and out.



Wartorn countries? Song Shuhang thought to himself while lying in bed. He didn't really want to rush to a wartorn country, but when the word was mentioned, a scene immediately resurfaced in his mind.

In the scene were the ruins of a huge, wrecked celestial palace. There were no traces of battle around the palace. From the looks of

it, a terrifying power had instantly flattened the whole place.

Then, together with the ruins of the celestial palace was the picture of a bloody hand with the words 'Beloved Dog 43B' written on its palm.

This was the scene that Song Shuhang had seen through the golden chain when he learned the <Whale Swallowing Technique> back then.

After thinking up to this point, Song Shuhang took out that thick golden chain from his size-reducing purse. On each link of the fancy-looking golden chain was engraved a picture of the thirty-three beasts.

What is the origin of that wrecked celestial palace?

...And would I find the souls of deceased people in there?

As soon as the thought crossed his mind, Song Shuhang's face whitened.

Dammit, it's coming!

Although Shuhang was still wearing the gloves of passion of Swordsman Wooden Ox, the secret appraisal technique still activated.

As for the object he was going to appraise, it was obviously the golden chain in his hands.

The golden chain had a mysterious background and was closely related to the ancient Thirty-Three Divine Beasts' Sect since it could pass down their signature cultivation technique. In other words, it was an item that hid a big secret... and a big secret meant that he was going to lose lots of blood!

Song Shuhang's eyes started to tear up.

Around one breath later, close to 200 wounds appeared on Shuhang body all at once. Each wound was two centimeters deep and blood crazily spurted out, dyeing red Song Shuhang's whole

body.

The extreme pain shocked his nerves.

"Sob, sob, sob~" Song Shuhang clenched his teeth and tried to resist the pain. Tears, sweat, and blood wet the bed.

Yu Jiaojiao, who was lying next to the bed, smelled the pungent scent of blood and turned her head around, opening her eyes wide.

Song Shuhang's body was losing blood from all places, just as though he was a ball of water full of holes. Blood was gushing out like running water.

What is Song Shuhang doing? Did he open several wounds on his body since he had nothing better to do? Is this a form of self-torture?

"Shuhang, did you decide to torture yourself after getting bored?" Yu Jiaojiao jumped up and landed next to Song Shuhang. Soon after, a water ball-shaped magical technique shot out of her palm and hit Song Shuhang's body.

Since she was a half-mermaid and half-flood dragon, she innately knew several water-type healing techniques, and the effects weren't inferior to Senior Sister Ye's healing technique.

Song Shuhang silently gazed at Yu Jiaojiao and said while clenching his teeth and enduring the pain, "I'm definitely not self-torturing myself! This is the price I have to pay after using a secret technique!"

"Is this a self-torturing secret technique? Why did you use that secret technique while resting?" Yu Jiaojiao asked. At the same time, she used another healing technique.

Thanks to her efforts, the wounds on Song Shuhang's body recovered a little.

"That's the main problem... since the day I learned this secret technique, I've been unable to control it!" Song Shuhang said,

extremely aggrieved.

"..." Yu Jiaojiao.

She shot Song Shuhang a compassionate look and asked in all seriousness, "Should I prepare a grave for you? A grave at the bottom of the sea is thousands of times cheaper than one on land! In addition, you don't have to worry about someone trying to loot it. You might want to consider this offer."

"I won't die so easily!" Song Shuhang said in an agitated state. As he got agitated, his blood spurted out even faster.

After the blood and the pain, runes gushed out of Song Shuhang's eyes and fell on the golden chain, forming the picture of a clock.

The hands of the clock turned counterclockwise.

Soon after, the runes returned to Song Shuhang's eyes while carrying the information the secret appraisal technique had discovered.

The Spirit Beast Chain, an item forged with pure gold. It's the status symbol of the disciples of the 88th department of the ancient Heavenly City, the 'Divine Beast Department'. Spirit Beast Chains are conferred only to 'Master Spirit Beast Tamers' that have received the official recognition of the ancient Heavenly City. It's a symbol that shows one's social status.

The Spirit Beast Chain? Does it mean that this is not an item that can pass down the legacy of the Thirty-Three Divine Beasts' Sect? How did it turn out to be something related to the 88th department of the ancient Heavenly City, the Divine Beast Department...?

But very soon, Song Shuhang thought of something. Perhaps the predecessor of the Thirty-Three Divine Beasts' Sect was precisely the 'Divine Beast Department' of the Heavenly City!

Just as Song Shuhang was in deep thoughts, the secret appraisal technique transmitted over the remaining part of the information.

Serial number: Spirit Beast Chain 'Human Rank 10541', belonging to the elder of the 'Thirty-Three Divine Beasts' Sect known as 'Bamboo Pipe'. After 'Bamboo Pipe' modified it, it now conceals the secret related to the <Thirty-Three Divine Beasts' Technique>, the secret technique of the 'Thirty-Three Divine Beasts' Sect. Wearing the Spirit Beast Chain can help increase the efficacy of the training while practicing the <Thirty-Three Divine Beasts' Technique>. Password: Beloved Dog 43B.

By relying on this item, one can retrieve a sealed package from the 'Three Ages Armed Escort Office'. The sealed package was a gift that Bamboo Pipe ordered for their disciple 130 years ago.

The information obtained through the secret appraisal technique came to an end.

Song Shuhang gasped for breath, and intermittent fits of pain attacked his brain. His secret appraisal technique had gotten stronger along with the 88,888 voices talking in his mind every night.

The number of items he could appraise also increased. This time, he even managed to appraise this strange item.

Yu Jiaojiao asked, "Is it over?"

Song Shuhang clenched his teeth and replied while enduring the pain, "It's finally over." The wounds on his body had recovered thanks to Yu Jiaojiao's healing technique, but that feeling of pain would last for a long time.

Now then, the price I paid this time was actually lower than my expectations... it's an item related to the ancient Heavenly City, and the price was only 200 wounds? It was worthwhile I'd say.

"This secret technique of yours seems really troublesome," Yu Jiaojiao said. Soon after, she said something via secret sound transmission as well.

Very soon, the door of the room opened, and a half-monster

maidservant came in, greeting Song Shuhang and Yu Jiaojiao.

Afterward, the maidservant dragged the blood-stained bed out of the room and exchanged it for a new one.

After the maidservant left, Yu Jiaojiao asked Song Shuhang, "What was the final result of your secret technique?"

"I reaped some benefits, I would say... Jiaojiao, do you know the Three Ages Armed Escort Office?" Song Shuhang said while holding the golden chain. From the name, it seemed an organization that ancient cultivators used to deliver and move around their treasures.

"The Three Ages Armed Escort Office? Oh, I have an impression of it. However, they changed their name. They are now called 'Three Ages Worldwide Express Delivery'. But in the last twenty or so years, they very rarely did business on Earth. They currently do business and deliver goods only in space," Yu Jiaojiao explained.

'Our Conquest Is the Sea of Stars!' 1 For some reason, this sentence resurfaced in Song Shuhang's mind.

"But do they still have a base in China?"

Yu Jiaojiao nodded and said, "They should! Their sect is located in China after all. Right, they have a branch in the Jiangnan area as well. When I was a child, my father angered my mother who ran away into space. I have an impression because he sent her something through their service."

If ordinary women were to fight with their husband, they would return to their parents' house. But in the world of cultivators, the angry woman might run to space directly. One might not even be able to find her as long as she was angry.

Song Shuhang asked again, "In that case, is it still possible to retrieve a sealed package from 130 years ago if no one has claimed it?"

"A sealed package from 130 years ago? This isn't a problem. After

all, a cultivator might think of closing up on a whim and stay in secluded meditation for several hundred years, being unable to retrieve the package during that period of time. Thereupon, the Three Ages Worldwide Express Delivery will safeguard the sealed package or express-delivery it for the client. As for the specific details, you will have to confirm with their organization," Yu Jiaojiao explained. "However, they will ask for a small storage fee."

"In that case, can we go to the branch of the Three Ages Worldwide Express Delivery tomorrow and take a look?" Song Shuhang said.

The secret appraisal technique had specifically mentioned the gift that 'Bamboo Pipe' had prepared for their disciple. Such being the case, it should be something pretty good, right?

"Sure, no problem," Yu Jiaojiao said. "And as a repayment, you can have your good friend write 40,000 characters for me each day. How about it?"

The corner of Song Shuhang's mouth twitched. Then, he quickly said, "I'll take a shower first!"

"Tsk, sure." Yu Jiaojiao showed the middle claw to Song Shuhang.



In the faraway East China Sea.

A scholar was standing there with his hands behind the back. He had red eyes full of anger but a calm expression on his face.

On one side was anger, on the other calmness, two types of entirely opposite emotions. When combined together, they gave the scholar a very special aura.

The scholar was floating in midair, seemingly looking for something. He was giving off the aura of a supreme expert while stepping forward.

But right at this time, his face whitened and twisted soon after.

"Painful, painful, painful! Is it happening again?!"

Another deep wound appeared on his back.

The old wound had yet to recover when the new one opened.

Are new wounds opening after such short intervals?

Is he trying to kill me or something?

Do I have to activate the sense sharing again and let you have a good taste of the pain I'm feeling right now?!

Of course, it was just a random thought that crossed his mind. The scholar absolutely wouldn't activate the sense sharing right now. As for the pain, he had no choice but to clench his teeth and endure it.

Chapter 599: Clenching the teeth and enduring the consequences!

Due to the excessive loss of blood, Song Shuhang weakly lay on the bed after washing the blood off his body, quickly falling asleep...

But right at this time, the other 'Song Shuhang' in space had met great danger.

Due to the effects of Medicine Master's medicine, Immortal Master Copper Trigram was currently weakened and couldn't break free of Fairy Firefly's 'repulsive flying rocket technique', flying in space directly.

Ugh! In the end, I still ended up coming to space. Dammit, if not for Brother Medicine Master's poison weakening me, I would have been able to break free of Fairy Firefly's 'repulsive force' in an instant! Immortal Master Copper Trigram thought to himself, somewhat depressed.

At the same time, he recalled the message that that bastard Northern River's Loose Cultivator sent in the group... 'I'm pretty sure he (Immortal Master Copper Trigram) is headed toward space as we speak. If he gets into space, I'll have a 50% chance of catching him.'

The person that understood one the most was their enemy. Immortal Master Copper Trigram firmly believed in this axiom.

I'm already in space...

If Northern River's Loose Cultivator has really arranged traps in here, I might directly fall into his hands if I'm careless enough to reveal my real identity.

As soon as he thought of the various fellow daoists of the Nine Provinces Number One Group that wanted to have a heart-to-heart talk with him, Immortal Master Copper Trigram shivered all over.

In short, it's better if I remain disguised as little friend Shuhang for the time being. It's the best way to avoid getting surrounded and captured by the fellow daoists of the Nine Provinces Number One Group in cahoots with Northern River's Loose Cultivator, Immortal Master Copper Trigram thought to himself.

Thereupon, Immortal Master Copper Trigram perfected the effects of his 'disguising technique' even further. At the same time, he started to intentionally release little friend Song Shuhang's aura from his body.

If Mama Song and Papa Song were to see him at this time, they, too, wouldn't be able to tell whether or not he was an imposter!

A god-level disguising technique was truly scary.

But for this very reason, something unexpected happened.

Due to Immortal Master Copper Trigram intentionally releasing little friend Song Shuhang's aura, the aura ended up attracting the attention of a certain cultivator!

It was the Hall Leader of the Nine-eyed Kama Hall!

The Hall Leader was on his way back to the Limitless Demon Sect. At the same time, anger was brewing in his heart... I have already noted down the aura of that small cultivator of the Second Stage. If we meet again, I will make sure to give him a good lesson. I will torment him to the point of making him wish he were dead!

Just as this thought flashed through his mind, he suddenly sensed his aura!

There was no mistaking it. It was the aura of that damnable cultivator of the Second Stage! He had carefully noted down his aura, and he wouldn't mistake it for someone else's even if there was a great distance between them.

That damnable cultivator of the Second Stage was nearby!

"I searched high and low just to find him when I least expected

it!"

The Hall Leader took a deep breath. Afterward, a cruel smile appeared on his face. He was extremely frustrated today! He failed to save his subordinates and even lost a large number of cultivators of the Fifth Stage Realm in the process, with their souls getting ferried to the afterworld by a little bastard of the Second Stage. Afterward, a crazy ancient witch with brain problems chased after him to kill him.

If he didn't vent the extreme anger in his heart, it might become his Inner Demon in the future.

He would kill that kid and extract his soul, letting him have a taste of the cruelest tortures in the world.

The Hall Leader operated the exclusive flying sword of the Limitless Demon Sect and headed toward the place where the aura was coming from.

After a few breaths, the Hall Leader had already reached the place.

He took a broad view and finally spotted the silhouette of that damnable cultivator of the Second Stage. A calm-looking Song Shuhang was holding his chin and seemingly pondering about the meaning of life.

Aside from the aura, the Hall Leader could faintly recognize his face too even though he just saw it through the cumbersome spacesuit back then.

There was no mistaking; it was precisely him!

"Damned brat, I've finally found you!" the Hall Leader of the Nine-eyed Kama Hall roared. The sound directly reverberated in Immortal Master Copper Trigram's ears through the secret sound transmission technique.

Immortal Master Copper Trigram was surprised. Then, he looked at the incoming person and asked, "Fellow Daoist, whom are you

looking for?"

"Now you are even playing dumb? Hehehe... forget it. I've already decided that I'm going to kill you today! Therefore, die!" the Hall Leader of the Nine-eyed Kama Hall sneered. In the next moment, the signature flying sword of the Limitless Demon Sect beneath his feet disappeared from its original place and whizzed toward Immortal Master Copper Trigram.

Immortal Master Copper Trigram was dumbfounded. What the fck is going on? We just met, and he attacked me with a sword?*

Is this Northern River's Loose Cultivator's ambush?

Is it possible that Northern River had such an incredible foresight that I got caught even though I'm currently disguised as little friend Song Shuhang?

No, it can't be! This absolutely isn't Northern River's Loose Cultivator's ambush!

The killing intent coming from the opposite party is simply too obvious.

Such heavy killing intent... it seems that the opposite party is really serious about killing me. To be more precise, the one he wants to kill is little friend Song Shuhang...

"Little bastard, we'll settle today the enmity you created by ferrying the souls of my subordinates!" the Hall Leader of the Nine-eyed Kama Hall roared as the sword light slashed out.

After hearing up to this point, Immortal Master Copper Trigram was finally clear as to what was going on. Fck, so it was all little friend Shuhang's doing!*

From the looks of it, he was going to be the one to bear the consequence of Shuhang's actions!

What kind of horrible situation was this? He was still weakened due to the effects of Medicine Master's poison. In addition, he was

tightly wrapped by Fairy Firefly's repulsive power. He couldn't even dodge the attack!

Wasn't this the same wanting his poor life?

Dammit, I don't want to bear the consequences of other people's actions!

"Clang!"

Just as Immortal Master Copper Trigram was in deep thoughts, the flying sword of the Hall Leader of the Nine-eyed Kama Hall closed in on him. However, a layer of invisible strength managed to block it.

The flying sword gave rise to a series of electric sparks of pure energy in the void.

Immediately after, the raging slash of the Hall Leader was repelled by a repulsive force. It was Fairy Firefly's 'repulsive flying rocket technique'.

The defensive layer had kept off the attack of the Hall Leader for Immortal Master Copper Trigram. But after it received the sword attack, the layer of repulsive force disappeared.

At the same time, Immortal Master Copper Trigram had finally regained his freedom.

However... it wasn't really the time to regain his freedom! He was currently in a weakened state and could only display 20-30% of his actual strength. He was in great trouble now that he had lost that defensive barrier.

When he saw that his raging slash wasn't even able to kill a small cultivator of the Second Stage, the Hall Leader became angry out of shame. Now, he was even angrier!

"Die!"

The energy within the Spirit Lake inside his body had recovered for the greatest part. Therefore, he could already display certain

techniques of the Sixth Stage True Monarch rank.

While roaring, the Hall Leader moved his foot forward. At the same time, the huge projection of the foot of a demon also appeared. The foot was incredibly big, capable of destroying heaven and earth.

The foot headed toward Immortal Master Copper Trigram, ready to stomp him to death!

"Bastard, had I not been in a weakened state, I would have given you a good lesson!" Immortal Master Copper Trigram clenched his teeth and stretched out his hands, throwing out ten bamboo slips.

The bamboo slips were usually used to perform divinations, but when Immortal Master Copper Trigram threw them out, they instantly arranged themselves into a great divinatory formation. The bamboo slips automatically moved according to the directions of the eight trigrams and gave birth to a formation. The ordinary-looking bamboo slips borrowed the power of the world and created layer upon layer of defensive formations.

If Immortal Master Copper Trigram hadn't been in a weakened state, both the range and the strength of the formation would have increased by more than ten times.

Just because he was a shady fortune teller, it didn't mean that he was weak in the field of divination! He was shady only due to his questionable character; it had nothing to do with his strength!

"Such an insignificant skill, die!" the Hall Leader roared and trampled with his right foot. The projection likewise trampled with its right foot.

"Boom~"

The eight-trigram formation that Immortal Master Copper Trigram had created was smashed to pieces.

The power of that foot capable of destroying heaven and earth didn't diminish as it hit Copper Trigram.

Immortal Master Copper Trigram, who was currently disguised as Song Shuhang, got trampled to death just like a small insect. "Aaaaaaah~"

Just as he was screaming, 'Song Shuhang' was flattened and reduced to a pulp.

Had 'Copper Trigram edition' Song Shuhang died here?

"Hmph, little bastard, don't think that it's over. It's not so easy to solve that enmity you created by ferrying the souls of so many of my subordinates. I'll capture your soul and let you have a taste of the different types of torture back at the Limitless Demon Sect," the Hall Leader sneered.

After saying this much, he teleported and appeared right next to Song Shuhang's corpse, stretching out his hand and preparing to extract his soul.

But in the next moment, the Hall Leader was dumbfounded.

There isn't any soul to extract?

"Is this a clone? Or something akin to a substitute puppet?" The Hall Leader clenched his fists.

He looked all around but didn't find the traces of that small cultivator of the Second Stage. Even his aura had completely disappeared.

Dammit, I unexpectedly failed to kill that guy!

But the next time we meet, you will die for sure! You won't be able to escape with your life thanks to a substitute again!

The Hall Leader of the Nine-eyed Kama Hall received his flying sword with a bitter expression on his face and stepped on it, instantly leaving the place.

Around ten minutes later.

There hadn't been any change in that stretch of space and Song Shuhang's corpse was still there.

The Hall Leader of the Nine-eyed Kama Hall quietly appeared from behind a nearby meteoroid and carefully looked at the 'corpse'.

The corpse was still there and hadn't moved in the slightest.

The Hall Leader frowned and finally stretched out his hand, attracting Song Shuhang's corpse toward himself. Afterward, he operated his flying sword and headed toward the Limitless Demon Sect.

It didn't matter if the 'corpse' was a substitute or a clone, it was bound to have some connection with the 'main body'. The Limitless Demon Sect had a method to find the main body of a person through their substitute or clone.

The only problem was that one had to pay a high price. In addition, if too much time had passed since the destruction of the clone or substitute, it would be impossible to find that 'connection' again.

Thereupon, the Hall Leader decided to increase his speed and go back as quickly as possible.

The next time I meet that guy, I'll make him die without a place for burial!



After making sure that the Hall Leader had truly left, the originally invisible eight-trigram formation materialized in the void. Soon after, a deathly pale Immortal Master Copper Trigram drilled out of the formation.

"It was quite dangerous. If not for all the magical treasures I had with me, that foot might have killed me! Now then, has the consequences of that 'lucky' divination I performed on Earth finally come to an end?" Immortal Master Copper Trigram said, somewhat depressed.

Little friend Song Shuhang better thank him once he was back to

Earth. After all, Copper Trigram had replaced him and bore the deadly calamity in his stead.

Should I return to Earth now? Immortal Master Copper Trigram thought to himself and looked at Fairy Firefly's silk handkerchief tied around his waist, as well as the seals she left on his body.

But how could it be so easy! If he were to return to Earth with all these seals, Fairy Firefly would immediately sense his presence. At that time, Fairy Firefly might make another special trip just for him and let him have another taste of her 'repulsive flying rocket technique'.

In that case, should I remove these seals and the silk handkerchief? This thought crossed Immortal Master Copper Trigram's mind.

However, he immediately decided against it. Fairy Firefly would immediately notice if the seal had disappeared. If that happened, she would think that little friend Song Shuhang had run into some problem.

If she were to call the fellow daoists of the Nine Provinces Number One Group that were currently in space and tell them to head toward the coordinates where the seals had disappeared, wouldn't Immortal Master Copper Trigram get surrounded from all sides?

Therefore, it was better not to return to Earth for the time being. Since he was already in space, he better stay there for a while.

But... should he still keep using little friend Song Shuhang's appearance?

Only God knew what kind of calamity little friend Song Shuhang had provoked while he was in space!

He had already suffered the consequences for little friend Song's actions once. He didn't intend to suffer them a second time!

Such being the case, it was time to change appearance.

Perhaps it was better to change gender as well and turn into a woman. In an unfamiliar environment, a beautiful female cultivator would be more well-liked than a male cultivator.

In that case, whose appearance should he assume?

Just as he was in deep thoughts, a notification was issued from Immortal Master Copper Trigram's special phone.

At this time, Copper Trigram wasn't too far away from Earth. Therefore, his magically modified mobile phone could still receive the signal.

It was a notification from the Nine Provinces Number One Group. Fairy Lychee had just come online.

Immortal Master Copper Trigram had started to 'follow' Fairy Lychee recently. Therefore, he would get immediately notified if she got online.

Since he had bought valuable magical clothes for her as an apology gift, he had started to follow her to see whether or not his gift had had any effect.

As a result, Fairy Lychee was still in Immortal Master Copper Trigram's follow list.

As always, Fairy Lychee had sent two beautiful pictures. It was a group picture with penguins in the South Pole.

Today, Fairy Lychee was as beautiful as always.

I've decided... I'll assume Fairy Lychee's appearance!

Why had he decided to assume Fairy Lychee even after receiving a good beating from her? It was because Fairy Lychee was the only member of the group he was sure to win over with gifts if she were to get angry!

Even if she discovered that he had assumed her appearance, she would forgive him if he were to timely deliver an apology gift.

After thinking up to this point, Immortal Master Copper Trigram

started to change his appearance and clothing in space.

Tens of breaths later, Song Shuhang had disappeared from space, and a beautiful Fairy Lychee had appeared in his stead.

Actually, Immortal Master Copper Trigram could just casually assume the appearance of a female cultivator that didn't even exist.

But for some reason, Immortal Master Copper Trigram had very rarely assumed an 'original' appearance during the past few years. On the other hand, he had started to like more and more assuming the appearance of the fellow daoists of the Nine Provinces Number One Group or other famous people in the world of cultivators.

As for the reason... it should be the influence his hobby had had on him during this period of time?

Now that I've changed into Fairy Lychee, I won't have to be a scapegoat anymore! Immortal Trigram faintly smiled. The smile was identical to Fairy Lychee's smile in the picture!



At sunrise.

The extremely tired Song Shuhang crawled out of bed. He felt his body was somewhat empty after the excessive loss of blood yesterday.

"You finally got up? Get ready. I'll bring you to the branch of the 'Three Ages Worldwide Express Delivery'." Yu Jiaojiao jumped from the windowsill and landed on Song Shuhang's shoulder.

It was time to see what kind of good item had Elder Bamboo Pipe left behind!

Chapter 600: Jiaojiao, I don't feel like eating dirt anymore

Yu Jiaojiao told the chef to prepare a sumptuous meal for breakfast so that Song Shuhang could replenish the blood he'd lost yesterday night.

After breakfast, Shuhang and Yu Jiaojiao started their morning practice.

After all, early morning was the best period to practice.

Shuhang displayed all the cultivation techniques he knew once. After he was done, he felt that the strength of his constitution had increased a little.

"Should we head out?" Yu Jiaojiao asked.

Song Shuhang stopped his training and exhaled a mouthful of bad air, saying, "Sure. Let's set out! How should we head there? Is it nearby?"

Since the branch of the Three Ages Worldwide Express Delivery was in the Jiangnan area, was it better to go there on foot or by car?

"Hold onto me tightly, I'll bring you there," Yu Jiaojiao said with a smile. After saying this much, she gently jumped and landed on Song Shuhang's shoulder.

"Do you want to go over there with a flying sword?" Song Shuhang asked. Additionally, how was he supposed to hold onto Yu Jiaojiao...? Should he hold her small body in his palm?

Yu Jiaojiao shook her head and said, "No, the branch of the Three Ages Worldwide Express Delivery isn't located in the sky."

After saying this much, she used her small claw to grab Song Shuhang's ear. It was the most convenient place for her to grab. Afterward, she said, "Get ready, we are setting out!"

"Where are we headed then?" Song Shuhang asked. Where was the branch of the Three Ages Worldwide Express Delivery since he had to hold onto Yu Jiaojiao to go there? Apparently, the branch wasn't in the sky...

Just as he was in deep thoughts, Song Shuhang's heard a bang, and white mist appeared before his eyes, shrouding both him and Yu Jiaojiao.

Next, the white mist started to merge with their bodies, and around two breaths later, their bodies transformed into 'mist' as well. Their current state was somewhat similar to that of a soul.

It wasn't only Shuhang's body, but his clothes, size-reducing purse, and various treasures that had also transformed into mist as well.

Right at this time, Yu Jiaojiao gently shouted, "Earth Crossing Technique!"

In the next moment, Song Shuhang felt as though the earth beneath his feet had melted, with him and Yu Jiaojiao immediately dropping into the liquid earth.

From the looks of it, the earth had changed into the sea, and he and Yu Jiaojiao could swim through it. In addition, he could faintly see things within a range of ten meters even though he was underground. However, the things he was seeing were blurry and indistinct.

Was this the 'Earth Crossing Technique'? This technique could unexpectedly turn the surrounding earth into liquid—no, it wasn't the earth that had liquefied. It was his and Yu Jiaojiao's body that had undergone a change.

Song Shuhang was now clear as to what had happened. For their current body, the earth was like a liquid, and they could directly submerge underneath it.

At first, Shuhang thought that the 'Earth Crossing Technique'

would allow the cultivator to quickly drill through the earth like an earthworm... well, he was clearly wrong!

Through the dense fog, Song Shuhang could faintly see certain living organisms. There were earthworms, all kinds of strange insects, and plant roots. However, he didn't see rocks, because all the rocks that entered the range of the 'Earth Crossing Technique' would become see-through.

At this time, Song Shuhang got the impulse of learning this mysterious magical technique!

Anyway, since we had to use the Earth Crossing Technique, does it mean that the branch of the Three Ages Worldwide Express Delivery in the Jiangnan area is located underground?

In the end, it was an express delivery company that targeted cultivators. As such, they had to be careful not to appear in front of ordinary people, and the underground world just happened to be a very good hiding place.

Just as he was in deep thoughts, Shuhang felt a wave of pain transmit from his ear. For some unknown reason, Yu Jiaojiao had tightened the grip on his ear.

Song Shuhang didn't dare to turn his head around and look at Yu Jiaojiao, because if he were to do so, he might cast off Yu Jiaojiao who was currently holding his ear. If Yu Jiaojiao got cast off, cutting off the connection between the two, the effects of the Earth Crossing Technique would disappear. At that point, wouldn't he get stuck in the ground?

Thereupon, he said via secret sound transmission, "Jiaojiao, did something happen that you had to tighten your grip?"

Yu Jiaojiao quickly replied, "Nothing important. When I increased the speed of the Earth Crossing Technique earlier, a person building a construction appeared right in front of us, giving me a scare. Therefore, I had to slam on the brakes, and I ended up

unconsciously increasing the strength of my grip."

No 'construction' had appeared within Song Shuhang's field of vision. That was because Yu Jiaojiao's field of vision was much larger than Song Shuhang's while she was using the 'Earth Crossing Technique'.

"What kind of construction was it?" Song Shuhang asked.

"From the looks of it, it was a subway station. With science and technology continuously developing, it's becoming harder and harder to find a place where we cultivators can practice in peace. Actually, it's not so bad for us creatures of the sea, but human cultivators surely have a headache these days. Previously, a cultivator could just go into the mountains, and they wouldn't have to worry about someone disturbing them. But now, the forest and mountains where one can stay are getting fewer and fewer, and even the sky, sea, or underground aren't safe from humans. Many powerful sects with a rich background decided to directly open their personal dimension and move their sect—as well as the spirit veins—there," Yu Jiaojiao said.

Song Shuhang made a hollow laugh.

"Right, try not to talk to me from now on. I need to concentrate on operating the 'Earth Crossing Technique'. I hadn't expected that carrying another person along with the Earth Crossing Technique would be more tiring than carrying ten people with a flying sword. I absolutely can't divert my attention," Yu Jiaojiao said.

"Sure!" Song Shuhang quickly shut his mouth, not daring to say another word. What would he do if he got stuck in the ground? In order to maintain his safety, it was better if he didn't disturb Yu Jiaojiao.

The duo kept traveling through the earth.

Song Shuhang could see the surrounding area rapidly changing. But since he didn't have any object of reference, he had no idea

how much he and Yu Jiaojiao had traveled.

But right at this time, he felt another wave of pain transmit from his ear.

"Jiaojiao, is there another obstacle?" Song Shuhang asked unconsciously.

However, Yu Jiaojiao didn't reply to his question.

Song Shuhang discovered that there were some changes happening next to his body—the surrounding soil was moving.

When the 'Earth Crossing Technique' was activated, he thought that the earth beneath their feet had liquefied. However, that was nothing but his misconception. What had changed wasn't the earth but their bodies.

But now, Song Shuhang was sure that the surrounding soil was in a liquid state... was it mud?

Both he and Yu Jiaojiao quickly shuttled back and forth amidst that layer of what seemed to be mud.

However, traveling through the mud had greatly increased Yu Jiaojiao's energy consumption. At this time, she was clenching her teeth and sprinting forward, not having the time to reply to Song Shuhang.

After shuttling back and forth for a bit, Yu Jiaojiao said slowly, "The situation is bad. Traveling through this stretch of earth is consuming too much of my energy. I won't be able to resist for long."

"What?!" Song Shuhang opened his eyes wide. Elder Sister, I can even call you Dearest Elder Sister if you wish, but don't scare me like that! I don't want to be stuck in the ground!

"Try to hold on. I can see a far-off underground river. We'll head there to rest!" Yu Jiaojiao said.

"..." Song Shuhang.

In the next moment, Yu Jiaojiao sprinted forward at high speed.
Around twenty seconds later.

Yu Jiaojiao carried Song Shuhang along and vigorously jumped forward, finally reaching that underground river!

"Splash!" The water of the underground river splashed in all directions.

"Ahahaha, that was a close call," Yu Jiaojiao said with a smile. Then, she drilled into the water and swam for a while. The little fish was extremely happy after getting into the water.

However, the nearby Song Shuhang was deathly pale.

Yu Jiaojiao asked, "Shuhang, how do you feel?"

"Jiaojiao, how much distance is left until we reach the destination?" Song Shuhang asked with a painful look on his face.

Yu Jiaojiao pondered for a moment and said, "I think there are still two-thirds left?"

Song Shuhang faintly sighed and said, "I think I won't be able to make it." Then, he touched his belly and continued, "I don't feel like eating it anymore."

Yu Jiaojiao blinked her small eyes and asked in puzzlement, "What?"

"Dirt... I don't feel like eating dirt anymore!" Song Shuhang said. Then, he stretched out his fingers and put them in his mouth, trying to vomit.

Yu Jiaojiao felt very ashamed at this time.



Earlier, during that sprint of twenty seconds, Song Shuhang discovered that there was something wrong with the 'Earth Crossing Technique'.

The strength of the 'gaseous' state around his mouth weakened.

Although it was still gaseous and could reluctantly keep up with the 'Earth Crossing Technique', something unexpected happened while they were traveling through the earth... all the muddy water next to Song Shuhang's body was forcefully poured into his mouth.

Poor Song Shuhang ended up eating a mouthful of muddy water.

Shuhang quickly shut his mouth... but the strength of the 'gaseous' state around his nose also started to weaken.

As a consequence, the muddy water entered his body directly through his nostrils!

After that, Song Shuhang stretched out his hands and covered both his nose and mouth. He didn't want to become the cultivator that had drowned while traveling across the earth!

Once he blocked his nose and mouth, the muddy water no longer invaded his oral and nasal cavity.

Song Shuhang secretly heaved a sigh of relief.

But just as he heaved a sigh of relief, something even scarier happened... the muddy water directly appeared in his belly!

The muddy water passed through his abdomen as though it had space-related properties and directly appeared in his belly.

Song Shuhang was unable to comprehend the principle behind what was happening!

Even if the effects of the 'Earth Crossing Technique' had weakened around his mouth and nose, why had the muddy water directly appeared in his belly? This was simply unscientific!

Oh, wait. Cultivation was already something that surpassed science.

However, this matter went even against the principles of cultivation! The 'gaseous' state of the 'Earth Crossing Technique' was still intact around his abdomen. Such being the case, why had the muddy water directly appeared in his belly?!

Was it possible that the gaseous state of the 'Earth Crossing Technique' had weakened somewhere else too without him noticing?

Anyway, regardless of the reason, the muddy water flooded Song Shuhang's belly.

Then, after Yu Jiaojiao got through that layer of mud, dirt likewise started to appear within his belly.

Just what the hell was going on?!

As a consequence, Song Shuhang's stomach was now full of dirt.

At this time, Song Shuhang had already eliminated that thought about learning the 'Earth Crossing Technique' from his mind. And even if he wanted to learn it, he would do so only if it was completely safe.

By the way, the taste of having dirt in one's belly was truly impeccable.

After five minutes of suffering, Song Shuhang was finally able to get rid of the dirt in belly thanks to the assistance of Yu Jiaojiao's water-type magical techniques.

This time, he had experienced firsthand the suffering of ordinary people whenever war broke out in ancient times... when they were so hungry that they would start eating dirt!

"Shuhang, should we continued advancing forward?" Yu Jiaojiao asked, particularly embarrassed. She had overestimated the level of her Earth Crossing Technique.

After all, she was the crossbreed of a cute water-type fish and a flood dragon and was thus skilled in water-type magical techniques.

Additionally, one had to remember that amidst the five

elements... earth restrained water!

The fact that Yu Jiaojiao could learn the 'Earth Crossing Technique' was only thanks to her 'flood dragon bloodline'.

Then, carrying another person with her while using the 'Earth Crossing Technique' had indeed turned out to be something beyond her capabilities.

Song Shuhang clenched his teeth and said, "Let's go! We have already traveled one-third of the distance. We can't waste all the previous effort!"

Yu Jiaojiao said, "However, you'll end up eating dirt again if I run out of energy."

"That's easy to handle." Song Shuhang suggested, "Jiaojiao, let's divide the remaining part of the distance left into four parts. Each time we are done traveling one-fourth of the remaining distance, we'll find a suitable place and take a break. If we can't find a place, we can just take advantage of the remaining time of your 'Earth Crossing Technique' to create a hole in the ground and rest there!"

Yu Jiaojiao nodded and said, "Good, we'll do it this way."

Thereupon, after resting for another five minutes, Yu Jiaojiao and Song Shuhang continued traveling through the ground!



Around an hour later.

Song Shuhang and Yu Jiaojiao finally arrived at their destination, which turned out to be a big tunnel.

Just as Yu Jiaojiao opened her mouth and said 'we have arrived', Song Shuhang's eyes teared up a little.

Afterward, the duo entered the tunnel under Yu Jiaojiao's guidance and headed toward the Jiangnan branch of the Three Ages Worldwide Express Delivery.

The duo quickly arrived at the end of the tunnel.

But what appeared in front of them wasn't the branch of the Three Ages Worldwide Express Delivery, but a huge, circular cavity.

However, there wasn't even the trace of a person inside!

"Eh? Where is the branch of the Three Ages Worldwide Express Delivery?" Yu Jiaojiao was dumbfounded. When she was a kid, her father brought her precisely here. There was no mistaking!

Song Shuhang glanced at the huge empty cavity. From the looks of it, there had indeed been a branch of the Three Ages Worldwide Express Delivery here in the past. However, it now disappeared without traces.

Yu Jiaojiao looked at the huge hole, somewhat confused, and said, "Is it possible that someone destroyed the branch of the Three Ages Worldwide Express Delivery?"

"But there aren't the traces of battle around." Song Shuhang glanced inside the huge cavity and quickly noticed something glistening in one corner. "Jiaojiao, there is something down there!"

"Let's go and take a look," Yu Jiaojiao said.



The duo quickly headed toward that glistening place.

In there were engraved two small formations.

"The formation on the left is a 'spirit gathering formation', but I don't know the formation on the right. It seems a fire-type formation used for illumination, I guess?" Yu Jiaojiao said.

Illumination?

The whole branch of the Three Ages Worldwide Express Delivery disappeared. Nevertheless, they left a lighting formation behind. Was it possible that there was something down there?

Song Shuhang stretched out his hand and touched the area below the lighting formation.

"There is something here!" Song Shuhang quickly wiped the dust off that place below the lighting formation.

Very soon, Song Shuhang finished cleaning up the metal plate-like object.

Dear client of the Three Ages Worldwide Express Delivery, in order to expand our business, the company decided to move Jiangnan's underground branch to the 30th floor of the Fanhua Mansion in Jiangnan area's 'Leyuan Street'. Therefore, we invite every client that needs our service to visit us there. We ask you to kindly forgive us for any inconvenience we might have caused.

We thank our numerous clients for all their concern and support!

In addition, we wish all our clients happy holidays and good luck!

May 1st, 2009.

"..." Yu Jiaojiao.

"..." Song Shuhang.

Table of Contents

[Cultivation Chat Group](#)

[Synopsis](#)

[Acknowledgement](#)

[Chapter 501: Shuhang, have you decided when you're ascending to heaven?](#)

[Chapter 502: Meeting again the professor that took an arrow in the knee](#)

[Chapter 503: Not good, Shuhang is about to explode!](#)

[Chapter 504: As a result, go into space!](#)

[Chapter 505: The Jingang token of authority](#)

[Chapter 506: The Soul Devouring Demonic Gourd](#)

[Chapter 507: A group of cultivators demanding their payment](#)

[Chapter 508: Go, Mount Tai Seal... F*ck, wrong target!](#)

[Chapter 509: The red-haired Spiritual Emperor](#)

[Chapter 510: Can you give me face and let this little friend go?](#)

[Chapter 511: What a tragedy](#)

[Chapter 512: I'm Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue](#)

[Chapter 513: The 'Flame Substituting Technique' and the 'Blade Dragging Technique'](#)

[Chapter 514: Immortal chef](#)

[Chapter 515: Hundred giants](#)

[Chapter 516: Ding~ Congratulations for obtaining a set of broken home appliances!](#)

[Chapter 517: The fight for the demonic gourd](#)

[Chapter 518: We just lacked strong guys to put in the mines](#)

[Chapter 519: The man that can sell anything](#)

[Chapter 520: The Moon Princess](#)

[Chapter 521: It's sunny today, let's sunbathe the magical treasures](#)

[Chapter 522: The 'Steel Hands Technique'](#)

[Chapter 523: Venerable Seventh Cultivator of True Virtue's grave exploration guidebook](#)

[Chapter 524: The keyless entry system of the ancient grave](#)

[Chapter 525: The 'Holy Light Sword Technique'](#)

[Chapter 526: Do you want to sign a contract with me and become...](#)

[Chapter 527: The inheritance of Venerable Sixth Cultivator of True Virtue?](#)

[Chapter 528: Do you want to sign a contract with me and become the Eighth Cultivator of True Virtue?](#)

[Chapter 529: The primordial treasure 'Nine Virtues Phoenix Saber'](#)

[Chapter 530: Song One is the one and only](#)
[Chapter 531: You can borrow my golden coffin for a while and lie inside](#)
[Chapter 532: The faintly bulging lower abdomen](#)
[Chapter 533: It's melting~ My body is melting~ \(2 in 1\)](#)
[Chapter 534: Shallot Song Shuhang](#)
[Chapter 535: I'm going to grab that guy](#)
[Chapter 536: Several unexpected guests](#)
[Chapter 537: The descendant of the ancient witches](#)
[Chapter 538: I added a gentle-looking girl yesterday, her name is Yu Jiaojiao](#)
[Chapter 539: It just seems to be a beautiful misunderstanding](#)
[Chapter 540: The Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion](#)
[Chapter 541: Have you come here to make fun of me?](#)
[Chapter 542: The Time City](#)
[Chapter 543: There is an express delivery for you downstairs](#)
[Chapter 544: Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion, frozen in time!](#)
[Chapter 545: Did Pavilion Master Chu forget about us?](#)
[Chapter 546: Miss Chu Chu's unbelievable expression](#)
[Chapter 547: 88,888 voices!](#)
[Chapter 548: A billion years old... rock](#)
[Chapter 549: Is it out of control? Someone might die!](#)
[Chapter 550: The ?Tome of Never-Ending Tears?](#)
[Chapter 551: The sobbing beauty](#)
[Chapter 552: I can feel it, it's coming!](#)
[Chapter 553: A hard-to-come-by kindred soul!](#)
[Chapter 554: The temperature of their fingers](#)
[Chapter 555: Fellow Daoist, do you have a girlfriend?](#)
[Chapter 556: Then become my boyfriend!](#)
[Chapter 557: Hugging each other and crying](#)
[Chapter 558: Running for 5000 meters on four limbs](#)
[Chapter 559: Swordsman Wooden Ox's gloves of passion](#)
[Chapter 560: Broadcasting the practice of Senior Sister Ye's partner](#)
[Chapter 561: Appraising oneself?](#)
[Chapter 562: Journey toward a sea of virtue](#)
[Chapter 563: The western monk was released from the prison](#)
[Chapter 564: I'll sacrifice myself to save others, here I come!](#)
[Chapter 565: The unexpected appearance of ghost cultivators](#)
[Chapter 566: Would a cultivator of the Second Stage die after getting thrown down from a 35-story building? \(2 in 1\)](#)
[Chapter 567: ?Diary of the Ascetic Senior Monk?](#)

[Chapter 568: Fellow Daoist White, don't move!](#)
[Chapter 569: Little White, when your hair reaches— aaah!](#)
[Chapter 570: The head of the Immortal exploded \(2 in 1\)](#)
[Chapter 571: Heartless soul... come, die once!](#)
[Chapter 572: She loves taking selfies and living her life to the fullest!](#)
[Chapter 573: Brother Medicine Master, book me a hospital bed for another half a month!](#)
[Chapter 574: The soul ferrying ceremony](#)
[Chapter 575: Leaving the Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion for a stroll!](#)
[Chapter 576: A Seventh Stage Venerable?](#)
[Chapter 577: Nine Virtues Phoenix Saber, the Saber of Destruction!](#)
[Chapter 578: Ferrying the soul of a Fifth Stage Spiritual Emperor](#)
[Chapter 579: Hopefully, it won't scare him too much](#)
[Chapter 580: Ghost spirit: I'm dying, I'm dying, I'm dying!](#)
[Chapter 581: Main body, you have five minutes to mend my broken heart](#)
[Chapter 582: What? Has my Crystal-Clear Water Pavilion perished?](#)
[Chapter 583: Did you get smacked in the face by the monkey king?](#)
[Chapter 584: Little friend Song, don't you want to sleep together with me?](#)
[Chapter 585: That day, the ghost spirit became pregnant](#)
[Chapter 586: Quickly let me go! I have to pee!](#)
[Chapter 587: The sad Sea King](#)
[Chapter 588: Wherever there is oppression, there will be resistance!](#)
[Chapter 589: The ocean-splitting attack of the master of the island!](#)
[Chapter 590: Is this retribution?](#)
[Chapter 591: Seven: I'm going to kill that baboon!](#)
[Chapter 592: Yu Jiaojiao: Shuhang, I've caught the author](#)
[Chapter 593: Gao Moumou: Good brothers should share joys and sorrows](#)
[Chapter 594: F*ck, isn't that my good friend Gao Moumou?!](#)
[Chapter 595: That day, I suddenly thought of shooting a movie](#)
[Chapter 596: Copper Trigram: Fairy maiden, you sent into space the wrong person! \(2 in 1\)](#)
[Chapter 597: The new daoist robe of the western monk](#)
[Chapter 598: The sealed package of a cultivator from 130 years ago](#)
[Chapter 599: Clenching the teeth and enduring the consequences!](#)
[Chapter 600: Jiaojiao, I don't feel like eating dirt anymore](#)